

The Life and Times of Joseph Fish Mormon Pioneer



June 27, 1840 - December 10 1926

Table of Contents

Forward	5
Note by Jesse L. Fish.....	7
Some of the Important Dates Concerning the Life of Joseph Fish	8
Father's Activities	21
Family Affairs and Finances	24
Father's Characteristics	26
Father's Four Wives	27
Polygamy	29
The Children	30
Father's Autobiography.....	31

Autobiography of Joseph Fish

<u>Chapter</u>	<u>Page</u>
1 - Ancestry and Birth	32
2 - Nauvoo	38
3 - Persecutions and Mobbings	40
4 - The Expulsion	42
5 - Through Iowa.....	45
6 - At the Missouri	48
7 - Across the Plains.....	52
8 - In the Valley	57
9 - On the Move Again.....	59
10 - The Settling of Parowan	61
11 - The Founding of New Settlements	65
12 - The Indian War of 1853.....	67
13 - Some Events in the Early Fifties	70
14 - The Reformation Period.....	73
15 - Trials and Troubles in a Frontier Town	76
16 - Explorations.....	79
17 - The Mountain Meadow Massacre	81
18 - The Winter of 1858-1859.....	83
19 - Everyday Life in a Frontier Town	86
20 - Marriage	90
21 - The Arrival of a Daughter.....	93
22 - Frontier Conditions.....	96
23 - I Go Freighting.....	98
24 - A Balky Horse and School Teaching.....	101
25 - Events during the Black Hawk War	104
26 - A Military Expedition.....	107
27 - The Frontier gets a Telegraph Line	112
28 - The Picket Guard.....	115
29 - Pioneer Life Proceeds with Less Tension	118
30 - School Teaching, Store Keeping and Other Activities	121
31 - Church and Military Activities.....	124
32 - The Navajos Get All My Stocks.....	127
33 - Death of My Father	131
34 - Politics, Polygamy, and Store Keeping.....	134
35 - My First Ride on a Railroad Train – I Go On a Brief Mission.....	138
36 - I Visit My Father's People	143
37 - I Become Manager and Sawyer of the Coop Sawmill	148
38 - Entertainment, Legal Matters & Other Activities.....	152
39 - The Anti-Mormons at Work - I Study Law.....	157
40 - Death of My Wife Mary	161
41 - Some Legal Notes and Mill Work.....	164
42 - Starting Another Order	167

43 - My Mother's Death - The Mountain Meadow Massacre Comes Up	171
44 - Re-organization of the Stake.....	174
45 - Making a Start on the Sevier.....	177
46 - A New Venture	182
47 - The Journey to Arizona	184
48 - The Pioneer Work of Building a New Home	189
49 - A Trip to Utah and Return	191
50 - A Trip to St. Johns.....	195
51 - A Hard Winter Followed by Famine	198
52 - A Journey to the Grading Camp – Famine Averted by Working on the Railroad.....	201
53 - Tending the Commissary for Young and Tenney.....	205
54 - Starting of the Arizona Cooperative Mercantile Inst.	211
55 - The A. C. M. I. Is Moved to Woodruff.....	215
56 - A Trip to St. Louis.....	218
57 - Mercantile Work and a Trip to Utah.....	222
58 - A Hold up and a Trip to Purchase Goods	227
59 - Numerous Labors Added to my Mercantile Work	230
60 - A Trip East and Anti-Mormon Troubles.....	234
61 - A trip to Chicago and Other Incidents	239
62 - The Polygamy Prosecutions Take me to Utah.....	243
63 - A trip to Mexico	249
64 - Attempts at Colonizing in Mexico.....	254
65 - Still Waiting for a Purchase to be Made	259
66 - Mexican and Indian Troubles and Delays in Getting Lands	264
67 - I Do Some Surveying	268
68 - My Return Home and Labors There.....	272
69 - Differences Between the President and Bishop - Other Items.....	276
70 - I purchase the Mortensen Place, Other Items.....	280
71 - A trip to the Eastern Part of the Stake, and Home Labors.....	284
72 - I Again Go to Work for the A. C. M. I.	288
73 - The Reorganization of the Stake, And Labors in the Store	291
74 - The A.C.M.I. Moves Its Business to Holbrook	296
75 - General Labors and the Purchase of R. R. Lands	301
76 - General Labors at Holbrook.....	305
77 - A Trip to Utah to Conference.....	310
78 - A Freight Contract and a Trip to Fort Apache.....	315
79 - Politics and Difficulties in Freighting.....	319
80 - A Trip to California and Other Items.....	323
81 - A Birthday Party and the Old Grind.....	326
82 - I Resign as Superintendent and I Take the Books Again	329
83 - A Trip to St. Johns and a Visit from the Church Leaders	332
84 - Political Items and a Trip to Prescott as a Juror	336
85 - I Arrange to go to Mexico.....	340
86 - The Journey to Sonora	344
87 - Some of My Labors and Trials in Sonora	350
88 - I Go to the Gila and Settle There.....	354
89 - I Go Into Business with I. E. D. Zundel.....	358
90 - A Trip to Snowflake and Political Items.....	363
91 - Legislative Labors	369
92 - Labors in the Store and on a House	373
93 - Work on the Mill at Safford.....	378
94 - Odd Jobs and Incidents.....	381
95 - Some Incidents and a Trip to Snowflake	385
96 - I Move to Snowflake	389
97 - Bookkeeper and Assistant Postmaster at A.C.M.I.....	393
98 - The Same Old Grind.....	397
99 - Some Religious and Political Items.....	401
100 - Some Political Items.....	406

101 - At the Old Stand and a Trip to Prescott As a Juror.....	411
102 - Everyday Life of a Bookkeeper and Birth of a Daughter.....	416
103 - A Visit from a Daughter and Politics, Etc.	419
104 - Sickness of my Son Joseph C. And Other Items	423
105 - Some Items on Church Affairs.....	427
106 - My Wife Eliza Comes to Holbrook to Live	431
107 - A Visit from a Daughter and the Death of a Daughter-In-Law	435
108 - A Trip to Utah.....	438
109 - I Am Arrested by U. S. Marshal.....	442
110 - I Quit the Store and Move to Woodruff.....	445
111 - The Move to Utah.....	450
112 - A Trip to Salt Lake and Looking for a Place.....	454
113 - The Move to Enterprise and Labors There.....	459
114 - Everyday Life at Enterprise	470
115 - Events of 1920.....	480
116 - A Trip to Parowan and Everyday Items.....	493
117 - The Ups and Downs of Everyday Life.....	504
118 - Everyday Life Continued.....	513
119 - The Events of a Busy Life.....	522
120 - A Cold and Dry Summer	528
121 - I Begin the <i>History of Enterprise</i>	535
122 - I Work at the <i>History of Enterprise</i> in Spite of the Infirmities of Age.....	544
123 - Joseph Fish Closes His Historical Labors.....	553
Notes by Silas L. Fish.....	564
Notes by Elsie F. Nay.....	564

Forward by Silas Fish

My father, Joseph Fish, wrote "If a life is worth living, the events should be worth recording." He, therefore, kept a diary or Journal from boyhood. He did not write in it every day unless he was engaged in activities that changed from day to day. Where there was a sameness in his work he often skipped a few days, or a week or so. If he skipped a longer period he summarized what happened during the interval.

I note, however, that he made no comment on a few important events. This does not make the rest of his writings less valuable. In fact his Autobiography is so full of his evaluation of events and people, and the descriptions of everyday events that it becomes very valuable for students of history and for obtaining a picture of living conditions and activities during his lifetime.

He probably started his journal when he was between sixteen and seventeen years of age. He must have had help from someone who kept a record, otherwise he could not have given such a complete story of the trek across the plains when he was between six and ten years of age. (He had his tenth birthday two months before he reached the Valley-Salt Lake City.)

He kept up his journal until he was past 86, his last entry being made three months before his death. This was after his paralytic stroke when he could use only one hand.

He rewrote his journal several times, each time revising and amplifying what he had previously written. In his Autobiography, however, he presents his life story in a new form, dividing it into chapters, adding many incidents that he gathered in his historical studies, and giving his interpretation of many incidents which he merely records without comment in his Journal. In his last revision of his Journal, there are 411 typewritten pages (Single spaced). In his Autobiography there are 494 pages—and more closely written.

Under the dates of January 2, 1918, February 20, 1919, April 4, 1920, and September 26, 1923, Father mentions "writing up" his journal. Judging from the way he merely mentioned his historical writings when he was typing hundreds and hundreds of pages, he must have been typing his Autobiography during this period when he was past 77 years of age. He might have begun this final revision a few years earlier. (He does not call this revision his Autobiography. I gave it that to distinguish it from his Journal which I had copied in 1937.) On account of his comments about people and events in this revision, the reader has to be careful at times to note that some of these entries do not pertain to the dates under which they are made, but to what happened at a later date.

For further comments on Father's Journal, see Forward to his Journal.

It is now over seven years since I had Father's Journal copied by my children. I thought more of Father's descendants would be anxious to read it. However I realize that when a person confronts a book of over 400 pages, he may lay it aside "for the present," until a time when he is not so busy and can find time to enjoy it. When that is done, dust frequently gathers on the book.

If that is true of a book of 400 pages, what about his Autobiography which contains nearly 500 pages of Father's writings? For this reason, I decided to write a brief review of Father's Autobiography and have it mimeographed so that all who desire a copy may have one. Then, those who read this brief summary may become interested and visit the L. D. S. Church Historian's Office at 47 East, South Temple Street, Salt Lake City, Utah, and read parts, if not all, of Father's Journal or Autobiography. Those who cannot go to Salt Lake City may arrange to borrow my copy.

One may ask why it has been seven years since I had Father's Journal copied before I got around to copying his Autobiography. My daughter, Varena, worked hard on it during the summer of 1937. None of us had time for this work while school was going, for we were all in school. The next summer, my wife, Pearl, was sick. She died August 2, 1938. Then for a few years we had other distractions and duties. I went to Summer school two summers, Lorna, my youngest daughter, spent much of one summer typing on it. She finally finished it this summer, 1944.

Why did I have this work done? For two reasons: If Father's writings were merely handed around among the family, they might get lost. If they were deposited in some safe vault, very few would get to read them. I had them copied so

that they may be preserved for future generations and also that the present generation may have access to them. I consider his writings very valuable as source material for historical research; therefore I wanted them deposited in a historical library.

I regard Father as one of the outstanding men of his day. Every one of his descendants can well be proud of his accomplishments and of the type of life he lived. I wish they could all read Father's writings; feel of his spirit; understand the poverty, the trials, the hardships he faced; and know of his courage and strength of character, of his devotion to his Church and his family, and of his industry and untiring service. To do this would help us to realize what a priceless heritage it is to be numbered among his descendants.

Note by Jesse L. Fish

In November, 1944, I learned of Silas having copied this Autobiography and desiring to have a copy for myself, I asked to have him send me the Autobiography for me to copy, which he kindly did and I received it December 7, 1944. At this time I am in Pioche, Nevada, working in the mine, but am planning on leaving to work at the Ranch (Anderson Ranch, Washington County, Utah) about March 10. After which time I would have very little time in which to do the work so in spite of the short time, I resolved to copy it by that time. The present date is March 7, 1945, being just 3 months since I received the writings and I have copied all except the following 19 pages. Silas said that he might make a revision of the part that I am now copying (1 to 16) and for me to copy it last which I have done. He thinking that he might send me the revision by the time I had the other copied. I am making 3 copies, but one is rather dim because of not being able to obtain suitable paper and carbon paper, and expect to send a copy to any of father's children that desire one, and after they having finished with it, will send it to another, thus making the writings available to all in the course of time.

Some of the Important Dates Concerning the Life of Joseph Fish

April 17 (27), 1770 - Joseph Fish (his grandfather) was born at Pepperell, Mass.

March 24, 1770 - Sarah (Sally) Spear (his grandmother) was born at Walpole, N. H.

January 5, (8), 1793 - Joseph Fish and Sarah Spear were married at Redding (Reading) Vermont. Soon after, (two to four years) they moved north in search of a new home, and are said to have been the first settlers of Stanstead County Quebec. They did not know that they were in Canada until the survey was made after they had settled there.

January 6, 1799 (or 1800) - Horace Fish, his father, was born at Hatley, Quebec.

December 26, (6), 1805 - Hannah Leavitt, his mother, was born at Walpole, N. H. or St. Johnsbury, VT. Two different sources give the two dates and places.

March 18, 1824 - Horace Fish and Hannah Leavitt were married at Hatley, Quebec.

July 20, 1837 - Most of the large family of Leavitts and their connections, including Horace Fish and family, left Stanstead County, Quebec, to join the Mormons. Horace Fish stopped at "the Grove" twelve miles from Joliet, Illinois for three years.

June 27, 1840 - Joseph Fish was born at "The Grove", Will Co., Illinois.

September 1840 - The Fish family moved to Nauvoo, Illinois. Horace Fish worked on the Temple there.

May 23, 1846 - Horace Fish and family crossed the Mississippi River into Iowa, having been expelled from Nauvoo by those persecuting the Mormons. He was without a team, so his wagon stood on the western bank of the Mississippi River until he could hire it moved. He had made the wagon himself. Being short on metal, he used heavier timbers, and it was clumsy. He finally hired a team to move the family to the Des Moines River (about 20 miles).

1846-1847 - The Fish family spent the winter about four miles below Farmington, Iowa, on the Des Moines River. They, like many others, were without the necessary equipment and supplies to move on west.

May 8, 1847 - The fish family started west. Horace Fish had worked during the winter, and had purchased a yoke of oxen.

May 23, 1847 - The Fish family reached Council Point, Iowa, near Council Bluffs.

June, 1849 - Joseph Fish was baptized in the Missouri River by Bro. Clark.

1849-1850 - Joseph Fish attended school at Council Point, Iowa.

May 29, 1850 - The Fish family started west. They now had two yoke of oxen and two cows. Horace Fish had worked three years around Council Point, Iowa.

August 29, 1850 - The Fish family reached Salt Lake City. Joseph was now ten years old.

1850 - The fall, the Fish family moved to Centerville, near Farmington, Utah.

1852 - The Fish family started for Parowan, Utah. They wintered at Provo.

1852-1853 - Joseph went to school a few months while they were at Provo. He also got to attend a few months at Centerville the previous year or two.

April 30, 1853 - The Fish family arrived at Parowan, Utah. Joseph was nearly 13.

1853-1878 - Joseph Fish lived at Parowan. The school terms were very short. Here he grew to manhood; married; worked on the farm, in the mountains and canyons; did freighting, herding, and odd jobs. He managed a store, taught school, studied law and was admitted to the bar, managed a sawmill.

March 11, 1856 - Joseph Fish was ordained an elder by Francis T. Whitney.

May, 1857 - He made tar from pitchy timber.

August 26-29, 1857 - He went on an exploring expedition west of Parowan. Three were in the party.

September 4, 1857 - He went on an exploring expedition. Four were in the party. They went east and north, were out eight days.

November 30, 1857 - He began teaching school. He was called to do this by Pres. Dame.

1858 - He had become a good marksman. He excelled in the hunt and at shooting matches.

1858-1859 - He attended one term of school—three months. A teacher had come in. He joined a dramatic association. They put on twelve plays that winter. He was active in this association for many years.

March 22, 1859 - Joseph Fish married Mary Campbell Steele. He was nearly 19.

March 11, 1860 - Mary Josephine (Josie) was born, their first child.

1861 - Joseph Fish bought a heavy wagon for 105 gallons of tar that he had made. It was too heavy for one yoke of oxen. He started freighting. He also got out some alum and took to Salt Lake City to sell for supplies. He continued to work in the canyon also for several years.

April 12, 1862 - Frances Amelia was born, their second child.

June 29, 1864 - Catherine Delphina (Della) was born, their third child.

1865-1866 - Joseph Fish taught a term of school while he could not work in the canyon or on the mountain. He received very little from this that would help care for his family, but he could not sit around and swap yarns, as many did. While the snow stopped outside work, he had to be busy.

1865, Fall - He was elected aide de camp in the Iron Military District.

February 22, 1865 - He was ordained a Seventy by Wm. C. McGregor.

November 6, 1865 - He began a term of school (three months) in his own house. He had taken out a partition to make room. There were 60 enrolled.

April 20, 1866 - He received his commission in the militia.

1865-1866 - He and others got out a weekly paper (manuscript) for entertainment. They kept this up for some time taking turns editing it. He also kept active in the dramatic association, and took parts in most of the plays.

August 22, 1866 - He went out as First Lieutenant on a military expedition against the Indians. They were gone 17 days, encountered very bad weather. One man was killed. Over 60 were in the expedition.

It seems that he farmed each summer besides doing other work.

November 4, 1866 - Joseph Campbell, their first son was born.

June, 1867 - He worked in the canyon making tar.

July 3, 1867 - He started duty on the picket guard. He served here about a month. He had a very narrow escape and an exciting time fighting Indians.

1867-1868 - He taught school. (He may have taught school the previous year.)

May 27, 1868 - He began working in the Co-op Store. This was probably the beginning of a long career as merchant and bookkeeper.

September 1868 - He was appointed county and probate clerk.

October 28, 1868 - John Lazelle was born, their second boy.

November 30, 1868 - He began another term teaching school. Another clerk had been appointed to look after the co-op store.

March 14, 1869 - "I am now superintendent of the Sunday School." He does not say when he was appointed. He was ordained by Joseph F. Smith on this date as a member of the High Council of the Parowan Stake. It is not clear whether he was ordained a High Priest at this time or previously.

July 26, 1869 - Joseph Fish married Eliza Jane Lewis.

August 7, 1869 - He went to work in the co-op store again. He continued his work in the store for about three years. He also continued his activity in the dramatic association.

January 3, 1870 - Horace Fish (his father) died, age 71 years, six months.

May 19, 1872 - Jessie May was born. This was Mary's sixth and last child.

July 31, 1872 to September 19, 1872 - Joseph Fish went to Hatley, Stanstead County, Quebec to his father's old home to visit his father's people. He was set apart as a missionary for this trip. He visited all of his relatives that he could find. They welcomed him and listened to his message but chose to remain where they were.

September 30, 1872 - He started work in the co-op store again.

March 18, 1873 - He became manager and sawyer of the co-op sawmill. He continued at the sawmill work for about one year, but it could not be run in the winter.

March 14, 1874 - He started to work for Edward W. Thompson, his brother-in-law, in his store at Beaver. The sawmill did not run regularly. He had lost all of his stock in Indian raids, and did not have enough farm land to care for his family, so he took this job. His family remained at Parowan. He now began night rides on the buckboard (mail stage) which became so common later on in Arizona. He read law during his spare time.

October 3, 1874 - Joseph Fish was admitted to the bar. He did not practice law very much.

December 12, 1874 - Mary Campbell Steele Fish died leaving six children. Joseph Fish now gave up the store at Beaver and did odd jobs at Parowan. He did a little law work, posted books, did carpenter work and some sawmilling. Aunt Eliza took care of the children. She had no children of her own, and did a good part by them.

1875, Fall - Joseph Fish worked at the sawmill.

December 13, 1875 - He began teaching school again.

May 1, 1876 - Joseph Fish married Adelaide Margaret Smith.

1876 - He freighted and worked sawing lumber

December 4, 1876 - He began another term teaching school.

1877 - He worked in the canyon.

June 4, 1877 - He held justice's court.

September 1, 1877 - Horace Nathaniel was born, Adelaide's first child.

November 12, 1877 - He started teaching a term of school.

May 8, 1878 - He started working near Panguitch, taking up a farm, building and taking out the water on the land. He did some sawing of lumber between trips.

December 3, 1878 - Jesse N. Smith was called to Arizona. Joseph Fish decided to go with him. He sold out and started today. He took Adelaide, Joseph C., John L., and baby Horace.

January 16, 1879 - He started getting out house logs at Pinedale for houses.

1879 - He built several log houses in Snowflake. He made his own shingles by hand, the first made in this section. He put up twelve log houses in all in Snowflake.

June 9, 1879 - He was appointed Stake Recorder for the Eastern Arizona Stake. This may have begun him at writing history, for he kept a record of the settling and early history of all the wards of the new stake.

July 25, 1879 - He started for Utah to get the rest of his family.

August 14, 1879 - He arrived at Parowan. He visited and worked for nearly two months. He sawed lumber for more than two weeks.

October 9, 1879 - Mary Josephine married John Barraclough.

October 14, 1879 - He started for Arizona, taking his wife, Eliza, and daughters Della and Jessie May.

November 12, 1879 - He arrived at Snowflake, Arizona.

November and December 1879 - He superintended the erection of the log school house which was also used for dances, theatricals, meetings, and all public functions. It was finished for Christmas.

January 17, 1880 - Silas Leavitt was born, Adelaide's second child.

1880 - Joseph Fish worked at building, fencing and ditch work. He bought a pair of boots for cutting 1600 stakes and riders (posts).

July 5, 1880 - His grain was accidentally burned while he was in Utah. The entire colony was faced with hunger. The railroad was being built through Northern Arizona. Many went there to work to get food. Joseph Fish left this date to work on the railroad near Gallup. He kept the store and the accounts for the contractor, John W. Young, for seven months.

November 7, 1880 - He was chosen on the High Council of the Eastern Arizona Stake.

February 6, 1881 - He quit the railroad work and came home to Snowflake.

June 27, 1881 - The A.C.M.I. (Co-op) Store was organized. Joseph Fish was named secretary and treasurer. This was his forty-first birthday. He worked at the A.C.M.I. Until April 1, 1910, with the exception of about five years, part of the time as manager, but most of the time as bookkeeper.

November 1, 1881 - He went to Holbrook and took charge of the store (A.C.M.I.)

February 16, 1882 - The A.C.M.I. was moved to Woodruff. The railroad had been built as far as Holbrook. The station was moved and the land owners refused to sell the A.C.M.I. any land. (Probably because of a deal with John W. Young and they thought he was connected with the A.C.M.I.)

February 27, 1882 - Joseph Fish began surveying a ditch for Snowflake.

June 6, 1882 - Joseph Smith Fish was born, Adelaide's third and last child.

August 4, 1882 - Joseph Fish left for St. Louis to purchase goods for the A.C.M. I.

August 24, 1883 - He returned to Woodruff.

January 2, 1884 - He went to Albuquerque to purchase goods.

January 7, 1884 - He returned to Woodruff.

January 26, 1884 - Franklin Richards Fish was born, Julia's first child.

March 28, 1884 - Joseph Fish left for Chicago to purchase goods. Adelaide went along, going to Manassah to visit her sister Hannah Dalton. Others were on the same train going to Salt Lake City to conference.

April 10, 1884 - Joseph Fish reached Manassah on his return from Chicago and St. Louis. Adelaide was there.

April 14, 1884 - Jesse N. Smith, Adelaide's father, and Lot Smith had joined the party at Manassah. They all four left for Arizona this date.

April 17, 1884 - Joseph Fish, Adelaide, and her father reached Snowflake. Lot Smith had gone on to Winslow. Joseph Fish went to Woodruff the next day.

August 16, 1884 - Joseph Fish went to Chicago and St. Louis to purchase goods.

August 30, 1884 - He returned.

September 11, 1884 - Franklin Richards Fish died, not quite eight months old.

December 5, 1884 - Joseph Fish received word that he was sought for trial for polygamy. "To be accused was to be convicted" in those days, so he hid out.

December 6, 1884 - Joseph Fish, Jesse N. Smith, L. H. Hatch and J. H. Standifird left for Utah to seek advice from the leaders of the church.

December 8, 1884 - Lot Smith joined them at Sunset (near what is now Winslow)

December 25, 1884 - Joseph Fish reached Parowan, the others went on north.

December 29, 1894 - After visiting relatives, Joseph Fish went to Beaver and visited Josephine, his daughter, and others.

January 2, 1885 - Joseph Fish reached Salt Lake City.

January 6, 1885 - He started home.

January 13, 1885 - He reached Woodruff. He kept on the "underground." He worked on the A.C.M.I. books, making out a new ledger. There were 224 accounts.

February 5, 1885 - He started for Mexico. The Church leaders were trying to purchase land in Mexico to start a colony where they would not be jailed for polygamy. About 60 of the leading men from Northern Arizona left at this time, and it was a hard blow to the new colonies. Joseph Fish took his wife, Julia. His son John L. went along.

March 5, 1885 - The company crossed the line into Mexico after a very hard journey. Here Joseph Fish stayed for nearly a year without income and in much poverty, as were many of the refugees. They farmed a little and some left camp to seek work.

September 24, 1885 - John L. Fish left Mexico for home. The family was sick at home and needed help.

December 7, 1885 - Joseph Fish spent five days surveying for Mr. Campo.

December 27, 1885 - Eliza Fish was born at La Asunción, Mex., Julia's second child.

January 11, 1886 - Joseph Fish did surveying for the colony.

February 4, 1886 - Joseph Fish started home with Julia and baby.

February 26, 1886 - They arrived home, Snowflake, Arizona.

March 6, 1886 - Joseph Fish found his family destitute. He started work this date as salesman in the A.C.M.I. at Woodruff, at \$60 per month.

September 9, 1886 - He quit the store and prepared to farm.

September 23, 1886 - He bought the Mortensen place, two miles east of Pinedale.

September 28, 1886 - He moved part of his family to Pinedale.

December 8, 1886 - He moved the rest of the family to the new home, having sold out at Snowflake.

1887 - Joseph Fish made out the tithing reports, spent much time on missionary trips around the stake, did some surveying, and farmed at Pinedale.

September 12, 1887 - He returned to the A.C.M.I. at Woodruff as a Bookkeeper at \$75 per month. The salary was better than when he left, but he did not like being away from his family.

September 21, 1887 - Eliza died, one year nine months old.

December 16, 1887 - Adelaide and boys moved to Snowflake. The rest of the family lived at Pinedale.

December 17, 1887 - Snowflake Stake was organized. Joseph Fish was chosen Stake Recorder.

March 13, 1888 - Roland Woodruff Fish was born, Julia's third child.

September 4, 1888 - The A.C.M.I. was moved from Woodruff to Holbrook.

January 1, 1889 - The corps at the A.C.M. I. At Holbrook were J. R. Hulet, Theodore Farley, Clark Owens, Jr., and Joseph Fish. On his visits home he came via Woodruff on the buckboard to Snowflake.

January 21, 1889 to February 1, 1889 - He made out the tithing reports.

April 19, 1889 - Horace N. began the study of telegraphy at Holbrook.

June 29, 1889 - Joseph Fish started a homestead at the reservoir place two miles south of Snowflake. Julia and family lived there.

September 30, 1889 - He was made the superintendent of the A.C.M.I. J. R. Hulet went on a mission.

January 27 to February 4, 1890 - He made out the tithing reports.

March 31, 1890 - He went to Salt Lake City to conference.

April 3, 1890 - He visited his brother, Franklin at Grand Junction, Colorado.

April 4-6, 1890 - He attended Conference at Salt Lake City.

April 8, 1890 - He and wife, Eliza, did temple work at Logan, Utah.

April 13, 1890 - He arrived at Holbrook, Arizona. Eliza stayed in Utah.

July 13, 14, 1890 - He visited Fort Apache on A.C.M.I. business. While there, he talked up putting in a telegraph office at Snowflake.

August 14, 1890 - Wilford Preston Fish was born at Pinedale, Julia's fourth child.

January 25 to February 1, 1891 - He made up tithing reports (for the stake).

April 18, 1891 - He went to Los Angeles on store business. He never left the store except on store or church business, or on a short visit to his family.

April 22, 1891 - He saw Pres. Harrison in Los Angeles. His first view of a president. He said he was a pleasant and kind looking man.

April 24, 1891 - He arrived in Holbrook.

December 30, 1891 - J. R. Hulet returned and was put in as superintendent and Joseph Fish as bookkeeper at the A.C. M.I.

January 20-28, 1892 - He made out tithing reports for the stake.

January 14, 1893 - Florence Fish was born at Snowflake, Julia's fifth child.

January 23-30, 1893 - Joseph Fish made out the stake tithing reports.

July 2, 1893 - Joseph Fish quit the store to accept a position in a store in Mexico where he could have his family with him. The position was offered by George C. "Parson" Williams.

July 11, 1893 - He started for Mexico, taking Julia and her three children and Horace N. John L. went along to help and to look at the country.

July 31, 1893 - They reached the Mexico line, but could not pass the custom house.

August 6, 1893 - After waiting in vain for word, they left one team and wagon as security and went on into Bavispa, Oaxaca, Sonora. They had a very hard trip.

August 11, 1893 - Florence died at Batipeto. A very trying time.

August 13, 1893 - Florence was buried at the Bavispa Colony after great difficulties in reaching the place because of storm and impassable roads.

September 16, 1893 - George C. Williams gave up the mercantile venture. Joseph Fish decided to return to Graham County, Arizona.

September 2, 1893 - He started for Arizona.

October 2, 1893 - He reached Layton and began looking for a place to purchase.

October 10, 1893 - He started to make a home at Layton (Safford) Arizona.

November 28, 1893 - The family moved into the unfinished house.

March 31, 1894 - He worked on ward records. He was always active in the Church wherever he went.

May 10, 1894 - Zelma Fish was born, Julia's sixth child.

May 21, 1894 - He began building a store, having agreed on a partnership with Mr. Zundell.

August 9, 1894 - He finished the store building, shelving, etc.

September 1, 1894 - He was nominated by the Republican Party for state representative from Graham County.

September 3, 1894 - The shipment of goods came. He opened the store for business.

September 11, 1894 - He and Horace left for Snowflake on a visit.

September 19, 1894 - They arrived at Snowflake.

October 2, 1894 - He left alone on the return to Graham County.

October 8, 1894 - He arrived at Layton.

October 9, 1894 - He was in the store, and every week day from then on.

November 6, 1894 - He was elected to the legislature from Graham County.

January 16, 1895 - He left the store in Mr. Zundell's care and started for Phoenix.

March 21, 1895 - This was the last day of the legislature. It was very exciting. During the session he had introduced five or six bills. They all passed.

March 22, 1895 - He left for Layton, arriving the next day.

March 25, 1895 - He was back at work at the store, continuing six months.

June 12, 1895 - Zelma died.

September 30, 1895 - Mr. Zundell sold out. Joseph Fish was allowed \$2130 for his share for the year's work. He had drawn \$115. He drew the remaining \$15 and left without a job or anything to go on.

October 3, 1895 - He started work in the Co-op grist mill. Very little income, but better than no job at all.

February 11, 1896 - He worked on the house he had been building for Adelaide at Thatcher.

May 30, 1896 - He and Horace left for Snowflake. Adelaide was very sick.

June 1, 1896 - They reached Snowflake.

June 4, 1896 - Hannah Fish was born at Safford, Julia's seventh child.

June 18, 1896 - He and Horace left for Layton.

June 21, 1896 - They arrived at Layton.

July 9, 1896 - They all left Layton, having sold out, and started for Snowflake.

July 17, 1896 - They arrived at Snowflake.

August 15, 1896 - Joseph Fish started working at the A.C.M.I. again as bookkeeper. Julia lived at Woodruff, Adelaide at Snowflake, and Eliza was still in Utah. He slept in the store, and went out only to eat. He began the earnest study of history at this time, devoting some time every day. He left the store only for church work and to visit his family at Woodruff and Snowflake.

October 5, 1897 - Jessie May Fish married James Y. Lee.

September 22, 1898 - Horace left for a mission to Samoa.

September 24, 1898 - Joseph Fish started campaigning for election as recorder of Navajo County on the Republican ticket.

September 26, 1898 - Julia Fish was born at Woodruff, Julia's eighth child.

November 8, 1898 - Joseph Fish was defeated in the election. Winslow went solid for Winslow men.

May 29, 1899 - Julia died, age eight months.

June 11, 1899 - Joseph Fish went to Prescott on the Grand Jury. He spent all his spare time interviewing old timers, getting historical items.

June 16, 1899 - He returned to Holbrook.

May 19, 1900 - Adelaide (Addie) Fish was born at Woodruff, Julia's ninth child.

June 27, 1900 - The family had a birthday gathering for Joseph Fish. All the children were present but Horace (in Samoa) and Frances (in Nevada). Josephine came from Utah to be present.

October 13, 1901 - Aunt Eliza returned from Utah. She had been gone more than thirteen years caring for families of her relatives.

July 25, 1902 - Aunt Eliza moved to Holbrook to keep house for Joseph Fish. This was the first time he had a home in Holbrook during all his service there. He was now made comfortable.

July 24, 1903 - Jesse Lewis Fish was born, Aunt Julia's tenth child.

October 2, 1904 - Joseph Fish left on a visit to Utah.

November 4, 1904 - He returned to Holbrook, having had a good visit. He saw his sisters Sarah, Anna Marie, and Julia, and daughters Josephine and Frances.

December 6, 1904 - Joseph Campbell Fish died at Woodruff, Arizona.

August 14, 1905 - Joseph Fish was arrested for Polygamy.

December 8, 1905 - He was fined \$100 for polygamy. He also had lawyer's fee to pay.

January 13, 1908 - Delma Fish was born at Woodruff. Julia's eleventh child.

April 1, 1910 - Joseph Fish quit the store. He had worked as manager from 1881 to February 1885; as salesman from March 6, 1886 to September 9, 1886; as bookkeeper from September 12, 1887 to September 30, 1889; as superintendent from September 30, 1889 to December 30, 1891; as bookkeeper from December 30, 1891 to July 2, 1893 and again from August 15, 1896 to April 1, 1910. He had worked for the A.C.M.I. for more than 23 years, giving good, faithful service and long hours. He had lived very economically, and yet was in debt to the store when he quit.

1910 - He took the census of a large part of Navajo County, and from the income he paid his debt to the A.C.M.I.

October 2, 1911 - He sold his manuscript *History of Arizona* to the Territorial Historian, Sharlott Hall for \$350. He had written this after he took the bookkeeping job at the A.C.M.I. in 1896. He tried several times to get it published, but could not afford the publisher's price. He revised it several times. Then he wrote *The Pioneers of the Rocky Mountain Region*, having widened the scope of his historical studies. He made much progress on this later manuscript before he quit the store, but finished it afterwards.

October 27, 1911 - Jessie May Fish Lee died.

February 1, 1916 - Joseph Fish resigned as postmaster at Woodruff, having held the position for four years.

April 12, 1916 - He sold out and started to Utah, moving there.

May 3, 1916 - He arrived at Parowan, Utah. It was a hard trip.

May 12, 1916 - He arrived at Salt Lake City after visiting at Parowan and Beaver. Here he visited his son, Joseph S. Fish and sister, Julia Thompson.

May 13, 1916 - He tried to get his *Pioneers of the Rocky Mountain Region* published but failed. This manuscript contained about 2000 pages.

May 30, 1916 - He arrived at Delta, looking for a place to settle.

June 20, 1916 - He arrived at Beaver, seeking a home.

July 7, 1916 - He and family moved to a ranch near Beaver. He expected to pay for it partly with proceeds from his place in Arizona.

October 24, 1916 - His sister, Julia Thompson died at Salt Lake City.

March 1, 1916 - Failing to get pay for his property at Woodruff, Arizona, he gave up the place at Beaver, Utah.

March 26, 1917 - He and family left for Enterprise, Utah.

March 30, 1917 - They arrived at Enterprise and decided to reside there. Thus he was nearly 77 years of age when he started to build a new home and with very little to start with. They rented a place in town, and the two boys, Milford and Jesse, started freighting and doing anything that would bring in a living.

June 18, 1917 - He entered a homestead for Hannah about seven miles from town.

September 5, 1917 - His son, Silas L. came in from Provo where he was attending school. After a few days visit, Silas returned. Joseph Fish accompanied Silas as far as Beaver and visited relatives on the way.

November 8, 1917 - He moved to the homestead ranch, having built a stockade house there.

February 25, 1918 - He wrote that he had enjoyed the winter at the ranch. He had done grubbing and fencing preparing to farm, and had worked on his journal, probably revising it.

April 7, 1918 - They moved to town, having rented a house and 15 acres of land. Some of the family stayed on the homestead.

1918 - He worked at gardening, farming, and caring for the stock of the rented place.

August 14, 1918 - Hannah Fish married Jacob Bushar of Enterprise.

January 1, 1919 - Joseph Fish began service as Justice of the Peace of Enterprise.

October 2, 1919 - Joseph Fish and family moved into their new house. It was not yet finished, but they were happy to be in a house of their own. He wrote; "I had not hired one day's work on it, but did everything myself." He was now past 79 years of age, and had started the house about six months before.

November 24, 1919 - He started to copy his *Pioneers of the Rocky Mountains*, (2000 pp). He also worked on his house getting it finished.

May 12, 1920 - He wrote; "Not getting any pay (from the Woodruff property) has placed me in a cramped position with the high cost of living. We find it hard to get along and obtain the necessities of life. Aunt Eliza and Julia have displayed a wonderful devotion to the cause and support of the family, and have worked with great energy to obtain things to keep up the expenses of the home. They have taken in washing and worked out far beyond their strength to get the necessities that we are obliged to have, and I feel that they are deserving of a better lot than I have been able

to give them, but they are hopeful and cheerful and uncomplaining, which has endeared them to me far beyond the words that I am able to express, and we all hope that our lot will soon be in a more easy and prosperous path of life.”

June 6, 1920 - “Flour is \$8.60 a hundred.”

May 2, 1921 - He was still working on his house, finishing.

June 26, 1921 - Joseph, Frances, and Della came in for his birthday.

June 27, 1921 - His 81st birthday, a happy reunion was held.

September 2, 1921 - Silas came in for a visit (two days).

July 13, 1922 - “I have been at work in the garden, at my history, and various other jobs.”

August 22, 1922 - “I have been at work cementing up the cellar.”

September 3, 1922 - “I attended prayer circle Wednesday evening.” This is a frequent entry. Quotations are given to show his activity.

March 10, 1923 - “I write a little on revising of my historical work. I attended prayer meeting last Thursday evening.

June 5, 1923 - “Aunt Eliza and I went to St. George today to do a little work in the Temple.

July 29, 1923 - “I attended Priesthood Meeting in the forenoon and Sacrament Meeting in the afternoon.

August 18, 1923 - Joseph Fish Barraclough died at Beaver, Utah.

September 12, 1923 - “I have been fixing things around the place, and have been at work each day revising my historical sketch. I just finished up the last, volume 7, yesterday and put it away.” This was his seven volume work: Pioneers of the Rocky Mountains.

October 8, 1923 - “I got my pension, paid my tithing and helped about home.”

November 15, 1923 - “I have been at work shucking corn and getting up items on the early settling of Enterprise.

November 19, 1923 - “I attended our school by invitation and gave a short historical talk on the early days of Utah.”

November 24, 1923 - “I had an interview with Bro. Keets from whom I obtained a few items of early day history.”
(A historian at 83)

April 18, 1924 - He went ward teaching.

June 22, 1924 - “Aunt Eliza and I started to conference at Hurricane.”

June 12, 1924 - “We went through the temple twice today.”

June 28, 1924 - “I went ward teaching. While digging to find the pipe line I had a sun stroke or something and was insensible for an hour or more.”

September 11, 12, 1924 - He helped haul corn fodder and corn and says, “I stood the work very well.”

January 26, 1925 - He mentions attending prayer meeting and church. He says: "I keep fairly well for me and spend much of my time during the day at work on my historical work, *The History of Enterprise*."

April 23, 1925 - "I manage to write a little each day on my historical work."

May 24, 1925 - "I am doing what I can on *The History of Enterprise*."

June 27, 1925 - "Today is my 85th birthday. The boys were busy with hay, so our birthday dinner was postponed until the next day (Sunday) when the family and Lucile Cottam met and we had a fine dinner and then went to church."

September 26, 1925 - "Saturday I worked at making a ditch through the top of the lot."

December 31, 1925 - "I went to St. George to attend the wedding of my son and to do a little work in the temple."

January 1, 1926 - Jesse Lewis Fish married Lucile Cottam.

March 10, 1926 - "I have had a stroke or something of the kind. I cannot use my left hand or my left foot."

April 1, 1926 - "I am improving from my stroke, but very slowly."

September 4, 1926 - Joseph Fish died at Enterprise, Utah, age 86 years, 5 months, 13 days. He was buried at Enterprise, Utah.

1940 - For the one hundredth anniversary of his birth, his descendants placed a six foot granite shaft at his grave at Enterprise.

On the face is inscribed:

Joseph Fish 1840-1926
Pioneer of Utah and Arizona
Teacher, Builder, Historian, Friend

On one side:

With Zeal he Builded Homes in the
Wilderness
By Integrity he Builded Ideals and
Character

On the other side:

He Chronicled the Events
As they happened
While the West was Young
and Unsubdued

Father's Activities

One of the earliest activities Father mentioned was his church activity. He was ordained an Elder March 11, 1856. That was three months before he was sixteen.

To show his attitude, I am copying a paragraph which he wrote under date of November 15, 1855, but he omitted this paragraph from his revised writings, probably because he felt that it was egotistical:

“I was re-baptized the next day. Although young, it was my desire to do the things that were right, to live my religion and be a saint that might be fitted for future usefulness. I have often thought that I was more thoughtful than many of the boys of my age, always despising an evil act or rude conduct, and my path was marked out accordingly, and my determination to shun bad company was fixed.”

The Elder's quorum was very active, and this helped him keep up his interest in church work. He attended Sunday School and Church regularly, and he said that this influenced his life habits.

He kept up his church activity for seventy years, spending a large part of his time in this work. He was almost constantly in some ward or stake position. He was a Ward Teacher who made 100% of his visits, even making them regularly when he was past 84 years of age.

He was Sunday School Superintendent as a young man, and was called into the High Council of Parowan Stake March 14, 1868. Soon after he moved to Arizona, he was called into the High Council of the newly organized Eastern Arizona Stake, and he toured this large stake many times as a stake officer. He was chosen Stake Recorder in the new stake June 29, 1879, and served in this capacity for nearly fourteen years. He made an outstanding record in this work, which was the beginning of his historical writings. He recorded the founding and early history of all the wards of the stake. This included most of the settlements in what are now Apache and Navajo Counties, Arizona.

Father believed in the religious ideals of Honesty, Chastity, Brotherly love, Service, Industry, and Charity. They motivated his acts throughout life. He was ever loyal to the Church, the State, the Community, and to moral standards and high ideals.

As a boy and youth, he worked on the farm and in the canyons and mountains. He became an expert axeman. He made tar from pitchy timber, and fence posts and building logs from other timber. He worked on sawmills and became an expert sawyer and mill superintendent. He had a bad cough for a long time, often spitting blood. He felt better in out door work.

As a young man he weighed only 120 pounds, but he could swing a scythe or cradle, keeping up with men of 160 pounds or over.

He was one of the explorers of Southern Utah, and probably made the first rough map of that region. He helped find the passes through which the Indians drove off the settlers' stock; and he became an Indian fighter, not from choice but from necessity.

He joined the Iron County Militia as a youth and worked up to regimental adjutant. He was First Lieutenant in the military expedition against the Indians in 1866.

He began teaching school at seventeen—not from choice, but because the Stake President called him to do so. He had only a limited amount of schooling himself, but he was an apt pupil. He continued to teach for several years. One winter's term of three months was the length of the school season in Parowan at that time. He received very little for this service, but he preferred to serve rather than sit around and gossip during the winter months when one could not work on the farm nor in the mountains or canyons.

He helped entertain by joining a theatrical organization in Parowan. They staged high class plays which were thoroughly enjoyed by all the community. He kept up this activity until he got into the mercantile business in Arizona and was taken away from home.

Also for entertainment, he and two or three others got out a manuscript paper of town news and happenings before the printing press came to town. They took turns editing the paper.

He managed mercantile institutions in Parowan and Beaver, Utah, and in Woodruff, Holbrook, and Thatcher, Arizona.

During his spare time at Beaver, he studied law and was admitted to the bar in both Utah and Arizona. However, he did not practice much.

During his spare time at Holbrook, he studied history, and he wrote the first complete history of Arizona. He next expanded his historical studies to this entire Rocky Mountain Region, and he finally wrote seven volumes, over 2,000 pages, completing this manuscript after he left the store.

He was handy man in every community and on the road. His father was handy with tools, and could make anything from a pair of shoes to a wagon. When Father was on the road, he often mended wagon wheels, set tires, and did other things to help the travelers reach their destinations.

Father was a pioneer, the type of man needed on the frontier. Before any sawmill was brought into what is now Apache and Navajo Counties, Arizona, he used his ax to fell and trim house logs. He was so skillful with his ax that the logs looked almost as if they had been planed on two sides. He laid up twelve of the early log houses of Snowflake, Arizona, and made by hand his own shingles, the first made in that region. He also superintended laying the first log school house in Snowflake. This was used for church gatherings of all kinds, school, dances, theatricals, and all public meetings.

For getting out the water, a surveyor was needed. Father improvised a level and laid out the ditch. He later sent for a transit and re surveyed the ditch and gained only a few inches on the survey made with his level. He made no money at surveying, preferring to do it mainly as community service.

Father was also a legislator. He represented Graham County in the Arizona Territorial Legislature in 1895. He did not believe in many laws, but he introduced six measures and they were all passed. He saw the needs of the Territory.

Father was an expert Bookkeeper, accountant, and auditor. It was as bookkeeper that he perhaps worked the longest, mainly at A.C.M.I., at Holbrook, Arizona.

His avocation or hobby was history. When he went to the Arizona Legislature, he became interested in the history of Arizona. This was in 1895. It was not until he moved back to Navajo County, however, in 1896, and resumed his work as bookkeeper at the A.C.M.I., Holbrook, that he was able to give much time to his historical researches. He wrote in his Autobiography that the closing time at the store was usually 9:00 p.m. or later, at that time. Yet he said that he usually put in two hours a day reading history, writing letters for historical information, and writing up his findings. Whenever he took a trip or met any old timers, he gathered all the information he could. He succeeded in getting many of the older residents to write him details and incidents. He also purchased a book on western history each payday, thus building up a fine library of historical books, and many of them rare volumes. This systematic study made him an authority on Arizona history, and he wrote a 762 page manuscript on Arizona and tried repeatedly to get it published. He was not financially able to pay the publisher's price. After trying several times to publish his *History of Arizona*, he finally sold it to Sharlott Hall, the Territorial Historian, for \$350, on October 2, 1911, with the promise that she would publish it. Soon after, however, there was a change in governors and Miss Hall resigned. The manuscript was never published, but was drawn on very heavily by Farish, McClintock, and others who wrote up Arizona history.

Soon after this it was discovered that pages 111 to 320 of the 762 pages of the manuscript were missing. Father never found out what became of these 210 pages. The remainder of the manuscript is still in the State Historian's office at Phoenix, Arizona. A copy of part of Father's *History of Arizona* is in the L.D.S. Church Historian's office at Salt Lake City, Utah. This includes a little less than half of the material in the manuscript at Phoenix.

Fragments of Father's manuscript on Arizona were not long ago in the Arizona Library at Garvanza (Los Angeles). They are probably still there. Neither of these contains any of the missing 210 pages. I do not know how to account for these copies unless they were obtained from Phoenix. Father completed his *History of Arizona* by 1901. He sent it off to publishers at least four times. Each time he looked it over and revised it, but how much, I do not know. Neither do I know what became of the old sheets from which he made his revisions. I understand that the University of Arizona and the State Teachers' College at Tempe both have copies of Father's manuscript, copied from the one at Phoenix. The copy now at Phoenix is not the original, but a copy of it. The present State Historian says he does not know what became of the original.

When Father finished writing his *History of Arizona*, he was so deeply interested in Western history that he continued his research, and began writing a seven-volume manuscript on the Pioneers of the Rocky Mountains. He tried to get this published in 1916 but failed since his only hope to publish it was on the royalty plan, and he could not find a publisher who would take it without cash payment. He revised and completely rewrote six of the seven volumes, according to his Autobiography, between November 24, 1919 and September 12, 1923. I cannot learn what became of the other Volume, Volume VI, unless it is the volume on Arizona, part of which is the manuscript I mentioned as being in the L.D.S. Church Historian's Office in Salt Lake City. He left all seven volumes with Andrew Jensen, Assistant Church Historian, in 1916, for him to look over, and he says he never got Volume VI back. I asked Andrew Jensen about it several years before he died, but he could not tell me anything about it. It is possible that the partial *History of Arizona* now in that office is part of the missing volume.

Within a month after Father finished copying his manuscript on the Pioneers of the Rocky Mountains, although he was then past 83 years of age, he began collecting data for writing the *History of Enterprise, Utah*, where he lived the last nine years of his life.

He thus spent nearly thirty years in continuous historical research and writing. We know from his Autobiography that he worked on the *History of Enterprise* until May 24, 1925, and he probably kept it up until his stroke nearly a year later.

While he failed to get any of his historical works published, yet he got a great deal of satisfaction from his studies. He really enjoyed this work. It was his recreation. He could not be idle. When he was not working in the garden or about the place he was reading or writing, or else active in church or community service.

Family Affairs and Finances

As a financier, Father was not very fortunate. The following incident tells the story:

In 1903, my brother, Joseph S. Fish, went to Texas to take the examination for admission to West Point as a military cadet. He passed the mental test but was turned down because his lungs were affected, or had been. All the family was surprised. When he returned, he asked Father if any of the Fish family had ever had consumption. Father replied, "Joseph, as far back as I can get any information on the Fish ancestry, they were all noted for consuming everything they could get." So it seemed to be with Father and his family. (As a young man, Father had a persistent cough, and often would spit blood.)

Father and Aunt Mary started out married life when Father was almost 19 years old. They had very little to start with, but in their happy companionship with each other they really enjoyed life. Father wrote: "My earthly belongings were one yoke of steers, a cow, and one Spanish mare which I traded off for sheep. With this start we went bravely to work." They seemed to get along as well as the pioneers of that time usually did. As the family grew, they accumulated a few more belongings and did fairly well until 1870, when the Indians got away with all his stock. This left Father with nothing to work with but his hands. He managed the Co-op store for a few years and was getting on his feet again. Then he was put in charge of the Co-op Sawmill. This really paid better than the store work, but the mill had to be shut down in winter. Then the demand for lumber fell off and he was without a job again. Father was now glad to get a job in Edward W. Thompson's store in Beaver. Aunt Mary's health got worse and worse. She had not been well since Jessie May was born, 1872. Aunt Mary died December 12, 1874, leaving six children. This was a severe blow to Father, but Aunt Eliza, who had come into the family as a polygamous wife four years previous to this, cared for the children as if they had been her own. (She had no children herself.)

Then followed four years of odd jobs and no regular income. Father finally decided to take up a farm near Panguitch. While engaged in this enterprise, Jesse N. Smith was called to move to Arizona, and Father decided to go with him. They had been closely associated ever since they went to the same school in Davis County, Utah, when Father was ten years old. From this time on they were the closest of friends, and were greatly devoted to each other. May 1, 1876, Father and my mother, (Adelaide M. Smith, daughter of Jesse N. Smith) were married. January 16, 1879, they arrived at Snowflake. There Father began again to build a home and get a new start.

He was doing fairly well financially as manager of the A.C.M.I. when the persecutions for polygamy began in Arizona. He had taken another wife, Aunt Julia A. Reidhead, April 19, 1883. February 5, 1885, he took Aunt Julia and fled to Mexico. He had to flee or else face a long prison term. If he had been arrested, it is almost certain that he would have received the same sentence that others in the same boat received. His year in Mexico broke him up financially.

When he returned, 1886, he went back to the A.C.M.I. as salesman at \$60 per month. Of course another superintendent had been appointed in his absence, the one he nominated (J. R. Hulet). He could not keep his large family on this salary, so, after seven months in the store he quit and tried farming.

September 12, 1887, he returned to the A.C.M.I. as bookkeeper at \$75 per month. In 1888, the A.C.M.I. was moved to Holbrook. Here it took one third of Father's salary for board alone. This amount would have kept one family in Holbrook, but Father would not consent for them to live there for two reasons. At this time Holbrook was a frontier town of saloons and gambling halls. There was no church, no refining influence there. He did not want his children brought up under that environment. Then there was greater danger of his being persecuted for polygamy if he had his family live where anti-Mormons could get the evidence about his family relations. He therefore lived a very lonely and uncomfortable life in Holbrook for eleven years, living in the store, sleeping there on a cot, going out only to eat, and working fourteen to eighteen hours a day seven days of the week, except when he went to Snowflake, Pinedale, or Woodruff to visit his family, or took a stake missionary trip as stake officer and visited the wards. During all the many years that Father served as Bookkeeper in the A.C.M.I. at Holbrook, he never had a stove in the office, even in the coldest weather. Visitors said he must have had an Iron constitution.

Aunt Eliza spent about thirteen years in Utah caring for motherless children of her relatives much of the time. My mother, Adelaide, lived at Snowflake all during this period but one year (1886-1887) which was spent at Pinedale. Aunt Julie lived at Woodruff most of the time, but she also lived at Pinedale a few years and at the homestead two

miles south of Snowflake 1889 to 1893. She went with Father on the ill-fated trip to Mexico in 1893, and lived in Graham County while Father was trying to make a start "on the Gila," (1893-1896).

Of course Father was dissatisfied at living apart from his family. He quit the store twice (1886 and 1893) to try other enterprises so he could enjoy the association of his family. Both of these ventures left him worse off financially. His trip to Mexico in 1893 and the three years he spent in Graham County were especially hard on him, both physically and financially.

In 1903 he consented for Aunt Eliza, who had returned from Utah the year before, to come to Holbrook and keep house for him. Therefore for the last eight years of his sojourn in Holbrook he really enjoyed the comforts of home life. This is doubly appreciated because of the many lonely and uncomfortable years he had spent there.

In 1910 he quit the store and he and Aunt Eliza moved to Woodruff where Aunt Julia was living. He had very little income there, but he received some remuneration from his work as Justice of the Peace, as postmaster, and as water measurer for a time. However, he apparently got along as well as when he was getting \$75 a month at Holbrook with higher living expenses.

When the Woodruff dam went out in 1915, he felt too old to help build another dam so he decided to move to Utah. He made the move in 1916, when he was nearly 76 years old. He realized very little from the sale of his property at Woodruff, and after trying for a year in various localities to buy a place, and being on heavy expenses, he finally settled at Enterprise, Utah, with almost nothing to go on.

If it had not been for his pension of \$20 per month which was granted after he moved to Enterprise, I do not see how he could have built his home there. This pension was allowed for military service in early Parowan days (1866) when the Indians were very hostile.

At Enterprise, he lived without many of the comforts which we have now come to regard as bare necessities. His whole family, Aunts Eliza and Julia and children, all worked very hard to help make the living, seeking work whenever they could get it. Read his comment on the situation under date of May 12, 1920. He was exceedingly devoted to his family. He greatly regretted that he had not been able to make them all more comfortable.

I have one regret in writing this sketch. If I tell the whole truth, I must mention one unpleasant thing in this story. It was Father's greatest sorrow. He and my mother separated at Mother's request. This was after Mother's children were grown. It was not because of another man.

Mother was sick for many years. She was an invalid, confined to her bed while Father was in Graham County trying to build a home and make a start there. Father suffered many reverses and could not help her financially nor with his presence just when she needed aid and comfort the most. This perhaps started the coolness. After Father came back to Navajo County, she continued in poor health for many years. What person is normal during sickness? Then, after this, Father moved with the rest of his family to Utah and they never met again. Could they have been brought together after her health improved, there might have been a different story to tell here. I believe that since they have met on the "other side" that all difficulties have melted away.

Father's Characteristics

Joseph Fish was five feet eleven and a half inches tall, fair skin, and dark wavy hair. As a young man he was very slender, weighing about 120 pounds for several years. His health improved as the years passed, and in middle life he weighed about 165 pounds.

He was quick, active, and industrious. He was always busy, but he never hesitated to lay his work aside if a neighbor needed help or the community was engaged in a project of improvement or the church made a call of service.

Soon after he was first married, his two brothers-in-law, large, well built men, went with him to cut posts. They joked him for being so slender, and wondered if he could cut half as many posts as either of them. When the day's work was done, it was found that he cut more than both of them together. Notwithstanding his poor health as a boy and young man, he was always a hard worker. He was so puny as a child that the doctor told his mother not to expect him to live to maturity.

He was always deeply religious—not sanctimonious. His standards of chastity, honesty, good will, and service were sacredly cherished and guarded. He always had family prayers when at home, even when there was company present. He spent a large part of his time in church work from early manhood. He was personally acquainted with all of the leaders of the Church. He nearly always met them on their visits to Arizona and he received cordial greetings from them whenever he went to Salt Lake City, as he did occasionally.

He had but very little schooling, and yet he became well-posted in many lines through persistent study. He was a self-taught surveyor, bookkeeper, accountant, lawyer, and historian. His English was not always grammatical; yet note his command of language as shown by a toast he gave at Enterprise, Utah, July 24, 1920, at their Pioneer Day celebration:

“Utah, may her future be as glorious as her past has been honorable and progressive. May her mountains send forth increasing streams of water to moisten the sun parches plains, and cause gardens and farms to replace the gray serge of the desert. May her verdure-clad and silver-lined hills pour forth increasing streams of mineral wealth to enrich her people, beautify her cities and towns, increase the commerce of the world, and add to the nation's sinews of war. May her banner float on the outer walls (the lofty peaks that surround her peaceful vales) as an ensign of peace, waving to the stranger an invitation to a land where her education stands in the limelight of a modern civilization as the most perfect to be found, and where the songs of her happy boys and girls (Utah's best crop) echo up the rocky cliffs of the mountain's sides and send back the joyful refrain 'peace on earth, good will to man.' Where it is said of her laws and judiciary, ever will the right come uppermost, and ever will justice be done in this fair land, Utah, the brightest spot on this green earth. Of all her sister states, may she become the pride beloved by heaven and all the world besides.”

He was never able to chase the wolf very far from his door. Yet he and his family lived in circumstances comparable to those of the pioneers of his day. But he had to work hard and long hours, and away from home and family many long years of his life. How he could work fourteen hours a day and many times longer and still carry on historical research on the side and write thousands of pages of history also is marvelous.

Industry and determination to carry out a plan in spite of handicaps received a new coat of polish in his life. He is an example for all time of self-effort and perseverance.

Father's Four Wives

I have been asked to give some of the characteristics of the mothers of Father's children. This is a difficult assignment. Obviously, I never met Aunt Mary. She died more than five years before I was born. Father says: "She was five feet two inches tall, weighed about 120 pounds. She had very light brown hair, dark eyes, and a very white transparent skin. She was of a very sociable disposition, very good company, being rather quick witted. She was very ambitious, high minded, and an incessant worker. She despised anything low or mean. Her social disposition never failed to win friends wherever she was placed." From this, she must have been very charming.

No one can read Father's journal without concluding that Father and Aunt Mary were very happy together, and that they really enjoyed each other's company. Father married Aunt Eliza with Aunt Mary's full consent. Of course, it must have been a trial for Aunt Mary to give her consent, but she did, and she and Aunt Eliza were like two sisters, living in the same house for more than five years.

Aunt Mary's death was a severe blow to Father, but Aunt Eliza took care of the six children as if they had been her own. In fact, Aunt Eliza, who was a large woman, had a large heart, and she mothered many children. She was the warm hearted type and had to render service wherever she went.

Being denied the blessing she longed for—children of her own—Aunt Eliza bestowed that great love on others. She mothered Aunt Mary's six children and raised them. She was a second mother to my mother's children, also to Aunt Julia's children. About 1887, she went to Utah and stayed for thirteen years. Her brother, Ben's wife, died and she cared for his children for about five years. She nursed the sick and was a good angel in many homes.

After returning to Arizona, she persuaded Father to let her keep house for him in Holbrook, so for the last eight years of his stay at Holbrook he enjoyed the comforts of home life and the association of part of his family. This was especially appreciated, for Father had spent about eleven years without the comforts of home, living and sleeping in the store and longing for the companionship of his family.

When John's wife, Melvina, died, she took the baby Ambrose to raise. Aunt Eliza was greatly beloved wherever she went. Her great heart would not let her hurt anyone's feelings.

My mother, Adelaide, was not strong physically; however she was always ambitious. She learned to make wool and wax flowers, and was a gifted reader and actor. She learned telegraphy, and had the telegraph office in her home about thirty-one years, being the telegraph operator herself the last twenty years of that time. She operated the telephone exchange for more than five years, and was Snowflake's postmaster for nearly thirteen years.

She was especially religious and prayerful. She always had a consuming desire to do temple work, and really enjoyed the five years she spent at Salt Lake City doing genealogical research and temple work.

She had three children, and inspired them all with a determination to go to school. Horace attended business college in Salt Lake City. Joseph S. And I finished college, mainly on our own. Joseph S. received his bachelor's degree, and I finally received my Master's degree when I was fifty-one years old.

Mother was five feet two inches tall, with fair skin. She was a strict disciplinarian, and insisted that her children be home of nights and do their home work for school. She sent them to school regularly, even when she was sick in bed and needed waiting on. She also sent them to Sunday School and Church regularly, and insisted on their doing their assigned work in the Church. This however, was true of all of Father's wives, as far as I can learn. We children never discerned any disaffection until after we were grown. Every sentiment in the home was of full loyalty, and nothing to the contrary ever entered our heads.

Aunt Julia is a small woman, also. She has always been most loyal to Father, and never complained even when she had to live in poverty and under the most discouraging circumstances.

She went with father on both of his trips to Mexico. On both of these occasions their experiences were most disheartening and hard on all who went. The sore lack of proper food and shelter, and the difficulties encountered were a severe test of patience and courage. Aunt Julia's small physique had a store of hope, courage, endurance, and

loyalty, and her sweet disposition made her a support and help in those trying times. She and Aunt Eliza also faced the hardships and difficulties in getting a start in Enterprise, and worked very hard to help make the family living. In fact, all of Aunt Julia's children who were home helped with the family living. Father's own words were a good summary. Under date of February 25, 1918, he wrote: "Take is all around, we have passed a very enjoyable winter."

Aunt Julia still lives (1944) in the house Father built when he was nearly 79 years old, and it would do your heart good to drop in and feel of her sweet spirit.

Polygamy

Much has been written about polygamy among the Mormons. Only those who have first hand information are qualified to judge it. I was frequently in the homes of several polygamous families, and I was born and raised in one of them. I know positively that no family relationship could be more pure and chaste than that of the families of which I have firsthand information.

There were minor jealousies and some hot words at times, perhaps. But the usual polygamous family among the Mormons was as loyal and united as the BEST monogamous families that I have known. Sometimes members of polygamous families slipped—but so do some others. In my observation, the percentages are not in favor of monogamous families. I believe that the average polygamous family among the Mormons was above the average family anywhere in chastity, unity, unselfishness, loyalty to church and state, and general good citizenship.

I have every reason to believe that my parents and the other wives of my father were as chaste and clean and high minded as can be found anywhere. Father obeyed the law of celestial marriage as a religious rite. It was not for selfish nor carnal purposes. He was persecuted for polygamy. He went through trials, poverty, and many hardships for his religious beliefs. People who do not understand the motive look upon polygamy as sinful. They think it is a principle for gratifying lustful desires. They do not realize that only the most chaste and high minded men and women were permitted to be sealed under Church rules. Those who disregarded the church rules were excommunicated. Most writers who have attempted to picture polygamous practices among the Mormons have not understood the basic principles. The Giant Joshua is a gross misrepresentation of the spirit and the general working out of this principle as practiced by the Mormons. I know whereof I speak because I have read the book and I have lived in a polygamous family, and I have lived in close associations with other such families.

The Mormon Church no longer continues polygamous marriages. What I have said has no bearing on polygamy as practiced by any other cult, for I have had no contacts with any of them and I am not in a position to judge their motives.

I know that my parents' motives were pure and holy, and that they regarded the principle as divinely inspired. They also accepted the stand that the Church took when it declared that no more plural marriages would be permitted under the rules of the Church.

The Children

Aunt Mary had six children and they all lived to maturity and had families of their own. Josephine and Frances faced difficult situations, sickness and sorrows, without permitting their trials to sour them. They gladdened many hearts and spread sunshine wherever they went. Della, Joseph C., and John L. were leaders in the communities where they lived, and were also greatly beloved. Della was a gifted poet. Jessie May taught school and then efficiently raised two families for her husband—one left motherless before she arrived, and her own children.

My mother, Adelaide, had three children. They also all had families of their own. Horace did not have very good health. He became very talented in music, and was an efficient telegraph operator. He now (1944) lives at 2101 Alandale Ave., Los Angeles. Silas is a school teacher and high school principal. He served more than five years as bishop of Snowflake, Arizona, where he still resides (1944). Joseph S. was a real orator with a rare gift of preaching the Gospel. He spent many years teaching in L.D.S. seminaries, and that was work he really enjoyed. He died in 1940.

Aunt Julia had eleven children. Five died in infancy: Franklin, Eliza, Florence, Zelma, and Julia. Six are still living (1944) and have families of their own except Wilford, who married late in life. His wife had a family, and so he now has a family also. Roland became an expert carpenter and builder. He now lives in Salt Lake City. Wilford was Father's standby in getting a start at Enterprise, and he continued to help the family until middle life, when he married. He now lives in Salt Lake City. Hannah married Jacob Bushar and lives in Enterprise where she is a very live wire. Adelaide (Addie) married Delmar Ragle and lives in El Monte, California, and has a fine young family. Addie is another member of the family who has had anxious hours because of sickness, but she has faced the difficulties bravely. Her husband was much improved the last I heard, and they were looking toward the future with great hope. Jesse L. has a fine large young family and will be heard from. I have not seen Jesse L. Since he was a boy, but I have been in his home, visited with his wife and children, and the spirit of the home is very, very good. His address is Pintura, Utah. Delma married Orlas Alger. They also have a fine family and live in Brigham City, Utah. These addresses are all for 1944.

Of Father's twenty children, all six of the first family have finished their mission and gone on to their reward, also one of the second family; these seven, with five of the third family who died in infancy leave only eight still living. These eight have a heavy assignment if they live up to Father's standards and hopes.

Father's Autobiography

His Autobiography tells the story of his ancestry, of the driving of the Mormons from Nauvoo, of the trek across the plains, and of early conditions in Northern Utah. It gives a vivid account of the settlement of Parowan, the first settlement in Utah south of Payson, and a picture of the old fort, of the Indian depredations, of the winters' amusements and the year-round labors and conditions in that pioneer town. It also gives an account of the founding of Snowflake, and of the vicissitudes of the pioneers of Northern Arizona.

It contains vivid pictures of pioneer life in Mexico, and of the hardships endured in traveling the rough and dangerous roads of that time.

It also gives a picture of life in Graham County, Arizona, in 1893-1896, also of the workings of the Arizona Legislature at that time. It closes with a description of life in Enterprise, Utah, from 1917 to 1926. This is the period of Father's old age, and occupies more than 80 pages of his Autobiography. This section is somewhat monotonous in the entries, but this is the part of his Journal that he did not get to rewrite. He did not have the latter part divided into chapters at all. The last three chapters I divided and named, to carry out the scheme he had begun. I am sure that he would not have given them the titles I did.

After going through Father's Journal several times my admiration for him has increased. I always thought that he was an outstanding man. Now I know he was.

He faced poverty, reverses, hardships, difficulties, until it makes one's heart bleed; but he came through clean, honest, determined, and with unwavering faith. His standards, his industry, his service, his religious faith, and his devotion to his church, his country, and his family will inspire his posterity to the latest generation. May God bless his memory.

Silas L. Fish, Snowflake, Arizona
August 25, 1944

**AUTOBIOGRAPHY
OF JOSEPH FISH
1840-1926**

**1840
Chapter 1
Ancestry and Birth**

Having been born of goodly parents, I commenced my pilgrimage at Twelve Mile Grove, a place about twelve miles from Joliet, Will County, Illinois, on Thursday afternoon, June 27, 1840. My father's name was Horace Fish, who was the youngest son of Joseph Fish who was the son of Nathan Fish, who was born in Massachusetts and was supposed to be a descendent of Joseph Fish who was Chaplain in Captain Churchill's company in the campaign against King Phillip. Nathan had two sons, Joseph and Samuel. When Captain Kidd was commissioned and sent by the British government to exterminate the pirates that then infested the seas, Nathan sailed with him and was never heard of after. Samuel, his youngest son, settled later in New York state. The eldest son, Joseph, my grandfather, was born April 17, 1770, in Pepperell, New Hampshire. He married Sarah Spear and they had four sons, Lemuel, Joseph, Champion, and Horace. Joseph enlisted in the service of the United States in the War of 1812, and died with fever while in the service.¹

My mother's name was Hannah Leavitt. She was born in the state of Vermont December 26, 1805,² and was the youngest daughter of Jeremiah Leavitt and Sarah Shannon. These two had ten children: Wire, John, Nathaniel, Jeremiah, Josiah, Rebecca, Lydia, Sally, Betsey, and Hannah. Jeremiah Leavitt's father was Nathaniel Leavitt.³

In the great struggle for independence my forefathers took sides with the Colonists, and two of my grandmother (Sally Spear's) brothers were under General Morgan in his company of sharp shooters and did good service at Saratoga and Stillwater and other well-fought fields.

My grandfather Joseph Fish and his wife Sally Spear were the first settlers of Stanstead County, Lower Canada (Quebec). They penetrated into the forest for many miles and located at Hatley, Quebec. They knew nothing of the boundary lines, and did not know for some time that they were beyond the limits of the United States. In the settling of this place, the few pioneers who came to this unbroken forest underwent many privations and hardships. Utensils and household goods, such as they were, as well as provisions, had to be packed into the depths of this wilderness mainly on their backs, and many were the trials and hardships that they endured before houses were built and farms cleared off for cultivation. The whole country was a dense forest, and all the land for cultivation and pasturage had to be cleared by cutting down and burning the timber.

The forest was infested with wild beasts of many different kinds. The black bears seem to have given them some trouble; they ravished their fields and sometimes carried off pigs, etc. One night when my grandfather was away and my grandmother was left alone, she heard something eating the potatoes that were in a room or shed adjoining the house. No other thought entered her mind except that it was a bear. She feared to face the terrible beast, but she knew that the loss of the potatoes meant that they would soon feel the pangs of hunger, so she grabbed the gun and rushed out to give battle to the intruder. Luckily, it proved to be a domestic animal. The cow had found her way to the vegetables that were so highly prized. Thus there were alarms of various kinds mixed with the hardships of a frontier life in this forest wilderness.

On one occasion, a few of the settlers made an attempt to catch a bear that had been ravaging their fields and gardens. They placed a trough with sugar in it at a place where the bear had been coming in, and then added a large quantity of brandy. The bear is very fond of sweet, and when Mr. Bruin found the sugar which was saturated with brandy, he eagerly licked it all up. The next morning the bear was found in a drunken stupor. The bear was loaded onto an improvised sled and hauled to the village where he was chained up. When he came out of his stupor, he became so ferocious that it was deemed best to kill him.

Few were the articles brought in, and these pioneers had to make nearly everything they used. At times sewing thread was so scarce that a kind of tough bark was used for mending the clothing in place of thread. Whenever the clothes were washed, these patches had to be put on anew.

My father was born at Hatley, Lower Canada (Quebec), January 6, 1799, and March 18, 1824 he married Miss Hannah Leavitt who bore him six children: Julia (born July 18, 1825), Sarah (born October 24, 1828), Betsy Jane (born 1830 or 1837), Joseph (born June 27, 1840), Anna Maria (born in May 1842), and Franklin Richards (born April 12, 1848).

As my father was the youngest son, his parents requested him to live with them after his marriage, and he did so for some time. He finally began a home for himself. He built a frame house, cleared off a piece of land for a farm, and built a sawmill which he ran himself. Being naturally of a mechanical turn, he did all his own work, such as making and repairing carts and wagons (carts were used at this time more than wagons), copper ware, including tubs and pails, also shoes, etc. He was very industrious, clearing land or tending the mill during the day, and making or mending shoes or copper ware during the evenings. By this continued toil he was soon in very fair circumstances.

During the year 1835-36 several elders of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints visited Canada and baptized a number of persons in the neighborhood where my father resided. My mother was baptized in 1836, and also many of her relatives. My father had never belonged to any religious denomination, and he did not join the Church at this time. However, with a large number of his neighbors (mostly relatives of my mother, the Leavitts), he fitted out and prepared to gather with the Saints.

The company left Hatley, Quebec, July 20, 1837, and traveled through the state of New York. Somewhere on the road in this state father saw a sign at a tavern with the name Fish on it. He stopped here all night, and found that the proprietor was his cousin, and they compared notes on family history. Part of the company went by water up the Lakes, among them John Leavitt and family; also the boy John Leavitt who later assisted in building the Utah Central Railroad and who became the first conductor on that railroad. This family, on reaching Michigan remained there some years, and afterward some of them came on west and joined the Latter-Day Saints.

My parents, with James Adams and family, James Chamberlain (probably should be Franklin Chamberlain) and family, and others, went by land along the shore of the lake, passing through the towns of Buffalo, Erie, and other places along this route. While on this journey they were visited by a strange person, whose knowledge of everything about them and about the country surprised them. He apparently knew their religious views, and whether they had ever belonged to any church. He was familiar with the boundary lines of our country, had been present when they were run, and had a full knowledge of every subject mentioned, no matter what it was. Some of the company believed he was one of the three Nephites who were to tarry until the coming of the Savior. No one in the company saw from whence he came or whether he went--this was as mysterious as his knowledge of events.

As the company approached the western frontier, villages and towns became less frequent. On one occasion my father, wishing to get a little blacksmith work done, inquired of a person he happened to meet how far it was to a blacksmith shop. The man replied that he was in the shop now, but it was three miles to the anvil.

Continuing their journey with several odd experiences and some hardships and toil, the company arrived at Joliet, Illinois,⁴ September 19, 1837.

Although the journey had been a hard and tiresome one, it was not without its incidents of fun and amusements, which were mainly furnished by Oliver Chamberlain and John Leavitt (not the one already mentioned who went by the Lakes, but Little John, as he was called). John's parents had died, and my father kept him for seven years, so he was counted one of the family.⁵ These two youngsters were the fun-makers of the company, and many a joke was cracked by them upon the farmer lads they passed. One of the questions they asked the innocent lads was, "Have you any good ripe bugs for sale?" Such questions were greatly enjoyed by the youngsters of the company, if not by the farmer boys.

About this time the Saints in Missouri were being persecuted and driven about, and they were in an unsettled condition. This fact induced the company to stop at Twelve Mile Grove to make temporary homes and await the issue of events. A location was selected about twelve miles from Joliet, Illinois. Land was purchased and improvements were begun. They built houses and made preparations for winter. The location proved to be a good one. The country was sparsely settled, and wild game was found in great abundance. The soil was fertile, and with work they soon had all the vegetables, etc. they needed, while the groves, prairies, and streams furnished their tables with game and fish. Wild hogs were found in the groves, and these were hunted in the fall. After finding where they slept at night, the men raided them with all the dogs that could be found and captured several hogs. It was a rather

dangerous job as these animals were very fierce, and though the men were cautious, several dogs were killed. Deer also were numerous in this vicinity. On one occasion my cousin Charles Leavitt, while out hunting, saw a large buck through the brush, with his head down as if feeding. He crept up a little and fired. The animal fell, and Charles stooped down to get his powder horn, when he looked up, there was the buck apparently up again; so he loaded his gun and fired a second time. Again he brought his quarry down, and on going up he found two bucks that had been fighting, and their horns were fastened so tightly together that it was impossible to get them apart.

At this favored spot part of the company remained and became permanent settlers of the country and did not gather with the saints. Part of the Chamberlain family was residing here in 1872 when I visited the place, part of them having made their way to Utah. While here my father was baptized, in September, 1839, and here I commenced my earthly pilgrimage June 27, 1840. In that fall the family moved on to Nauvoo.

Chapter Notes

¹ Nathan Fish was born in Massachusetts probably between 1740 and 1750. He had two sons, Joseph and Samuel. Joseph went to Lower Canada (Quebec), and Samuel to Upper Canada (Ontario), and later settled in New York State. Nathan was called by Great Britain to go to Sea to fight the pirates who infested the seas. He sailed with Captain Kidd and was never heard of again. (Since Captain Kidd was hanged in 1701, Nathan could not have sailed with him. This tradition needs checking)

Joseph Fish, son of Nathan Fish, was born April 17, 1770 at Pepperell, New Hampshire, died April 22, 1859, at Hatley, Stanstead County, Quebec. He was married January 5, 1793 to Sarah Spear, who was born March 24, 1770 at Walpole, New Hampshire. Children: Lemuel, Joseph Jr., Champion, Horace.

Horace Fish, son of Joseph, was born at Hatley, Stanstead County, Quebec, Canada, January 6, 1799, (given as January 6, 1800) by Mrs. Jane J. Eldredge of Woods Cross, Utah, from *Forests and Gleanings History of Stanstead* published in Montreal by John Lawrence, 1874. He died July 6, 1870 at Beaver, Utah. He was married March 18, 1824, at Hatley, Quebec, to Hannah Leavitt, born December 6, 1805, in St. Johnsbury, Vermont (Walpole, New Hampshire), died November 5, 1877, at Parowan, Utah. (See note 2.)

Children: Julia, born July 18, 1825, at Hatley, Quebec, died October 24, 1916. Married Edward W. Thompson, 1849.

Sarah, born October 24, 1828, at Hatley, Quebec, died May 31, 1905. Married about 1846 to John Calvin Lazelle Smith. Married again April 29, 1857 to William C. McGregor, after her first husband's death.

Betsy Jane, born August 9, 1836, at Hatley, Quebec, died August 13, 1919. Married John A. West, 1854. Divorced April 4, 1870.

Joseph, born June 27, 1840, at Twelve Mile Grove, Will County, Illinois, died December 10, 1926, at Enterprise, Utah. Married: March 22, 1859, Mary Campbell Steele, Born December 23, 1840 at Belfast, Ireland, died December 12, 1874 at Parowan, Utah. Married second: July 26, 1869, Eliza Jane Lewis, born June 18, 1853, Salt Lake City, Utah, died February 10, 1940, at Parowan, Utah. Buried at Enterprise, Utah. Married third: May 1, 1876, Adelaide Margaret Smith, born February 13, 1857, Parowan, Utah, died October 29, 1927, Salt Lake City, Utah. Married fourth: April 19, 1883, Julia Ann Reidhead, born November 15, 1865, Richfield, Utah. Died Aug 21, 1951, Enterprise, Utah. Buried August 24, 1951, Enterprise, Utah.

Anna Maria, born May 14, 1842, at Nauvoo, Illinois. Married Sidney R. Burton, March 22, 1859.

Franklin Richards, born April 12, 1848, near Council Bluffs, Iowa. Married Rebecca Wimmer.

Children of Joseph Fish, (son of Horace and Mary Campbell Steele):

Mary Josephine, born March 11, 1860, at Parowan, Utah. Married John Barraclough, October 9, 1879, died August 18, 1923 at Beaver, Utah.

Francis Amelia, born April 12, 1862, at Parowan, Utah, Married Samuel W. Carson, October 13, 1879. Died June 9, 1940. Married second: Harrison L. Kocher.

Della, born June 29, 1864, at Parowan, Utah, died June 17, 1934 at Snowflake, Arizona. Married Joseph W. Smith, October 29, 1886.

Joseph Campbell, born November 4, 1855, at Parowan, Utah, died December 6, 1904, at Woodruff, Arizona. Married Katie Louisa Reidhead, October 19, 1887.

John Lazelle, born October 28, 1868, at Parowan, Utah, died March 16, 1931 at Long Beach, California. Married Melvina Cheney. Married after first wife's death to Julia Alice Tanner.

Jesse May, Born May 19, 1872, at Parowan, Utah, died October 27, 1911. Married James Y. Lee, October 5, 1897. Died Oct 27, 1911.

Children of Joseph Fish, (son of Horace) and Adelaide Margaret Smith:

Horace Nathaniel, born September 1, 1877, at Parowan, Utah. Married Sariah Hunt, January 10, 1901. Died August 30, 1935

Silas Leavitt, born January 17, 1880, at Snowflake, Arizona. Married Margaret Miller, June 7, 1905, who died March 29, 1907. Married Pearl Emmeline Noble July 29, 1910, who died August 2, 1938.

Married Phoebe May Miller April 12, 1947, Married Irene Jane Harris, Died March 25, 1976.

Joseph Smith, born June 6, 1882, at Snowflake, Arizona. Died May 16, 1940. Married Julia Riggs.

Children of Joseph Fish, (son of Horace) and Julia Ann Reidhead:

Franklin Richards, born January 26, 1884, at Woodruff, Arizona, died September 11, 1884.

Eliza, born December 27, 1885, at La Ascencion, Chi., Mexico. Died September 21, 1887.

Roland Woodruff, born March 13, 1888, at Woodruff, Arizona. Married Susan Freeman, April 2, 1909 who was born June 20, 1889. Died June, 1987.

Wilford Preston, born August 14, 1890, at Pinedale, Arizona. Married Mary Bulah Wright Oct 14, 1942, Died February 6, 1951.

Florence, born January 14, 1893, at Snowflake, Arizona, died August 11, 1893 at Batipoto, Mexico.

Zelma, born May 10, 1894, at Layton, Arizona, died June 12, 1895.

Hannah, born June 4, 189, at Layton, Arizona. Married Jacob Bushar, August 14, 1918, died

Julia Maria, born September 26, 1898, at Woodruff, Arizona, died May 29, 1899.

Adelaide, born May 19, 1900, at Woodruff, Arizona. Married Delmar David Ragle, July 19, 1930. Died

Jesse Lewis, born July 24, 1903, at Woodruff, Arizona. Married Lucile Cottam, January 1, 1926. Died September 3, 1973 at Ogden, Utah.

Delma, born January 13, 1908, at Woodruff, Arizona, married Orlas Alger, September 4, 1926. Died February 9, 1989.

² Mrs. Jane J. Eldredge of Woods Cross, who has compiled Leavitt genealogy, gives Hannah Leavitt's birth as on December 6, 1805, at Walpole, Cheshire County, New Hampshire, instead of December 26, 1805, at St. Johnsbury, Vermont, as recorded by Joseph Fish.

³ The original manuscript by Joseph Fish has Jeremiah Leavitt's father named Jonathan Leavitt instead of Nathaniel. Jonathan was Nathaniel's brother born 1730 at Exeter, New Hampshire, and (according to *The Leavitts of America* by Mrs. Jane Jennings Eldredge) married Ruth Cram of Deerfield, New Hampshire. He died May 13, 1824.

According to *The Leavitts of America*, Deacon John Leavitt came from England and raised his large family at Hingham, Massachusetts, and died there November 20, 1691. His first wife, Mrs. Mary Leavitt, died July 4, 1646, leaving five children. He then married Sarah Gilman, daughter of Edward Gilman, December 16, 1646, at Hingham. She died May 26, 1700. Children of Mary: John Jr., Hannah No. 1, Samuel, Elizabeth, Jeremiah. Children of Sarah: Israel, Moses, Josiah, Nehemiah, Sarah, Mary, Hannah No. 2, Abigail.

Moses Leavitt (son of John) was baptized August 12, 1650, died 1731. He was married October 26, 1681 to Dorothy Dudley, daughter of Reverend Samuel Dudley who was a son of Governor Thomas Dudley of Massachusetts. Moses' children were all born at Exeter, New Hampshire; Moses Jr., Timothy, Stephen, Hannah, John, Elizabeth, Sarah, Dorothy, Joseph, Mary, Dudley (and perhaps Daniel of Brentwood).

Joseph Leavitt, son of Moses, was born March 23, 1699, and died about 1793 (August 25, 1792). He married Mary Wadleigh of Deerfield, New Hampshire. Children: Nathaniel, Jonathan, Joseph Jr., Weare, Joshua, Moses Wadleigh, Dudley, Mary.

Nathaniel Leavitt, son of Joseph, was born December 27, 1727, at Exeter, New Hampshire, died February 24, 1824. He married Lydia Sanborn, daughter of Jeremiah Sanborn of Sanbornton. She was born February 20, 1737, died October 30, 1927. Children: Joseph, Lydia, Moses, Jeremiah, Nathaniel, Dudley, John, Jonathan, Polly, Josiah, Stephen, Hannah.

Jeremiah Leavitt, son of Nathaniel, was born July 10, 1760, died at Hatley, Quebec, Canada, about 1817 (recorded as 1806 by Joseph Fish). He married Sarah Shannon, born about 1766 at Chester, New Hampshire (died 1840 as recorded by Joseph Fish). She was of Irish descent, and was one of the first, if not the first, of the family to be baptized into the Latter Day Saint Church.

(This was probably in 1835 or 1836.) It would appear from what followed that Sarah Shannon Leavitt, who had been a widow at this time for many years, must have had a great influence with her children, for many of them joined the L. D. S. Church about 1835 or 1836--I am not informed whether there were any besides Lydia and Sally who did not--and in 1837 they left Canada to join the body of the church in the United States. The Leavitt sons with their families, and the Leavitt daughters with their husbands and families, seem to have left Canada about the same time. They came in two companies or more. John Leavitt and others came by water on the lakes. Franklin Chamberlain (given by Joseph Fish as James Chamberlain), James Adams, and Horace Fish, all sons-in-law of Sarah Shannon Leavitt, and others, some of them not related to the Leavitts, came by land with their families via Buffalo and Erie. Nathaniel Leavitt seems to have come ahead. (See Note 5.) Since the information at hand gives Sarah Shannon Leavitt's death as 1840, it is almost certain that she came with one of these companies and settled somewhere in Illinois where she probably spent the rest of her days.

The company with Franklin Chamberlain--if not both companies--settled temporarily at Twelve Mile Grove, near Joliet, Will County, Illinois, since the aggression of anti-Mormons in Missouri made it unwise to proceed further at that time. Here they remained until things quieted down, and in 1840 some of them went on to Nauvoo, which had just become the headquarters of the Mormon Church. When the Mormons were driven from Illinois most of the Leavitts in Illinois went with them to the Rocky Mountains and their descendants are now found in many of the western states.

Children of Jeremiah Leavitt and Sarah Shannon: Weare (spelled also Waire and Wire), Jeremiah, Nathaniel, Josiah, Lydia, Sally, John, Betsy, Rebecca, Hannah.

It appears that Lydia (Rowell), Sally (Rowell), and Rebecca (Chamberlain) and their families did not come west. The Chamberlains were still living near the Illinois home between Chicago and Joliet in 1872, and Lydia and Sally did not join the Mormon Church. Weare died about 1846, his first wife Abigail Cole, died about 1874, and Phoebe Cole died in 1849. Some of Weare's children came to Utah. Jeremiah died in 1846; his widow and children came west. Nathaniel died about 1838. His first wife, Deborah Dolano, died between 1827 and 1834. His second wife, Betty Bear, went back to Canada (see Note 5). Some of his first wife's children were brought west. Josiah died single. John and family came to Utah. Betsey married James Adams. She died 1848. Her husband and family came to Utah. Hannah married Horace Fish. They and their children came to Utah. When we note that five of those just named died after they left their home in Canada, and before 1850, and four of them during the time of the exodus across the plains, we cannot help but wonder how many of them had their lives shortened by the trying circumstances in which they lived. They truly showed a devotion to the church they had joined.

Hannah Leavitt Fish, daughter of Jeremiah Leavitt, was born December 6, 1805, at St. Johnsbury, Vermont (given December 26, 1805, at St. Johnsbury, Vermont, by Joseph Fish), died November 5, 1876 at Parowan, Utah. She married Horace Fish of Stanstead County, Quebec March 18, 1824. Three children were born in Hatley, Quebec: Julia, Sarah, and Betsey Jane; Joseph at Twelve mile Grove, Will County Illinois; Anna Maria in Nauvoo; Franklin Richards near Council Bluffs, Iowa.

⁴ Illinois was colonized by the French about the same time as Philadelphia. Father Marquett, a Catholic missionary among the Indians, visited the country as early as 1673, and settlements were made at Cohokia and Kaskaskia at the close of the 17th century. The Illinois country as it was called passed with other portions of eastern Louisiana, into the hands of the English at the treaty of Paris in 1763, and into the hands of the United States at the time the latter gained her independence. In 1787 it became a part of the Northwest Territory, which embraced all the country north of the Ohio River. In 1800 it formed a part of the Indian Territory, from which it was detached in 1809 to become a separate territorial government under the title, "Illinois Territory." Ninian Edward was the first governor under this organization, and held office for three terms. The population at this time was about 5,000. It was admitted into the Union in 1818, and the first governor of the state was Shadrach Bond.

⁵ Nathaniel Leavitt came up the lake to Michigan and stopped at a place called White Pigeon. There Nathaniel died, and his wife took all the property and went back to Canada, and left the three children who were his first wife's among strangers sick with the ague. The oldest boy was ten or twelve years old. He told the folks when he got big enough he was going to hunt his folks; they were with the Mormons somewhere. He was told the Mormons were all killed, and he never would find any of them. What a pitiful situation for three sick orphans, with hardly clothing enough to cover their nakedness. They did not know whether they should ever see a friend again. They lived at three different houses. Their names were Nathaniel, Flovilla, and John. (*History of Sarah S. Leavitt*, page 8.) Jeremiah Leavitt took them to Twelve Mile Grove where he came along, and father took John and kept him seven years.

(Note by Silas L. Fish: From this it appears that John's fun-making must have been on the road from Twelve Mile Grove to Nauvoo.)

1840-1842
Chapter 2
Nauvoo

In September, 1840, my parents left Twelve Mile Grove and moved to Nauvoo.¹ Here my father purchased a lot about one mile east of the temple lot, where he built a house and began making other improvements. He had but little means left, and the Saints had been driven and despoiled of their goods until they were left destitute, without provisions or clothing, and were unable to assist each other. All went to work with a will, but many felt the pangs of hunger while they worked, and the cold winds coming down from the Lake of the Woods pierced through their scanty clothing.

My father rented a piece of land from Bishop Edward Hunter, which he cultivated on shares. He spent much of his time working on the temple while it was being erected. After its completion he and my mother received their endowments in it.

Now that the saints had found a resting place free from the relentless persecutions of their enemies, they made improvements very rapidly. The site of Nauvoo before being purchased was considered unhealthy, but the saints at once drained it, making it a comparatively healthy location. Malaria, or chills and fever, was the main complaint in all the new places in the West at that time.

A temple was begun; the four corner stones were laid April 6, 1841. The structure was 83 by 128 feet and 60 feet high. Many other fine and notable buildings were erected in a short time, and the city seemed to rise as if by magic.

Describing Nauvoo, Linforth remarks, "Before the close of 1842 a vast improvement had taken place. The city, which then extended three or four miles on the river, and about the same distance back, had been regularly laid off into blocks containing four lots 11 by 12 rods each. Between 700 and 800 houses had been erected, and the population numbered about 15,000.² Two steam mills and two printing presses were operated, and buildings for various manufactures were rapidly going up. In the meantime the temple and Nauvoo House were progressing.

"In 1840 all the male members of the church between the age of sixteen and fifty were enrolled in a military organization known as the Nauvoo Legion. A charter was granted by the legislature which took effect February 1, 1841.³ The saints were now working with a will and everyone was busy. There were no idle persons to be seen as all were deeply interested in building up new homes.

"On the 30th of October, 1842, for the first time, the Saints held a meeting in the Nauvoo Temple. A temporary floor was laid within the unfinished walls and about 3,000 Saints, full of joyful anticipations, assembled to hear the Prophet of God. They were disappointed, as sickness and other causes prevented his appearance on that occasion."

About this time the river banks along Nauvoo presented busy scenes. The city was full of activity, and was constantly growing larger because of the emigration from abroad. On March 12 and 13, 1843, steamboats landed at Nauvoo bringing 480 Saints.

In this city of the Saints I spent the first six years of my life. I was four years old the day that the Prophet Joseph Smith was murdered in Carthage jail, and I well remember seeing troops and sounds of men pass by our place, as we lived on the road leading to Carthage. I do not remember seeing the Prophet Joseph Smith, but I suppose that I must have done so at meeting or some other place, and I may have seen him pass our home during the four years that we resided there before his martyrdom.

My youngest sister, Anna Maria, was born here May, 1842, and it was here that I learned my first lesson in being persecuted and feeling the bitter hand of the oppressor which drove the widow and fatherless as well as the husband and father into the wilderness to perish, or to live as chance might favor them. We, like the majority of the others, were poor. I had few advantages, and was never dressed as a child should be. However, my mother by patching and mending and remodeling old clothes managed to get along reasonably well with her children. For a time my oldest sister, Julia, taught school, which I attended for a short period, but I was rather young to learn much.

As for amusements, I had to find them as best I could. There was a little spring which ran near our house a part of the year, and I spent a great deal of time making mills, water wheels, etc. I often got wet and muddy, and when mother was away my sister Julia would punish me by tying me up. But I soon managed to break away again. My mother never whipped me for this or any other misconduct.

This little spring branch was the cause of much trouble to travelers. Before bridges were constructed and roads improved this made a very bad mud hole. The mud was very sticky, and many a team stuck here and had to be helped out. On one occasion a man attempted to cross on horseback. When his horse got stuck, the rider got off and in his attempt to get the horse out got stuck himself. The neighbors came to his assistance and scraped the mud away with shovels and hoes until the unfortunate man and his horse were able to get out.

I met with a few accidents, which I well remember. One day while some rubbish was being burned the children older than I gathered around and tried jumping over it while it burned low. I tried to also, but fell in the middle of a hot bed of coals. I crept out on my hands and knees, but one of my hands was so badly burned that I have always carried the scar. On another occasion some of the folks were carrying out hot water to scald a hog my father was butchering. The dog, hearing the noise, rushed out and overturned the water which fell on me and scalded me badly.

Chapter Notes

¹ Nauvoo, from the Hebrew, signified fair, very beautiful, and actually fills the definition, for nature has not formed a parallel on the banks of the Mississippi from New Orleans to Galena. It was first called Commerce, but the name was changed to Nauvoo in May, 1840. At the time the place was purchased there were twenty houses. In 1839 extensive purchases of land were made of Dr. Isaac Galland, Mr. White, D. H. Wells, and others, and the Saints located on these. The increase was rapid, and by the end of 1840 there were nearly 1,500 saints at Nauvoo, men, women, and children. Later some of the more zealous called Nauvoo "The Holy City" or "The City of Joseph."

² According to "*Essentials of Church History*," Nauvoo had a population of more than 3,000 in 1840, and about 20,000 at the time of the exodus.

³ Abraham Lincoln, then a young man and a member of the legislature, assisted in getting this liberal charter through the legislature.

1842
Chapter 3
Persecutions and Mobbings

The saints had enjoyed a short period of rest from the persecutions of their enemies in Missouri. But this did not last long, for the officials and others in that state soon began their efforts to get the Prophet and several others back to Missouri to be tried on various charges they had trumped up. They always had a dozen or two charges on hand in case they could get their men.

In an address to the Saints at Nauvoo, September 1, 1842, Joseph stated that on account of the enemies in pursuit of him both in Missouri and Illinois, he deemed it best to retire for a time and seek safety. He ordered his debts paid as they fell due, his property to be sold if necessary to meet requirements, and exhorted all officers to be faithful to their trust. "When the storm is passed I will return," he said; "and as for perils, they seem small things to me, for the envy and wrath of man have been my common lot all the days of my life."

In June, 1843, an attempt was made to kidnap the Prophet and take him to Missouri. This was checked by his being able to get a writ of habeas corpus. After several failures, he finally got a writ returnable at Nauvoo, where he was set free. Reynolds, who had attempted to take the Prophet to Missouri, now petitioned Governor Ford of Illinois for a force to recapture his prisoner, and an agitation was kept up which gradually drew in many of the people of Illinois. The Missourians kept up their efforts to get Joseph into that state, and they were greatly assisted by many in Illinois.

The mob gloried in these persecutions. To shoot a Mormon was indeed a distinction, coveted by many of the persecutors of the Saints, and was regarded no more than the shooting of an Indian. Spies were frequently in the city helping the mob locate those they wished to capture. To rid themselves of these characters the young men of Nauvoo frequently would procure very large knives and a piece of board or wood, and would go up to the objectionable persons, whittling as they went. As they would let their knives go out some distance, the visitors would back away, and the boys, following up, would whittle them out of town in the midst of a volley of curses, the boys saying not a word. One of these men who came in on a pretense of seeing my sister Julia was "whittled out" in this way.

In the forepart of June, 1844, the first number of the Nauvoo Expositor was issued in Nauvoo, published by apostate Mormons. Their object was to stir up strife in the church and aid its enemies in their work of expelling the Saints. Its columns were filled with foul abuse of the Prophet and of many of the leading citizens. Affidavits were made charging them with all manner of crimes, and abusing and misrepresenting the people. The city council declared this paper a nuisance and ordered its abatement. Joseph Smith, the Mayor, ordered the decree of the council carried out, and it was done by scattering the type in the street and destroying the press. The proprietors of the paper went to Carthage and procured a warrant for the arrest of the prophet and several others. Smith refused to go, but was willing to be tried before a state tribunal. Troops were called out and the agitation kept up until June 24, when Joseph and Hyrum Smith, the members of the council, and all others asked for, went to Carthage and gave themselves up. They were charged with riot. All entered into recognizance before the justice of the peace to appear for trial and were released from custody. Joseph and Hyrum, however, were rearrested and were charged with overt treason. They were placed in jail, the governor pledging himself that they should not be harmed. However, while in jail they were murdered, on the 27th of June.

The loss of the president and the patriarch was a heavy blow to the church. It was a trying time for the Saints, who did not know what to do. Some feared that their organization as a church would soon come to an end; some prepared to return to the Gentiles. To reassure them, July 1 a letter was addressed by Richards, Taylor, and Phelps to the citizens of Nauvoo. Later another letter, signed by the same three and Parley P. Pratt was dispatched to all the Saints throughout the world to reassure those uncertain what to do. On August 15 another address was issued, in the name of the twelve apostles and signed by Brigham Young, the president of the apostles. In this, the Saints were told that though they were without a prophet present in the flesh, the twelve would administer, and regulate the affairs of the Church.

There were still some doubts as to who should lead the Church and what was to be done. Prominent among the aspirants for the presidency of the church was Sidney Rigdon, one of the first and ablest to espouse the cause. At a

general meeting of the Saints where he and Brigham Young were both speakers, Brigham Young was elected to lead the church.

After the election of Brigham Young, the saints had a brief rest, and the city of Nauvoo continued to thrive. A portion of the temple was finished, and the Nauvoo house and council house were going forward rapidly. These and other buildings were erected at a great sacrifice of time, and in the midst of difficulty and discouragements brought on by poverty and opposition. One writer says, "When corn was brought to my door at ten cents a bushel, and sadly needed, the money could not be raised. Anxiety, however, rested upon the saints. They could feel the increasing spirit of opposition; and murderous intent was more fully revealed to them as time went on. Their joys were constantly broken by the sorrows that were ever increasing and the dangers that constantly threatened their peace of mind. They felt the approach of a coming storm that might do irreparable harm to their peace of mind as well as to their physical well-being. The hearts of the more faithful men were saddened by both the growing demands and the increasing power of the enemy."

In January, 1845, it was proposed that a building for the high priests should be erected at a cost of \$15,000. The work on the temple was pushed forward, as the people were counseled to receive their endowments there as early as possible. May 24 the walls were finished, and the event was duly celebrated. October 5, 1845, the first meeting in the temple was held. By the end of December 1,000 people had received ordinances. All this was done in the midst of renewed persecutions, and while many of the people were making preparations to evacuate the city. It was now seen that there would be no peace while they remained there.

The work of the mob was now in earnest. "At a Mormon settlement called Morley a few miles from Nauvoo, a band of incendiaries on the night of September 10, began operations. Deliberately setting fire to the house of Edmund Durfee, they turned the inmates out of doors and threatened them with death if they did not at once leave the settlement. Durfee they subsequently killed. The mob continued its nefarious work until Morley was in ashes and its people homeless."

This burning and driving continued. "At Lima and Green Plains," says Governor Ford, "the anti-Mormons appointed persons to fire a few harmless shots at their own meeting house where services were progressing; whereupon the conspirators and their dupes rode all over the country and spread fire alarm. As a result, a mob arose and burned one hundred and seventy-five houses and huts belonging to Mormons, who fled for their lives in utter destitution, in the middle of the sickly season."

Mobs began driving out the Mormons in the lower part of Hancock county, burning their houses and property. This burning continued from settlement to settlement without any resistance whatever for ten or eleven days. The people of Nauvoo sent out wagons and teams to bring in those people whom the mob had driven from their homes. The mob said they would drive all into Nauvoo, and all Nauvoo into the Mississippi.

1843
Chapter 4
The Expulsion

The city charter of Nauvoo was repealed in January, 1843. Daniel Spencer, who had been elected to fill the remainder of the term of the murdered mayor, was deposed, along with all the other city officials. A new charter was put before the legislature, but was never granted. The assassins of the Prophet were discharged. The crimes of the whole country were laid at the door of the saints.

No people could withstand the persecutions that were heaped upon the saints, and hurried preparations were now made to leave the city. "It is a settled thing that the public sentiment of the state is against the Mormons, and it will be in vain for them to contend against it; and to prevent bloodshed and the sacrifice of so many lives on both sides it is their duty to obey the public will and leave the state as speedily as possible. That they will do this we have a confident hope, and that, too, before the last extremity is resorted to, that of force." This quotation from Fulmer's Expulsion shows the spirit that existed against the saints, and the helplessness of remaining in Nauvoo in peace.

September 9, 1845, a general council was held, and it was decided to send a company of 1,500 men to Salt Lake Valley. A committee of five was appointed to gather information regarding the Rocky Mountain region.¹ Fremont's Journal was read, also Hastings' account of California.²

Joseph Smith was the first who talked of the saints going to the Rocky Mountains. As early as August, 1842, he prophesied that they would be driven to the Rocky Mountains, and there become a mighty people. Now the time had arrived that the prophecy would be fulfilled.

The city of Nauvoo now presented an exciting scene. Many of the saints from around the city had been driven in, and hurried preparations were being made. Many were making tents and wagon covers out of cloth bought with anything they happened to have. Wagon making was carried on systematically, there being companies organized for this purpose. Green timber was prepared for spokes and fallows, some kiln dried, and some boiled in salt water.

My father made several trips in the vicinity to obtain provisions. On one occasion I accompanied him to Law's Mill. It was in the winter, the mill was not going, and there was no fire. I thought I would perish with cold before we got home. Among the preparations for our intended journey was the parching of corn, as it was difficult to obtain wheat. A large cylinder was made out of sheet iron, and about a bushel of corn put into it. It was then placed over a fire and turned by a crank like a grindstone so that the corn would not burn while parching. It was then ground into meal. The meal, however, did not keep well, for it got damp and soon spoiled.

Before leaving the city my father made a wagon to haul our few belongings. There was very little iron in it except the tires. Another thing, before leaving, was to take a farewell view of the temple. We all went through it, looking at each room. Franklin D. Richards conducted us through, and he carried my sister Anna Maria in his arms. The scene that impressed me most was the baptismal font supported by twelve oxen, three facing each of the four cardinal points of the compass.

About three years before, the Prophet had ordered that there should not be another general conference until it could be held in the Temple. October 5, 1845, a conference was held in the temple at which about 5,000 people assembled. A circular was issued, signed by Brigham Young, and addressed to the brethren scattered abroad throughout America, informing them of the impending change. "The exodus of the nations of the only true Israel from these United States to a far distant region of the west, where bigotry, intolerance, and insatiable oppression will have lost its power over them, forms a new epoch, not only in the history of the church, but of this nation." A resolution was adopted to use every effort to see that everyone was moved, and none left.

There had been much talk as to where the saints would go. Governor Ford suggested to President Young that they go to California, take possession, and establish an independent government of their own, subject only to the laws of the nations. About this time Vancouver's Island was suggested as a suitable place for the Mormons to settle. Later it was suggested that they go to Central America and take possession of some of the weak provinces and establish a government of their own. In January, 1846, the council ordered a detachment to set forth at once, the remainder of the saints to follow as soon as possible.

Brigham Young addressed the saints as follows: "Beloved brethren, it now remains to be proven whether those of our family and friends who are necessarily left behind for a season to obtain an outfit through the sale of property shall be mobbed, burned, and driven away by force. Does any American want the honor of doing it? Or will any American suffer such acts to be done, and the disgrace of them to remain on their character, under existing circumstances? If they will, let the world know it." The world soon was to know it, for many of the poorer saints who could not get away with the first companies were driven out almost at the point of the sword, and were mobbed and whipped in a most shameful manner.

There is no parallel in the world's history to this migration from Nauvoo. It was in the dead of winter that the people started to face the wilds of the unknown west. The first teams crossed the Mississippi³ about the 4th of February, in flat boats, but a sudden drop in temperature caused the river to freeze over so that in a few days many crossed on the ice. Charles Shumway was the first to cross.

February 5, the first camp was formed on Sugar Creek, nine miles westward. That night--a bitter night--nine wives became mothers; nine children were born in tents and wagons in that wintry camp.

The saints who were left behind went up and down with their furniture, etc. and traded for an animal that could travel, a wagon, or something else helpful on a journey. Putting upon their animals and vehicles such of their household goods as they could, they began to leave the city in detachments. A company left in May which was unable to dispose of its property before leaving.

Before my father started, my second sister, Sarah, was married to John Calvin Smith, a school teacher from the Eastern states. Smith managed to get a yoke of two-year old steers, the only team he had. He successfully took these through to Utah and later to Iron Country. When he came from the east, he brought a small bundle of palm leaf, and with this he and Sarah braided palm leaf hats. They sold them for a trifle, and were each able to get a few things to help fit out for the trip.

My father did not have a team, but loaded his few belongings into a wagon he himself had made. He borrowed a team and hauled the wagon down to the river, where we crossed May 23, 1846. My father was one of those unable to dispose of his property, so our outfit was very meager. As we slowly left the Illinois shore, my sister Anna Maria and I looked back and here we saw our favorite dog standing on the bank, too old to attempt to swim the river. He had been our companion from my earliest recollections, and to leave him thus brought the tears to our eyes.

As late as August there were in and around Nauvoo, many saints who were unable to get away, and some were trying to gather their crops. The people of Hancock County now determined to drive them out, and many outrages were perpetuated upon the saints. Some were beaten with clubs and whipped. In short, from the first of May until the final evacuation of the city the men of Illinois never ceased strife and outrage in their opposition.

Late in August a strong force of the mob, which they termed a constable's posse, assembled at Carthage and marched toward Nauvoo. Some of this party made a treaty with the Mormons September 7 granting the saints sixty days extension of time, signed by representatives of both sides. (Hostilities to cease, the city to be evacuated in 60 days, 25 men to remain to see the stipulations carried out.) The men of Illinois rebelled against this treaty, and on September 10 the mob marched upon the city more than a thousand strong. There were at this time about one hundred fifty saints in Nauvoo. After some delay the mob opened fire on the city from a battery of six-pounders. On the 12th they advanced, and were met by a small party of the Mormons. Much firing ensued, and Captain Anderson, his son Augustus, and Isaac Morris of the saints were killed and several wounded.

The loss on the side of the mob was not ascertained but was probably much greater. The mob soon retired, and a demand was made for the Mormons to surrender. The number of the mob was increasing and that of the saints diminishing, as some were constantly leaving, so the demand was complied with. On the 17th the rest of them crossed the river and the mob entered the city and took possession, pillaging and robbing as they saw fit.

Chapter Notes

¹ The Rocky Mountains were called by early explorers both the Snowy and the Shining Mountains, from the fact that the higher parts are covered with perpetual snows, giving them a luminous and brilliant appearance. Another name for them was the Stony Mountains. As long ago as 1755-1767, Jonathan Carver made a tour of exploration west, and in his book published a few years later refers to these mountains as the Shining Mountains. He says, "These mountains are supposed to contain minerals, precious stones, and gold and silver ore." It is only lately that they have taken the name Rocky Mountains. By all the old travelers they are called the Shining Mountains, from an infinite number of shining stones of an amazing size, with which they are covered, and which, when the sun shines full upon them, sparkle so as to be seen at a great distance. Idaho signifies "the shining mountains"--a fitting name, for some of its peaks glitter in the sunlight with unequalled brilliance.

1848
Chapter 5
Through Iowa

In his journal, Heber C. Kimball states: "Nauvoo Temple, December 31, 1845, President Young and myself are superintending the operations of the day, examining maps with reference to selecting a location for the saints west of the Rocky Mountains, and reading the various works which have been written and published by travelers in those regions."

3The word Mississippi is said to be derived from the Algonquin Missi, signifying great, and sepe, a river. It is generally admitted that the name is of Indian origin and signifies "The mother of waters." In the year 1512, it was visited by Ponce de Leon, a Spaniard, who attempted to form a settlement. The upper waters of the river were visited by Joliet and Marquette June 15, 1673.

Upon crossing the Mississippi River we were landed on the Iowa side in almost a helpless condition. Our wagon was pulled off the boat, and there we were, without a team to move us. In a short time my father managed to hire one to haul the wagon a short distance from the river, where we remained for some time.

One great cause of our destitute circumstances was my father's taking with chills and fever when we came to this country from Canada. This compelled him to take to his bed for some time and left him in poor health much of the time, and consequently unable to do much. However, he was very energetic, and worked whenever he was able.

While we were camped here, messengers came to get men to go back to defend the city against the mob which was threatening it. My father, however, did not go. Aunt Mary Smith, with her two boys Silas and Jesse, were encamped nearby, and it was urged that Silas should go, but his mother refused to let him. Jesse was too young.

Shortly after this we heard the sounds of the guns as the mob was cannonading the city. At every discharge of artillery I imagined that the saints were being shot down and murdered in great numbers, and it made an impression upon my young mind that is still vivid, and not a pleasant recollection.

The exodus of the Saints from Nauvoo is long to be remembered. The able-bodied men had gone west, and more than five hundred of them had enlisted in the Mormon Battalion to march across the continent to California and fight the battles of the United States against Mexico. While this body of men were marching west in their country's cause, and others were wending their way across the wilds of Iowa, the remnant of the saints, mostly aged and infirm and all poor, were being driven at the point of a sword from their homes across the Mississippi and were now camped like ourselves along the banks or not far inland. Here they suffered much from poverty, sickness, and exposure.

Help was furnished to many by those who had gone ahead, for some returned and lent a kind helping hand to the helpless exiles, many of whom found their last resting place in the soil of Iowa. While they were here, an immense body of quails fell in their camp which had apparently attempted to cross the river and fell exhausted along the bank in boats and camps. The poor starving exiles gathered them up, knocked them over with sticks, and secured great numbers of them. The quails fell for some distance up and down the river; one report was that they extended for forty miles.

After the mob took possession of the city of Nauvoo, they often ascended to the top of the temple and rang the bell to annoy all within hearing distance. They occasionally fired a cannon ball across the river to annoy the sufferers lying sick on the shore. One of these balls was picked up and sent to the governor of Iowa.

While we were camped some distance from the river, a party went up across the Skunk River, a small tributary of the Mississippi, to pick blackberries. They let me go along with them. At the ferry I saw the largest snake I had seen up to this time. Someone had killed it and hung it up close to the ferry. It was called a black snake. Here I noticed the largest wagon wheels I had ever seen made for hauling logs by swinging the timber under the axletree. They must have been nearly twelve feet high.

Before we left this camp, my father returned to Nauvoo to sell his property. He managed to sell the house and lot for a mere trifle, but was glad to get anything he could. He said that there were eleven ball holes through the door, probably done by the mob when they entered the city, as they pillaged nearly every house and shot into many.

As my father worked to get means enough, he hired a team to move us to the Des Moines River² where we camped, about four miles below the town of Farmington. Here we remained during the winter of 1846-1847.

There were many bitter enemies of the saints located in and around Farmington, and every time there was a horse race or a shooting match the spirit of persecution was revived, and many threats of death were made against the exiled saints. Some of them were whipped, and some hanged until nearly dead and then let down. One who had been sick and was taking a walk in the woods was found nearly dead from a shot. It was claimed that he might have been killed by a stray ball at one of the shooting matches, but the Mormons did not believe this.

Several times during the winter we were told that we were to be driven out, and we lived in constant fear of being mobbed. On several occasions my father and brother-in-law sat up nearly all night running bullets, with their guns ready for defense, but something kept the mob from coming as they had threatened. On one occasion my mother went on a friendly visit to a minister's family and told his wife we had been threatened by the mob, and that if we were driven out we would come to their place, as she knew such Christian people would protect us. My mother thought this made some impression on the family. However, the mob did not come as they said they would.

A minister owned a mill a little below where we had located. It was said that he preached religion and Christ on Sundays and on Mondays would go to the mill and steal corn to feed his hogs. Father got work on this mill and also worked at cutting cord wood which gave him enough means to buy a yoke of oxen, the first team we had been able to get after leaving Nauvoo.

The mill was on the opposite side of the river. One day I went with my father for a little meal with a hand sled. We went across the river on the ice and down the opposite side to the mill. On the way over I rode, but returning, the meal was on the sled and I had to walk. I lingered behind until I saw I must hurry, when I started straight for the camp. Upon going a short distance, I found the ice settling with me and saw water just ahead in the middle of the river. To save myself I lay down on the ice stretched out to cover as much of the ice as possible, and slowly worked back to solid ice. The place not frozen over was just above the dam, and if I had fallen through I probably would have been drowned.

During the winter we were visited by two or three young men of our acquaintance. Stephen Thompson, a brother of Edward W. Thompson, as I remember, was one. He took my sister, Anna Maria, in his arms and went skating on the ice. Some holes had been cut for spearing fish. He ran into one of these and both got wet, but they managed to get out without serious injury.

There were some game in this vicinity but father was too busy to hunt much. One day two deer came down to the river and crossed. The water was frozen but not hard enough to bear them so they had to break the ice with their feet as they swam. Father shot at one of them and hit it; though seriously wounded, it managed to get across and up the other bank. Meanwhile, its mate stood by the bank waiting for it, showing an attachment and affection that would be commendable in the human family. They went off together into the timber.

As spring opened, we tried to make a little maple sugar to help out our scanty supply of food. However, our troughs for catching the sap were taken away to prevent our making any.

So, in the midst of poverty and persecutions we started out with the oxen father had bought, and my brother-in-law still driving his little white steers. We left on May 8, 1847, and made our way to the Missouri River,³ arriving at Council Point May 23. Our line of march to the Missouri River had been dotted with the graves of the saints who had fallen by the wayside, unable to withstand the hardships of the journey. Later generations will never know what it cost the saints to settle the Great Salt Lake Basin. The toil, hardships, sickness, and death can never be told.

I mention the experience of Sister Jane S. Richards, wife of Franklin D. Richards, as she came through Iowa. She had been our neighbor in Nauvoo and was almost as dear to us as a member of the family. While on the journey toward the Missouri, after parting with her husband who went on a mission to England, Sister Richards' little

daughter was taken sick, and she herself was prematurely confined in a wagon with a son, who died soon after birth. She said, "Our situation was pitiable; I had no suitable food for myself or my children; the severe rain prevented our having any fire. On the third day we resumed our journey. In ten days we reached Mt. Pisgah. My little girl was very ill, and I was also. We continued our journey until we reached my mother at Cutler Park, and here, after weeks of almost incredible suffering, my little daughter died. A few days previously she had asked for some potato soup, the first thing for which she had shown any desire for weeks, and as we were then traveling we came in sight of a potato field. One of the sisters eagerly asked for a single potato. A rough woman impatiently heard her story through and putting her hands on her shoulders, marched her out of the house saying, 'I won't give or sell a thing to one of you damned Mormons.' I turned on my bed and wept, as I heard them trying to comfort my little one in her disappointment. When she was taken from me, I only lived because I could not die."

Chapter Notes

¹ Iowa originally formed a part of the Louisiana Purchase, and afterwards part of Missouri, Wisconsin, and Iowa Territory successively. The first white settlement was made in 1832, at Fort Madison. In 1838 the "District of Iowa" was formed into a territorial government, under the title of "Iowa Territory." The first governor was Robert Lucas, formerly governor of Ohio. He was very favorably disposed towards the Latter-day Saints, who were then just settling in Illinois on the opposite side of the Mississippi. Iowa was admitted as a state into the Union in August, 1846.

² Des Moines River, a western tributary of the Mississippi. The Indians called their habitat Moingons. The French contracted this to les Moins; later the name became associated with the Trappist monks (moines), and by a play of words was changed to La Riviere des Moines.

³ The Missouri River (Mud River) is the largest tributary stream in the world, and has its source in the Rocky Mountains, nearly in the same latitude as that of the Mississippi (74° N). Its entire length from its source until it reaches the Mississippi is computed at about 2,285 miles, and steamboats have navigated it for a distance of 2,200 miles.

1850
Chapter 6
At the Missouri

Our stopping place was at Council Point. This was some distance above Trading Point¹ and about four miles from Council Bluffs,² then called Kaneshville, Iowa. Here we found many of the saints who like ourselves were making a temporary halt to get an outfit to continue their journey west. Most of the early companies had crossed the river to what is known in early Mormon history as Winter Quarters, situated on the west bank of the Missouri River at the site of the present city of Florence, five miles above Omaha. When the saints made their temporary camp here in 1846, the Sioux were at war with the Omahas, and it is said that the latter hailed with joy their temporary settlement among them as a protection against their enemies. However complaints were soon made by white men to the Indian agent that the saints were trespassers upon Indian lands. So the saints were compelled to move as fast as possible. Some went west, and those not able moved back across the river to Kaneshville, later called Council Bluffs. This then, became the gathering place for the saints before starting on their long journey across the plains.

The saints were first welcomed by the Indians on both sides of the river, who, like them, had been driven west. Not long after the saints located here, they received a letter from Washington stating that they were expected to leave the Pottowattomis' lands in the spring, as this was Indian Territory.³

We remained at Council Point three years before we were able to continue our journey west. We were destitute of clothing and provisions. At one time we did not taste bread for six weeks, and lived on green corn and anything else we could obtain. At certain seasons of the year, there were many geese, ducks, prairie chickens, etc. which enabled us to get along better at those times.

There was much sickness in all the Camps, mainly, I think, on account of insufficient food and bad water. The water was especially bad in some sections at certain times of the year, and many had the chills and fever. While my brother-in-law was sick and hardly able to sit up, some prairie chickens lit near the cabin. Managing to get his gun and resting it against a stool, since he was not able to hold it up, he shot one, and this gave us another meal. The experience of the others who had little to live on was similar.

My father built a log house, fenced some land, and put in some corn. He did all he could to provide for his family and get means to continue the journey. During the winter evenings he would shave out axe handles from hickory timber, take them to the trading Point and sell them for ten cents each. I remember accompanying him on one of his trips to Trading Point in the summer. On our way back we saw the largest snake I ever saw, I do not know what kind. Father said it was about the size of a wagon tongue. He had no weapon of any kind with which to kill it, so we let it go.

The winter was cold, and our fireplace was made of sod as there was no rock in this vicinity. The chimney was made of sticks laid up like a cob house and plastered over with mud to prevent them from taking fire. In this enormous fireplace we burned during the coldest weather nearly a load of wood a day. My father went down to the timber and hauled the wood up with a yoke of oxen on a rudely constructed sled. Some hay had been put up for our oxen, but it was coarse prairie grass, and stock could barely keep alive on it. Salt was put on it to get them to eat it better.

During the winter of 1847-8 my brother-in-law J. C. L. Smith, taught school. I had very poor clothes, but my mother fixed me up as well as she could, and I attended, making good progress for a boy of my age, seven. In the spring he and my sister Sarah, with a scanty outfit, started for the valley of the Great Salt Lake with their little white steers that had brought them from Nauvoo.

During the spring of 1848 Franklin D. Richards stopped with us a short time. He was on his way from Utah to England as a missionary, and his visit was highly appreciated, as he and his wife were our dearest neighbors in Nauvoo. My brother Franklin Richards Fish was born at this place April 12, 1848, and named for him.

In the spring of 1849 my oldest sister, Julia, was married to Edward Washington Thompson, and a few weeks afterward, they started for Utah. She had taught school for six years, away from home most of the time.

I was baptized in the Missouri River in June, 1849, by Bro. Clark. I attended school during the following winter and formed many acquaintances; among them James Allred and others of his family, James Bird and family, and several of our relatives who were temporarily settled here like ourselves. James Adams, who had married my mother's youngest sister, Betsy, was one. Betsy died while they resided here. Their oldest daughter, Sally, married William Snow, and the second daughter, Hannah, later married Horace S. Eldredge. William Snow and family also lived here. He had married a Mrs. Wines, who had three sons, Leonard, Norman, and Ira. These Wines boys later became prominent mail contractors in Utah. All of these, the Bird children, and the Allreds attended the school. Bro. Brown was our teacher, and took a great interest in his work. One of the songs he taught us had for the chorus, "Work away while you are able; work away all the day, and your strength will never fail you, even when your hair is gray." We went to Kanesville; to compete with the school there and came of with the honors. Every one in our school had a banner with these words printed on it, "Go ahead." My sister, Jane, and I gave several recitations at the contest. The James Bird mentioned in this paragraph later became a bishop in Provo. His daughter, Maryabe, married Lyman Woods. Our teacher, Mrs. Brown, later became a prominent teacher in Ogden, Utah.

One of my boyhood experiences was boarding a steamer that had just come down from the fur traders' posts up the river and stopped close to a high bank about even with the upper deck. A plank was put out to the bank, and while the hands were busy with some freight, my cousin John Adams and I went aboard to look at a bear chained on the deck. It was dark when we went aboard and we paid no attention to anything but the bear, as it was the first we had ever seen. Suddenly the whistle blew as the signal for starting. We ran in the dark for the plank and succeeded in gaining the bank though they were pulling the plank in. If we had slipped we would probably have been drowned as it was some distance to the water, and being between the boat and the bank after dark, we would have had few chances of being recovered from that muddy, turbulent stream.

While we were at Council Point an incident occurred exciting to us and much more to the poor Omahas.⁴ The Omahas had their village opposite our place on the west bank of the river. Some of them had been over in the Sioux territory hunting and stealing. The Sioux⁵ retaliated by sending a large force to attack the Omahas. The band attacked the village just at daylight, and we could hear the firing of guns in rapid succession and the shouts of the victors, mixed with war whoops and confusion and death struggles of the combatants. This made a very vivid picture of a surprise attack by the Indians. As it grew lighter we could see the victors in relentless pursuit of their victims, who were running in every direction. Many who had escaped the first fire of the enemy ran and jumped into the river. Some of these were killed after they reached the water, as the Sioux kept firing on them as they swam for the opposite shore. Several, however, made their escape. Among them were two squaws, who after reaching the eastern shore came running to our house, and like frightened puppies crept under the bed. When we got them out, we discovered that one had a child lashed to her back. A ball had struck the child and killed it, probably while she was swimming the river, but the mother was not hurt and likely did not know her child was killed until she took it down after she crawled out from under the bed. The vengeance of the Indians upon their enemies is terrible. They give no quarter, nor do they expect any mercy from their conquerors, and all go down before the victors, the infant as well as the aged and infirm, regardless of sex.

During our stay at the Missouri River there was a shooting match at Trading Point which caused some excitement. One of my cousins, I believe, put up a beef with rules for it to be divided into five parts, the hide and tallow called the fifth quarter. Those who shot were to give so much a shot and have their choice 40 yards off-hand, or 60 yards with a rest. Jesse Lowder, a veteran of the war of 1812 (he and his family later became residents of Parowan, Utah), had trained his son John to shoot a rifle. He was quite a small lad, and his father carried him across a slough on his back in going down. At the match John won four quarters and attempted to buy the other quarter so as to drive the animal home on foot, but those at the trading Point would not allow this and refused to sell at any price. Much ill feeling was caused, and nearly ended in a general fight between the people of Trading Point and council Point.

J. C. L. Smith and wife had reached the valley in safety. He was quite successful in trading with the California emigrants and had made a little means, (The emigrants traded their worn out animals for fresh ones and bought supplies so as to continue their journey to the Pacific.) He liberally sent us aid in fitting out for the journey. My father had gathered a little together and with what my brother-in-law John had sent from the Valley he bought one yoke of oxen and two yoke of cows. We now made preparations to continue our journey west.

May 29, 1850, we left Council Point and moved down to the lower ferry, where we crossed the Missouri River the first day of June. We now had 4 yoke of cattle.

Chapter Notes

¹ Trading point was an establishment of the American Fur Company and was in charge of one of the Serpe Brothers, who were noted as great traders among the Indians in early days. St. Joseph, Missouri, was named after Joseph Serpe, who was its main founder.

² The original Council Bluffs as named by Lewis and Clark was on the west bank of the river at least 29 miles above Omaha, very near the later site of Fort Calhoun, in Washington County, Nebraska. The error in location undoubtedly arose from the fact that on Lewis and Clark's map of 1814 the lettering "Council Bluffs" was, apparently for convenience, placed on the eastern side of the river, so that if the map alone was taken as a guide, the natural inference was that the place itself was on the Iowa side. The name was therefore transferred to the Iowa city of Kanesville.

³ Indian Territory in 1853 extended from the confines of Iowa, Missouri, and Arkansas on the east to Texas, New Mexico, Utah, and Oregon to the west, and north-west from Texas, New Mexico to the Northwest Territory and Minnesota, making a total area of 181,171 square miles. It had been set apart by the government of the United States as a permanent home for the Indian tribes removed from the east of the Mississippi as well as those indigenous to the territory. The eastern portion was chiefly occupied by the tribes moved there, and included among others the Choctaws, Chickasaws, Creeks, Cherokees, Senecas, Shawnees, Seminoles, Quapaws, several Miami tribes, Pottawattamis, Ottawas, Delawares, Kickapoos, Sacs, and Iowas. Although this tract of country was set apart for the Indian tribes, and was not free for settlement by the citizens of the United States, yet many of them crossed the boundary and squatted on the Indian lands. This was encouraged by various statesmen, among whom, was Senator Thomas H. Henton. But the Mormons were ordered off soon after they made their temporary halt at Winter Quarters.

⁴ The Omaha Indians (usually called Mahas) had formerly lived on the Mississippi. They retained a definite tradition of their migrations, which are traced by Dorsey, "Omaha Sociology," in Bureau of Ethnology Report, 1881-82. They had formerly been one of the most powerful tribes of Sioux stock, numbering from three to four thousand, but were decimated by smallpox. Lewis and Clark found less than six hundred of them, in Nebraska just below the village where they then dwelt. The Omahas have been much discussed and experimented with, as they show an unusual adaptability for education. The Presbyterians maintained a mission school among them for many years. See *The Middle Five* (Boston, 1900), by Francis La Fletcher, son of one of their chiefs. In 1883-4 lands were allotted to them under the direction of Miss Alice Fletcher, who had also made studies of their customs and music. They are today among the most civilized and progressive of our Indian tribes, living in satisfactory houses, devoting themselves to agriculture, and deriving good incomes from their leased lands. (Thwaites)

⁵ The Siouan family is the most Populus family north of Mexico, next to the Algonquin. The name is taken from Sioux, and appellation of the Dakota (the largest and best known tribal group of the family) abbreviated from Nadauessioux, a French corruption of the name Nadowesiw, given them by the Chippewa; it signifies "snake" or adder, and metaphorically "enemy." Before changes of domicile took place among them, resulting from contact with whites, the principal body extended from the west bank of the Mississippi northward from the Arkansas nearly to the rocky Mountains, except for certain sections held by the Pawnee, Arikara, Cheyenne, Arapaho, Blackfeet, Comanche, and Kiowa.

The Dakota proper also occupied territory on the east side of the river, from the mouth of the Wisconsin to Mille Lac; and the Winnebago were about the lake of that name and the head of Green Bay.

Northward Siouan tribes extended some distance into Canada, in the direction of Lake Winnipeg.

A second group of Siouan tribes, embracing the Catawba, Sara or Cheraw, Saponi, Tutelo, and several others, occupied the central part of North Carolina and South Carolina and the Piedmont region of Virginia; while a third, of which the Biloxi were the most prominent representatives, dwelt in Mississippi along the gulf coast. . . .

The Dakota formerly inhabited the forest region of southern Minnesota, and do not seem to have gone out upon the plains until hard pressed by the Chippewa, who had been supplied with guns by the French. According to every fragment of evidence, traditional or otherwise, the so-called Chiwere tribes--Iowa, Oto, and Missouri--separated from the Winnebago or else moved westward to the Missouri from the same region. . . . As to the more remote migrations that must have taken place in such a widely scattered stock, different theories are held. By some it is supposed that the various sections of the family have become dispersed from a district near that occupied by the Winnebago, or on the basis of traditions recorded by Gallatin and Long, from some point on the north side of the Great Lakes. By others a region close to the eastern Siouans (of Virginia and Carolina) is considered their primitive home, whence the Dhegiha (The Omaha, Ponca, Osage, Kansas, and Quapaw) moved westward down the Ohio, while the Dakota, Winnebago, and cognate tribes kept a more northerly course near the Great Lakes. . . . The earliest notice of the main northwestern group is probably that in the Jesuit Relation of 1640, where mention is made of the Winnebago, Dakota, and Assinibonian. As early as 1658 the Jesuit missionaries had learned of the existence of thirty Dakota villages in the region north from the Pottawatomie Mission at St. Michael, about the head of Green Bay, Wisconsin.

In 1680 Father Hennepin was taken prisoner by the same tribe. In 1804-5 Lewis and Clark passed through the center of this region and encountered most of the Siouan tribes. Afterward expeditions into and through their country were numerous traders settled among them in numbers, and were followed in course of time by permanent settlers, who pressed them into narrow and narrower areas until they were finally removed to Indian Territory or confined to reservations in the Dakotas, Nebraska, and Montana. Throughout all this period the Dakota proved themselves most consistently hostile to the intruders. . . . Later still, the Ghost-dance religion spread among the northern Siouan tribes and culminated in the affair of Wounded Knee, December 29, 1890."

1850
Chapter 7
Across the Plains

After crossing the Missouri we pulled away from the river a few miles to where the saints were gathering previous to starting on their journey west. Here we remained a few days awaiting the organization of the company, which was soon completed. The company consisted of fifty wagons divided into tens with a captain over each ten. Milo Andrus was chosen captain over the whole company and Robert Wiley captain of our ten.

The organization being completed, preparations were soon made to commence the journey. Our progress for a few days was unusually slow. Nearly all the cattle were wild and unbroken and it required time and patience to get them into place. The cows were nearly all worked and soon became the best leaders. The wagons were of various kinds, some made in the east, some made at Nauvoo and other places by the saints. My father had the wagon he made at Nauvoo, and our team consisted of two yoke of oxen and our cows. One yoke of the cattle was good but very old; the other was young and wild. Many of the teamsters were as awkward as the teams, having never driven cattle before, so those with experience were kept busy helping others trying to learn. My father was not a good hand at managing cattle, so he got a man to drive our team much of the distance for his board. The cattle not being 'broke', and the teamsters being likewise untrained caused some delay and our progress was slow for a few days. In a short time, however, things began to move more smoothly and orderly, and we began to make better time.

Our mode of traveling was the usual one adopted by the emigrants; each ten took its turn leading, and at night the first half of the company would turn to the right and form a half-circle, the tongues of the wagons being turned out and the left front wheel near the right hind wheel of the wagon ahead. The other half of the company would turn to the left and form the other half in a similar manner. In later years this mode of forming camp was changed a little. The first half of the company forming the right hand side faced the tongues of their wagons in. This gave them some advantage, it was thought, in hitching up their teams. In starting out in the morning the hind part, or left hand part, of the company would take the lead that day, thus changing each day. The cattle were taken out to where they could get the best grazing with a strong guard over them, and a camp guard was kept around the wagons. The captain generally went ahead and selected the camp ground. Thus he regulated the distance traveled each day.

As the company stretched out across the broad prairies, it presented a picturesque appearance: barefooted children, here and there along the line of march; women with sunbonnets or some kind of hats for protection traveling along through the hot dust and parched plains; and men with their long whips, walking beside the lolling oxen that were dragging their heavy loads toward the setting sun. A variety of characters were behind bringing up the rear with the loose stock, which was as varied as the drivers. All were hastening west across the vast prairies as fast as they could.

The pioneers had gone west on the north side of the Platte, but for various reasons the south side was thought the best route for this season. For one thing, the grass had been burned off the north side.¹ And thus we journeyed on in the midst of our trials, joys, and sorrows.

On the 23rd of June we arrived at Fort Kearney.²

We spent the 4th of July crossing the South Fork of the Platte.³ We forded the river at an angle which made it a little over a mile across. This was done to follow a shallow place found by persons sent ahead to locate the best ford. It was quicksand bottom and the water was about 18 inches deep. We doubled teams in crossing, the way being marked out by poles with flags on them to guide the teams where to go. I remember that we children were greatly frightened, but the teamsters on both sides of the long line of cattle kept them moving to avoid getting stuck in the quicksand.

This was a scene worth a moment's reflection--the poor half-dressed, half-fed saints spending the nation's holiday toiling from early dawn until dark through water and quicksand to place the desert between them and their persecutors. And this in a land of liberty, at a time when 500 of our men were in the service of the United States on the march to California.

These tiresome journeys, hardships, and exposures were the cause of many falling by the wayside, and we passed many unknown graves on our line of march. Some were saints, and some were miners who had started for

California, but we could not often distinguish them. Who they were and where they lie is known to few if any. If I knew their final resting place, I would, like "Old Mortality" wish to carve anew and deep the fading records of their life and death, with time has so nearly obliterated, and to herald abroad the praise and honor due them as some of the pioneers, who were the designers and builders of a western empire.

Another interesting landmark as we journeyed up the Platte was Chimney Rock. I remember when we came in sight of it we thought it not far off, and some of us boys started out to go to it, thinking we could go there and then take across and meet the train on ahead. We traveled some distance before giving it up, and we did not get even with it until the next day.⁴

Continuing our journey, we arrived at Fort Laramie⁵ on the 19th of July. Here we found a few United States soldiers, with several traders, half-breeds, Indians, squaws and papooses.

After leaving the North Platte we soon reached the Sweetwater River⁶ and here we arrived at a noted place, Independence Rock.⁷ Here the boys of the company had some fun. Each of us had a wagon tire we intended to roll into Salt Lake City. We had brought them several miles, and now we decided to take them to the top of the rock and let them roll down. We did so, after some work getting to the top, but the great velocity with which they fell, striking the rock below, broke them, so our project of taking them into Utah was given up.

August 4 we arrived at the Devil's gate.⁸ Here we found a large number of wagons, and many more had been burned. The emigrants going to the mines of California had found it impossible to take all their wagons and baggage through, so some left their wagons and others burned them rather than have them fall into the hands of the Mormons. They were eager to get to California, and wagons, "give-out" animals, and almost any article that could be named were thrown away to lighten the load, and we found a vast number of things. Many of the wagons had been abandoned, the parties taking what they could and pushing on with pack animals. My father's team was exhausted, so he left his wagon and took another that was lighter which he found by the roadside. I learned later that William Hutchins, who afterward located at Beaver, brought our old wagon in with him.

As we traveled up the Platte valley, villages of prairie dogs⁹ were often seen and game including antelope¹⁰ was found in large quantities, but owing to the large emigration this year, the animals were quite wild, and many of the buffalo¹¹ had been driven from the road. However, we saw some almost daily, sometimes in herds of many thousands. Along the Platte were many shallow places where the boys went in swimming. Some went in quite often, and being in the hot sun so much, were badly sunburned on their backs and shoulders. One boy, James Mc Guffie, had his back so badly burned that it was a raw sore. His father (he did not have a mother) put some salt bacon on it, which caused him to scream until the whole camp was aroused. When the captain came up, McGuffie said he had been informed that salt bacon was good for such sores, but some of us thought he put it on to punish the boy. McGuffie later settled in Parowan. He made a little money in the mercantile business, apostatized, and moved north.

Henry Lunt, later bishop at Cedar, was in our ten. He was then a young man and had a hard time getting along, as he drove a team for Peter Clinton and had to look after himself largely. Mother often gave him milk to help him out.

During the long and tedious journey the children got very tired of riding, and those too young to walk wished their mothers to carry them. They did so for many miles, though it was hard on them. My sister Jane carried my brother Franklin for many miles, and it was a heavy tax on her. My sister Anna Maria was cautioned not to fall under the wagon wheels when she got in and out, and told that if she did it would kill her. One day she fell and was run over. She jumped up and cried out, "Am I killed, am I killed?" The marks of the wagon tire were on her head but she was not seriously injured. How she escaped being killed was a mystery, for it looked from the marks as if the wheel ran over her head.

We arrived at Green River¹² and crossed it the 18th day of August. Here we had a severe, cold storm, and much snow fell on the mountains nearby. Several of the poor cattle died during the night, one of our oxen among the rest. Our team had dwindled down to one half what we had when we started, and many others had lost fully as many in proportion to their numbers.

A few days more of toil and hardships with our "give out" teams brought us to Fort Bridger¹³ which was located at a beautiful spot on Black's Fork, but the fort consisted of only two or three log houses. Journeying on, we reached

Bear River¹⁴ August 22, and we crossed the Weber River the 25th. A few days before we got into the valley J. C. L. Smith, his wife Sarah, and their little son Horace C., who had been born after they arrived in the valley, came out to meet us. It was a joyful meeting here in the mountains. They brought melons and vegetables, which were much appreciated, for we had none to speak of for nearly a year.

We now had help and we pushed on a little ahead of the main company and arrived in Salt Lake City August 29, after a march of three months over parched plains and ragged mountains. We had, however, enjoyed good health. But I was dreadfully sunburned; my ears, nose, and lips were raw sores. The sun and alkali dust had been hard on me as well as on many others.

All who could, had walked. My father walked nearly every step of the way. He counted the graves we passed, but when he had counted more than a thousand he gave it up, as he had a "give out" team and other things to occupy his attention. We were happy to get through as well as we did, for many fell by the wayside before they reached the journey's end.

To cheer us on the way of often sang "Come, come ye saints, no toil nor labor fear, but with joy wend your way," with other songs of a cheering character.

On arriving in Utah we went to Centerville, about twelve miles north of Salt Lake City, here my brother-in-law had secured 25 acres of land for my father.

Chapter Notes

¹ Hebard gives the following in regard to the trail. "The Mormon trail was from Council Bluffs to the Platte, along the north side of the Platte to Fort Laramie, thence to Fort Bridger over the Oregon Trail, and southwest to Great Salt Lake. As other Mormons were to follow this first band, many devices were adopted to guide succeeding parties and to give them news of the pioneers. Letters were stuck in the skulls of buffalo found on the prairies, and for guideposts they painted on the space between the horns of the skulls the date of their arrival at that spot.

"The Oregon Trail was now growing wider, for the Mormons averaged only thirteen miles a day in order to give their cattle plenty of time to graze on each side of the beaten trail. Broad and deep was this highway, and broader and deeper did it become, until it became a wide belt of furrows. Rain, snow, wind, and time have not been able unto this day to obliterate the tracks of the Indian, trapper, trader, explorer, missionary, settler, soldier, freighter, stage-driver, and express-rider."

² Fort Kearney was established in 1848 near the upper end of Grand Island and a short distance above where the Oregon Trail from Atchison struck the Platte River.

³ Nebraska was the original name of the Platte River given it by the Otoe Indians, who lived near where it empties into the Missouri. Ever since the first French trappers came into the valley it has been known simply as the Platte. The two names, however, are synonymous. In the language of Washington Irving, who wrote in 1832: "The Platte River is the most magnificent and most useless of streams. Abstraction made of its defects, nothing can be more pleasing than the perspective which it presents to the eye. Its islands have the appearance of a labyrinth of groves floating on the waters. Their extraordinary position gives an air of youth and loveliness to the whole scene. If to this be added the undulations of the river, the waving of the verdure, the alternations of light and shade, the atmosphere, some idea may be formed of the pleasing sensations which the traveler experiences in beholding a scene that seems to have started fresh from the hands of the Creator."

⁴ Chimney Rock, 571 miles from Independence, was one of the well-known land marks on the trail. It was a cylindrical tower of rock rising from the top of a conical hill. Authorities vary as to its height. Rufus Sage gives it (in 1841) as 300 feet for the hill and 200 feet for the tower. All observers agree that the tower had diminished greatly since it was first seen by white men. Sage says that when he saw it, the loss since 1831 amounted to about fifty feet, which led him to ruminate upon what its height must have been no longer ago than "a couple of centuries."

⁵ Fort Laramie was the first settlement post erected in what is now Wyoming. It was first built by William L. Sublette and Robert Campbell in June, 1834. It was then called Fort William. In 1835 it was sold to Fitzpatrick. Sublette, and Bridger. Fontenelle came in the same year, and it was turned over to the American Fur Company. The post was soon after re christened Fort John, for Mr. John B. Sarpy. It was located on the left bank of the Laramie about a mile above its mouth.

Before 1846 another post was built about a mile farther up stream, and to this, the name of Fort Laramie was given. Fort John is said to have been demolished soon after. It was christened Fort Laramie after the river, which took its name from Joseph Laramie, a French-Canadian trapper of the earliest fur-hunting period, who was murdered by the Indians near the mouth of the river. About 1849 the American Fur Company sold it to the government and moved some distance down the river. The famous military post of Fort Laramie then began its career and was for many years a principal base of operations against the hostile Indians.

⁶ Sweetwater River, a western affluent of the North Platte, rises in the Wind River Mountains, and for more than a hundred miles flows almost directly east. The name dates from the period of Ashley's expedition and is supposed to be derived from the loss at an early day of a pack mule laden with sugar.

⁷ Independence Rock is a well-known landmark on the old trail, an isolated mass covering 27 acres and towering 155 feet above Sweetwater River. On it were marked the names of travelers, so "many a name famous in the history of this country, and some well-known to science are to be found mixed with those of the traders and of travelers for pleasure and curiosity, and of missionaries to the savages." The name is of very early date, probably before 1830, and if so comes from the Ashley expeditions. The incident which gave rise to it is well-known from various references, all of which indicate that a party of hunters encamped at the base of this rock on the Fourth of July here celebrated the anniversary of the country's independence.

⁸ The Devils Gate is a place where the river cuts through mountains of red sandstone. This was the Fiery Narrows of the Asterias, and it was here that Fremont was shipwrecked in trying to pass with a canoe in 1842. Here the old trail leaves the river, which comes in from the south and goes on to the west.

⁹ The prairie dog was called by the French petit chien (little dog). Dr. Coues says that the earliest notice he has seen of a prairie dog was in a letter of Captain Clark to Governor Harrison, "dated Fort Mandan, April 2, 1805." Published in 1806. Cass's account, September 7, 1804, published 1807. Third Pike's notice of them in 1806, published in 1810.

One company that had passed up the Platte a year ahead of us, on seeing the prairie dogs standing on their hind legs near their holes, supposed they were Indians hid in the grass for the purpose of ambushing them. The advance parties gave the alarm, the company halted, and every man made for his gun. Then it was discovered that the supposed enemy was completely harmless.

¹⁰ The American Antelope was first made known to the scientific world by the description of Lewis and Clark. It is frequently called "cabra" from the Spanish word for goat. It was not scientifically named until 1815.

¹¹ In the early days of the trappers their boats were often stopped while going up and down the rivers for the herds of buffalo to pass. Their trains were also often compelled to lay by for several hours to let the herds pass. The number of buffalo in these herds was enormous. One writer states that he estimated one herd to contain 100,000 buffaloes. The slaughter of these animals has been enormous and in a few years they became almost extinct. One writer says their passing away was a natural thing, just as the passing of the mastodon and other animals. He says few females were born and they wasted away in a short period of time.

¹² Green River was commonly known down to 1840 as the Seeis-kee-dee, or Prairie Hen River, an Indian name. The name Green river began to come into general use about 1833, although it dates back as far as 1824. Its origin is uncertain. Bancroft says that it was given for one of Ashley's men. But William Becknell has the Indians by a massive timber gate.

¹³ The fort was the property of Bridger and Vasquez, and was inhabited by about fifty whites, Indians, and half-breeds. Bryant, who visited the place in July, 1846, says of it, "Fort Bridger, as it is called, is a small trading post,

established and now occupied by Messrs. Bridger and Vasquez. The buildings are two or three miserable log cabins, rudely constructed, and bearing but a faint resemblance to habitable houses." Brigham Young purchased the fort in 1853, but later it was taken by the government without any compensation whatever.

¹⁴ Bear River rises in the Uinta Mountains of northeastern Utah, and flows north and slightly northwest along the borders of Utah, Wyoming, and Idaho, until in Idaho it takes a sudden bend southwest and south, and after a course of more than a hundred miles, enters Great Salt Lake.

1850-1852
Chapter 8
In the Valley

John C. L. Smith had secured some land at Centerville,¹ and he divided it with my father, giving him 25 acres.

Upon coming into the valley Edward W. Thompson got a job of work on Neff's mill eight miles south of the City. After the mill was completed he bought a lot in the city and moved his wife (my sister Julia) there. He then went to California, as the gold fever was at its highest point. In the fall of 1850 he returned, but had not done very well as some of his animals had been stolen. However he was a good mechanic and always commanded good wages, so he got along better than some who went with him.

The mineral wealth of the country was but little known at this time. Gold had not been discovered in this region at that time but was found later on, as well as many other precious metals. Our business was to make homes, not to hunt gold, and we had little time for prospecting.

Before we reached the valley my father had a dream in which he saw the country, the valley of the Great Salt Lake with the surrounding mountains, and in a certain mountain he saw where there was gold. After coming to the valley my father told me that he had seen the mountain of his dream and recognized it and several others, but he never went to it to verify the truth of his vision, or dream.

My father began to make improvements on the land he got from Smith. He prospered in his labors, for he was very industrious. But on one of those windy days that are so common in this section, while at work, a board was blown against him, fracturing two or three of his ribs, and he was laid up for some time. I did what I could to help build up a new home. My mother had a hen and little chicks, and I made a coop to put her in. I laid it up with adobes, and covered it with willows, straw, and dirt. I thought this was safe against any wild animal, but in the morning we found that the wolves, which were plentiful and fierce, had dug through the roof and killed the old hen and chickens.

We went down to the City occasionally, and I attended the September conference, which was not held at the usual time this fall (1850). I remember hearing Duzette play the drum. He was the most expert drummer in the Nauvoo Legion, and often played during conferences.

In the fall of 1850 my brother-in-law, J. C. L. Smith, was called to go South to help settle Iron County. He had engaged to teach school, so he hired my cousin, George Leavitt, to go in his place. (George took his sister Emiline with him.) I attended school during the winter of 1850-51. Here I formed the acquaintance of Silas S. and Jesse N. Smith, of whom I will have occasion to speak often later, as I became familiar with them in later years.

In the spring of 1851 J. C. L. Smith went south to Iron County to fill the mission to which he had been called the previous autumn.

My father spent the year farming and making improvements. The old creek ran across the corner of his land cutting off about an acre, and he donated this for a site to build a school house. This was next to Nathan T. Porter's land.

We were getting along fairly well but found it rather hard to get fire wood. There was none in the valley, and on the mountain it was in almost inaccessible places. I helped look after the few animals we had. I remember on one occasion going up on the mountain east to hunt a stray animal we thought had gone that way. While I was high up a dense fog came from the lake, and for a short time it was as dark as night. The wolves set up a fearful howling and seemed to be close by, so I thought I had better leave before they attacked me. On the way down the mountain the fog lifted and the wolves stopped their howling. So I again went up the mountains, but the fog settled down as before and the wolves howled again. It was too dark to hunt very well, so I returned home.

The year of 1852 was spent in farming and improving. Our crops were good. The wheat yielded about 60 bushels per acre, and much of it had only been partly irrigated once.

We did not lack for salt. In the dry season we could go down to the shore of the lake and shovel it up in the wagon in a short time, because it had formed several inches deep along the beach.

While we were at Centerville there was some excitement over what was thought to be an Indian outbreak. A man in Ogden by the name of Urban V. Stewart, one night heard someone in his corn field stealing corn. He took his gun and fired in the direction of the noise, as it was too dark to see anything, and it happened that he killed an Indian chief. It was feared that this might cause a war with the Utes and neighboring tribes.² A strong force was sent up from Salt Lake City to check any outbreak, and the matter was soon settled without any further bloodshed.

Chapter Notes

¹ In the autumn of 1847 Thomas Grover and family located at what is now Centerville, twelve miles north of Salt Lake City. His intention was to pasture stock for the winter. A spot was selected where the stream spread over the surface forming plats of meadow land. In the spring Grover was joined by several others, and they resolved to remain, although several bands of Indians were camped in the neighborhood and as yet there were no white settlements north of Salt Lake City. Grover was not long without neighbors, for the places nearby were soon occupied.

Peregrine Sessions on September 28, 1847 moved to what is now Bountiful. Soon after, Hector C. Haight moved to a place a little southwest of the present site of Kaysville. Their main object was to get pasture for their stock. In March, 1848, the first ground was broken by Peregrine Sessions and Jezerel Shoemaker in Davis County. There came into the county Thomas Grover, Daniel Wood, A. B. Cherry, Anson Call, Daniel C. Davis, John Stoker, Joseph Holbrook, Nathan T. Porter, Horace Fish, the Smiths, the Parrishes, the Duels, the Millers, William Kay, Christopher Layton, and any others. Davis County was named for Captain Daniel C. Davis of the Mormon Battalion.

In the spring of 1848 land was ploughed and sown to wheat and vegetables, the corn being more promising than those to the south. In May the crickets appeared on the fields and gardens in great swarms, devastating everything that was green, but by the greatest efforts of the new settlers and the aid of the gulls, a portion of the crop was saved. A site for a town was surveyed in the autumn of 1849 and the place was named Centerville. It had first been called the Duel Settlement.

The large mountain crickets were a terrible scourge in the early settling of Utah. The Indians used them for food; they harvested them for bread the same as a farmer would harvest wheat or corn. Their mode of catching them was to make a corral twelve or fifteen feet square, fenced about with sagebrush and greasewood, and with branches of the same drove them into the enclosure. They then set fire to the brush fence, and going among them drove them into the fire. Afterward they took them up by the thousands, rubbed off their wings and legs, and after two or three days separated the meat, which would weigh an ounce or half ounce of fat to each cricket. When dried, this was ground with seeds and then made into bread.

² The Utes belong to the Shoshonean stock south of the habitat of the Snake Indians or Shoshone proper, which extended from the Rocky Mountains to California. The Utes were divided into numerous bands, differently classified by various authorities, and when first known to the whites numbered about four thousand souls. There are now more than two thousand on two reservations--the Southern Ute in southwestern Colorado, and the other bands on the Uinta reservation in northeastern Utah.

Richardson in "Beyond the Mississippi" says that Utah is an Indian word and signifies "Dwellers among the Mountain Tops."

There was a small band of Indians called "Sandpeeck" that dwelt along the river now called San Pitch with a valley and mountain range of the same designation. The name was frequently used until about 1870 when these Indians were reduced in number to less than two hundred, and were placed upon the Uinta reservation and lost their distinctive appellation.

1852-1853
Chapter 9
On the Move Again

John C. L. Smith returned to Centerville and held out great inducements to my father to move south and join him in his labors at Parowan, in Iron County. So, in the fall of 1852 he sold his place to Dalton and Kettleman and started south.

We had formed the acquaintance of some very dear neighbors, and we regretted leaving them. Aunt Mary Smith and her two sons, Silas and Jesse had gone south to Parowan where we again met them. Before he left, Silas married Clarinda Ricks, but there were several kind neighbors that we had left; the Duels, Kettlemans, Brinkerhoffs, Porters, Parishes, and Uncle James Adams and family (John Adams had been my playmate for many years), George Leavitt and his sisters, John Leavitt, and several other relatives.

My Brother-in-law, E. W. Thompson and his wife, my sister Julia, had concluded to go with us to Iron County. He sold his place in Salt Lake City, which was up toward the Warm Springs, and we made a start on November 25, 1852. We were late in starting and it began to snow the evening that we left, soon making the roads almost impassible. We were a little better fixed than when we started out from Nauvoo, however. I had a pair of boots, my first pair, so I got through the snow very well. We reached Provo,¹ about fifty miles south of Salt Lake City, December 4. The storm had been so heavy and the winter was setting in so severe that my father and Thompson decided to remain at Provo until spring.

We rented a house from a Mr. Stewart, who had several sons, several of whom were noted horse and cattle thieves. One of them, Nephi (known as Neaf), was the worst. We spent the winter to the best advantage possible, Thompson got a job working on a mill, while my father hauled wood and looked after the stock. I assisted him when I was out of school. It was no light job, for there was much snow and the cattle had to be kept in the best places or they would perish. Besides there were many horse and cattle-thieves who were stealing and picking up every animal that did not have someone looking after it carefully. It seems strange that a settlement of Latter-day Saints should be bothered with thieves, but such was the case here this winter.

I attended school with my sisters, Jane and Anna Maria. We had a good teacher but a most miserable and inconvenient house. The building was constructed of logs and used for a meeting house. The room was large and the students few, and so one end was partitioned off with a wagon sheet and used for a school room. The weather was cold and the students suffered a great deal from the cold. Slabs were used for seats and two or three were placed along the wall for desks. There was some slate rock in the mountains east of town, and I got out a piece or two and planed it down for slates. The children of the pioneers did not have the advantages of children now. It was impossible to have things at the start to make people comfortable and convenient. I never attended school in my life where we had a room fit for a school room, and I had to study by the dim light of the fire in the chimney corner. Had I had the privileges and advantages of a good school, I could have learned with more ease and in much less time the things that I tried alone over a pine fire to learn.

As spring opened up, we made preparations to continue our journey. I helped some people catch fish in a Sean, but for my services I got only a few suckers, a small remuneration. Those who owned the sean did not do very well either, as there were only a few trout at that time. Our cattle had to be looked after daily, and on one occasion E. W. Thompson and I went to on the bottoms to look after our stock and get them together before starting. He had a large dog and I had a smaller one not much account, but I thought a great deal of it just the same. While we were going over the bottom the dogs went after a band of sheep and caught one before we could stop them. Thompson whipped his dog when he caught him, and I whipped mine. Thompson then whipped mine, thinking I had not given it enough. The dog bit him, and he became so vexed that he took out his pocket knife and cut its throat. I of course, felt very bad about this, but submitted to it, as I knew that the dog was not much account.

We left Provo April 15, 1853, for Parowan, Iron County. We soon reached Payson, which then consisted of only a few houses.² Our stock was poor, having had a very hard winter, and our progress was slow. Our company consisted of my father and family; E. W. Thompson and family, and Mr. Woodruff and family--six wagons in all.

Mr. Woodruff was named by the Prophet Joseph, "The Pagan Prophet," and he was generally known and called by that name. He was a terrible hand to swear, and seemed to take a great delight in it.

At Round Valley a very heavy snowstorm made it difficult to get over the mountain to Fillmore,³ which was but recently settled, and was the only town at this time between Salt Creek and Parowan. It was about 150 miles from Salt Lake City.

Continuing our journey, we arrived at Parowan the 30th of April, 1853. It was about 250 miles south of Salt Lake City. The day we arrived was a terribly windy one, about the worst I ever saw, I thought, as we faced that southwest wind going up the long slope from Red Creek to the fort. In fact, in early days this place was very windy and dusty, but as it became settled up and trees were set out, it became less windy. I remember soon after we came into the valley a few Indians came to our camp, and the old "Pagan Prophet" spent some time and tobacco by putting up small pieces of tobacco for them to shoot at, giving them to them when they hit the mark. They seldom missed.⁴

Chapter Notes

¹ In 1825 Eteene Provost, one of Ashley's men, was camped with a company of about eighteen on the Provo River when in a treaty with a band of Snake Indians he was treacherously set upon by them, and nearly all his party killed. Provost made his escape. From this event the stream was given the trapper's name, slightly abbreviated, and the city received the same name, Provo. It was settled early in March 1849, by John S. Higbee and thirty others. A branch of the church was organized March 18, with John S. Higbee as president.

² September 20, 1850, James Pace and others located at Payson, then called Peteeneet.

³ October 29, 1851, Brigham Young selected Fillmore, which had just been settled by Anson Call and thirty families, for the capital of the territory. It was so named in honor of President Fillmore.

⁴ These were probably Piede Indians. The Piedes, Paiutes, and other tribes of Southern Utah and Nevada were classed as belonging to the Diggers. The term Digger has no ethnological significance. It was applied to degraded bands of the Shoshonean stock that ranged west and south of Great Salt Lake. Without horses or much clothing, they lived in a furtive way upon roots and insects. The French appellation was Digne de Pitie (worthy of pity). The Paiutes proved to be of a more vigorous character than was formerly supposed. The Indians south of Iron County were commonly called Paiutes. Those to the north around Corn Creek were called Pahvans, and those around Parowan were known as Piedes.

These Indians were a poor lot, they were armed with bows and arrows and many of their arrows had flint spikes three inches long. Their main clothing was rabbit skins. They made nets from a cord made out of the tough fiber of the sage brush bark in which they caught the rabbits. Their leggings and moccasins were made of deer skin. They gathered seeds and roots which, with the rabbits and occasional deer formed their main living. They built no houses, only piling up a little brush in a circle leaving an opening on one side. Sometimes a few skins were used to protect them from rain and snow. When Parowan was first settled, many of these Indians had never seen a white man and they appeared almost as wild as wild animals.

1852-1853
Chapter 10
The Settling of Parowan

A short sketch of the early exploring and the settling of Parowan may not be out of place here.

On November 3, 1849, an exploring party, consisting of about fifty men, was organized at Captain John L. Brown's house, Big Cottonwood, with Parley P. Pratt as president. The party started the next day to explore what is now Southern Utah. At the Sevier River, Charles Shumway, James Allred, and Elijah Ward, also Walker, the Ute war chief, were met. The party continued on and explored the country for some distance around. On the 1st of January, 1850, they were on the Virgin River, 1 at the mouth of the Santa Clara. Going up this stream, they arrived at the valley subsequently named "The Mountain Meadows." One division of the company explored the Little Salt Lake and Beaver Creek Valleys, reporting favorably on these places. On January 21 the company went into winter camp on Chalk Creek near the present site of Fillmore, being unable to travel further with wagons through the snow. Twenty-four of the men pushed on to Salt Lake City where they arrived on the last day of the month, and the remainder of the company followed in March 1850.

Parley P. Pratt's report of the south was so favorable that in the fall of 1850 President Young called a company to settle up the country to the south. George A. Smith was appointed to take charge of this company.²

They did not leave Salt Lake City together but all reached Provo by December 15 and the organization of the company was then completed. Joseph Horne was appointed pilot, Thomas Wheeler Indian interpreter, John D. Lee clerk with Henry Lunt as assistant clerk. Anson Call captain of the first fifty wagons, and Simon Baker captain of the second fifty.

On arriving at Payson they found James Pace with a few men engaged in building a fort. This was the last place and the last white men seen on the journey.

They reached Salt Creek on December 22, on the 26th they had two oxen stolen. They were recovered, but one was shot with arrows so it died. An Indian and a boy were taken and the Indian boy was given in payment of the ox.

On December 28 they found snow a foot deep, and two days later they were in the vicinity of Fillmore.

On January 4th they were at Dog Valley where they had some trouble in getting through the mountains.

January 6, 1851 they had an ox killed by wolves, and reached Beaver on the 9th. They had found snow drifted in some places three feet deep.

The next day they reached the Little Salt Lake Valley, and to celebrate the occasion the cannon was fired off. Part of the company had gone ahead to the Buck Horne Springs and on hearing the cannon they thought that this part of the company had been attacked by Indians. Men were sent back to ascertain the facts, and considerable excitement was manifested for a time.

On January 13, 1851 the party reached the present site of Parowan on what was called Center Creek. Upon their arrival at the place many of the company were dissatisfied, and said that there was no timber and that the soil on the uplands was worthless. George A. Smith sent out parties to explore the canyons for timber and found that the country was all, if not more, than Parley P. Pratt had represented. On the 15th a bridge was built across the creek, and the next day Jefferson Hunt with four or five men came in from California. They left on the 18th, taking the mail for the camp to Salt Lake City.

On the 17th an election was held and the following officers were elected: Jefferson Hunt as representative; Elisha H. Groves and Edson Whipple as associate judges; James A. Little sheriff; James Lewis recorder; Joseph Horne as assessor and collector; Almon L. Fulmer supervisor of roads; Anson Call, John D. Lee, Aaron Farr, and Tarleton Lewis as magistrates; Z. B. Decker and Charles W. Dalton as constables. At this meeting the place was named Louisa, and it was divided into four wards. Bishops were appointed for each ward, Call and Tarleton Lewis being two

of the Bishops. This organization and name seems to have been changed when the President came in the following May.

On the 18th the company moved across the creek on the south side so as to avoid the wind from the canyon, and settled near where Parley P. Pratt and party had erected a liberty pole the winter before.

On the 11th the people at church voted to build a meeting house, and the next day Tarleton Lewis with nine men started up the canyon to cut logs for the meeting house. The following day about eighty men went to work to make a road up the canyon.

On the 22nd William H. Dame and party finished the Fort Platt, which was about fifty rods square, the lots being two rods wide. The houses were built on this line, all facing in with no doors or windows in the back of them, and the vacant places were filled in with pickets so as to enclose the square. Great precaution was taken to guard against the Indians. Men were not permitted to ramble about alone, and all the stock was brought into the enclosure at night.³

February 9, the camp was organized into a branch with George A. Smith as president, and James Lewis as clerk.

April 10 the camp was visited by Parley P. Pratt and Charles C. Rich who were on their way from Salt Lake City to California. May 10 President Young and party arrived from Salt Lake City, (they remained until the 16th).

The name of Parowan was adopted for the place, it being an Indian name signifying "Clear Water".⁴ A field was enclosed going to the lake which contained about 11,000 acres. This was soon found to be too large and it was reduced to about 1,100 acres.

In the autumn of 1851 a good harvest was gathered from about 1,000 acres of land. Roads were made and a saw and grist mill were erected.

Chapter Notes

¹ In 1826 Jedediah S. Smith with a party of trappers went from Cache Valley through to California, his route was south by the Virgin River. Upon this trip he named the stream Adams River in honor of the President. It is possible and probable that its present name was given for Thomas Virgin who was with Smith on his second trip in 1827. Virgin was wounded by the Mohaves on the Colorado, and was later killed in the fight on Umpquah River.

² The names of this company, also the ages of some of the men were as follows:

Names of Men

Adams, Orson B. 35	Johnson, Sextus E. 21
Adams, William	Johnson, Nephi 17
Badger, John C. 23	Judd, Zadok K. 22
Baker, Simon 39	Lawson, James 30
Barnard, John P. 47	Leany, William 35
Barton, Lorenzo	Leavitt, George 22
Bastion, Andrew 44	Lee, James
Bateman, Joseph 48	Lee, John D. 39
Bateman, Samuel 18	Lewis, James 27
Bayles, Herman B. 38	Lewis, Jesse B.
Benson, Richard 35	Lewis, Phillip B. 46
Brown, Ebenezer	Lewis, Tarlton 45
Bloxon, Thomas	Lish, Peter
Boggs, Francis	Little, James A. 28
Brenton, David 25	Love, Andrew
Brimhall, George 35	Lunceford, Joseph

Bringhurst, Samuel
 Bringhurst, William
 Brunson, Lemon 54
 Bunham, Isaac
 Burton, William
 Call, Anson
 Cannon, Angus M.
 Carbet, Thomas
 Carruthers, Matthew
 Cartwright, Thomas 36
 Cherry, Aaron B. 49
 Chipman, Washburn
 Dalton, Charles 23
 Dame, William H. 31
 Decker, Zechariah B.
 Elmer, Elijah 40
 Empey, William G.
 Ensign, Marius
 Farr, Aaron F.
 Farrer, James
 Frost, Burr
 Fulmer, Abram L. 33
 Goodale, Isaac N. 36
 Green, Robert 54
 Groves, Elisha
 Hall, Charles 27
 Hall, Job P. 30
 Hamilton, Samuel
 Harrison, James 31
 Harrison, Richard 43
 Henderson, John H. *
 Hendricks, Daniel 49
 Hoffhines, Jacob 38
 Holbrook, Chandler
 Hollingshead, N. S.
 Hope, Edward
 Horn, Joseph
 Hovey, Joseph G. 38
 Howd, Simeon F. 37
 Hulse, Benjamin 35
 Hunter, George 22
 Lunt, Henry 26
 McGuffie, James

Names of Women

Susanna Adams
 Mary Barnard
 Sarah Barton
 Juliette Bayles
 Mrs. Carruthers
 Mrs. Cartwright
 Lovina Dame
 Elizabeth Dalton
 Eliza Ann Ensign
 Eliza Green
 Mrs. Harrison
 Mrs. Hovey
 Mrs. Hulse

Miller, Daniel A.
 Miller, Robert E. 23
 Millet, Joseph 16
 Mitchell, Wm. C. 44
 Mitchell, Wm. C. Jr.
 Moore, George
 Morse, William A. 24
 Newman, Elijah 53
 Parks, James 20
 Pugmire, Joseph A.
 Robinson, Joseph L. 18
 Sabin, Asa W.
 Sanderson, John 40
 Sheets, F. Elijah 39
 Shirts, Don Carlos
 Shirts, George
 Shirts, Peter
 Smith, George A. 34
 Smith, Jonathan
 Smith, Peter A.
 Smith, Thomas S. 32
 Steele, John 30
 Topham, John 25
 Town, Chester
 Vance, William P.
 Walker, Joseph 38
 Watts, Benjamin
 Webb, Charles Y. 32
 Wheeler, Thomas S.
 Whipple, Edson 46
 Whitney, Francis T. 45
 Wiley, Robert 41
 William, Edward 29
 Winn, Dennis
 Wolfe, John A. 45
 Wood, George 28
 Wood, Gideon
 Woolsey, Samuel 25
 Woolsey, Hyrum
 Wright, Jefferson 25
 Young, George C.
 Utah, Pulla (Frenchman)

Mrs. James Lewis
 Mrs. Phillip B. Lewis
 Jane Little
 Mrs. Jane Little
 Mrs. Love
 Eliza Miller
 Louisa Mitchell
 Mrs. William Morse
 Susanna Robinson
 Zilpha Smith
 Catherine Steele
 Betsey Topham
 Harriet Whipple

Emmiline Leavitt
Lovina Lee
Polly Lee

Mary Ann Whipple
Clarisy Whitney
Mary Wood

Names of Children

John P. Adams
Joseph Baker
Sidney H. Burton
Miss E. Green
Miss R. Green
James McGuffie Jr.
Joseph McGuffie
Mary Jane Robinson

Solomon Robinson
Elizabeth Steele
Mary C. Steele
Mahonri M. Steele
Master Wiley
James Wolfe
and three others

Rolling Stock, Livestock, and Supplies

2 carriages,
101 wagons,
368 oxen,
100 horses,
12 mules,
146 cows,
20 beef cattle,
14 dogs,
16 cats,

121 chickens,
56,922 pounds of flour,
35,370 pounds of wheat,
3,486 pounds corn,
2,163 pounds oats,
1,267 pounds barley,
3,240 pounds potatoes,
1228 pounds groceries,
with a good supply of tools, etc.

* March 31, 1915 John H. Henderson died at Parowan at the age of 84. He was the last of the original pioneers of Parowan residing at that place.

³ Mr. Carruthers describing the vigorous operations of the first year at Parowan gives the following: "After looking out and selecting a location, we formed our wagons into two parallel lines, some serenely paces apart. We then took our boxes from the wheels and placed them about a couple of paces from each other, so securing ourselves that we could not easily be taken advantage of by any unknown foe. This done, we next cut a road up the canyon, opening it to a distance of eight miles, bridging the stream in five or six places, making the timber and poles (of which there is an immense quantity) of easy access. We next built a large meetinghouse in the form of two rectangles, lying transversely, two stories high, of large pine trees all well hewn and neatly joined together. We then built a large square fort with a commodious cattle corral inside the enclosure. The houses built were some of hewn logs, and some of adobes, but all neat, comfortable, and convenient. We next enclosed a field five by three miles square with a good ditch and pole fence. We dug canals and water ditches to the distance of thirty or forty miles. One canal to turn the water of another creek upon the field for irrigation purposes was seven miles long. We built a saw and grist mill the same season. I have neither time nor space to tell you of one-half of the labors we performed here in one season. Suffice it to say that when the governor came along in the spring, he pronounced it the greatest work done in the mountains by the same amount of men."

When Parowan was settled, it was the frontier settlement of the south, the nearest settlement being Payson with only three log houses at the time.

⁴ It is claimed, however, that it signified "Cold Water."

1951-1954
Chapter 11
The Founding of New Settlements

Parowan had made a fair start as a settlement, but the harvest was not what had been expected by some so many became discouraged and left the mission, returning to their homes in the north. Others however, came in, and the place began to improve slowly. On May 16, 1851, the City Council met and appointed officers. A charter had been granted to the city in January by the General Assembly of Deseret. Now that the place was permanently founded other settlements were soon started in various places.

In 1849 Captain Jefferson Hunt piloted a company through by this route to California. At a point near where Newcastle now stands and a little before they reached the Mountain Meadows, Hunt lost his bearings for a time and a part of the company, thinking that Hunt was bearing too far to the north, broke off and went west through the canyon above where Enterprise now stands. About five miles above that place they left some of their wagons, which the Indians later burned. When this country was first settled, Nephi Johnson, Los, Atchison, and Lytle went out and gathered up some of the irons. This party suffered all that persons could and many of them perished before California was reached. Hunt and his party went through without much difficulty and arrived in California in December. These were the first wagons that ever went through on this route.

The next summer a party of thirty started to follow the trail of those who broke off from Hunt. This party attempted to make the journey in the warm part of the season and all perished, not one reaching the coast. This was the company from which the name of Death Valley was given to that low sink that has proved so fatal to so many who have tried to cross to California by this route.

About April 10, 1851 Amasa W. Lyman and Charles C. Rich passed through Parowan on their way to settle in California. Parley P. Pratt was along with them. This company consisted of about 500 persons.

Parowan now commenced the labors of forming new settlements. The first was at Cedar City, eighteen miles south east of Parowan which was located on what was then known as the Little Muddy. It was later named Coal Creek as coal had been discovered on that stream. The company that left Parowan to settle this place consisted of about thirty-five persons. They left on this mission in November, 1851. They gave the name of Cedar City to their new location. This settlement was founded for the purpose of opening up the Iron Works, there being immense bodies of iron ore nearby to the south west. Here the winter was passed amid some privation, mainly for lack of warm clothing. On January 30 a dry goods peddler made his appearance, the first to penetrate this desert wilderness. From him the settlers obtained sufficient clothes to make them fairly comfortable for the present. A road on the canyon was opened, a fort was built, 500 acres of land was enclosed, extensive canals and water ditches were cut, crops were sown and harvested.

In the meantime, in the spring of 1852 Erastus Snow and Franklin D. Richards, then in England, in compliance with instructions from the First Presidency of the Church, contained in the Sixth General Epistle, organized the Deseret Iron Company, with a subscription amounting to 4,000 pounds, in shares of 500 pounds each; and on returning to Utah, obtained a liberal charter for the same from the Legislature, for fifty years, confirming the price of the shares and leaving the extent of the capital to be regulated by the requirements of the business.

In October it was resolved to move the settlement a little further to the south, and before the end of the year a number of iron workers and farmers arrived from Salt Lake City. The scarcity of nails hindered building, and workmen were brought from England to manufacture them from the native ore, but the experiment failed, as the work could not be done on a sufficiently large scale to make it profitable so it was abandoned. Some work for making iron was manufactured, it is stated that a \$1,700 pound of good iron every twenty-four hours, was run out but this did not last long. The most of this was simply an experiment, and it proved to be expensive in a country to establish works of this nature that would pay, and the work was gradually dropped.

Six miles south of Cedar, Fort Walker was built, containing at the close of 1851 only nine men capable of bearing arms. The name was soon changed to Hamilton's Fort, the Hamiltons being the principal occupants; Samuel, John, and their father were the more permanent residents.

Joel H. Johnson was appointed to take care of the stock of the people of Parowan soon after the pioneers arrived and made their location on Center Creek. With his sons Sextus, Nephi, and some others he moved to what they called Johnson's Springs, eleven or twelve miles southwest from Parowan, where they built a fort which was called Johnson's Fort (now called Enoch). Here they herded the surplus stock and kept them from the Indians.

In the fall of 1852 a settlement was founded five miles northeast of Parowan on what was called Red Creek, and by December there were fifteen or twenty families located here. Prominent among them was John Topham, Orson H. Adams, William H. Dame, Benjamin Watts, and others of the Parowan pioneers. The place was named Paragoonah.¹

Fort Harmony on Ash Creek, twenty miles southwest from Cedar City was the southernmost point settled at this early date. In 1852 John D. Lee located a ranch here.

In 1854 Jacob Hamblin and two others were sent south as missionaries to the Indians. They were to establish settlements in the valley of the Virgin and Santa Clara and teach the Indians how to farm, etc. They located on the Santa Clara where a fort was built about four miles west of the present site of St. George. They were soon joined by others, some of whom founded the village of Washington.

Toquerville, situated on Ash Creek, was started in 1858 by several families from Cedar City, among them was the family of Klingensmith of "Mountain Meadow" fame. Joshua T. Willis was an early settler here and was for many years bishop of the place. Job Hall from Parowan was another early settler here.

In 1858 Virgin City was founded and the place was laid out in 1860 by Nephi Johnson. The first meeting house was built in 1861.

Early in February 1856 Simon F. Howd, Edward W. Thompson, James P. Anderson, Wilson C. Nowers, and some others left Parowan and went over to Beaver to found a settlement. (The name Beaver was given the stream as well as the town in consequence of finding many beaver dams in the stream.) They arrived on the ground on February 6, and in a short time thirty or forty families were gathered here. During the following winter a log school house was erected. Edward W. Thompson did most of the surveying of the place and the field.

Minersville, about eighteen miles west of Beaver, was settled by parties from Parowan in 1859, John H. Rollins being the bishop.

Some missionaries to the Indians had been called south and others soon joined them. Because of the warm climate, it was supposed that cotton might be raised in the valley of the Virgin and Santa Clara. About one quart cotton seed was planted in the spring of 1855, yielding enough to produce thirty yards of cloth. The spinning and ginning were done by hand and the weaving on a treadle loom. In 1857, thirty pounds were planted, but the crop was a failure as the seed was bad. In 1858-9 other experiments were made, the cotton raised the first year costing \$3.40 per pound and the second year \$1.90. The industry was found unprofitable but still it was the means of furnishing some clothing to these pioneers, however it was soon abandoned. The attempt has been made with a view to produce in the territory all that was needed for its population.

Chapter Notes

¹ Paragoonah is said to be a Paiute name signifying "Warm Water." Why this name was given has not been found out as the water is not warm. Some say that it was the Piede name for Little Salt Lake. The place in early days was frequently called "Red Creek," the soil around here being of a reddish cast.

1853
Chapter 12
The Indian War of 1853

The new settlements in the south were prospering and things looked very encouraging. When we reached Parowan, we at once commenced to improve. My father went to work in the saw mill, which was about a mile from the fort, and I helped John C. L. Smith, my brother-in-law, to get out some timber for a grist mill. I simply drove the team, the old white steers that he brought from Nauvoo, while he drove the horse team. J. C. L. Smith was in partnership with Apostle George A. Smith in building a new grist mill about three stories high. The old one was too small. There were many drawbacks, however; one was a heavy flood which did much damage in the fall of 1853, especially at Cedar City.

The Indian War of 1853 started early in the summer, while the new settlers were toiling to build homes and make improvements. It was caused in Utah County by some foolish whites taking some advantage of the Indians.¹ The news was soon transmitted to all the neighboring tribes of Indians and most of them joined in the hostile movement, but a few around some of the settlements pretended to be neutral. The war thus became quite general throughout the territory. Steps were now taken to protect the settlers in all the outlying places. The smaller places were abandoned and the people moved into the larger ones into forts. The territory was put under martial law. The people of Paragoonah moved into Parowan and a wall was immediately started which was to enclose the place. This wall was built of damp earth pounded into a box or between planks with brush and straw mixed into it. It was six feet thick at the bottom and tapered to two and a half feet thick at the top. It was twelve feet high and one mile long, and enclosed the fort which was one quarter of a mile square. Gates were placed on the four sides of it. This was a heavy task for the pioneers who had just started to build their homes. Besides this labor the people were placed under a military organization and guards were kept up regularly day and night. The stock was all herded by a strong guard during the day and corralled at nights in the center of the fort. All Parties going into the canyons or fields went armed and in companies. This state of affairs checked all improvements. While this was a heavy tax on the people, they got through without any loss of life or property. The center of the war was in the north, where several lives were lost and much property taken by the Indians. During all this time the people were under martial law. All who were able to bear arms were called each night to the appointed place, the roll was called, and the guard was detailed, etc. During the day a look out was kept, a man being stationed in a kind of belfry on top of the meeting house with a spy glass. He scanned the whole valley to see if any one entered it, and if anything unusual appeared he gave a signal, and the officer of the guard immediately looked into the matter.

The work on the fields and canyon was done at a great disadvantage. My Brother-in-law, John C. L. Smith, was at work in the canyon most of the time, and I went with him often and drove one team. We generally went in companies of eight or ten.

The outbreak had caused a change in the plan for the location of the new mill. It was now decided to build it inside the fort wall. Some of the timbers had been placed and some work done near the old mill, but they were soon changed to the new location.

During some of these exciting times Samuel Lewis tied his horse to a fence or post near the house, while he went in to see about something. The Indians around here pretended to be friendly and were in the fort much of the time. On this occasion a young Indian came along and, leaping upon the horse, rode off. Some of the boys soon had their horses and were in pursuit. This soon brought out all the Indians that were around, their camp being near the fort. They seemed greatly interested and excited, as much so as an Indian ever gets, in watching the pursuers of the Indian that was on the horse. The man stationed on the meeting house in the look out was also watching the chase. During this time the Indians soon formed a plan to attack the fort if anything happened to the Indian that was being pursued, if the whites should kill him when he was overtaken. The plan was this: ten or twelve men were dispatched to attack the whites who were in the fields, about the same number were to attack those who were in the canyon, five were posted at the shop of Calvin C. Pendleton (he was our gunsmith), and the rest of the Indians were to use their bows and arrows on the people in the fort at their doors and in the street. Those who were to attack the gunsmith and the parties outside of the fort had guns, while those in the fort had only bows and arrows. These preparations being made with the greatest care and secrecy were not noticed at the time. The Indians now waited to see what was to be done with the young Indian that the boys were pursuing. The Indian was soon overtaken and brought back unhurt. In case the Indian had been killed, the plan to attack the fort would no doubt have been carried out.

The Indians had always claimed to be friendly and some of them worked for the whites. They went with us boys for wood, we paying them a little flour for their work. We boys played with them and often took their bows and arrows to shoot with. I well remember the time when the horse was taken, some whom I had played with so much acted very strange and one that had often let me take his bow to shoot with, on this occasion refused to let me have it and seemed deeply interested in something else. At that time we had no suspicion of the plot that they had laid, and as I was near this particular Indian much of the time, I presume that I would have been the first victim had the attack been made. This plan the Indians had made came to light a few years later when a kind of peace talk was had and the Indians were treated to a feast and made new promises of their friendship. At this talk they stated what they had done and the plans that had been made for the massacre. They also told of killing some stock at different times, of thefts, etc., which the whites had never known of before. The people had no idea that these friendly Piedes had been the aggressors in these cases until they made their statement of these affairs. These offences were pardoned and overlooked at this peace talk, but it taught the whites a lesson not to trust the Indians too far even if they did pretend to be friendly. This lesson was not forgotten in our troubles in after years. It caused many to be too harsh in their judgment as to friendly Indians, saying there were none.

Another incident, a murder, was brought out at the above named peace talk, which confirmed the statements of the Indians and showed their spirit of revenge for wrongs that any member of the tribe had sustained. These Indians were much more friendly to those at the fort than to those who were traveling through, such as emigrants. The following case may show that they made some distinction between strangers and those at the fort.

In the fall of 1853, or it may have possibly been the next fall, it was claimed that a member of one of the adjoining tribes had been killed by the whites in the north, so they felt justified, as well as considering it their duty, to kill a white man to pay for this. In doing it they did not want to break off with their white friends in the fort, so they selected a man who was not a resident of the place. A man by the name of George Cummings (the boys called him Zeke from a story that he told soon after he came in) had come from the north. He was not a Mormon and wished to go on to California. White waiting for a company that was going through to the coast, he got work for a while from Jacob Hoffhines. He was a large and powerful man and apparently had no fear of the Indians for he often went into the canyon alone and stayed for several days chopping timber. Not long after he started to work for Hoffhines, a company came along on their way to California. He made arrangements to go on with them, but had to remain to settle up with Hoffhines. They went on to Summit Creek and he was to go out and join them in the evening. After getting his affairs settled up, he started out on foot in the evening to join the company as agreed. He was not armed, and when he had gone a little over a mile he was ambushed by three Indians who probably found out in the fort that he was going. They shot some arrows into him, and he then ran towards Summit; but they ran ahead of him and again shot more arrows into him. He then turned to run back to the fort and halloood as loud as he could, but the people in the fort did not hear him. The Indians who were near the fort and knew what was taking place said that they heard him. The three Indians again got ahead of him and shot more arrows into him. He now became so weak that he sat down, and the Indians came up to him. He had a knife in his hand which they snatched from him and cut his throat with it. He died hard they said, and they pounded his head with stones and covered him up; yet they said that he was not yet dead. Some time after this my father found his skull and hat, which was identified. Until then it was supposed that he had gone on to California. Some people now thought that Hoffhines and he had some difficulty in their settlement, and he had followed Cummings and killed him. The Indians told the story at the peace talk as above stated about as I have given it.

During the fall J. C. L. Smith, Wm. H. Dame, Charles Hall, and Job Hall went up the canyon to explore a little beyond where they had been before. They discovered a meadow, which they named the Yankee Meadow as they were all Yankees. They returned and took some scythes and went up and cut hay and made a road through the timber. I followed them, driving the first team up to that place. Later Barney Carter, his brother Charles, and some others went up the canyon and discovered a meadow to the north of the Yankee. They named this the Hoosier Meadow as they were all from the Hoosier state.

During the winter of 1853-4 I went out to hunt some animals. I only went a short distance but was poorly clad, and circled around for some time. I ran into James Low and party who were out about two miles from town. They had a fire, and when I reached them I found that I was so cold that I could scarcely speak. I was not very concerned, but Low told my folks that I came nearly perishing. It was fortunate for me that I happened in at their camp.

Chapter Notes

¹ Joshua Terry, Mosiah Behunin, and some other pioneers in interpreters said that the underlying cause of the Indian outbreak or Walker War, as it was termed, was the refusal of the Mormons to countenance the slave trade, which the Spaniards in the south had encourage so long. This was stealing Indian children and selling them to the whites, the warlike tribes preying upon the weaker ones.

1853
Chapter 13
Some Events in the Early Fifties

In the latter part of 1853 John C. Fremont started to explore a route through from the Missouri River to the Pacific coast. It was in the dead of winter when he reached the mountains. Game was scarce, his provisions giving out, he floundered through the snow and starved for several weeks, and finally reached Parowan on February 6, 1854. He was not aware of there being a settlement here until he came into the valley. Of this trying time and suffering, Mrs. Jessie Fremont says in her "Far West Sketches": "The winter had been very harsh, and much snow falling, drove off the game. Mr. Fremont had in his party but a few of his old companions--men whose experience and nerve gave them resource and staying power in emergencies. The new men became nearly demoralized under the trying ordeal of cold and hunger, and were almost given out when, after forty days of increasing want, they reached this small Mormon settlement. They were taken care of with a true hospitality and kindness which none of our family ever forgot. One good man, Fuller, had died the day before, but they brought him in fastened on a horse, and Christian burial was given him while men and women with true Christian kindness patiently nursed back to life those nearly exhausted.

"Most of the party were unwilling to go farther and remained there, for whites and Indians agreed that no one had ever been heard of again who had tried to cross into California on that line.

"As Mr. Fremont persevered, Mr. Babbitt aided him in all ways to refit, and cashed his personal draft on a San Francisco bank, a trust never before shown a Gentile by a Mormon."

The party was certainly in a starving and demoralized condition when they reached Parowan. Mrs. Fremont says that Fuller was brought in and received Christian burial. I think that she is mistaken in this. The facts as near as I could gather were that some distance up in Fremont's canyon the party met some Ute Indians and obtained a very little dried meat. Fuller ate some of it, which immediately physicked him, and he was so weak that he fell from his horse and died. After Fremont got into Parowan Simeon F. Howd and Mr. Davis went out and buried Fuller at a point about twenty-two miles from Parowan, about a mile and a half above what is known as Mule Point. The party was so nearly famished on reaching the fort that it is stated by Wilson G. Nowers that some were confined under lock and key to prevent them from eating too much at first. There were many in the party whose feet were frosted and in bad condition. The men were divided up among the settlers; my sister Sarah Smith took care of Fremont, John Steele and others took some of the party, and James N. Smith was appointed to gather up supplies for the company. For this act of kindness Mr. Smith was remembered when he went to Arizona in 1879. Fremont was then Governor of Arizona, and he at once sent his congratulations to Mr. Smith and his party, and appointed him Notary Public. He added that it might not help him any but it might benefit his friends.

When Fremont got ready to continue the journey west, he went out on the little hill above the spring just south of the fort and there took his observations and bearings. I, then but a boy, went out and watched him. He started out on his westward journey, going about in the direction of the present site of Lund as near as I could judge. During his stay in Parowan a party was sent back to recover the instruments and goods that he had cached some distance back in the mountains, but the articles were not found. It was thought that the Utes that Fremont met when he came in had found the cache and had of course appropriated them to their own use.

Jessie Fremont relates an interesting circumstance connected with this expedition. She says that for some two weeks she had been oppressed with a feeling that Mr. Fremont was starving. She could not eat or sleep, and was wasting away. One night after coming home from a party, she was getting some wood to make a fire, when Fremont appeared to her, touched her shoulder, and in a peasant way spoke her name. She seemed to realize by the tone and expression that he was safe, and from this time on she ceased to worry and soon regained her health which had been dangerously threatened. When Mr. Fremont returned, his journal was examined and it was found that he wrote to his wife at 11:00 P.M. on February 6, 1854, after he had seen that his party was made comfortable for the night. Senator Benton made a calculation of the difference of time between Washington and Parowan, and it was found that Fremont had appeared to his wife in Washington at the very hour and minute as near as could be ascertained, that he wrote to her from Parowan.

Our Indian troubles still continued, but not so bad with us as it was in the north where the Utes were more active. With us we had but little to fear from our Indians if we were always on our guard. The herding of the stock was a

great task, besides the stock did not do as well, being corralled every night in the fort. The guard duty was also becoming a drag as well as a burden for men who had to work every day.

I recall a case of apostasy which was probably started at the guard house. One evening the guard had been detailed as usual, and the guards met at the school house where they all stayed during the night, each taking his turn when called. On this occasion there was more than the usual number of jokes passed, and most of them were centered on a man by the name of Erastus Curtis. He got mad over it and went home. One of the guards then asked what they would do now. Jesse N. Smith, one of the guards, spoke up and said, "Let us go down to his house and laugh at him." So they all went down, not knowing what to laugh at, but they were soon enlightened on this subject. After lining up before the door of Curtis's residence, Jesse N. Smith, who always laughed very heartily, thrust his hands in his pockets and giving his shoulders a peculiar twist which was a characteristic feature with him when he wished to give effect to the laugh, he started out on one of his loudest and most expressive out bursts of laughter. No more was required to start the others, and John H. Henderson, one of the party, afterward said that he laughed until he could hardly get away from the place. After this Curtis thought he had been laughed out of the company. He became disaffected and soon left and went to California, as we often remarked, having been laughed out of the church.

Soon after Parowan was settled there was a herd house erected at Summit where herders stayed a portion of the time to look after the stock, but on the breaking out of Indian troubles, this place was abandoned and the stock gathered in.

In 1854 George A. Smith, Richard Harrison, and William H. Dame were sent to the Legislature from Iron County. They had a guard from Parowan, through to Provo, and on their return. In January 1855 the Legislature appropriated \$572.40 to pay this guard. I simply make a note of the above to show how isolated we were and the disadvantages that we worked under during the early days in southern Utah.

In the spring of 1854 my sister Betsy Jane was married to John A. West. He had been called to fill a mission to the Hawaiian Islands, and in a couple of days after their marriage he started on his mission. There were several missionaries for the Islands in this company from the northern part of the territory. Prominent among them were William King from Fillmore, William W. Cluff from Provo, Silas S. Smith from our own was one who went at this time, but his health failing he returned sooner than the others, who were gone nearly four years.

During 1854 the grasshoppers did much damage to crops in Utah, and the next year crops failed from the ravages of these pests, which led to a state of famine. During this time my father's family did not suffer, as he had some wheat stored up. He let some go to those who were in need. In some places in the northern part the people dug roots to help the supply of eatables. Grasshoppers visited this mountain region occasionally, and when they came they destroyed almost everything green. It was stated they struck Kansas as early as 1820, but probably had visited the place many times before the whites became acquainted with the country.

Our settlement was visited occasionally by emigrants who were on their way to California, and we had a monthly mail from Salt Lake City to San Bernardino California, or rather through to Los Angeles. Those who drove this mail had a hard and dangerous time, almost equal to those who rode the pony express across the plains at a later date. Among these drivers were Mr. Conger, who brought the first government mail through from the west in 1854, Ed. Hope, John Hunt, John Lowder, and James Powell. I will relate an incident that occurred to one of these parties as given by Ed. Hope, who was accompanied by Powell on this trip and Bro. Eyde, a returning missionary. They were on their way from California to Salt Lake City. They had crossed the desert from the Vegas and had reached the Muddy where they stopped to get a meal and a little rest. Selecting a favorable place, as they thought, one of the party started to cook and prepare the meal. Ed. Hope, being greatly fatigued, lay down to rest and soon fell asleep. He suddenly jumped up and said, "Boys, we must get out of here or we will all be killed." The boys laughed at him and said, after looking around, that there was no danger. He lay down again, but in a few minutes jumped up again and said in an exciting way, "We must get out of here or we will all be killed," and at once made a rush for the horses to saddle up. This excited movement started the others, who seized their horses and commenced to saddle them. At this moment a large body of Indians broke upon them from a concealed point two hundred yards away. The party fled at once, and a running fight took place which lasted for four miles. The Indians succeeded in capturing the mail, but the party made their escape. James Powell was wounded in the hip, which left him lame for the rest of his life. Hope, when asked what warned him of the danger, said some one spoke to him and told him to get out of there or they would all be killed. He said that the voice sounded like his mother's, who had been dead fifteen years.

During the winter of 1855-6 the legislature met at Fillmore. The United States court also convened at that place during the winter and my brother-in-law, John C. L. Smith, was called to attend this court. While there he became sick, but recovered enough to return home. He soon took worse again and died at 11:00 P.M. December 30, 1855. He was a very energetic man; he was tall and slim, being six feet, four inches tall, he was thirty-three years of age. He had been President of the Stake for some time, being put in soon after he arrived in Parowan. At the time of his death his counselors were James H. Martineau and Jesse N. Smith. John Steele had been one of his counselors, but he had been called on a mission to Las Vegas, and this necessitated the change in the counselors. He was postmaster and notary public. President Smith was much beloved by the people. He was an enterprising man and was pushing every improvement with all the energy that he had. He and Apostle George A. Smith were in partnership in the building of a grist mill which was constructed on the latest plan, the designer and building being Edward W. Thompson. This mill stood for many years, doing all the grinding for the place. It was finally burned down, it was thought by the work of incendiaries. President Smith was a most devoted saint, and had passed through all the trials and persecutions from Nauvoo to the Mountains. He had done much in the pioneer work of settling this mountain region. He was born in New England, his father died while he was quite young, his mother later married a man by the name of Akens. He was buried on New Years day, 1856.

1856
Chapter 14
The Reformation Period

Early in the year of 1856 William Horne Dame was appointed President of the stake in place of John C. L. Smith, deceased. He chose for his counselors Calvin C. Pendleton and Jesse N. Smith. Not long after Dame was appointed president, he organized an Elders quorum, and quite a number of young men were ordained elders. I was ordained an elder on March 11, 1856 by Francis T. Whitney. The quorum soon grew in numbers and a lively and spirited interest was taken in the new organization. This was the first quorum of elders that was organized, there had never been any Deacons or Teachers quorum organized that I am aware of.

Early in the fall of 1856 I went down to the Santa Clara with my cousin, Dudley Leavitt, on a visit and an outing. I remained there about two weeks, and during the time I helped haul up many watermelons, and boil them down to make molasses out of them. While there I had several talks with Father Hamblin, father of Jacob Hamblin. He had been in the War of 1812 and related many incidents of the perilous part that he took in that conflict. I enjoyed my visit very much.

There were many Indians around, and they were very friendly. About this time, one of them was after a rabbit and it ran into a hole. He poked in a stick to get it out and brought out a rattle snake which bit him, and he died soon after from the effects of the poison. Another one of these Indians later on got his hand in a cane mill, which took all the flesh off to the shoulder. They refused to have it amputated and he died soon after. On our return we came by the same route that we went down on, by the Mountain Meadows.

What has been known as the Reformation was started in the fall of 1856, and was kept up during the winter with considerable zeal. There was a great amount of preaching and some became over zealous in the matter. The saints were required to obey the laws of the church or of God more fully than they had been doing, and everyone was re-baptized. Before they were permitted to be re-baptized they were closely catechized by the bishop, Tarlton Lewis, as to their mode of life and what they had done that was wrong. In case they had wronged anyone either by word or deed they were required to make it right. If they had stolen anything or taken any undue advantage of anyone they were required to make all these things right before they were re-baptized. This catechism was broad and searching, going into a person's actions in all the walks of life. This cut some so very close that they would not stand the prying into their private life, and they apostatized and left the church. I often thought that if they had lived pure and honest lives they would not have feared this catechism.

With this Reformation came the Law of Consecration, this required each one, no matter how little he had, to deed over everything he had to the President of the Church. The clerk took a list of what each person had, and then this was deeded over to the President of the Church so that no one owned a cent in his own name. What little I had or claimed, such as books, etc. I deeded over on the 15th of November 1856. There was never any more done about this law, and no turning over of the property was ever required. This had one effect. It brought the people to a test to see what they would do. It was certainly a hard trial for some to do it, but it hurt no one as the property was never asked for.¹

The reformation continued with little abatement through the winter of 1856-7, meetings were well attended and nearly everyone took part in making them interesting and instructive. However, I must confess that they often got into a kind of groove that was not so instructive as it ought to have been. We had few visitors and speakers from other places, which would give us a change and make our meetings a little broader and better in many respects. Our own speakers, that is the main ones that took part in our meetings the most, soon became less interesting and their speaking became monotonous to many. Our fast day meetings were held on the first Thursday in each month, they were very well attended.

We occasionally had someone who came to visit us, look after our spiritual welfare, and renew our interest in the gospel principles. On March 5 we had one of these visits from some of the brethren from Cedar City which was appreciated very much, for on such occasions we got something new which is more highly prized than would be the case in communities where there are the advantages of daily papers, etc., to keep the people posted on the progress that the world is making in political, spiritual, and temporal matters.

The elders' quorum was a live body of young men, and during the winter their quorum meetings were well attended. Most of them took occasion to speak at some of these meetings. This was a hard task for me, for I was very backward about speaking in meetings; and it was many years before I could do this in anything like an intelligent way. I was not able to collect my thoughts, as I was so badly frightened in facing a congregation. During the winter there was occasionally a dance given by the different quorums, but as the elders were composed mostly of young men and also had the largest quorum, they surpassed all others in these amusements. Most of the members of the quorum were a conscientious set of men, but sometimes there was one found who had lost faith in the gospel, if he ever had any. John Evans, an Englishman, proved to be one of this class. He had been considered a very worthy member, but he soon became disaffected and drew off. He was disfellowshipped from the quorum on February 16, 1857, and with some others went to California soon after.

During the period of the reformation there were many who got their Patriarchal blessings. Elisha H. Groves was the patriarch in his county. He lived in one of the settlements south of Cedar City at this time, and during the winter he came to Parowan and gave blessings to many of the saints. I received mine at his hands on January 30, 1857.²

Our meetings were kept up very regularly and punctually, both Sunday and Quorum meetings were well attended. Our Sunday School was held at 9:00 A.M., meeting at 10, and again at 2:00 P.M., and the elders quorum met in the evening; so it made a very busy day for those who attended all the meetings. Francis T. Whitney was the Superintendent of the Sunday School. He was a zealous worker and took great interest in this work, but notwithstanding this there was a portion of the young people who looked upon him as an old foggy and made much fun of him. He, however, did much good, he was a very punctual man in all his labors and duties, and he impressed this upon all the members of the school. This was perhaps as good a lesson as he could have taught them. He was our main blacksmith and was a great help to the young colony. In later years he got the idea that he could invent a machine that would go by perpetual motion. He worked on this until he spent what little money he had. He became almost insane on the subject, and died without accomplishing the object of his long and expensive labors.

During this time of preaching and exhorting, we occasionally had someone from the north with something new for us. On April 27, William Willis from Salt Lake City arrived at Paragoonah where he held meetings. He had been on a mission to the East Indies and was full of zeal. He was a good singer as well as a very good preacher and lecturer, which made his meetings very interesting as he always had something about Asia to tell. Coming on to Parowan he held numerous meetings, preaching, giving historical sketches of India, and singing songs. He remained in Parowan for some time, selling songs and soliciting means to help him through life. He remained too long and wore his welcome out, so some termed him a beggar or a begging missionary. Had he not remained so long, his preaching would have been more appreciated. My father gave him a two-year-old steer to help him out.

Chapter Notes

¹ In the first journal Joseph Fish wrote, the following paragraph appears just after the notation that he deeded what little he had over to the President of the Church, November 15, 1856:

I was re-baptized the next day. Although young it was my desire to do the things that were right, to live my religion and be a saint that might be fitted for future usefulness. I have often thought I was more thoughtful than many of the boys of my age, always despising an evil act or rude conduct, and my path was marked out accordingly, and my determination to shun bad company was fixed.

When he copied his journal, he perhaps thought this paragraph sounded egotistical and he left it out. It is inserted here merely to show what his ideals were at the age of sixteen. Religion was a very important part in the lives of the pioneers of Utah. Another paragraph from his early writings dated March 6, 1857:

As a general thing I attended my church functions very regularly. Sunday School commenced at 9:00 A.M., meeting at 10:30, and meeting again at 2:00 P.M. With elders meeting in the evening, a person had little time for play or idleness on the Sabbath. In after years I learned that attending these meetings was a great benefit to me. I acquired habits of industry and punctuality that perhaps I would not have acquired if I had spent the Sabbath riding the range and hunting stock as many of my playmates did. Some of them contracted such a love for hunting stock and such an

antipathy for work that they proved in after years to be light fingered, and thus their course was pointed out as a path to be shunned by all.

The memory of the meetings in our Elders quorum will live with me for many years, also the pleasant recollections of our Sunday School, and the choir. What an interest and zeal we took in learning our parts. We were very punctual at our practices.

² The blessing was as follows:

Brother Joseph, in the name of Jesus of Nazareth and by virtue of the holy Priesthood in me vested, I place my hands upon thy head to seal upon thee a patriarchal or father's blessing which shall rest upon thee and thou shall realize the fulfillment thereof. Thou art in the days of thy youth; thou must be obedient to the counsels of thy parents, keeping all the commandments of the Lord thy God, treasuring up knowledge and wisdom, and thy life shall be precious in the sight of thy Heavenly Father. Thy days shall be many upon the earth which the Lord thy God giveth thee, thy guardian angel shall be with thee, he will not leave nor forsake thee, but in his hands thou wilt be borne up and be come mighty in thy day like unto the sons of Moroni. Thou shalt become an avenger of the blood of innocence upon them that dwell upon the earth, the angel of vengeance will be with thee, he shall go before thee, strengthen and nerve thy sinews, that no power shall be able to withstand thee. Thou shalt be able to lift thy voice both to Jew and Gentile and many of the remnants of Israel shall be gathered by thee into the new and everlasting covenant. Thou shalt become mighty in the priesthood, a counselor in Israel, a man of judgement and decision, able to fill any mission or station whereunto thou mayest be called, an honor and a blessing unto thy parents and all with whom thou shalt be associated. Thou art of the seed of Abraham of the loins of Joseph and blood of Ephraim, a lawful heir to the holy Priesthood which thou shalt receive in due time that thou mayest be able to stand in thy proper lot and station in the redemption of the progenitors, many of whom shall be made known to thee by the voice of inspiration and by the visits of holy messengers who shall reveal unto thee the genealogy of thy fathers. Thou shalt become a father in Israel, thy posterity shall multiply and become numerous upon the earth, bearing the holy Priesthood unto the latest generation. Thy name shall be perpetuated, good order shall reign in thy habitation, wealth shall flow into thy hands for thy comfort and for the welfare of the Kingdom of God. Thou shalt receive the testimony of Jesus and have a knowledge of future events. Thou shalt behold the redemption of Zion, the coming of the redeemer, the reign of peace established upon the earth. Thou shalt aid in building the temple in Zion into which thou wilt enter and receive many blessings, be anointed a king and priest unto the most high God, receiving thy crown, kingdom, dominion, power, and eternal increase, be numbered with the 144,000 who shall stand upon mount Zion as Saviors of men, receive thy inheritance with the faithful in Zion. Be humble and faithful and these blessing shall be sure unto thee. I seal them upon thy head in the name of Jesus of Nazareth, even so, Amen.

1857
Chapter 15
Trials and Troubles in a Frontier Town

Our Indian troubles had quieted down or practically ceased and our many duties became somewhat lighter, it had been a period of trials and labors. Jacob Hoffhines (who had been in the Battalion) had been in command of the post most of the time, he had much trouble and annoyance especially with the herd. Horses were scarce and many of the men had to go out on foot, and these had always a long list of excuses and complaints to offer. This annoyed Hoffhines very much, which pleased a few who delighted in giving him trouble. These trials and troubles had partly passed, and we were enabled to tend to our labors with a little more time and attention.

During our Indian troubles every one of a suitable age was enrolled in the militia and military drills were quite frequent. We often met in the meeting house and went through what exercises we could in the evenings, thus we utilized the days and evenings to the best advantage in performing our labors and learning the use of arms and the art of war. These drills were continued for several years, we generally used Saturdays for our outdoor maneuvers. They were the main thing to keep us prepared for trouble and to have our arms always ready to meet danger at any time. Our arms were inspected and each one was required to have a certain amount of ammunition on hand. During the summer or autumn we had a two days drill, and sometimes we camped out in order to give greater effect to a military life and the way to conduct affairs if we were called for service in the field.

As our Indian troubles quieted down, our loose stock was allowed to go out on the range without a guard, and in the early fall my father and E. W. Thompson turned theirs with others out on the Summit bottoms. As winter set in it was thought best to move some of these to Johnson's fort. William Davenport and I went out one day to gather up some and take them to the fort. The snow was about six inches deep and we were walking. After wading through the snow and tramping over the bottoms, we gathered up the stock and separating out that which we wished to take to the fort, we started out with them and arrived there about dark. The people kindly gave us our supper and urged us to stay all night, but we were bashful and decided to return home although we were tired and it was quite late in the evening. We each cut us a heavy stick to serve as a cane and also to protect us from the wolves should they attack us, since we had no arms. We managed to wade through the eleven miles or more of snow and reached home sometime in the night, but over the last mile or more we had to rest every hundred yards. It was a very foolish move for us to attempt such a walk after we had spent the day in the snow and were tired out to start with, but we were bashful boys and did not like to stay away from home.

U. V. Stewart had the misfortune to lose one of his oxen, I think that it got its neck broken or killed in some manner. As he wished to help compensate for the loss of the animal, he butchered it and sold it out for beef. The facts in the case were soon found out and Stewart was handled for his fellowship and cut off the church. He, however, soon after made things right and was restored to fellowship. He later moved to Beaver.

Our religious meetings were still kept up very well, but as spring opened up our farming interest demanded much of our time and attention. On March 6, 1857 a public meeting was held to consider our farming interests. A committee of three was appointed to attend to the dividing of the water and to act as fence viewers, they were to report all fences that they did not consider lawful and that needed repairing.

There were six persons appointed to give out the water or notify each person when to take it, one for each ditch, the stream being divided into six irrigation streams. The work on the ditches, cleaning them out, making head gates, etc. was soon commenced, which gave work for the farmers.

The work for the spring crop was soon commenced, and after the grain was in, nearly everyone went to work in the canyon. Our method of putting in our wheat was to plow it in. A person would irrigate about five acres of land at once and then when it got dry enough to plow or just at the right time, he would get three or four persons to come and help him and they would plow it all in one day and harrow it over. Then he would plow back for those who helped him when they had their land ready. This was a little inconvenient sometimes, but it was a social way and we thought the best method at the time.

In all new countries or places nearly everything that is used is made at home; this was the case with us. Our own furniture was made at home, chairs, tables, bedsteads, etc. were all of our own make. We were greatly in need of china ware, dishes of every description were scarce in this southern district. Thomas Davenport, who had learned the

potters trade in England, attempted to remedy this lack of earthen ware and built a kiln for burning crockery ware. He made some very good ware which he sold throughout the country and helped to supply the southern part of our territory with this much needed article. He, like all others in attempting to manufacture anything in a new country and with raw material, met with many difficulties. Getting the proper clay and the right kind of material for glazing the article was experimented with for some time, but at last he got some of his ware glazed fairly well. There was another trouble to get the proper kind of wood to burn the ware with. I assisted him some this spring in getting timbers for his kiln.

Doctor Calvin C. Pendleton, who had studied medicine in his younger days and had his diploma as a physician, dropped his labors as a doctor and took up that of gunsmith. He was our doctor but, not liking the business very well, he did not practice much. He, however, was on hand in case of broken bone, or injuries received by accidents. He took more of an interest in his work at making and repairing guns. He got old gun barrels and made gun stocks for them and fitted them up with new locks, etc. He also took old gun barrels and cut them up into shorter pieces and made pistols, he was thus able to furnish quite a number of guns and pistols, which were a great help to a community where every person was expected to have a gun and pistol. He was one of the most valuable men in the community, as nearly everyone had some repairing to do in this line.

Good timber for repairing wagons, etc. was out of the question. In some of my rumblings I found a few sticks of maple high up on the mountain to the southwest of town. I managed to get up there with a yoke of oxen and dragged them down to town. I expected to use one or two of them to make axletrees for wagons, but they were finally taken to make cogs for the grist mill.

On April 29, my sister, Sarah, widow of John C. L. Smith, was married to William Campbell McGregor. The wedding took place at my sister's residence and all of my family attended it. My sister had four children by Smith, two boys and two girls, one of the boys died while an infant. McGregor was a Scotchman by birth. He was a good and an intelligent man. In early life his eyes were affected and in treating them they had not been handled properly. They were taken out and scraped, and he was very near sighted, one eye being useless.

During the spring I got out some fat pine wood for the purpose of making tar, and on May 25 my father and I burned it and got considerable tar from it. We generally got about seventy-five gallons out of a kiln of two loads of wood, but if it was extra good and fat we would get more. The mode we adopted in burning tar was to dig out a place near a bank and split the wood up into small sticks about the size of a broom handle; then stand them up in the form of an Indian wigwam, cover them with straw and dirt, then set fire to them at the top. At the bottom of the concave a hole was made through into the bank below where the barrel was placed to catch the tar as it came out. This industry was followed a great deal for a time.

May 28, 1857 my father, mother, and brother Franklin R. started on what they called a visit to relatives and friends in Salt Lake City and vicinity. Father took a load of tar to sell and pay expenses on the road, tar being one of the products that we shipped to the City occasionally. He had a yoke of oxen. At this time very few people had horse teams. This way of visiting could seem odd and out of date now days. The troubles with the Indians had been settled but as there is always a danger of their taking some advantage when they have an opportunity, he and Richard Benson arranged to travel together. The first night out they camped at Buck Horne Springs. My father's team strayed off some distance during the night, and he did not get them very early. Benson became impatient and drove on as fast as he could, so this ended their traveling together. My father, however, got through all right and in due time, considering his mode of traveling.

In the spring or early summer, as soon as circumstances would permit, nearly everyone turned out to work on the roads in the canyon, which had been damaged by the snows and spring freshets. I went to work on the road June 5, where I worked about two weeks. The work was heavy and we did not have the proper tools for it. We made a new road around what we called the Hog's Back. During this time I hurt my chest while lifting on a rock. For several weeks after this I spit blood, and did not fully recover from the effects of it for several years.

We did not farm very extensively as my father worked at the saw mill and other things most of the time, but I did what little farming was done. We had about fifteen acres which we cultivated.

My parents returned from Salt Lake City in the fore part of July, having had a pleasant visit with relatives and friends in and around the city.

Apostle George A. Smith, the father and founder of the place, came in from the north Saturday, August 8, and the next day spoke at our meeting. He did not stay long in Parowan as he was going on to some of the settlements in the south. On his return he preached to us on the 22nd, and the next day proceeded on his journey north.

On August 16 an express came in from Salt Lake City, which stated that there were 400 soldiers (cavalry) on the Sweetwater River. It was thought that they were making their way through into the territory by following Fremont's trail, which would bring them into the north end of the valley. This move of sending troops into Utah stopped all improvements, and those in the north soon made preparations to vacate their homes.

During this move some of the Public Works of the Church were moved to Parowan. A machine shop was put up where all kinds of fire arms were repaired and some pistols were made, and later a bucket factory was established. When the difficulty which arose between the government and the saints was settled, these works were moved back north and those who came with them went also.

The people throughout the territory had prepared to abandon their homes, set fire to them, destroy everything they could, and move further south if the soldiers came in. This sending of the machine shops here was a start in that direction. The excitement at Parowan of course was not as high as it was in the north where the seat of the trouble was. The people, however, were on the alert, looking here to go if we had to leave our homes. Those to the south were exploring the country as far as the Colorado in the vicinity of Fort Mohave, and we were looking around to the east and west to see what the outlet would be if we moved. A company was sent to the White Mountains west to make a place and start a settlement, but this move never amounted to much. It was a general time of suspense, everyone was anxious about the future, and the improving of our places was suspended.

The Indians soon caught the spirit of the times and were troublesome to the passers by. They made a distinction between the old settlers and the emigrants. This led many of the passers by to think that the Mormons were in league with the Indians.

The people were making some preparations to move on south if found necessary. Among the experiments made was one of caching things, especially flour.¹ Sometime previous to this a few had cached some flour and others at this time did the same. This was to test how it would keep, as only a small quantity was cached at once or in one place. These caches were taken up sometime afterwards, and it was found that the flour had kept well and was as good as when it was put away. Some other experiments and preparations were made in case we would have to move.

Drilling of the militia was kept up and the inspecting of arms was looked after. Military tactics were studied, and the militia organized wherever it had been broken into by the abandoning of settlements and others coming in. All of this of course was not merely because of the army coming in, but was found necessary on account of Indian outbreaks, and no one knew when these would occur.

Chapter Notes

¹ Caches are famous in all the narratives of overland travel, whether for trade or discovery; they served as the only storehouses of the wilderness. The manner of making them is described by Captains Lewis and Clark, as follows: They choose a dry situation, then describing a circle of about twenty inches in diameter, remove the sod as gently and carefully as possible. The hole is then sunk a foot deep or more, perpendicularly; it is then worked gradually wider as it descends, until it becomes six or seven feet deep, and shaped like a kettle or the lower part of a large still. As the earth is dug out, it is handed up in a vessel and carefully laid upon a skin or cloth in which it is carried away, and usually thrown into the river, if there be one, or concealed so as to leave no trace of it. A floor of three or four inches thick is then made of dry sticks, on which is thrown hay or a hide perfectly dry. The goods, after being well aired and dried, are laid down and preserved from contact with the wall by a layer of other dried sticks, till all is stowed away. When the hole is nearly full, a hide is laid on top and the earth is thrown upon this and beaten down, until with the addition of the sod first removed, the whole is on a level with the ground, and there remains not the slightest appearance of an excavation. The first shower effaces every sign of what had been done, and such a cache is safe for years. A fire is sometimes built over the place and with the dirt and ashes perfectly conceals the spot.

1857
Chapter 16
Explorations

William H. Dame was the presiding officer in the church in this county, he was also colonel of the Iron Military District in command of this district which included all south of Fillmore. He sent out parties to explore the country so we would become better acquainted with it and the passes leading into the valley, especially the country and passes to the south and southwest. The parties from the southern settlements did the latter work of exploring. This was done so that in the case we had to leave our homes, we would know to some extent where to go and be able to guard the passes to a better advantage.

There was a party sent out east from Parowan and one to the west; the latter party consisted of John Steele, Stephen S. Barton, and myself. This party was not expected to go very far. We left Parowan August 26 with only a five-day provision. We traveled west, going through the gap at the foot of the lake. After we passed through the gap, we took a northwest course for a few miles, on going about eight miles we found a hole that apparently had been dug by wolves. In it we found water down about four feet from the top. The only way we could get a drink was to hold each other's feet while each got down to get a drink; we could not get any for our horses. From this point we turned a little more to the north, passing over a ridge where we found traces of lead ore in some of the pieces of rock that lay on the ground. After going a little farther, we camped without water. The next day we started out in the same direction but soon turned to the north and traveled until about the middle of the afternoon, when we struck the Beaver River near where Minersville was later founded. We camped here, our animals not having had any water since we left Parowan. On the 28th we started out in a southeastern direction and going a few miles, we came on to some springs where there were a few maples. Continuing on we reached Kane Springs, where we camped, and the next day we reached home about noon.

Immediately after returning from the above mentioned trip I went to work in the harvest field, for we had to improve every moment of time as we had so many things on our hands. I had a homemade cradle, and with this I cut two acres of grain a day. I was quite slim, only weighed 120 pounds, but still I kept up with a man I worked with who weighed 180 pounds.

On September 4 I started out on another exploring expedition, going to the northeast. (The party that had gone out before went more to the east and southeast.) Our party consisted of James H. Martineau, Samuel Lewis, Martin H. Anderson, and myself. We traveled up Little Creek and through Upper Bear Valley, where we killed the largest rattle snake that I had ever seen up to this time. The next day we traveled north and northeast until we struck the Sevier River, then followed down the river to the point where Circleville was later founded. We followed an old Indian trail, probably the one that Fremont came in on in 1854. On the way down the canyon to this place we noticed where the Indians had peeled several trees, we supposed to obtain the inner bark for food. On the 6th, after going about five miles, we reached the mouth of the East Fork of the Sevier. We then followed up that stream, going almost directly east for twelve or fourteen miles. Here the river made a bend coming in from the south, and there was a stream that came in from the north. At the junction of these two streams there was a large bottom five miles in extent and covered with cane and grass which grew to the height of eight or ten feet. Here we turned north up the stream that came in from that direction. We named this stream Otter Creek because we killed a couple of otters in it, each otter had a fish in its mouth when we shot it. Traveling on some distance, we camped where there was a small stream that came in from the west and emptied into Otter Creek.

September 7, we continued our journey north up Otter Creek, and came to some small creeks that came in from the west. Here we found a beautiful grove of red cedars upon a nice lovely meadow, which made a most enchanting scene. The stream was full of fish and often obstructed with beaver dams. There were great numbers of antelope in the valley. We were hardly out of sight of them for forty miles. We however paid little attention to them as we avoided discharging our guns as much as possible, and we never made a fire for fear of attracting the attention of some prowling savage. We always traveled until late in the afternoon, then we stopped and got our supper, let the horses rest and eat a little, and as soon as it was dark, started out and traveled about five miles to avoid being seen when we camped in case some Indians were watching us. At about this point we lost the old trail which we had followed all the way. I have been told since that there is a tradition that there was an old gold mine near this place that was worked by the Spaniards at an early date.

September 8, we passed the head of Otter Creek, having traveled up this stream about forty miles. We had found grass all the way to this valley, so we named it Grass Valley. We continued on about ten miles to a high ridge which seemed to be the dividing line between the waters of Grass Valley and those of the Sanpete country. Here we had a most beautiful view of the country. To the northwest could be seen the broken country and ragged ravines through which flowed the waters of Sanpete, to the north rose the lofty and majestic peak of Mount Nebo, to the east was a high range which formed the rim of this Great Basin, to the south would be seen the pleasant view of Grass Valley with its narrow but green meadows extending down to the East Fork of the Sevier.

After taking a good view of the country and noting the most practical passes, we started on our return trip, taking the same trail back that we had gone out on, we arrived home on the 11th, having traveled about 300 miles.

On our arrival at Parowan we met Stephen S. Barton, who told us of the terrible massacre that had been perpetrated at the Mountain Meadows the day before.

1857
Chapter 17
The Mountain Meadow Massacre

The subject of the Mountain Meadow Massacre has been written up very many times, and some of these have been colored more than the facts would justify. I will only give the outlines or main items as I understood them at the time. It appears that this company of emigrants were on their way to California and were going by the southern route. It appears that this company had been very obnoxious to all the people where they had passed, as they had made threats that when they got out where their stock could get pasturage they would return and help Johnson's army that was coming in to clean out the Mormons. There was an incident that aroused the Indians in the south. It was reported that at Corn Creek they had an animal that died or gave out, and they poisoned this animal as they knew that the Indians would eat it. They also poisoned the spring. I cannot say that it proved fatal to any of the Indians, but it had the effect of arousing all the Indians in the south to seek vengeance on this company. Upon arriving at Cedar City, it being the last settlement on their route, they were a little more bold in their statements. Some of them went to Klingensmith's mill where they bought a few supplies, among them they got hold of some whisky, there being a small distillery there which made what we termed sage brush whisky. As they got a little more of this than they should, they talked very freely, and boasted of what they had done to the Mormons and what they would do. There is a story told of this affair, but I cannot say how much truth there is in it. It is about as follows:

During the persecutions of the saints in Missouri, about forty of the mob came to a Mormon's house and after destroying everything in it, they took two girls that were there and lashed them to some benches and ravished them. One of the girls died from the effects of this treatment, but the other finally recovered and was at this time a resident of Southern Utah. From the talk and boasts that these emigrants made at the mill, it was understood that one or perhaps two or more of these men were in that company of the mob that had so inhumanly treated these girls. These statements and threats aroused those at the mill and a general fight was about started, but the emigrants withdrew before there was any blood shed. The Mormons in this district were thoroughly aroused, and under the circumstances thought that this company should be killed. It was an easy matter for John D. Lee and others to set the Indians to attack the company, which they did a short time after. When the Indians made the attack early in the morning, as is their custom, six of the emigrants fell at the first fire. The emigrants soon got their wagons in shape and throwing up a breast work of earth, they were able to resist the attack of the enemy. The Indians under the direction of a few of the whites kept up the siege. During this time quite a number had come on from the settlements south, many of them were not aware of the situation nor what was to be done. Many deliberations were held by the leading men, and it was decided to send an express to Brigham Young at Salt Lake City. James Haslem took this express and started about September 4. There were several express messengers sent to Colonel Dame at Parowan and Isaac C. Height went up himself and had a council with several of the leading men of Parowan, Dame in particular. What Dame recommended in the matter, I am unable to say. The Indians were now getting tired of the siege, they had lost several of their warriors. They now demanded that the Mormons go in and help them; they would turn against the Mormons if they did not. This placed the whites in a rather delicate position and they counseled together in the matter and finally had a prayer circle. After this it was suggested that John D. Lee go in with a flag of truce and get the emigrants to surrender, and then disarm and kill them. This was done. Lee went in with a white flag and promised protection to the emigrants if they would surrender and give up their arms, which they did. They were marched out and at a signal the whites turned and shot the men while the Indians who were with the women killed them. There were a few who escaped, two or three, but they were followed and killed. There were many of the whites who had been ordered out, and when they came here they took no part in the murder. They did not know what was wanted until they got on the ground. James Haslem returned with the express from Brigham Young, but his arrival was after the massacre had been perpetrated. The message from Pres. Young was for the emigrants to be protected and for the people to do everything they could to accomplish this. One of the men who escaped and was followed by the Indians and killed had a belt, and in this belt was a paper which gave the names of each one who was in the party. Lee got hold of this belt and burned it, but the company numbered about 125 in all. It is evident that if the express had reached them in time, the emigrants would have been protected. The placing of the blame of this affair was now discussed. Many blamed Col. Dame more than he or his friends would admit. The enemies of the church immediately placed the blame of the whole affair to the doors of Pres. Young and the leaders of the church. The affair has been written up by many of the gentile writers and colored very much with the blame of the whole affair laid to the doors of the church officials. I see no grounds for this conclusion. The order sent by Haslem clears the President. At the close of the second Lee trial, U. S. Marshal William Nelson was in the back room of the Coop building at Beaver with John M. MacFarland and myself when he gave us a short history of the case. He said in substance that he and Sumner Howard were sent out to Utah by the government to prosecute the case against John D. Lee. On reaching Utah they went to Pres. Young and asked him for his aid in the matter, that is

to put them on the line where they could get the witnesses. Young told them that they were the first U. S. officials that had ever asked him aid in the matter and that they should have it, and he aided in telling them where to go for the witnesses. Nelson further stated that he had hunted up the witnesses and he knew more about this tragedy than Brigham Young ever did. He intimated that the former prosecution had tried to convict the church instead of John D. Lee; for out of 105 witnesses that they had, he only used one of these witnesses, and this was only because he had agreed with the defense to put him on the stand. This conversation was in the evening after the close of the second Lee Trial.

I quote from Jacob Hamblin's book, page 60 and 61: "President Brigham Young requested Elder George A. Smith to have an interview with the new governor, learn his views concerning the Mountain Meadow Massacre, and assure him that all possible assistance would be rendered the United States courts to have it thoroughly investigated.

"Brother Smith took me with him, and introduced me as a man who was well informed regarding Indian matters in Southern Utah, and would impart to him any information required that I might be in possession of. He also urged upon Governor Cuming the propriety of an investigation of this horrid affair, that if there were any white men engaged in it, they might be justly punished for their crimes.

"Governor Coming replied that President Buchanan had issued a proclamation of amnesty and pardon to the "Mormon" people, and he did not wish to go behind it to search out crime.

"Brother Smith urged that the crime was exclusively personal in character and had nothing to do with "Mormons" as a people or with the general officers of the territory, and therefore was a fit subject for an investigation before the United States courts.

"Mr. Coming still objected to interfering on account of the President's proclamation.

"Brother Smith replied substantially as follows: 'If the business had not been taken out of our hands by a change of officers in the territory, the Mountain Meadow affair is one of the first things we should have attended to when a United States court sat in Southern Utah. We would see whether or not white men were concerned in the affair with the Indians.'"

Shortly after the Mountain Meadow Massacre, another company of emigrants came along on their way to Southern California. At Beaver this company had some trouble with the Indians who now had tasted blood and were in a state of high excitement and wanted to attack every company that passed. In this rupture with the Indians one man was shot through the arm, and it is probable that this company would have been handled very roughly if not killed, but the citizens of Beaver came to their rescue and managed to check the Indians in their attack upon the emigrants. This company stopped a short time at Parowan, where I saw the wounded man and talked with several members of the party. To insure a more safe passage through the country they employed David Carter, who was well acquainted with the Indians in this vicinity and also understood their language, to accompany them through the hostile region. He went along and some other whites were employed at the Clara to go a little past the Muddy with the company. It appears that Carter did not go farther than the Santa Clara. On traveling down the Muddy after dark the loose stock was stampeded and run off, the persons employed as a kind of guard started in pursuit of the stock. These persons never returned, nor did the stock. Some thought that it was a put up job with the Indians to let them have the stock and spare the people, which was apparently done.

These exciting incidents, coupled with the advancing of Johnson's army on Utah, kept up the military spirit so military drills took place quite often. On November 7 we had a general muster of all the militia in the district, which comprised all of the territory south of Fillmore. We had our drills and inspection of arms often so that we might always be prepared, and by this method we often avoided a conflict with the Indians. Letting the Indians have the stock of the last company mentioned above, I suppose, was to save the people and avoid bloodshed and also to keep from making enemies with the Indians, which point was carefully guarded.

1857-1858
Chapter 18
The Winter of 1858-1859

After my return from the expedition to the east, I took the herd for one month. This was mostly the milk cows, the loose stock were permitted to go loose on the range. This was no easy task, for the herd was a large one and required my entire attention. There were some loose stock that occasionally gave me some trouble, as they had not been herded much. I came in one night with a rabbit I had shot, tied on my saddle, and one of the men standing by the gate, not seeing his cow, said, "You have been herding rabbits instead of cows." I soon showed him his cow. I mention this incident to show how ready some people are to find fault. After I quit herding, I helped my father to gather the potatoes, etc.

In the unsettled state of affairs, the excitement of Johnson's army coming into Utah, the prospects of our having to leave our homes, and the Mountain Meadow affair along with other incidents that naturally came up in a new country, the subject of schools was almost forgotten. Good teachers were scarce, there were so many other things that demanded attention and occupied their time that they did not have the time to go into the school room to teach.

One Sunday, President Dame laid the subject of school before the people. He stated that as we could not get a teacher, he proposed to call a couple of the brethren as missionaries to teach school during the winter, and he selected William Davenport and myself to teach during the term. It was customary to have school just three months in the winter. This was called a term, and this was as long as school was ever kept. Such a thing as a longer period of school was never heard of during the time that I was permitted to attend. I was very much astonished at this call, as I was very young and had never received any advantages for obtaining an education. The most that I had learned from books I had studied out by myself in the light of a pine fire in the corner, and I had never had any experience in such matters. We, however, did not feel like backing out as it was a call from the president, so we took hold of the matter and got along very well. The president had requested the people to lend us all the aid and support that they could. Davenport was two years older than I was. He was from England, the son of Thomas Davenport, and for several years was my most intimate friend and companion. We commenced our school November 30, 1857. We had several pupils much older than I, however, we got along fairly well considering the fact that we were not teachers and never had the advantages of getting a fair education.

Some of the leading men of the church occasionally visited the settlements in the south. January 8, we had three of the Apostles with us, and on these occasions they preached to us. This was a treat, as it had a tendency of bringing us more in touch with the outside world. We always got something new from our visitors, and we generally learned something of how the church was moving.

The winter of 1857-8 was an eventful one for the people of Utah. While the people of the south were exploring and assisting the saints who were coming in from California, those in the north were busy fortifying Echo Canyon and checking the advance of the army. During the winter, the saints who were located at remote places were called into Utah. Those in Carson Valley came in and the saints who had located at San Bernardino were called in. Most of them soon broke up their homes and came to Utah, but there were a few whose faith was weak and they remained in California. Men and teams were set out from the southern settlements to meet those who were coming in from San Bernardino, help them across the desolate and sandy stretch from Las Vegas, and to protect them from the depredations of the Indians who infested this region and prayed upon the stock of all passers by whenever an opportunity afforded. President William H. Dame went south to look after those who were coming in, and he was accompanied on this trip by Joseph F. Smith from Salt Lake City. They returned February 7. Most of the saints coming in from California located at Beaver, but some stopped at the different settlements in the south. There were several who soon became dissatisfied and returned to California. As that country was a better one than Utah, they could not forego the temptation of leaving the saints and going back. There is more in this world than a good country, however, but of course it is desirable.

Early in the spring Colonel Thomas L. Kane came through from California on his way to Salt Lake City, his business was a mission of peace to try to settle the trouble that had arisen between the saints and the government. He was traveling under the assumed name of Dr. Osborn, not wishing that he or his business be known. I met him at Colonel Dame's. He was quite a small man, rather delicate, with keen, bright eyes. During the conversation he stated that he had met Ira Hatch at Las Vegas, who was an Indian missionary at that place, and that he rendered him some assistance in passing through the country. He said that Hatch had talked and been with the Indians so much that he

used many signs and words of the Indians, and he seemed bothered in carrying on a conversation in English. Colonel Kane succeeded in his mission. With the aid of some others, the differences between the United States government and the saints were adjusted and settled; so that the troops that had wintered on Ham's Fork were permitted to come into the territory, and the saints who had left their homes and gone south returned to their former residences.

During the winter I made two trips to Beaver, one on January 12 and the other February 19. Part of my business on the latter trip was to see about taking up some land at that place. John S. Hyatt accompanied me on one of these trips. About two miles north of the Buck Horne Springs we found an Indian boy lying in the snow. He was apparently eight or nine years old and had been dead a day or two. The crows were just gathering around him to have a feast, as they had just begun to peck his eyes. The Ute Indians had made a raid on the Indians to the south and had secured some captives and were hastening back to their northern home, and we supposed that this little fellow had given out and was left or killed and thrown by the wayside. The stronger tribes often made raids on the weaker ones, capturing women and children, the latter they generally sold to the whites until President Young stopped the buying of these children as one means of suppressing this slave traffic. On one or two occasions when the whites refused to purchase these children, they killed them. This move however had a tendency to check the slave trade, as the Indians soon found that there was no profit in making their raids for captives when they could not sell them.¹

In the evening of February 22, Professor Thomas Durham and members of the choir gave a concert which was pronounced a great success. There had been several entertainments of this kind given during the winter. Prof. Durham was the leader of all of this class of amusements and entertainments. He took a great interest in music and was the leader of our choir for many long years, and it was stated at his funeral that he had sung with his choir at every funeral held in Parowan for twenty-five years.

March 1, 1858 I went over to Beaver with the expectation of taking up some land and making a farm, but on arriving there I found that the brethren from California and others had secured all the best and most valuable places; so I decided to rent a piece of land from Edward W. Thompson for the present. I went to work fencing, plowing, etc. I put in some wheat, etc., and after I had finished what I expected to do, I made arrangements to have it taken care of and returned home May 1.

During my stay in Beaver I worked at various jobs for Edward W. Thompson. One job was helping him survey the west field, I carried the chain but most of the time I drove stakes. During my stay here I became acquainted with several of those who had come in from California, among them was Father Shepard, father of Fay Shepard. He lived close to Thompson's. He delighted in telling his stories of the war of 1812 in which he took a part, and of the trying incidents during his service.

Mr. Carmel, another acquaintance, was a most noted singer and always had a song for us at all of our social gatherings.

Dr. Smith was another who had come in. He had started to petrify a nest of eggs. He started to go to Washington to get out a patent for his discovery, but was never heard from after. He was probably killed by the Indians on the plains.

Charles W. Wandell became one of the most conspicuous persons for a time, coming to the front at once. He went to the legislature and was very prominent in all church and political affairs, but soon apostatized and turned into a bitter enemy of the saints. Men that try to climb so fast soon fall.

During this period and for several years past I had trapped wolves and hunted geese at times. In the fall of the year geese came to the lake in great numbers and would come up and settle on our wheat fields. I succeeded in killing quite a number. Mother saved the feathers, so I soon had enough to make me a feather bed. Wolves were also hunted some as they were very troublesome. I caught many in traps. They were very bold and frequently would creep up to the beds of those who were camping out and get their shoes and hats and carry them off, however, these were generally recovered. They would also bite the rawhide ropes in two with which our horses were staked out.

Another annoyance was the crows that visited our corn fields in great numbers, and if not disturbed would soon clean up a field of corn. With all these things to contend with and the Indians to watch, most of us became well acquainted with the rifle. I had a long Kentucky rifle, and I got so that if I could get within 100 yards of anything, I

was about as sure of it as if I had it in my hand. We often had shooting matches to keep in practice and to encourage a spirit to excel in the use of fire arms.

Chapter Notes

¹ In the Deseret News of November 15, 1851, it is stated that a copy of a license granted to Pedro Leon, dated Santa Fe, August 14, 1851, and signed by James S. Calhoun, superintendent of Indian Affairs, was shown to Willard Richards, who states that on the 3rd of that month Leon, with twenty Mexicans, was at Manti for the purpose of trading horses for Indian children, and that two other companies were about to follow. Richard's History states that the Utahs were in the habit of stealing children from the Piutes and selling them to the Mexican traders. It is related that Arapeen had a stolen child who was taken sick, and as the savages could not sell it, he took it by the heels, swung it around his head, and dashed out its brains. The act was witnessed by several Mormons, who were only prevented from shooting him on the spot through fear of provoking a general uprising. By virtue of his authority as governor and superintendent of Indian affairs, Brigham Young forbade all trading of this nature, and told the Mexicans that their license was not valid.

1858
Chapter 19
Everyday Life in a Frontier Town

During the dry season in the summer the waters of Little Salt Lake evaporated so that in some places there was a crust of salt formed from one half to an inch thick. This however was quite hard to gather as a person had to wade out through this slimy mud up to his knees to gather it up. There was a crust which cut the skin when a person went in barefooted, and it ruined shoes to wear them in such a place. The salt soon caused the cut places to be quite painful, besides it was in the hot weather when this was done and the sun upon this salty surface made it almost unbearable. The salt was carefully scraped up in small piles and then carried to the solid ground at the shore in buckets. This salt was not very good for house use. Some salted meat with it, but it was almost worthless for this as there was so much foreign substances in it. However, it became quite an article of commerce later on, it being gathered and shipped to Pioche to be used in their smelters. On June 11, I went down to the lake and gathered some, we had to go around on the west side, making the distance about six miles.

On June 25, 1858 I went out to Summit Creek to get some sheep. After the Indian troubles were adjusted, the place was re-occupied as a herd ground, but it was soon after occupied by permanent settlers. The first settlers were William and James Dalley, and probably one or two others who moved from Johnson's Fort. Later S. C. Hulet moved from St. George to this place and became one of the leading men of the place, as he was a progressive and industrious man.

Our Elders' Quorum has been mentioned several times as a live body of young men. Their conference was held June 26, was well attended, and was conducted with a spirit of progress and advancement for the quorum.

My father had a few stock, but he was not much of a stockman so I did most of the work in looking after them. However, I was not much of a hand to tend cattle, but I had most of this work to look after in early days. Later on my brother Franklin looked after the stock, and he became a very good hand to care for horses or cattle and followed this exclusively later in life.

A few head of our stock had drifted away, and on July 1 I started out for Harmony where there was a large number of cattle. On reaching Harmony I stayed all night with John D. Lee and witnessed the hospitality of my host, being partaker of that generous treatment for which he was noted. I can say that whatever Lee's faults were, he could not easily be surpassed by anyone in looking after and accommodating the traveler who stopped within his gates. He was a man who did not do anything by halves. He was preparing for a celebration of the fourth of July, and he spared no pains or means to make the occasion a great success. A grand feast was to be given all who came to the place. Many were expected to come from Cedar City, which was the main cause of this extra preparation.

I looked over the range the next day and returned to Cedar on the 3rd, staying all night with Henry Lunt. He was an old acquaintance of ours, having crossed the plains in the same company with us. I returned home the next day, going by way of Rush Lake, but accomplished little in the way of finding stray animals. The range was very extensive and the stock were scattered very much over all of it. This condition had changed wonderfully in the short period that stock had been permitted to run at large since the Indian troubles had ceased.

The latter part of the month I spent with my father in getting some hay from the Paragoonah bottom. On the first settling of Parowan this was a fine meadow, but as the water was taken out for irrigation purposes it became dry and yielded little grass. The people got only a little hay to what they had the first years after Parowan was settled. The bottoms got so dry that in burning it off later on, the fire in the lower part of the meadow burned into the ground for several feet as it was a mass of roots. This killed some of the meadow out. After this, many of the people went to Cedar bottom and some went to Beaver for hay.

August 17, 1858 I went over to Beaver, got some help, and harvested what crop I had there. We soon finished the job and I returned home September 2, after which I went to work in the harvest field and continued steady at the work until harvest was over. After cutting our own grain, I cut wheat and oats for others. I spent the fall in caring for the crop, hauling it home, thrashing, etc., and hauling wood.

I did about all of this kind of work since my father did little on the farm. He had quit the mill work and was now working mostly at making shoes, cooper ware, etc. About this time he commenced to tan his own leather, this business grew with him quite fast. He first began to tan in some large tubs that he made for the purpose. He then made five or six vats and conducted the business on a larger scale, and tanned a great deal of leather. The upper leather was not well finished as he did not understand this, but the sole leather was better. He also did much work in repairing wagons.

Our Elders Quorum was considered the leading quorum in the place as to their duties in holding meetings and getting up dances. This is a little different from what it is now. At the present time the elders quorums in most of the stakes are behind the others. December 10 we gave a grand ball. Much money was spent in getting this up, and as good a supper as the place could afford was to be given. This affair went off very well with the exception of one very disagreeable event. Bro. James T. Woods, a baker, was engaged to make some pork pies for the occasion. Some good fresh pork was furnished him, but at the supper these pies were reported to be bad, in fact they made some sick. A committee was appointed to investigate the case. This committee was firmly convinced that Woods had taken the good pork for his own use and made pies with the meat from a hog that had died. This was not proved positively, but almost everyone believed that this was the case, as the investigating pointed to that fact. This affair created a bad feeling and a strong prejudice against woods.¹

During the fall of 1858 Isaiah Moses Coombs came into Parowan. He was a school teacher, and he was at once engaged to teach our school² during the winter of 1858-1859. I went to this school part of the term, but other duties demanded my attention so that I was deprived of going the full term.

During the forepart of the winter there seemed to be more dancing than common. This was about all the amusement we had so it was carried to the extreme. Each quorum got up a dance during the winter, and when there was a lull in the dancing some individual would get one up. Most of the parties that the quorums got up included a supper. This entailed considerable expense as well as work, but as we had little to do during the winter months we did not mind the work. Groceries were scarce so John S. Hyatt and I went over to Beaver December 22 to obtain some for the New Year's dance. Groceries were also scarce in Beaver, but we got a few and returned on the 25th. During this winter at most of the dances they had whisky, this was mostly made at Beaver. It was a vile article, but it was made into a toddy, which helped some. I remember at one of our largest and most noted parties during the winter that some toddy was made out of this whisky, and Orson H. Adams took a bucket full and a tin cup and went around the room, giving every woman in the house a drink. The men, however, helped themselves.

Dancing had been carried on to a great extent, as to change this or to turn our amusements into another channel we got up a dramatic club or association. Edward Dalton was the president and took a great interest in this class of amusements. James H. Martineau painted the scenery and made an excellent job of this part of the work and David Cluff did the carpenter work. The members of the company contributed some cash with which to buy materials, and each member took shares in the company according to their means or as they felt inclined. I was a member of the company and had taken a few parts before in a former organization that had presented several plays. A committee was appointed that selected and sent for some of the best plays that they thought we could put on the boards and also had a moral to them as near as they could judge. January 10 the play of the "Douglas" and the "Rough Diamond" were presented, and on the 15th the play of "Sweethearts and Wives" was put on the boards. February 7 the tragedy of "Pizzaro" was presented, and the 21st the "Missouri Persecutions" was played. This latter play was written by James H. Martineau. The plot of the play was laid in Missouri and represented the barbarous and inhuman way that the saints were treated by their persecutors in that state. Martineau got many of the names and incidents from the church history and was greatly aided in the work by George A. Smith. All these plays were put on the boards in as good a shape as it was possible under our circumstances. Each member took a great interest in the work, each desired to make it a success, and I think that we did. The public appreciated our efforts and many will long remember the social and enjoyable time they spent in attending these theaters. Some of the actors who took parts in our theater at an early date were: Edward Dalton, David Cluff and wife, Jesse N. Smith and wife Margaret, William Cluff, Ned Williams, Alexander Orton, James H. Martineau, John S. Hyatt, John Eyre, Edward Ward, William C. McGregor, Sarah Ann Davenport, my sister Jane, and myself. Several others took minor parts. A few of the above named persons did not remain in the place very long.

When the saints came in from San Bernardino, Apostles Amasa M. Lyman and Charles C. Rich came in with them. Apostle Lyman located part of his family at Parowan and part at Beaver. Lyman preached to us quite often, he spoke on January 2 and on the 9th. About this time a subscription was taken up for the purpose of gathering means to build

him a house in Parowan. This paper was passed around at he dances and was spoken of in our public meetings, and almost everyone subscribed something. The project of building a house was abandoned and instead a house was purchased for him at a cost of \$700. There was enough paid in to purchase the house, quite a supply of wood was hauled besides, and other things were furnished. At Beaver January 23 a collection was taken up for his family that was located there. The brethren of that place built him a good double log house for his family and gave him much assistance in other ways. I happened to be at Beaver at the time that this donation was taken up, so I was personally acquainted with this part of the program to assist him as he had just moved in from California and was in need of assistance.

Soon after our Indian troubles were settled, our stock was permitted to go upon the ranges without being herded and they soon scattered. Some of our loose stock still remained about the town, so it became evident that our milk cows and work animals would fare very poorly since we had little feed to give our animals during the winter. January 3 a general drive was made and all stock that was not needed was driven off to the west side of the lake. These drives of moving our stock onto a better range, caring and looking after them, was done by the whole community turning out on a certain day that had been designated, and under the direction of a captain the stock was driven as he directed. This mode of handling the dry stock was followed for several years, but not by individual efforts. When the stock had to be gathered up and the calves branded, one of these drives was started and the stock was driven up. Then each one selected his own, branding and turning it out as he wished. Drives were made at the adjoining settlements either a day or two before or a little later to allow parties from each place to help to see to their interest at those places where their stock had strayed off to other districts. These drives sometimes got stock that had just been turned out into the next district, which worked a hardship on the owners and was a great detriment to the method, as the stock was sometimes carried from one district to another.

January 7, Isaiah M. Coombs, our school teacher, got up an exhibition for the benefit of the public. There were some excellent parts and they were very well rendered. I took a part in it and assisted in getting it up, rendering what service I could. All these exhibitions were free but were quite a tax on those who got them up, as there was the expense of time and money with no returns. Concerts were given occasionally by Prof. Durham and the members of the choir, but they always charged for these entertainments.

It was always customary for anyone who had been to Salt Lake City to speak in our meeting on his return. We were always pleased to hear the news from other places especially from Salt Lake City. March 1 James Guyman, who had been to the City spoke to us, giving us the spirit of the time and of the authorities as was expressed while he was in the City. The authorities were preaching very strongly for the people to lay up bread stuff and not sell or waste their grain, for there would be a time of scarcity of bread in the land. This subject had been agitated more or less for sometime, and some of the brethren as has been stated cached some flour as an experiment to see how it would keep. After a year or so they took it up and found that it was as good as when they cached it.

Apostle Amasa M. Lyman, who was here much of his time, spoke to us quite often. He was a good speaker and his sermons were generally enjoyed. President Dame also spoke often, sometimes made lengthy discourses, and occasionally would get somewhat excited and over do it, which detracted much from his remarks. Pres. Dame was a man who wished to push off all the responsible things that were not agreeable for him to shoulder onto those of others. For instance if a person was cut off from the church, he never would present the case or call the vote but would have Thomas Davenport, who was the president or head teacher, do this, so that he would not get the enmity of those who were cut off. He would always have a loop hole for everything that was not agreeable for him to meet. This appeared to be one of President Dame's weak points, and he lost prestige among some of his best friends by this course.

Chapter Notes

¹ Sister Woods was an excellent singer and sang at most all of our entertainments. She was above reproach and was thought much of in the community, but James T. Woods was never thought as much of in the community as he was before. He left the place later on and went north, but they later moved to Arizona where Sister Woods died. They had two children, a boy and a girl.

² Mark Anthony Coombs came to Parowan in 1858. He had three sons, Isaiah Moses, Hyrum and John, and the daughters, Mary and Maria. Isaiah moved north soon after his school was out, and he made a good record as a teacher and a Latter Day Saint. The old man and his son moved to Beaver where the father died February 25, 1867. John never amounted to much, he left the church and became a spiritualist, and his morals were bad. His wife, Kissie Klingingsmith, left him and their two children, and turned out to be a prostitute.

Hyrum was a little older than I. He and Josiah Rogerson became my intimate associates. We spent part of our leisure time in intellectual pursuits, such as spelling schools and in getting out a little manuscript paper of four to eight pages which Hyrum named "The Intelligencer". Hyrum went north, married one of Apostle Amasa M. Lyman's daughters and settled there. Rogerson was a shorthand reporter and later became a telegraph operator. He could have made a splendid record, but he allowed drink to master him, so that he later lost his usefulness.

1859
Chapter 20
Marriage

During the winter of 1858-9 our dramatic association put on twelve plays. They gave season tickets, that is sold twelve tickets at a reduced price, the tickets for the season being paid for in advance. There was a little more interest in this line than usual. Our plays were presented in the old log meeting house. Timbers were placed so the seats would be raised, but the seats had to be taken out after every play as the house was occupied for meetings, etc. The stage was in the southern end of the building and was permanent, but the scenery had to be put away in a side room. Moving benches and scenery took all the male actors the day before we played and the day after arranging things, so we labored under many disadvantages by not having a building for the purpose, but what could we expect in a new place. We worked with a will and did the very best we could.

During this period of the excitement of Johnson's army coming in and the Indian troubles, with other incidents of a frontier life, early marriages were recommended and urged upon the people, especially the young people. The parents also urged their sons and daughters to marry early. President Dame made it his particular business at parties to talk with young men especially and urge them to get married. He would try to make matches by urging a young man to go and dance with a certain young woman, praise her by telling what a good wife she would make, and encourage the young man to make a proposal to her. This being preached from the pulpit by the president and others and also urged by parents, coupled with a frontier life where people marry young, led the young people to marry much younger than in fashionable places and cities where there are more amusements, fashions, and the glitter of the pleasure seeking life to attract them from the matrimonial path of life. There is in all large cities and among the lovers of pleasure a feeling to denounce these early marriages, and still there are many things in their favor. The young couple that starts out in life at an early age adapts and falls into each other's ways much sooner and easier than those whose ideas of life have become more fixed and unchangeable. Besides, a frontier life is full of dangers and toil, and there are few of the fashionable entertainments to lead the young to be pleasure seekers. During our Indian wars it was often remarked that after a raid by the Indians this isolation was so vividly brought before the people that marriages increased much more than at any other period. These conditions, with the teaching and instructions, naturally had their effect upon the young people, and there were many early marriages.

During the winter of 1858-9 I kept company with a young lady by the name of Mary Campbell Steele, daughter of John Steele and Catherine Campbell Steele who were of Scotch descent, although John Steele may have had some Irish blood in his veins. Mary was born in Belfast, Ireland December 23, 1840, so was my junior by six months. During this period when boys and girls were urged to marry young, she had been persuaded to marry a young man by the name of Thomas Lefever at the age of fifteen. He was rather a trifling person, and belonged to that worthless class of young men who were neither very good nor very bad. At the time of their marriage she told her father that she did not love Lefever and that she preferred me. Her father was one of those stern characters who compelled their children to obey them in all things. He told her that I was too young and he wanted her to get married then, so she married him but only lived with him a short time. They separated and applied for a divorce in December, 1856, the divorce was granted by James Lewis March 23, 1857. James Lewis was the probate judge and these judges at that time granted divorces and gave naturalization papers; these privileges were later taken from them.

We were married March 22, 1859 by Apostle Amasa M. Lyman. My sister Anna Maria was married at the same time to a man by the name of Sidney Rigdon Burton. Burton's father had died when he was quite young and his mother had married a man by the name of Robinson. He was about two years older than I. Mary and I started out on the journey of life very young, with little experience, but full of hope and faith in the future. We had comparatively nothing of this world's goods, and few clothes. I do not think that I ever had any underclothes in my life up to the time I was married, and then not all the time. I had a nice straw hat that I had braided myself and nearly everything that we had was home made; but we had willing hands and hopes for the future.

I continued to work with my father, and we lived with my folks for a while. My parents gave me what they could, and my earthly possessions were a yoke of young steers, a cow, and a wild Spanish mare. The latter I could do nothing with so I soon traded her off for some sheep. With this meager outfit we went bravely to work. My parents had only a small house, still we lived with them for a time. My father had started to build a granary. He had the cellar dug and the walls up, which were made of adobes. I went to work to finish it up. I hauled some logs and got them sawed into lumber. I got some timbers for ridge poles and made a roof with the lumber, fastening the boards on with pins. This was a slow job pining each board down, I used a three quarter inch auger. Nails I could not get, for I

did not have the money. Our blacksmith made a few wrought iron nails which he sold at one cent apiece. We could only afford to get these to fix our wagon boxes or something of the kind.

After my father plastered the room and got it finished, Mary and I moved in. It was back in the lot a short distance, and we had to go around to get into what was called the fort. When the Indian troubles were over, we built our corrals back of the houses, and this room was about half way between the house line and the corrals. We now commenced to keep house by ourselves. Our furniture was not much, to be sure, and what we had I made myself, such as bedstead, chairs, stools, benches, shelves, cupboard, etc. James H. Martineau moved north this spring and sold some of his household goods. I managed to purchase an old-fashioned clock, a small looking glass, a Book of Mormon, and one or two other articles from him.

There were very few who ever started out in life who had less, who got along as well as we did, and who enjoyed life more. I soon learned that riches do not always bring happiness, and even if a person is poor he can be happy. Many of our neighbors were in about the same condition as we were, for we were far from any point where things could be bought, and there was very little money in the place and no way of getting it here.

Once in a while a train of emigrants would come through, and then everyone was on the alert to sell them a few potatoes or something of the kind to get a few cents. James McGuffie was always on hand to get the first chance. On one occasion he went to the emigrants' camp and asked them if they wanted to buy any potatoes. They asked if they were large and good. He replied that they were as large as their feet and eleven of them would make a man a meal. He probably thought that they had appetites like himself.

The spring of 1859 opened up with good prospects for the farmers, there had been much snow during the winter so there was a good prospect for plenty of water. A move was made in the early part of the spring to throw up a portion of the field next to town and take up as much land two miles below, where it was thought to be much better. This move was carried out and proved to be a success as the new land produced better than the gravelly soil above. This move entailed much more labor this spring than usual as there were new ditches to make and fences to be built, so I found myself extremely busy. I worked with a will and Mary often went with me to the field or to get hay, which had a tendency to lighten the burden of life.

May 2, there was a company of soldiers passed through town on their way south to meet the paymaster that we coming in from California. They were a reckless set, probably more so because at this time there was a strong feeling of enmity between the soldiers and the saints, which was started when Johnson's army came in and was kept up for several years. The United States officials were working against the people of Utah, and the troops being under them partook of the same spirit to a certain extent to annoy and vex the people whenever they could. This company camped on the west side of town and as rumors had come ahead of them that they had stolen chickens, pigs, etc. wherever they had an opportunity, a guard was put out over the town and things were watched quite closely. One or two soldiers attempted some thefts, but our boys ran them out of town with rocks.

This company passed on, stopping at the Mountain Meadows where they gathered up the bones of some who had been killed there, that the wolves had dug up, and buried them. They erected a monument of loose rock over their remains and went on until they met the paymaster, then they returned through Parowan about May 27.

After my crop was in, I took time to make a short visit which some might term our wedding trip. It was a short one as well as brief. S. R. Burton and his wife (my sister) and my wife and I went over to Beaver June 8. We of course had a pleasant visit with my sister Julia, her family and friends, and returned on the 12th. After reaching home I went to work in the canyon at getting out logs. I spent most of the summer at logging except when my attention was turned to looking after the crop, since that had to be irrigated occasionally. Many of the people of Parowan spent much of the summer working in the canyons when they could leave their farms. Lumber and wheat were the main things we had for trading. It was a common saying among the boys, "Parowan trades wheat and lumber," "Cedar trades iron works." Occasionally a peddler came in and bought a few cattle, and later we drove stock to Salt Lake City and sold them.

The fall of 1859 brought the people an abundant harvest and all felt that they had been greatly blessed. During the harvest season William C. Mitchell and I worked together harvesting our crops and hauling our grain. Our labors together were very agreeable and we formed a friendship that was lasting. This had a strong hold on both of us, lasting as long as life lasted. He passed away having made a good record and raised an honorable family. We

thrashed part of our grain by tramping it out with oxen and horses, but before we had finished, a thrashing machine was brought into the place and we finished with it. This was the first machine of the kind that I had ever seen. This statement probably will explain that we lived in the back woods or were far removed from where machinery was used. All the grain had been cut with home made cradles and all the hay was cut with the scythe. Many of our plows were made out of wagon tires hammered down to broad straps. No machinery helped the farmer at this period in this place. The work was all done by the hardest labor. Our lumber was cut with what we called up and down saw mills, the circular saw had not made its appearance here at this date.

During the summer my father had a very severe spell of sickness, the illness being what was called at that time the mountain fever. Our doctor, C. C. Pendleton, waited on him, and it was thought for a long time that we would lose him. He was as low it seemed as a person could be and live. He finally rallied, but was not able to do much for the remainder of the summer. This added to my labors as I had to do much of the work that he would have done had he been able. I have fancied many times that he never was as strong after this spell of sickness as he was before.

1859-1860
Chapter 21
The Arrival of a Daughter

The winter of 1859-60 passed about as other winters had passed, there was the usual amount of dances, theaters, etc. The quorum and evening meetings were kept up as usual. There was little out door work done during the winters, and consequently there was more play, loafing, and amusements of various kinds than at any other season of the year. Occasionally we had a change, something out of the regular routine, something new would come along to break the monotony of the everyday amusements that we had. February 24, 1860, Philo Dibble presented his show of the paintings, and during the show he explained the scenes presented. He had something of a history of the persecutions of the saints. He had been through many of them and was shot through the bowels, his recovery was something wonderful. It was the faith of the elders that caused these headings. This show had a great impression on the young people who had heard the story of their parents' persecutions. It was also interesting to the older ones who had passed through these scenes, and it made some lasting impressions.

March 10 and 11 our stake conference was held. Apostle Amasa M. Lyman presided. This was the first, as I remember, of these conferences. The term Stake Conference was not applied for some time after this. There were quite a number of brethren and sisters present from Cedar City and Beaver. An enjoyable time was had and many good instructions were given to the saints, this was a new feature in our program of meetings.

March 11, 1860 my wife Mary gave birth to a daughter, who was a most welcome visitor to our home. My wife got along fairly well and seemed to start out for a speedy recovery, but the next day she got a violent headache. The midwife Sister Margaret West, wife of Samuel West, was something of a Thompsonian in her ideas of doctrine, so she gave her an emetic which threw her into spasms. These spells lasted about thirty-six hours, she having a spasm about every hour and being insensible all the time. A person had to stand by all the time with a pewter spoon or something of this kind to put in her mouth to keep her from chewing her tongue to pieces during these spasms. There was soon some excitement about the case, much sympathy from everyone, and many suggestions were made and different remedies applied. One of the remedies was to put hot rocks around her to induce perspiration. In this case there was not enough care taken as all were excited, the rocks were too hot and burned one of her legs fearfully and also burned off the ball of one of her big toes. The midwife called in Preddy Meeks who was called Dr. Meeks (he was not a professional doctor but rather a kind of a nurse who understood something about medicine and was a follower of the Thompsonian method and gave emetics. Pendleton thought that would have a tendency to force the blood to the head, and was in favor of bleeding in the ankle to draw the blood from the head. This was done and Meeks got extremely angry over it and left the house. Apostle Amasa M. Lyman called the case up in a council meeting and reproved Meeks for the course he had taken. He also spoke of the case at meeting the next Sabbath. Meeks felt so bad about this case and the reprimand he had received that many thought it was one cause of his leaving Parowan, which he did not long after and moved to the Dixie country. My wife recovered slowly, but the effects of this terrible tax on her system never left her for several years. In a measure it shattered her constitution and made her more or less miserable. However, she was one of those characters who was always lively and jolly, and she made the best of everything, even her ailments. We named our little girl Mary Josephine, she was healthy but small, she only weighed a trifle more than six pounds when she was born. During the time that her mother was so seriously ill the little one was stowed away in the cupboard to keep it out of the way as there were so many around. She slept as sweetly as if she had been with her mother.

Taking in and farming new land this previous year had proved so satisfactory that the people decided to move their field further down. A committee was appointed to select the spot and arrange for moving. A new field was surveyed off much larger than the old one. The fence was moved and new ditches made. This entailed a vast amount of labor in addition to our other work, and the latter part of the winter and the early spring found all working to their utmost capacity in preparing for the spring crops. Edward Dalton was the main one who took charge of constructing the ditches. It took about five miles of fence to enclose the field, about twelve miles of ditches had to be made before we could use the land, and then our farms had to be cleared off. The sage brush was quite thick and heavy in places, and it required much labor to grub it up. I remember taking a yoke of cattle and a long chain, hitching to a heavy growth of sage and pull it up, then throw the chain around the next bunch and so go on through the patch. We had not yet learned the modern way of taking railroad rails (and we did not have any if we had known how to use them) and a couple of span of horses and going over it and breaking and tearing it up, neither did we have many horses and cattle made a poor team for such work. The water was regulated or divided on a much better plan than we had used before. At each division there was a short flume made and a board fastened in it with a sharp edge at the proper place to

divide the stream according to the amount given each ditch. This plan gave better satisfaction than the way we had been doing, that of throwing in rocks and guessing at the amount of water that each ditch should have. I mention these items to show the crude way that we had in almost everything we did.

One year Paul Smith, an Englishman, put in five acres of wheat by spading up the land with a spade the same as we do our small corners in our gardens. James H. Martineau surveyed the field before he moved away, the change of fields did not prove as satisfactory as was expected. It threw some of the land far from town. Some years later the field was again changed.

During the period of the reformation the people had been quite faithful in attending to their religious duties, such as the prayers, meetings, etc. About this time there was an extra amount of work in moving the field, and this may have caused a change in some; but at any rate there began to be a slackness in most of their religious duties, and as some expressed it, they had got through with the reformation. Some who had been quite zealous soon became indifferent and commenced to neglect their duties, and did not live as saints should. Some began to show that they were not honest in their dealings, and some of them soon turned out to be cattle and horse thieves, which showed that they were not honest at heart but had covered up their faults for a time with a cloak of religion.

July 23 I went over to Beaver to spend the 24th with my sister Julia and her family. I had a very pleasant visit as Julia always made everything pleasant for me when she could. I returned on the 25th.

My father had divided his farm, it was only a small one, and gave me a part of it. As he was not much of a farmer, I attended all of it while he worked at tanning most of the time. My land lay in the lower part of the field about two and a half miles from town, so there was much traveling back and forth with ox teams, besides food was scarce most of the season and we had to turn our cattle out on the bottoms at night or in the hills above town and then hunt them up in the morning. Getting out at break of day and going a couple of miles after our oxen was somewhat different from what it is now when we have horses and they in the stable at home. Such inconveniences caused us to often camp in the fields, especially when plowing, irrigating, and harvesting.

I worked all my time between irrigation periods in the canyon peeling tan bark for my father and getting lumber, that is hauling logs to the mill. The mill was then about a mile from town, and we had to haul or logs from over the Hog's Back seven or eight miles over a poor road.

I had been contemplating taking a trip to the Dixie country to visit my cousins who lived on the Santa Clara, and to trade for some molasses, as they made a great deal in the south while we at Parowan did not make any to speak of. Some attempts had been made to raise sugar cane and make molasses, but the cane raised was of a rather poor quality as the climate was a little too cold for it. A mill was made with two rollers made of maple wood with handles to each roller to turn it like a grindstone, this was our cane mill and was turned by hand. It took two men to turn it and one to feed it. By this process a little molasses was made but the enterprise was abandoned, and we did not continue the business.

I fixed up an old wagon (I did not own one myself) and took a yoke of oxen, (I had never owned a horse team, nor had my father since he came out from Canada) and on October 30th started south with my wife a mother. Of course we had our infant daughter Josie along. This mode of traveling was slow, we reached Cedar City the first day and stopped with Henry Lunt. The next day we reached Harmony where they were having a social dance, and we were royally entertained by the good people of that place. On November 1 we found a very rough road over the Black Ridge but managed to reach Toquerville, where we were kindly entertained by Job Hall who had recently moved from Parowan to this place. We traded a little salt that we had along for some molasses. The next day we had a very heavy road through the sand over to Grape Vine Springs, Job Hall who was going after some hoop poles assisted us over the worst places. We only reached the point where Harrisburg was later located. This little stream at that time was called Quail Creek. There was no one living here, but there had been a farm started a short distance below the road. My wife and mother were both frightened because of Indians and did not want to camp here, but we were compelled to do so for the team was tired out. We however got up before day and started on to Washington, where we remained a short time to rest and get our breakfast, then we moved on slowly. Washington at this time was a very small place, but still it was the largest settlement in this section of the country. There was no one living at the place where St. George was afterwards located. Going on to the mouth of the Santa Clara we found one or two log cabins, I believe that one of the Mangums lived here at this time. We then followed up the Santa Clara to the fort. This was a most lovely spot, a pleasant location, a nice clear stream of water, and some very excellent land but it

was limited. Later the fort was swept away by a flood and much of the land was washed away, which almost ruined the place. There were several of my relatives residing here, cousins Dudley and Lemuel Leavitt, also Jacob Hamblin who had married one of my cousins. We remained here visiting with these families for a few days and traded off the rest of our produce for molasses.

November 7 we started on our return home, going up the Santa Clara we reached Gunlock Fort.² William Hamblin who had married two of my cousins lived here. The next day we reached Jacob Hamblin's ranch near the Mountain Meadows. This was merely a ranch house where one or two herders stayed occasionally who were looking after cattle and sheep. The next day we camped at Leeches Springs and the following day reached home. Dudley Leavitt came along with us, which made the trip quite agreeable and pleasant.

Chapter Notes

¹ The Black Ridge was one of the worst pieces of road in Southern Utah at that time, but later was greatly improved.

² Gunlock Fort was named for William Hamblin. George A. Smith gave him the name of Gun Lock when crossing the plains because of his being a great hunter and a good hand to fix the lock of a gun. The place is situated on a beautiful spot on the Clara bottom, a most beautiful grove of cottonwoods grew around here.

1860-1861
Chapter 22
Frontier Conditions

In the previous chapters it will be observed that the southern settlements were just in their infancy, but there was a movement made during the following winter to build up that part of Utah. About three hundred of the saints were called to go south and help build up that country. Some of these men had a great deal of money, which gave them a great advantage over the ones who were located there who had come in as a rule with little. Orson Pratt and Erastus Snow were put in charge of this company. Coming south, a large group of them founded St. George which was named in honor of George A. Smith. Orson Pratt soon returned to the north, leaving Erastus Snow in charge of the mission. St. George was located between Washington and the Santa Clara. A temple was later erected here, the first structure of the kind to be completed in Utah.

The rough country and the rough roads were a great drawback in the early settling of the south. In speaking of the Black Ridge, George A. Smith said that the place would make a good sheep pasture, but they would have to shoe the sheep's noses while the shepherds held them by the tails and let them down among the rocks to get the grass.

Great efforts were now made to improve the roads, and the legislature was asked to appropriate means for that work. Hosea Stout, on going to the legislature, asked for an appropriation for Washington County. A member soon arose and intimated that they were getting tired of appropriating to Washington County for roads. Stout replied that Washington County did not ask for means to build her roads, she was able to build her own roads, she simply wanted means to make a place to build roads.

The people here had a hard struggle for a few years. They had a fine climate and some good soil, but the water in places was scarce and that of the Rio Virgin was hard to manage; many were the dams that the floods took out. As good roads were made, the people were able to get in and out a little better, and things began to improve.

In the fall of 1860 Jacob Hamblin went over into Arizona on one of his missionary expeditions to the Moqui (Hopi) Indians. Upon this trip he was met by some hostile Indians. They were the Navajos, they took advantage of his small party, and succeeded in killing one of his men, George A. Smith, Jr., son of Apostle George A. Smith. Under the circumstances, the party was compelled to flee to save themselves, and Smith was carried on a horse for a short distance until he died. They then placed his body in a clump of brush, and covering it with a blanket, continued their retreat. It was now arranged to get a party to go across the Colorado and recover the remains of the unfortunate man. A few went from this place, among the number were William C. Mitchell and Sidney R. Burton. They left Parowan February 21, 1861 to join Hamblin and his party in the south. The Parowan boys returned home on the 3rd of March, having had a very hard trip. On account of the hostile Navajos they were not able to reach the spot where the body of Smith was left, but getting as near as was thought advisable, they sent a friendly Indian to get the remains of the murdered man. He was not able to get all of the bones but gathered all that he was able to find, some probably having been carried off by the wolves, and returned. When the boys returned to Parowan it was in the night and they wished to announce their arrival, so fired off their pistols. When Mitchell fired his pistol, his horse threw up his head and the ball struck the animal in the back of the head. The horse recovered, but Mitchell who was a very sympathetic man felt very bad about the affair, he could hardly get over it.

During the fall there was the usual labor of gathering the crops and getting up the winter's wood. January 3, 1861 I made a trip to Beaver but returned in a few days.

On Monday, January 14 there was a celebration of pioneer day and a grand ball was given. Pioneer day came on the 14th, but as this was on Sunday, the 14th was celebrated. My wife was a member of the pioneer band that reached this place January 13, 1851, she was also with her folks in the Battalion, so I was always invited to all these parties. All the members of the Battalion in this section were invited to these pioneer celebrations. There were several from Cedar City and Paragoonah who attended.

In February our leaders conference was held and fairly well attended.

The winter passed about as all the rest. There was little snow in the valley but it fell deep in the mountains.

There was little that the farmers could do, or so they thought, so the winters were spent mostly in amusements. Our theaters and dances with the regular evening meetings occupied the evenings, and during the days we played football and a game we called shinney, the latter game had been played for several winters and sometimes to a great excess. Before I was married, and even after, I played at this a great deal, and there were periods when it went on almost every day for a week at a time. We had clubs almost like a walking stick, crooked at the end with which we knocked the ball, and as the ball was on the ground, there were many who got their shins bruised when they got in the way. Football was started by Edward Ward, and this in the early days was quite a game in the winter. When there was a little snow on the ground, it was played in place of shinney and like that game was sometimes over done. The pitching of horse shoes sometimes occupied the time of some of the men for days at a time, but the ball games took all from fifteen up to those who could not play because of age and infirmities.

Among other things that cropped out occasionally was the peep stone craze. A young man, or boy rather, by the name of William Titt, who for a time lived with Preddy Meeks, claimed that he had got a stone which by putting it in a black hat and looking in there, he could see things. He would tell where a person's cattle were on the range, etc. Meeks got somewhat interested in this, as did some others, and several were on the watch to find a stone that they could see things in. It was claimed that every individual could see things if he could get the right kind of stone, and that there was a stone for each person if it could be found. Many had somewhat of a belief in this, but as it was proved that the seer could not always see right, those who had some faith in it lost this belief and the thing died down. It never did have a hold on many, and they were mostly boys like Titt. However, a few men pretended to believe something in it.

Thus our time passed on, we worked extremely hard in the summer and did little in the winter, but had a variety of amusements for a small place and an equal number of theories like the peep stone craze. There were other things that were hatched by an idle brain and discussed by some others who ought to have had better sense. Once a thing is started, no difference how absurd it may be, there are always persons ready to discuss the subject, and some are to be found who will take the opposite side no difference how absurd it may be.

During the latter part of the winter and early spring I worked at getting our tar wood and making tar. I purchased a wagon from William Laney, one of those government wagons that Johnson's army had to bring in their supplies with in 1857-1858. I paid 105 gallons of tar for it. This was the first wagon that I ever owned, it was, however, too heavy for common use or for one yoke of oxen. I got Joseph P. Barton to cut the hind wheels down and put them on the front axletrees for front wheels and used the front wheels for hind wheels. This made a very good log wagon for two or three yoke of cattle, and I used it mostly for this purpose.

1861-1863
Chapter 23
I Go Freighting

April 16, 1861 I started for Provo with a load of oats for Ebenezer Hanks, who kept a small store in Parowan.¹ He had a partner in Provo and was sending the oats up to him. I had my big wagon and loaded 125 bushels on, and had four yoke of oxen, two of them were broke to work and two of them were wild steers. One yoke was mine, two belonged to my father, and one belonged to Jesse Lowder. I had the use of the unbroken steers for breaking them. My brother Franklin went with me, he was young but was of great service to me as the cattle were hard to manage; we had a great deal of difficulty in hitching up in the morning. Collins R. Hakes and Thomas Richards were along. They were also loaded with oats. A young man by the name of Porter Ewines was driving some loose stock for Hanks. He was as vulgar, wicked, and profane as one would meet in a long time.

After rather a hard trip with our unbroken cattle, we arrived at Provo and unloaded our grain on the first day of May. We took our pay in merchandise and at high prices, my load came to \$75. This amounted to very little at the prices that we had to pay. I remember getting an ax, the only one in the store, it was heavier than I wanted, but it was this or nothing so I took it. It weighed five and a quarter pounds, rather heavy for a man of my weight, but I used it for several years and did an immense amount of work with it. What little I got helped out very much as we had little in our home. Our trip up had been a hard one but was much easier going back as we were not loaded. I arrived home on May 10.

June 4, I again started out freighting to the north, this time I loaded up with tithing wheat to take to Salt Lake City. It was a long distance to haul wheat, but there was plenty here and a shortage north, which caused this long haul of bread stuff. I had two yoke and cattle and hired a wagon from Charles Y. Webb, it being lighter than the one I had. The others that were along hauling wheat were Sidney R. Burton, William Carter, and Charles Y. Webb. A. Milton Musser with a couple of men were along driving up some tithing stock. They only traveled with us part of the way.

When we were near the Sevier River, Sidney R. Burton broke his wagon tire. Bro. Musser made some slighting remark about starting out with such poor wagons, Burton, who was not overly religious retorted, saying that a man who paid his tithing could not afford a better wagon. Bro. Musser and his men went on and we sent the wagon tire back to Fillmore to get it welded. This detained us two days.

After getting fixed up, we started on, and arriving at Cottonwood found some freighters with mule teams stuck. We offered to hitch our oxen on and pull them out, but they laughed at us to think that our oxen could pull a load that their mules could not. After a while they gave us a trial, and we hitched on our oxen and they pulled the wagon out almost without an effort, which surprised them. Our cattle had been used for logging and know how to pull.

We reached Salt Lake City on the 18th and delivered our loads in good order. Most of my pay was on the tithing office. We soon did what little trading we were able to do and started home, arriving there July 5.

It was a very hot, dry, and dusty trip both going and coming, and my feet got scalded so that I could hardly walk. I bathed them and changed my socks about every time we came to any water, but crippled as I as, I was compelled to walk considerable in hunting the cattle and when there was any bad road. This made it doubly bad, and to add to this my lips were raw sores from sunburn, the latter ailment I was subject to in the summer.

Previous to the above named trip to the City I had purchased a house and lot that had belonged to David Cluff, who had moved to Provo. William C. McGregor had purchased it from Cluff and sold it to me for \$250. I turned most of the proceeds of my freighting to help pay for it. I paid the balance in lumber and other turns. I went to work and fitted up the house, which had two rooms in it and walls where another could be added, and soon made it quite comfortable. I had much difficulty in getting nails to put on the roof with as I was putting on shingles. I tried to get some from Bro. Hanks but could not without the money. Hyrum Coombs, who was a very intimate friend of Hanks and had some dealings with him, took a ham that I had and made a turn and got some nails, giving fifty cents a pound for them. I then succeeded in getting on a good roof the whole length of the building, being about forty feet.

Later I sold the house and lot to the Cooperative store and they used it for their business. They soon built a rock building by the house on the southern part of the lot that was not occupied and moved into that. In recent years they

built a more pretentious building but still use the rock building for a store house. A street was run through where my house stood. James McGuffie in early days owned the lot where the store now stands.

On September 18 I again started for Salt Lake City, this time I had a horse team, having got a horse and hired another from Sidney R. Burton. I took my wife along. Thomas Davenport also went with us. The purpose of this trip was mainly to attend the fall conference. After a pleasant trip, we arrived in the City of the saints on the last day of the month. I then went on up to Centerville to visit several of my cousins who resided there, some of whom I had never seen before. I returned to the city on the 3rd of October.

On the 4th my wife and I went through the endowment house where we received our endowments. Several others from Parowan went through at the same time, Alexander Orton and wife being among the number. While in the city I stopped with my cousin, Sharlet Baker. She had married Baker some years ago, he was a widower and had several children.

On the 6th I attended the general conference and went to all the meetings. The conference was held in what was later called the old tabernacle. During the conference Pres. Young reproved the speakers for turning around and addressing those on the stand. Orson Hyde was the first speaker and after he sat down Pres. Young arose and reproved Hyde for his manner of speaking, he called him to get up and preach to the people, which he did. After this second sermon Pres. Young got up and complimented Hyde on his sermon and said, "I knew that Bro. Hyde could preach."

Before leaving home I had gone into the canyon and gathered a quantity of alum. Of course this was in a crude state and much dirt was with it. I got a large iron kettle and boiled it down and drained it off, and when it cooled it was almost like a cake of tallow in appearance. I took some of this along to trade, and while we were in the city I sold it to get a few things. The parties who bought it did not give much for it as they said that there was so much foreign substances in it that it would have to be clarified before it was worth anything, so they gave just what they pleased for it. I however got a few things that we needed very badly.

Our Bishop William S. Warren and his councilor Daniel Page attended this conference and both seemed to be very much enthused at this time. I traveled part of the way home with them, and they then appeared to be zealous in the work of the gospel, but they both apostatized not long after. Warren was not an honest man and it soon came out on him. Such men cannot remain long in the church. When he was put in bishop the people, or part of them, had little confidence in him and some opposition was manifested. Apostle Amasa M. Lyman who put him in said it made no difference if all the people opposed him, he would put him in and he would be the bishop in spite of the people. Evidently the people had no voice in who should be bishop. The method is a little different at this time.

We arrived home October 15, and I spent the fall and much of the winter in getting out lumber, hauling wood, and various other kinds of work. I have stated that there was little work done in the canyons in the winter, which was the case as a rule, but Sidney R. Burton and I went up main canyon this winter and worked at chopping logs and getting a team up on the bench where the logs were. We hauled them to the top and then rolled them off into the canyon, and the next spring we hauled them to the mill. We spent a portion of the winter in this labor and the lumber that we got out of these logs was traded to the people at Kannarah to build their meeting house with. We took our pay in sheep. As we only got a few sheep we left them in their herd and got a little wool for a year or two, but finally the herd went down and our investment was mostly an entire loss.

On April 12, 1862 my wife gave birth to a daughter whom we named Frances Amelia. She was a very healthy, good natured child and hardly ever cried. She was one of the best natured and contented children I ever saw.

The spring was spent in farming, putting in my crop. As summer advanced, I worked as usual in the canyon, getting out lumber and finishing up my house, making some improvements on it and some changes in the rooms.

Money was scarce and lumber was about all we had to market. During the time of the Pony Express across the plains some of our people hauled oats to the stations in Ruby Valley, Nevada. This was a long way to freight with ox teams, and then there was scarcely any roads for a good share of the way. I worked hard but made little as there is little to be made at the class of work that most of us followed. However, Mary and I got along quite well. If we were not rich, we were happy in fixing up our home, and it always looked neat and comfortable for she was a good hand

to fix up a house and make the most of everything. Thus the years passed on with its joys and sorrows, its toils and pleasures.

We were in the same old grind of everyday life. The work in the canyon was hard in the summer, the roads were very dusty, and in the mountains the mosquitoes were bad. At times we had to build fires so the smoke would keep them from our animals. I have seen men's faces so swollen from Mosquito bites that they could hardly see.

The winter of 1862-3 was spent in the usual way, that is working outside what we could and having our theaters and dances, besides the everlasting ball games and foot races. The last was brought on quite often, and Parowan had several men who were hard to beat at this sport, as well as at jumping. Joseph Lunt, who remained here some time, would jump his twenty-one feet very easily.

During the latter part of 1863 I rented one of my rooms to Clark Fabun and family. He had recently come in from California. He came to Utah in an early day and then went on to California where he made some money. He lived in my house nearly two years and freighted and traded back and forth to California. His wife was a Harris. He and his family returned to California and later joined the Josephites. He might have been called an infidel as he did not believe much in any religion, and he had his doubts as to there being a supreme being. He was what might be termed a man of the world who cared for little but money, yet he was honorable in his deals and in paying his debts.

The work and amusements during the winter of 1863-4 were about as usual. Our theatrical company put on a few plays each winter. We often arranged in the fall to put on twelve plays during the winter, and we then sold season tickets at a little reduction. These amusements of theaters and dances kept up about the same, but there was one feature about our public gatherings that was becoming noticeable, and that was a falling off at our Sunday meetings. This was a sure indication that the people were becoming more indifferent to their religious duties. They, or many of them, laid their religion on the shelf. They had got through with the reformation, which was the same as getting through with a piece of work. It is a sad thing to contemplate that religion is disposed of so easily.

Chapter Notes

¹ Ebenezer Hanks was a most wonderful character, he was a cooper or barrel maker by trade. He had been in the Battalion, his wife going with him. They never had any children. After he was discharged in California, he remained there and made a great deal of money in the mines. This he turned in to help purchase the San Bernardino Ranch. On coming to Utah when the people left California, he located at Parowan. Here he started a little store and sent his teams to California for goods. He was soon in business with a partner in Provo. He was the main one who started a cotton factory in Parowan, which did a good business for a time. Late in life he started to make iron and spent all he had at this. He died a poor man.

1864
Chapter 24
A Balky Horse and School Teaching

The spring of 1864 was spent about as others had passed, putting in the grain in the spring, which was mainly wheat, oats, and corn, with some potatoes. In the late spring or early summer I worked at peeling tan bark for my father whose business was increasing considerably, and I helped him some in the work. In the fall I helped harvest for others, cutting wheat with a cradle for one bushel an acre. I generally cut about two acres a day.

On June 29, 1864 my wife gave birth to a daughter whom we named Delphina Catherine, Delphina was for one of Clark Fabun's daughters and Catherine was for her grandmother, Catherine Steele. This third addition to our family was just as welcome as the others, and the little one was just as good and smart as any of them. We soon decided that this name was more than was necessary for a girl, and we changed it to Della.

My father-in-law, John Steele, thinking that he could better his affairs in a temporal way had moved south to Toquerville. We went down there on a visit occasionally, and he came up to Parowan quite often to trade Dixie products for flour, etc., and to visit. The south by this time began to furnish much fruit, molasses, and wine. The wine with the other products were brought up and traded to the people, and it had the same effect here that it had where it was made, that of making drunkards of a good many, both old and young, for the drinking was not entirely confined to the boys. Many of the older ones used it, but as a rule they did not use it to excess as the boys did. I have thought that it whetted the appetite of Sidney R. Burton, for he about ruined himself through drink as did some others.

In the fore part of September, 1864 I started for St. George with a load of oats for President Young's company, who were making a tour of the southern settlements. As one of my oxen had died, I was compelled to get a team of some kind so I got a horse team. One of them was apparently a very good horse but he was terribly balky, and on my way to St. George I had all sorts of grief with him when I came to the sandy road near Grape Vine Springs. James McGuffie was along with me and assisted me. He was also loaded with oats.

My brother-in-law, Mahonri M. Steele, went with me from Toquerville. He pretended that he was going to attend the meetings at St. George, but the real attraction was one of Edward Bunker's daughters named Emily who lived at the Santa Clara, four miles from St. George. It appears that his visit was not entirely without results, for he married the girl later on.

We reached St. George in the evening of the 13th after a very disagreeable and vexing trip, owing chiefly to my team being so balky. If there is anything that will try a man's patience, I think that a team such as I had would do it.

On the 14th President Young held conference in St. George, and I attended these meetings. In the forenoon the speakers were George A. Smith, Lorenzo Snow, and Pres. Young. The first speaker gave an interesting sketch of the settling of Parowan. In the afternoon Orson Hyde and Amasa M. Lyman were the speakers. On the 15th meeting was held at 10:00 A.M. and the speakers were Wilford Woodruff, Franklin D. Richards, and George A. Smith, and in the afternoon the speakers were John Taylor, Erastus Snow, and Pres. Young. Apostle Snow gave a statement of the conditions and affairs in the southern settlements.

There had been quite a number called from the north to settle in the south, and St. George was the main settlement that was built up by these missionaries. Most of them were men of some means while there was the usual percentage of poor.

After Apostle Orson Pratt returned north, Apostle Erastus Snow had charge of this mission and under his wise leadership the Dixie country commenced to grow and improve and soon came to the front as a fruit producing section. The people however had many hardships and difficulties to contend with. In some places they were afflicted with chills and fever, and then there was the problem of taking out the water from the Virgin River which was a treacherous stream, and their dams were frequently washed away by the floods that came down with terrible force through those rocky canyons. With the settling of this southern country a move was made to open up a route to the Colorado River and bring supplies and emigrants by this route.

On December 17, 1864 a landing and a site for a church warehouse, afterwards known as Callville, was selected by Anson Call on the Colorado River 125 miles from St. George.

On the 16th Pres. Young and party went over to the Santa Clara and held meeting there. I went over and attended the meeting and had a visit with the Leavitt brothers and others of my acquaintances.

The next day the party started on their return north. On reaching Toquerville they held meeting there on the 18th, which I attended. At this point the party went on up the river to Kanab and I started home on the 19th, arriving there the 20th after having a most enjoyable time in attending so many meetings where the leaders of the church were present and in visiting so many of my friends and relatives.

After Clark Fabun moved out of my house, I found that we had more room than was actually necessary for our small family. As we still lacked school teachers, I concluded to teach a small school during the winter of 1864-5. I said a small school, for my house was not large enough for a large one and it was poorly lighted and seated, I having made the seats myself. I got along fairly well, as the school was small I had more time to devote to each pupil. The room was used for some of the quorum meetings in the evenings. I did not make much at this work this winter as most of the pupils paid for their tuition in wood, and I burned most of it up, but I got some experience and I think that I helped the scholars a great deal. While I did not claim to be educated, I found in after years that these pupils made prominent members, holding different offices in the church.

On February 13, 1865, Apostle Erastus Snow, who was on his way from Salt Lake City to St. George stopped in Parowan and organized the sixty ninth quorum of seventies. He ordained the seven presidents who were as follows: Silas S. Smith, Zachariah B. Decker, Abraham Smith, Horace Thornton, Edward Dalton, Joseph K. Parramour, and William C. McGregor, Silas S. Smith being the senior president.

On the 22nd the presidents who had been ordained by Apostle Erastus Snow ordained about fifty elders into the quorum of seventies. I was ordained a seventy at this time by William C. McGregor. This nearly broke up the elders quorum, the taking out of half a hundred of its best and most active members at one time had a paralyzing effect upon it, and it was not said after this that the elders quorum was the leading one in the place.

I spent the spring and summer of 1865 about as I did those of other years, in farming and working in the canyon, getting out lumber, etc. This latter work appeared to agree with me. I always had weak lungs. I remember when I was about ten or eleven years old that the doctor told mother that I would not live to be a man. This working among the pines in the pure mountain air, the excellent water that comes from the springs in the mountains, all had their attractions as well as adding to one's health and vigor. This occupation and the drinking of tar water, which I did for a time, entirely cured me and my lungs grew stronger, so I soon got over the hacking cough that I had.

During the fall of 1865 President Young and party visited the southern settlements, and as there were some military men along, a company of our cavalry went out as far as Buckhorne Springs to meet them. They arrived in Parowan September 12. Generals Robert T. Burton and Ross were with the party and these two men were spending much of their time at the different places as they passed in reviewing and reorganizing the militia and defusing into the people more of a military spirit. Meeting was held in the forenoon of the 13th, and in the afternoon there was a review of the militia by generals Burton and Ross. The latter was a Scotchman and had a little of the Scotch dialect in his talk. They both spoke with great earnestness and force upon the necessity of being armed and prepared to defend ourselves against the savages. They impressed upon us the necessity of procuring good arms and having a supply of ammunition constantly on hand. The Sharps rifle had recently come out and they recommence this arm. Our being on the frontier and constantly exposed made this necessary for our protection. The company went on south, visiting most of the settlements in that locality and giving the same council and advice as they returned to Salt Lake City. This stirring up of the people upon this subject was timely, for the Navajos soon commenced to make their raids upon the southern settlements, and it was with difficulty that we were able to keep them from clearing the ranges of our live stock.

At the above named drill on inspection on September 18, I was elected to the office of Aide de camp in the first regiment of infantry in the Iron Military District. My commission was dated April 20, 1866 and was signed by Charles Durkee, Governor of Utah. This spirit of military drills was somewhat aroused and musters or drills were held quite frequently. Most of the people took quite an interest in them and also in getting better arms, which was of a greater necessity than the drills. I remember that the first Henry rifle that was brought into the place cost the

purchaser \$75.00. All the male population that were subject to military duty kept their arms in order and where they could lay their hands on them at any moment of the day or night. It was the universal practice of all who worked out of town to carry a revolver all the time. I carried one for several years and never went into the canyon without one. Apostle George A. Smith at one time counseled the brethren to carry their arms with them when they went to meeting, which was done at some periods of our Indian troubles. Once in a while I have heard a revolver drop by some accident in meeting by someone who sat on the stand. The person picked it up and nothing was said. Many of the young men wore them to dances, and later on this was done more for bravado than anything else, simply to let the people know that the wearer was a tough character.

November 6, 1865 I commenced to teach school, doing as I had the previous winter, teaching in my own house. There was not a school house in the place so I fitted up my house, taking out a partition and making one good sized room which would accommodate fifty or sixty pupils by crowding a little. I had a fair attendance and got along reasonably well. I had to fix up my own benches, desks, etc. They were of course very crude for a school room. I had no preparation for a teacher, but I did the best I could to keep up, and studied during the evenings.

My wife was very fond of going to dances, and she would often go while I stayed at home pouring over some mathematical problem or something of the kind. From then on I never cared to go to parties. I only went to please my wife. My school room was occupied several nights a week during the winter for quorum meetings. I did not make much at teaching as I taught very cheap and took my pay in wood or anything that the people might have. I burned most of the wood and some never paid, so I did not get much that helped out in the family. I got some experience and probably studied more than I would have done had I not tried to teach. I also had the satisfaction of seeing some progress made by my students, and that many of them were taking the right course to make their mark in the world. One of my pupils in later years told me that he had kept a record of his class of fourteen and that everyone had made his mark. Some had been presidents of stakes, some counselors to presidents, some had been High Councilors, some presidents of Relief Societies, and everyone of that class had his or her mark in the church as an officer and a worker. There was not one of that class who was not a good latter-day Saint.

During the winter we had a spelling school or something of this kind once a week, and often they were social gatherings of a few of the young folks. As several of my associates had little to do in the winter, we looked around to see what we could do to spend our time to the best advantage and not play ball so much. We finally hit upon a plan to get up a newspaper, that is a manuscript. William Davenport, Hyrum Coombs, Josiah Rogerson, and I started the little paper. It was only four pages, but later we increased it to eight pages. Hyrum Coombs gave it the name of "The Intelligencer." We took our turn in editing it, but we all contributed something each week. Later Collins R. Hakes came in and joined us in this work. We gave the news of the town, that is, noting any unusual event and making comments and suggestions as we felt like doing. This paper was read at our weekly school or at gatherings as the case might be, and soon it became quite popular. But we soon found that we were in hot water, the same as newspaper men are who express their minds on any subject. One week William Davenport edited it, and during the week here was a concert, and he made some remarks rather condemning a few of the sons as not suitable, referring to them as being on the bacchanalian order. This aroused Professor Durham who everyone considered as being up to date as a choir leader, and we had to make peace with him. On another occasion Collins R. Hakes edited the paper, and it happened that this week something had come up in one of our meetings, that is a business meeting as I remember it, in which President Dame and Bishop Warren took opposite sides. These two men did not agree well at best, and Hakes made some sharp criticisms on the affair and intimated that it would be better to unite the two offices in one, that is the president and bishop. He wound up the article by saying he thought that a one horse team would work among this sage brush better than two. This soon brought the president on our backs, and I was the one who had to meet it all, for I generally printed the heading or wrote them for all the papers and I kept the papers at my place as the evening schools where they were read was at my house. Taken all together, the paper gave good satisfaction and was the source of considerable amusement for us and helped to divert our minds from the eternal ball playing. However, we learned that an editor must not say just what he thinks at all times if he wants to keep out of hot water.

1866
Chapter 25
Events during the Black Hawk War

We occasionally made visits to Beaver and Cedar City and took our wives along. This helped to break the monotony of everyday affairs at home. On February 2, 1866 William C. Mitchell and I hitched our two span of horses onto one wagon, as the roads were very bad, and went to Cedar City to attend a concert. We took our wives along. The concert was very good, John M. Macfarland was the main one as he was the choir leader. He was to Cedar what Prof. Durham was to Parowan. He was later called to St. George to lead their choir there and teach music. We returned home the next day, but the roads were terribly bad.

The men sometimes took a trip in the summer to the Fish Lake, known as Panguitch Lake (the word Panguitch signifies fish in the Piede dialect). In early days some of the young men went up there and made a canoe out of a large pine log, so some of us went up there occasionally to catch fish and ride in the old canoe. There was no wagon road over the mountain and at this period the women did not go. I remember the first time I was up there I went with an Indian to watch him take the fish out of his willow basket or trap. At this time it was full, and he took sixty good sized trout out of it. On a later occasion Dudley Leavitt and I got Bro. Whitney to make us some spears and we went up and caught quite a number of fish, spearing many of them as they were making their way up the creek. It was a lovely place in the summer, and later a road was made so a wagon could be taken up there. It became quite a pleasure resort in the summer.

We were still keeping up our theaters in the winter season, generally presenting twelve plays during the season. I usually had a part in all of them, on March 5 we gave our last for the season. My school closed on the 9th of March.

Apostle George A. Smith visited the place and gave us several lectures mainly on historical subjects, from here he went on south to preach and lecture.

On march 18th apostle Amasa M. Lyman gave us his noted sermon on polygamy. This he had preached in Salt Lake City, and I was told that the merchants and business men there gave him quite a large sum of money for this sermon. It was a masterly address as to language and argument, but not so deep spiritually as might have been expected from an apostle.

When Apostle George A. Smith returned from the south, he spent several days in Parowan lecturing and preaching, the main topics dwelt upon in his preaching was to be prepared to meet Indian depredations, for hostilities had commenced in the north and the Black Hawk War was on to a certain extent. He now determined to visit Panguitch, which had recently been settled mostly by persons from Parowan. On March 20 Apostle Smith and party left Parowan to visit the settlements on the Sevier. Those composing the company were as follows: George A. Smith, Silas S. Smith, James N. Smith, William H. Dame, John Steele, Zachariah B. Decker, William Marshall, and myself. There were a few along who lived at Panguitch or were going over there on business.

Going up Little Creek Canyon we camped on top of the mountain, the roads were quite bad in the canyon and there was much snow on the mountain where we camped. Those of us who did not have wagons (most of us were horseback) lay down on the snow, where I listened for sometime to the continual howling of the wolves that seemed much more numerous and noisy than common, they were always heard at nights through this region.

The next day we started down the mountain into Bear Valley. We found the snow from two to three feet deep. It snowed some during the day. We fixed a sled behind a wagon and got Brother George A. Smith onto it, and then fastened a rope to it so as to keep it from sliding off into the creek in some of the worst places or dugways. In this way we worked our way down through the canyon, sometimes in snow up to our waists. This scene, if it had been taken in this snow storm and in the rough mountain passes, would have equaled many of those taken by arctic explorers. A team came out from Panguitch to meet us, and we succeeded in getting through to that place at about sunset.

March 22, meeting was held at Panguitch at which most of the party spoke a short time. Apostle George A. Smith spoke and emphasized the necessity of being prepared to resist Indian raids and depredations, that persons should not expose themselves or their families so they might be victims of the savages. In the afternoon the company of

militia here were reviewed and John Lowder was elected captain. There were not as many guns in the company as it was necessary for them to have.

On the 23rd Apostle George A. Smith and most of those who came over with him started down the river. Going about ten miles, they crossed over the river and had dinner, and Bro. Smith dedicated the place for a settlement or a military post which was to be built at this place. There were some ducks along in the sloughs near here, and I shot one with my pistol at a distance of 110 paces.

After dinner we went on to Circleville where meeting was held in the evening. Bro. George A. Smith was so tired that he did not attend. Bro. William Allred was the presiding officer here at that time, but there were not many families here then.

The next day, the 24th, Apostle George A. Smith and Jesse N. Smith started on down the river, while the rest of the party commenced their return home. We went nearly to Lower Bear Valley where we camped. The next day we started out early in order to get over the snow before it thawed. I with two or three others got through and reached home that night, but the rest of the party did not get home until the next day. Our trip had been a hard one as we had to camp in the snow and look after our animals. They of course had nothing to eat on any of these trips but what they could pick on the side hills where the snow had melted off. However, our trip had been enjoyed by all, for Bro. George A. was a great story teller and always had one to tell that was very interesting whenever an opportunity afforded.

Immediately after this expedition, arrangements were made to establish a military post at the place that had been selected and dedicated by Apostle George A. Smith on the Sevier River. For this purpose fifty men were called from Beaver and Iron counties. This company was put under the command of Silas S. Smith, and the post that was to be established was to protect the frontier settlements in this region from Indian raids.

This was what was called the Black Hawk War. This company was to erect a picket or stockade fort and act as a kind of picket guard. They were to sow and plant grain and make preparations for a settlement. It was not long before they were over on the river at the work assigned them. They soon had a fort erected and did a great deal of picket duty, having some difficulty with the Indians. The settlement of Panguitch was broken up in June when the post was abandoned. I did not go on this expedition, but my brother Franklin went and remained until the post was abandoned. They named this post Fort Sanford in honor of Silas Sanford Smith.

Most of the settlers, on vacating Panguitch, moved into Parowan and Paragoonah. The settlement at Circleville was broken up in July, and the people moved away because of the hostilities and depredations of the Indians. During the time that the post of Sanford was kept up they had some trouble with the Indians. Some of the Indians that lived in the country and were supposed to be friendly were intercepted, and it appears that it was ascertained that they were acting as spies. The guard that stopped them was going to take them to the post when they commenced firing on him, and in the fight that followed William M. West was wounded in the shoulder and one Indian was killed and the other Indian was wounded by Collins R. Hakes.

The next day after this affair a company went up above Panguitch where some of the home Indians were camped and told them that if they were friendly that they must give up their arms in order that peace might be maintained with them. They professed to be friendly, but when the demand was made for them to give up their arms, they became excited and soon there was firing on both sides. James Butler was wounded and two or three of the Indians were killed, the rest gave up their arms and were held as prisoners for a few days. When they were released, they were given to understand that they must keep in a certain locality.

About this time a similar move was made with the Indians at Circleville. They were disarmed and kept as prisoners. One night they attempted to make their escape and they were nearly all shot down. Some thought that the attempted escape was imaginary and only used as a pretext to kill them. Many people looked upon this as a butchery, that it was not justifiable, and concerned this harsh move with the friendly Indians; while some said that they were in league with the hostiles and should be treated as the hostiles were, shot wherever found. During this Indian war all the smaller settlements moved into where there was better protection from the hostiles. During these moves there was an odd incident occurred at Long Valley when that place was vacated. A company was sent out from the south to assist them in moving and to guard them on the way. John Pearce had charge of this company. The party reached Long Valley all right and the settlers were gathered and started on their march for the southern settlements. In going

out they traveled by night in one of the most dangerous places where they had reason to suspect that they would be attacked if an attack was made upon them. Captain Pearce rode ahead of the company with one or two others, and upon coming to this place his horse gave signs that there were Indians near by. Many of the horses and mules would make these signs of fear whenever they approached an Indian encampment or when they came near them. So on this occasion Pearce knew that there were Indians near by, but it was dark and he could not see or hear anything in the brush. Simeon F. Houd of Parowan had raised an Indian boy that they always called Charley Houd. He had become grown and had recently disappeared, and it was almost certain that he was with the hostiles in this vicinity and Pearce suspected that Charley was here; so he called out in the darkness toward the thicket of brush, "Charley Houd, Charley Houd, come out of there. I see you and have my gun on you and if you do not come out I will kill you." In a short time this threatening to shoot had its effect, for Charley came out of the brush with a few other Indians, who were made to march off, the whites now being the victors in a bloodless ambush.

Chapter Notes

¹ Panguitch is an Indian name meaning fish. The place was settled by people from Parowan in 1864, and was abandoned on account of Indian hostilities in 1866, the people mostly going to Parowan and Paragonah. A few later went to Beaver, among this number was Thomas Mumford. The place was again settled or re occupied two years later and was permanently occupied after this date.

1866
Chapter 26
A Military Expedition

During the latter part of the summer of 1866 it was thought best by the leading men at Salt Lake City to send out an exploring party from the southern part of Utah to ascertain if there were any places where the Colorado River could be crossed south and east of this part of the territory that was not already known to the whites. This information was necessary to guard against the loss of our stock by Indian raids from across the river, the Navajos having made several raids on our stock in the southern parts of the territory. A call was made for Washington and Iron counties to furnish men for this expedition. The main part of this force was from Washington County, and the men from that county met at Gould's ranch about eight miles south of Toquerville where an organization of the company was effected. James Andrus¹ was appointed captain and Frank B. Woolley chaplain, he also acted as Lieutenant, keeping the records of the company or journal of the expedition.² Arrangements were made for those from Iron county to join this company at some point on the Paria. The company from Iron County numbered eighteen with nine pack animals, one for each two men. I was appointed to take charge of this force until we joined the main company on the Paria.³ We left Parowan August 22, going up Little Creek Canyon to near the head of the stream where those a little behind in getting away from town joined the rest.

On the 23rd we started out and went to Lower Bear Valley where we nooned, and all got thoroughly wet from one of those mountain showers that does not stop to rain but just pours down.

In the afternoon we traveled nearly to Panguitch where we camped, taking great precaution in selecting a place where we could not be successfully attacked by Indians. On the morning of the 24th we passed through the deserted town of Panguitch, the houses were the same as when the people left them, they had not been disturbed by the Indians. The recent rains had made things grow very fast, and the grass in the streets was a foot high. The grain looked fine, almost ready to harvest. It looked lonesome and desolate to see such good prospects for a crop and not a white man in the valley. However, a company came over from Parowan soon after and harvested much of the grain. We helped ourselves to a few potatoes but could not carry many.

We passed on up the Sevier River for seven miles, then turned east. Following up a canyon about ten miles, we came to the divide where the waters flow to the East Fork of the Sevier. We descended to the river, passing a most beautiful flat or opening covered with a luxuriant growth of grass.

On reaching the East Fork I selected a camp ground where we could not be surprised by hostile Indians and had the company camp. I then rode ahead for four or five miles to the divide to see if it were possible to get down at that point to the Paria, which I supposed would be in that direction. It was a gradual rise from the river, but on reaching the summit I found that it broke off nearly perpendicularly for hundreds of feet. This wall or ledge ran as far as I could see in either direction, nearly north and south. It was raining all the time so that I could not get a very good view of the country, but I could see plainly enough that it was impossible to pass over to the Paria in that direction. I had never been to the Paria but was satisfied that the head waters must be just ahead and below me some distance. I returned to camp feeling a little puzzled about what to do or what course to pursue on the morrow.

After guard was posted and we had prayers (which we had regularly) some of us lay down while others sat up, as it was still raining and we were in the open field without shelter. There was no wood near, and we spent a most miserable night, the water coming in so that it ran under our beds.

In crossing the river just before camping some of our number got wet, but we were all wet before morning. One of our number, Andrew Cory, from Cedar City took very bad with cramping and grew so bad that some were afraid he would not live until morning. We worked with him, some held blankets and quilts over him to keep off the rain while others rubbed him. We administered to him, prayed over him, and gave him what simple remedies we had, the main thing being a little brandy that I had brought along for cases of emergency, and this was our first one. When the long hours of the night had passed and morning came, we found that he was much better. This was a long and dreary night for all of us, and probably added another chapter to the book of infirmities of life.

August 25, Saturday we dried ourselves and bedding a little. Cory, seeming somewhat better, thought that he could ride, so we started up the stream in a southwest direction. After we had gone but four miles, we came to where the valley narrows to a canyon. Here we turned to the southeast, and after traveling about seven miles came to the rim or

highest range of mountains. Here we chose the lowest and most favorable looking pass that we could see and finally succeeded in getting down into a very narrow canyon. The boys called this Fish's Pass. This range of mountains presented almost a perpendicular wall nearly as far as the eye could see, but broke to the southeast. After getting down where we had room enough to turn around (in places there was not room to turn a horse), we took dinner where we found some small springs and a little grass.

We followed down this canyon ten miles, then came to a bench or open flat where we could look off to the east and into the canyon of the Paria, which was not far below us. Near here we selected a favorable place and camped for the night. We were all wet, for it had rained a great deal during the day.

After camp had been established, I rode over to the edge of the break where I could see down into the Paria canyon for some distance. I soon discovered a camp of men and horses, but at first I was not sure whether they were whites or Indians. Some of the other boys came up and joined me, and we finally came to the conclusion that it was a camp of white people, so we rode back to our camp. This was the day that had been set for our meeting Captain Andrus, and we were now sure that this was his camp. I put out an extra guard as I fancied there were Indians in the vicinity, there were some things that looked a little suspicious to me.

We started very early the next morning, August 26, and soon made our way down the mountain side to the camp I had discovered the night before, where we found that it was Captain Andrus and company who had arrived there a few hours before I saw the camp. We remained here until after dinner, organizing, etc.

The company was formed into five platoons. I had command of one. Six men were detailed to go back and take the poorest animals, and letters stating that the two companies had joined, etc. One man who had come with me, Hiram Pollock who had the chills, was among the number. After dinner they started back to St. George, taking the trail Captain Andrus had come in on, and we started up the Paria, traveling nearly northeast.

We found the country very rough, and so we went only about eight miles before camping. In the evening three of the boys who had started back came into camp and reported that they had been attacked by Indians and one of their number was killed. One of the boys that came in was wounded, they did not know what had become of the other two boys who were missing. A short council was held and Captain Andrus with about twenty men started for the scene of the murder. About midnight one of the missing men came in and reported about as the others had in regard to the attack and killing of Elijah Everett.

August 27, Monday twelve men started to look for the missing man and for the body of Elijah Everett which they wished to bury. About 9:00 A.M. a few of the men who went out with Captain Andrus came in, they had recovered the animals, and were shot at by the Indians but it was so dark that the savages got away. About 3:00 P.M. the rest of the company came in, they had found the missing man, who was frightened very badly and almost deranged. They found the dead man, Everett, and buried him. The Indians had ambushed them as they were going up through a narrow place, and as Everett had been in the lead, they shot him first. He was shot with a large ball and two arrows. One of the arrows penetrated the body seventeen inches. He was about twenty years old and not married.

When Erasmus Snow spoke to the party as they were about to leave, he promised that everyone that had been called on this expedition should return. Everett was not called but was hired to go in the place of another man. This laying away of one of our number in this wild country away from relatives and friends was indeed a sad affair, and we felt the solemnity of the occasion as only persons can feel in such a wilderness and under such circumstances as we were in.

August 28, our bugler, Prof. Thomas, of Salt Lake City, roused the camp at day break, and as soon as a little breakfast could be had we started on up the stream which at this point is dry in the summer, but the recent rains had brought down water in all the washes and ravines.

In following up these streams and canyons we found many indications of minerals, some thought that there was gold and silver in this region, but as I was no judge I could not say. There are no valleys here, nothing but steep canyons, and as we came to the head of these barren cliffs they rose very abrupt and we found some difficulty in getting out on top. We, however, turned to the right and went up a sharp ridge which was so steep that some of the animals lost their footing and rolled some distance down the hill.

As we neared the top, it was nearly perpendicular on one side and very steep on the other, and if a horse had lost his footing he would have gone five hundred feet before he struck the bottom. We led our animals very cautiously, holding the bridle reins very loosely in our hands so that if the horse fell he would not take us with him. We however succeeded in passing this place without any accidents, and after crossing this ridge for about three miles we came down into an open valley and camped for the night.

It rained quite hard during the afternoon and evening. We have had rain almost every day since we left, and in our exposed condition with nothing but common clothing we were wet almost all the time. Such things as rain coats or slickers were not known at this time among us.

Our order of march was to have each platoon take its turn at going ahead and two or three were detailed to go some distance in advance to find the road and see that we were not ambushed by any hostile Indians.

August 29, It rained last night so much that we were pretty well drenched this morning when we arose. We traveled this morning down a canyon leading a little east of north, and found some small springs and good grass.

Following down this flat about three miles, we turned on to the mountain and traveled five miles, then we came to the summit of this range where we had one of the most beautiful views of the country that I ever witnessed. To the west was the high mountain that formed the rim of the basin, to the east toward the Colorado River the white cliffs rose up in almost dazzling whiteness while others rose up dressed in a red garment, making a most varied and beautiful scene.

In the afternoon we descended the mountain and went into a canyon that ran to the east. We found this very rough and had trouble in getting down, but we reached the bottom about sunset. The descent had been very rough and dangerous, and one animal missed its footing and fell thirty feet over a ledge and was killed.

Following down this canyon, we came to the main canyon where we found water and camped. Most of the men were about tired out, the constant wetting and guard duty had begun to tell on them. Some of the animals were also failing very fast, but this was about the last of the wet weather, so we were more favored after this.

August 30, We traveled down this stream, which was about the size of the creek at Parowan, there were some cottonwoods along its banks. We soon came to a nice open valley with good soil. Here we found some wild potatoes so we named it Potato Valley. The stream at the lower end of the valley runs into a box canyon, the sides a little farther down stream rise to a height of over a thousand feet.

We took a circuitous route to the southeast and came on to the mountain. Here we could look down into the gorge where there were many evidences of the Cliff Dwellers having occupied the caves along this canyon. This stream was later discovered at its mouth by Major Powell in 1869, and I believe that it is now called Escalante.

August 31, we returned to the lower end of Potato Valley and traveled a little west of north up a small stream that we named Pine Creek. To the east of this stream lay the white cliffs that we saw from the top of the mountain two days before. While following up this stream we found some beautiful little spots, some springs and excellent grass, deer were also seen here.

In coming up this stream our company had some fun at the expense of the bugler. The advance party ran into a hornet's nest and soon retreated, when the bugler observed some quick moves he rushed up and ran into the hornets' nest but soon got out again. He doubtless thought that there was a bear or Indians or something of the kind.

September 1, we traveled in a zigzag course and found a very rough country. We ascended the main mountain which forms the rim of the basin. Here we had another good view of the country toward the Colorado River. We crossed the mountain and came to a small lake that we called Deep Lake, the waters from which runs into the East Fork of the Sevier River. Here we had a good view of the country to the west, we thought that we were about on the northern line of Iron County and that Potato Valley was about east of Parowan. We passed on about two miles from the lake and camped, here we saw signs of Indians so we put out an extra guard.

September 2, we traveled in a northeastern direction across a very high mountain, and upon getting on top of this mountain we found that it was quite level and covered with a very scrubby growth of fir and spruce. The top of the mountain was near the timber line and covered with numerous little lakes, from which we gave it the name of Thousand Lake Mountain. These lakes were formed from the snow that had melted.

We traveled to the northeast for fourteen miles and came to the northeast side of the mountain. At this point the mountain breaks off very abruptly to the north and east. From this point we could see where Green and Grand rivers come together and form the Colorado. There were several places on the north side of this mountain that had the appearance of being old volcanic craters, and some of them were lakes of water deep down from the top of the mountain and in volcanic rock. From this point we had a good view of the country to the north and east for many miles.

We here turned to the west and descended one bench of the mountain and camped by what we called the Ten Lakes. We found the evening very cold considering the time of year.

September 3, we made an early start and descended the mountain to the west. Here we had one of the most beautiful sights that I ever saw of its kind. It was a stream of water running down the side of the mountain. There was no canyon and hardly banks enough to contain the stream. This stream could be seen for many miles from the valley west, gleaming in the sunlight like a silver thread winding down the smooth surface of this steep mountain. It was one continuous cataract or cascade from the top of the mountain to the bottom. After reaching the foot of the mountain, this stream turns to the north and then east, and I suppose empties into Fremont's River.

We continued on west over a rolling country covered with a short scrubby growth of sage brush, and not finding any water, we made a dry camp.

During the day the head ones of the company passed a trail where some Indians had gone south, the trail was several days old. Captain Andrus, who was in about the center of the column at the time, was the first one to discover it, and he immediately rode to the front and chided those who were in the lead for being so careless as to pass a trail without noticing it.

The mountain ahead, which breaks off into Grass Valley, was so steep and rough that we could not go down in the night, so we camped, being fatigued and thirsty. Some of the animals gave out during the day, and they were left behind.

September 4, we were up before dawn and sent ten men back for the animals we had left, the rest of the company packed up and commenced the descent of the mountain. When we got near the water, our animals made a rush over the rocks and down the steep cliffs and over ledges. Professor Thomas's mule was among them, his saddle slipped over onto the mules pack, and he with his arms around the mule's neck was hanging on for dear life. I saw the situation, caught the mule, helped the man off, and fixed his saddle so he could go on, but he appeared as helpless as a child in that situation.

We soon got down to a small stream that emptied into Otter Creek, here we rested and waited until the party came up that had gone back for the animals that had given out. Some of the boys complained considerably of the hard walk that they had, and particularly Thomas Rowley. In the afternoon we went on down to where Otter Creek empties into the East Fork of the Sevier. Here I was on ground that I had visited in 1857.

September 5, We failed to find a crossing here and had to return for four or five miles. The bottoms for several miles around the junction of these streams are covered with a heavy growth of cane and grass four or five feet high. Striking the old trail that I had followed in 1857, we followed down the East Fork through the canyon and camped at the deserted village of Circleville.

September 6, We traveled on the Sevier twelve miles, where we met quite a company who were going down to Circleville to harvest the crops that had been abandoned because of Indian hostilities. We followed up Bear Creek for six miles, then camped.

September 7, We followed the road on down Little Creek and arrived in Parowan in the afternoon where we met a warm reception. The next morning those of Captain Andrus' company who lived south went on, while those from Paragoonah and Parowan remained, their journey being ended.

We had a hard trip, had lost one of our number, had been in the rain for days and we were not dry, and had much guard duty as we were in a hostile country. We had traveled over some of the worst roads in this broken and mountain country.

After returning home, I made a rough sketch of the country we went over and gave it to Major Powell when he visited Parowan a few years later.

Chapter Notes

¹ James Andrus, son of Milo Andrus and Abigail Jane Daley, was born in Florence Ohio. He came to Utah in 1848. In early life he went on an expedition among the Indians with a company of fur traders. Here he learned much of Indian character, customs, etc. This experience made him a most useful man in a frontier company. He resided at St. George, was in the stock business, and became very well off. He lived past the age of eighty.

² The names of Captain Andrus' company including those who went with me with their rank were as follows: James Andrus, Captain; Franklin B. Wooley, 1st Lieutenant; Willis Copland, John Woodruff Freeman, Thomas Dennet, Albert Minerly, Joseph Fish, 2nd Lieutenants; George W. Gould, Thales Haskal, George Petty, Elijah H. Maxfield, William C. McGregor, Sergeants; Charles John Thomas, Bugler; Jesse W. Crosby, Jr., James Cragan, John Houston, David Cameron, Mahonri Snow, William Meeks, William E. Cowley, Henry McFate, Archibald Sullivan, John Lay, Alfred Ford, Hiram Pollock, Thomas J. Clark, Samuel N. Adair, Fredrick D. Ruggs, Lehi Smithson, William Gardner, William Slade, Bennett Brocken, Benjamin Knell, William A. Bringham, John S. Adams, Joseph S. McCleve, John Batty, George A. Wardsworth, Lemuel Redd, Francis Prince, Robert Richardson, Eli N. Pace, James P. Thompson, Enoch Wardell, George Richards, Thomas Robb, John White, Thomas Rowley, Richard H. Benson, Edward Parry, Samuel Wood, Andrew Corry, Horatio Morrell, George Williams, Albert Beebee, George Isom, Charles Pinney, James A. Stratton, Robert H. Brown, Elijah Everett, Jr., Gardner Potter, Walter Winsor, William Riggs, Privates. There were sixty three in all.

³ The names of the eighteen who went from Iron County as near as I can remember they were: Joseph Fish, William C. McGregor, Richard H. Benson, Thomas Rowley, John White, Thomas Robb, George Richards, Enoch Wardell, George Williams, Edward Parry, Horatio Morrell, Andrew Cory, Samuel Wood, Eli N. Pace, Francis Prince, Lemuel Redd, Hiram Pollock, and Alfred Ford. George Richards went in place of John A. West who was called and hired Richards to go in his place. There were some others who hired a substitute and did not go.

A curious thing came up about the pay of this company in later years. As I understood it, they never received a cent for their services, and they furnished their own horses and outfit for the expedition; but in 1917 I was shown a copy of the roll as was on file in Washington D.C. which stated that all had received their pay, the amount to each man, and the man's names who witnessed this payment. There was some dishonest leak somewhere as I do not remember ever receiving a cent and others with whom I have conversed said they never received anything. Someone had got away with it.

⁴ The word canyon, which I have used many times, was taken from the Spanish Cañon, and has been grafted into our language and will remain as long as the mountains in the west hold their position. The term was not known in the United States before the Lewis and Clark expedition in 1846.

1866
Chapter 27
The Frontier gets a Telegraph Line

After arriving home from the above mentioned trip, I went to work to care for my crop. I had only a few acres of land, and the crop had been sadly neglected so it did not take long to harvest what I had left.

September 12, I started for St. George where all the company out with Captain Andrus was especially invited to attend the conference which was to be held there. William H. Dame, Silas S. Smith, Jesse N. Smith, and some others went along to attend the conference. I went as far as Kannarah, and the next day to Toquerville. On the 14th we went on to St. George where we were most royally treated by the brethren and sisters of that place.

On the 15th there was a fair at which there was a fine exhibition of fruit and Dixie products. Meeting was held and several of those who had been on the recent expedition were called on to make reports of the trip, I among the rest. I gave a short sketch or account of our trip up to the time we reached and joined the main company on the Paria.

In the evening I went over to the Santa Clara and attended a ball at that place, and the next day I returned to St. George and attended meetings during the day. I returned to the Santa Clara in the evening where I stayed with my cousin Lemuel Leavitt.

September 17, I went over to St. George and attended a ball there in the evening given in honor of Captain Andrus's company. It was a success, but I felt a little abashed as I was a stranger and called to take the first place on the floor since I was from Parowan. St. George is building up fast and the people seem to be prosperous. Many efforts are being made to strengthen the southern settlements.

Early in 1867 Seth M. Blair, Elijah Thomas, Jacob Hamblin and probably a few others started the industry in Dixie of producing castor oil from the castor oil beans. The press screws for this purpose were sent from the north in May. It does not appear that much came from this venture.

September 18, I went over to Toquerville and visited with my father-in-law, John Steele, and his family and the next day I went to Kannarah and stopped with my brother-in-law, James Stapley. On the 20th I went to Cedar City where a fair was being held. I remained a short time and then went home, where I found all as well as common. We were pleased to be together again.

Soon after the above-mentioned trip south, there was a rumor from the north of a fresh outbreak of the savages. At this time there were two men who had gone over to the deserted village of Panguitch to see about the grain, if it was ready to harvest, and to do some work in that line. Upon learning of this outbreak we felt concerned about these two men, so Jesse N. Smith, Dr. Calvin C. Pendleton, I, and two or three others went over to see about these two men. We started a little after dark and traveled all night, getting into Panguitch just as the sun was coming up. As we entered the fort, we saw the two men looking out of the windows, one of them on one side of the fort and the other on the opposite side. They had quarreled, and so they got as far apart as possible. It was an odd thing to see such a disagreement in an Indian country. We had ridden all night to look after their safety, and they could not even take the precaution to keep together so that they could better defend themselves.

During the fall I worked at getting the remainder of my crops in and hauling the winter's wood. We had a great deal of rain this fall which damaged some of the grain. This was rather unusual for so much rain at this season of the year.

Every move that is made has its opponents, and everything that is done has its wise acres who can tell you how it ought to have been done; this was the case with our Indian troubles. There were some who were finding fault with the policy that had been pursued with the Indian troubles and about the way that Fort Sanford had been founded and kept up. Some contracted such a habit of fault finding that it was doubtless the stepping stone that took some of them out of the church.

We still published a manuscript paper, which I have mentioned before, largely for our own diversion. The principal people responsible for it were Hyrum Coombs, Josiah Rogerson, William Davenport, and I.

November 4, 1866, my wife Mary gave birth to a son who was born on Sunday at 3:00 A.M. As the boy was our first, we named him for his father and mother both, Joseph Campbell. He was rather a sickly child, that is, he did not get along as well as did the other children, being rather puny until he was a year old. He was a most welcome visitor.

During the winter the time was spent about as usual, at dancing and theaters mostly, but I did not take part in the dancing very much.

Our Indian troubles had died down to some extent. However there was a Dane who was traveling near Circleville on his way to Parowan I believe, when the Indians killed him. He was brought to Parowan for burial. This was as near as the hostiles had come to killing anyone around our place, and we felt that the Indian troubles were past. However, it was not so, for they were renewed the following summer.

January 6, 1867, by request of Pres. William H. Dame, I joined the first prayer circle of the place. There was more than one circle organized. The president, his counselors, High Council, and some others formed the first circle, while the others were members of the different quorums who were in good standing, or prominent.

I acted as a ward teacher during the winter. Bishop Warren held the teachers' meetings in the old rock tithing office. I remember some of his talk at these meetings that I thought was out of place at such a time. He told us how he spent money at Five Points in New York, and to get it, he often forged his father's name to orders and got to be an expert at this. His father tried to give him a first class education, but he did not go on with his studies. His talk gave away the fact that he was dishonest.

During the winter there was one thing of historical interest that occurred. Utah at the start was desirous of securing telegraph communication with the outside world.

On February 14, 1852, the legislature memorialized Congress for a great national central railroad from the Missouri River to the Pacific coast. The memorial was approved on the 3rd of the following March. At the same session the legislature petitioned Congress for the establishment of a telegraph line across the continent. This line was built and it reached Salt Lake City October 17, 1861. Soon after this line was established, the Church authorities took steps to build lines to the different settlements in the territory. One was started south and this line was opened from Salt Lake City to St. George on January 15, 1867. This was something new in the history of the south and was a great help to the southern country. William Dougal came to Parowan as the operator and tended the office until Josiah Rogerson learned the art and then Rogerson took the office for sometime. Later, he went north, following the business of telegraphy all his life, or until drink and old age bared him; a sad ending for so bright a beginning.

February 5, I started on a visit to Toquerville, taking my wife and children with me for a visit to her folks. Jesse N. Smith was going south on a visit and he traveled with me. We each had some breakdowns before we reached Toquerville, but we arrived there all right on the evening of the 6th. Brother Smith went on up the river to visit some folks there while I remained at Toquerville. The weather was extremely cold and windy.

While I was here, I went over to what was called Gould's Ranch with John Steele. Here they were keeping a kind of picket guard to look out for Indians, at this time there being five men stationed here. The place is about eight miles from Toquerville. Brother Smith returned from up the river at the time appointed, and we traveled together to Parowan where we arrived on the evening of the 12th.

On the way home between Cedar City and Parowan we encountered one of the worst storms of the season, the snow came directly in our faces and was almost blinding. I suffered considerable from cold, but the wife and babies were rolled up in bedding in the wagon and were more comfortable.

On the last day of April, President Young and company came in from the north on their way to the Dixie country. They held meeting here and the next day some of the apostles remained and held meeting again. The main subject was to protect ourselves against the Indians, who were on the war path. They were far worse in the northern part of our territory than in the south, for here we had not been bothered very much with them. However, we had been on our guard most of the time, which had taxed us a great deal.

On May 9, 1867, Pres. Young and company arrived in Parowan from the south and held meeting with us. The speakers at this meeting spoke very pointedly upon the subject of the atonement of the Savior. The doctrine was sustained in strong terms and differed with Amasa M. Lyman's preaching upon this subject. The next day the president and party went on to Beaver and held meeting there at 4:00 P.M. I went over to Beaver and attended this meeting. The preaching here was similar to that at Parowan, but a little stronger. President young said he would cut Amasa M. Lyman off from the quorum of the Twelve Apostles. I returned home on the 13th. My niece Maria Thompson came over with me.

On May 15 there was a general drive, as we termed it. At these drives everyone turned out and each went where the captain of the drive directed. The whole country was scoured in all directions for many miles around, and all stock that might have been rambling off was driven in. There was perhaps a little more care taken at this drive than usual because of the Indian troubles which always increased as summer approaches. On this occasion I spent three days hunting stock in the mountains north of Parowan.

On June 2, Bro. Henry Lunt from Cedar City visited us and spoke at our meeting. He was good natured and gentlemanly in all his talk, and his preaching was always a little humorous and interesting.

The next Sunday Brother Philo T. Farnsworth and Samuel White from Beaver spoke to us. Bro. White stuttered a little but was always interesting in his talk and often told some anecdote or story. One speaker, on this occasion, was explaining how the church had grown every time the saints had been driven. He said that it was like a man's stone wall that was three feet thick and two feet high; some boys got mad at him and turned his wall over and then it was a foot higher than it was before.

The spring this year had been cold and backward. During the first week in June there were icicles eight or ten inches long on the flume and on the bushes along the bank of the creek where the water splashed out. This certainly registered cold weather for this southern country, but then it must be remembered that Parowan and Beaver were cold places and subject to late spring frosts rather more so than Utah Valley. Probably there was less snow here than in the north.

On June 14, news reached us by telegraphy that the Indians had made a raid on the stock at Beaver, had driven off quite a large herd, and had succeeded in getting away with them. This news aroused us to the necessity of caring for our stock.

Bro. Jesse N. Smith who had been to Salt Lake City preached to us on the 16th.

In the afternoon we had a meeting for the purpose of raising means to complete our rock meeting house which we were building in the center of the square, and also to get means to help support or maintain our telegraph office. The people were bearing some of the expense of the line at this place.

The subject of taking care of our stock to protect them from the Indians came up. The people seemed divided on this subject, so little was done at this meeting, but the subject was brought up again at another meeting. People who live in older settled and larger places can hardly realize the labor and work that falls to the lot of those who reside in new and exposed places. In these places some subject comes up every few days in which all are interested, and a meeting is called that all may have their say on the subject. Plans are adopted and carried out as thought best, and individuals have to leave their work at a moment's notice to do other work that is thought to be for the general good and safety of the community.

1867
Chapter 28
The Picket Guard

During the latter part of June William C. Mitchell and I worked in the canyon at making tar. We were up in what was called the first left hand canyon about nine miles from town. There had been several meetings held to see what could be done about protecting our stock from the savages. I was at work in the canyon so did not attend all of these meetings. On the 30th, a meeting was held to discuss this subject. William C. Mitchell had gone down to town and he attended this meeting. He came up to camp the next morning and reported what was done at the meeting.

The people were very much divided in their plans for caring for our stock. William H. Dane's plan was to herd the stock during the day and corral them at night in town. The plan of Silas S. and Jesse N. Smith was to let the stock run on the range but have a picket guard with them day and night, since it would be too hard on the stock to bring them into town every night. Pres. Dame and the Smith Brother each took strong ground for his plan, and the disagreement went so far that Pres. Dame took umbrage at the Smiths and dropped them from their positions in the church. Jesse N. was his counselor and Silas S. was bishop at Paragoonah. This disagreement or breach was soon fixed up and the two Smiths were restored to their places. The plan of the Smiths, however, was adopted, and arrangements were soon made to put out a picket guard.

Brother Mitchell and I talked the situation over and decided that we would sustain the Smith's plan, and the next day when we went down to town I engaged as one of the guards. The arrangement was to have four as guards, they were John Lowder, James Butler, William Lefever, and I. We furnished our own horses, and were to be paid \$4 per day, the parties who owned the stock were to pay in proportion to the stock they owned. We commenced our labors on July 3rd.

As I rode out of town I met Pres. Dame, he took particular pains to tell me that he did not approve of the plan and he shook his skirts clear from all the blood that might be shed, and particularly my blood. He would not be responsible for any of it, and seemed to fear dire consequences.

On getting out on the Paragoonah bottoms among the stock, we spent our time in riding about among the stock and keeping them in certain places where we could see them, also circling around quite often to see if we could detect any signs of Indians. We changed our camp every night after dark so that no one could tell where we were during the night.

On July 6 we found an Indian on the range who had a kind of pass from one of the brethren at Beaver which said that he was a friendly Indian, so we let him pass; but I rode up to Paragoonah and protested to Silas S. Smith who had charge of the guard, against Indians passing around where our stock was as they might be acting as spies.

On the 9th the same Indian returned from Panguitch Lake with a back load of fish and passed through Paragoonah about sunset, he went on north about two miles and camped. A young man or boy by the name of Thomas Jose followed the Indian out, and creeping up to his camp shot him while he was asleep. Jose had stated that he would kill the first Indian that he saw, because they had stolen his father's mules. (Jose was later tried and convicted of the murder, but he did not serve out his time.)

On July 18 the dead body of the Indian was found, some of the men from Beaver came over and there was much excitement over the case as it was a Beaver Indian. Things quieted down some, but it had a bad effect on our friendly Indians as there was much excitement among them over the case.

July 21, John Lowder and James Butler went up to Paragoonah to get some provisions, William Lefever and I went out to the north several miles to look around. We stopped for a short time, and just as it was getting dark so that we thought we would not be observed, we commenced to move back to the herd. Just then some horsemen passed not far off at a full run going toward the herd. We at first thought that they were loose horses, but we soon noticed they had riders. We immediately followed the Indians to the herd. When we arrived there, we found that the Indians had gathered the stock and were starting them toward the mouth of Little Creek. We at first thought that Lowder and Butler had got help and had reached the herd, so on arriving at the herd I determined to find out at once who was driving the stock and their number. I lay down on the side of my horse and riding into the front of the herd fell back

holding my horse in until I was well back among the stock. I was now near those who were whipping up the back of the herd. I soon found that they were Indians, and that there were about fifteen as near as I could tell by their talk. There were probably thirty connected with the raid, but not all were with the herd at this time. After ascertaining which way they were starting the herd, I let my horse go a little faster until I got a few rods in advance; then Lefever and I rode on to Paragoonah as fast as we could to notify the people of the raid. We thought it unwise to attack the Indians as there were so many against us two. On arriving at the town we found that Lowder and Butler had started down as we had expected, had discovered the Indians, and returned to give the alarm. What few people were there were gathering for the defense. They supposed that we were killed and had sent this word to Parowan just before we got in. We soon got seven men besides our four, making eleven in all, and started to head the Indians off at the mouth of Little Creek Canyon. As we neared the spot, we heard the Indians and the herd coming. We at once crossed the creek and charged on the herd and its drivers, going at full speed. We fired at every object that we thought to be an Indian and in the direction where we could hear anything that resembled a movement of an Indian. At the same time we gave such a terrific yell that it would put the demons of the lower regions to shame. This had the desired effect of stampeding the cattle, and we followed after, turning them back to the bottom again. The Indians, however, left the cattle and gained the foothills in the darkness. They never returned our fire. We followed the stock on a full run for about three miles, we then checked up to see if we had lost any of our men, and found to our joy that not a man was missing or hurt. We then rode about, looking for other parties of Indians that we know were in the valley.

We went back to Paragoonah where we met a party from Parowan who had come down to our assistance. They went on out to guard the mouth of Little Creek canyon while we got a little supper, it then being about midnight.

After supper, we followed on out toward the mouth of the canyon. The Indians gathered up several small herds during the night and tried to get them into the mountains but were repulsed each time. They had gathered probably seven hundred head of horses and cattle during the night, but did not succeed in getting away with them.

Several of the Indians got favorable positions at the mouth of the canyon and kept up a constant fire all the latter part of the night, but they drew off just before daylight. It was so dark that their movements could not be seen and we could not tell where they were only as they fired; we could then tell by the flash of their guns, and their fire was returned.

July 22, As soon as it was light, we commenced to look around to see if the Indians had got any stock through into the canyon, and when we found that a few head had gone through we followed up. Silas S. Smith, Ebenezer Hanks, and I were the first to cross the creek and enter the canyon, the others of the party followed close behind. Riding up a short distance, Hanks proposed that we throw out a guard ahead as we were expecting to be ambushed. We were sure that the Indians were only a short distance ahead.

We all halted and as we got close together for consultation, the Indians opened fire on us from ambush in the rocks and ledges about forty yards distant on both sides of the canyon. The ambush came sooner than we expected and the balls came among us like hail stones. As the Indians were above us we could not reach them, so we made a hasty retreat of 150 or 200 yards to the mouth of the canyon just out of range of their guns, where we found to our great joy that there was not a man missing. Two horses were hit and one or two of our saddles had bullet holes in them. Allen Miller was struck on his revolver by a ball which bruised his hip and left it black and blue. Several bullets came so close to my head that they appeared to brush my hair. There were probably twenty-five Indians, judging from the firing of the first volley.

As soon as we had reached the open ground and found that all were present, we dismounted and began the advance up the sides of the canyon. We pressed upon the savages so close that they retreated back to the next ledge of rocks. They were about fifteen of us in this party, but just at this moment reinforcements came up from Parowan. This was the second company, and a part of this company went on the other side of the canyon and commenced the advance up that side. The Indians kept falling back from one ledge to another on both sides of the canyon and soon disappeared, but it was about noon before the firing ceased.

An incident that was rather humorous happened in the advance up the side of the canyon. William Adams was trying to get to the next ledge ahead, and on passing the open ground, the balls came so fast and so near that he made a hasty retreat. While he was running and the balls were making the dust fly near him, William Newman shouted out,

"Now you will not sell whisky at a dollar pint any more, will you? Adams sold some whisky and Newman was a great lover of it and had bought much at the high price that he mentioned.

A little after midnight Edward Dalton had come down with the first reinforcements that reached us. He, with ten men, went on north to Cottonwood Canyon for the purpose of intercepting any of the Indians that might go in that direction. The party went up this canyon to Bear Valley, where they struck the trail of the few cattle that had been taken up Little Creek. He overtook the stock between the two Bear Valleys and charged on the Indians, who fled to the brush and rocks, leaving the stock and their riding horses. Dalton and party, taking the stock, returned and reached the mouth of the canyon at about 2:00 P.M. (that is, Little Creek Canyon).

We now had succeeded in getting all the stock back and many of the Indian's horses, saddles, blankets, ropes or lassoes, etc. There were about fifty of the Indians, as near as we could estimate. Some had remained at the canyon while others gathered the stock, they had got about 700 head all together but they were recovered and the Indians lost some of their own horses. These horses and saddles were later sold to help pay the expense of the herding.

I do not know that I killed any Indians or hit any, but we found blood near some bushes at which some of us had shot, showing that some of them were hit. I was told afterwards that two or three died from their wounds. During the afternoon all the stock was gathered and corralled.

July 23, four of us that were on guard went out with the stock and herded them. We stood around them all night with the bridle reins in our hands, as we were almost positive that there were Indians around, but they made no attempt to attack us. We found arrows in some of the animals, probably shot in when we made the attack on the Indians at the mouth of the canyon. We were quite fatigued since we had little rest or sleep for about three days.

August 4, I have quit the guard duty, another person has taken my place.

The Indian excitement has not abated very much. Some of our boys took some of our friendly Indians and were going to hang them, claiming that they were connected with the hostiles during the last raid. I, as well as many others, keep my horse, saddle, and arms where I can get them and be off on ten minutes' warning day or night.

Today fifteen of us went out near the mouth of Summit Creek to look after some Indians that, according to reports, had come in from the north. We found them to be five or six of our home Indians who always claimed that they were friendly, and I think that they were.

1867
Chapter 29
Pioneer Life Proceeds with Less Tension

August 18, since quitting the herd or picket duty I have worked at getting up some hay, but our work moves very slowly as we are still on the alert and guarding against being surprised by the Indians.

Jesse N. Smith and some others returned from the north a few days ago with goods for our Cooperative store, which had just been organized and started. He reported that Pres. Young was very pleased at our success in repelling the Indians without loss at the late raid made upon us.

In starting the store there were several people turned in stock and Jesse N. Smith had taken them to Salt Lake City and sold them, buying goods from the proceeds. In a few days there was a rumor that he had sold them for more than he reported he got for them. This started quite a scandal through the place, and Bro. Smith demanded that the case be investigated. A committee of three was appointed to examine the accounts. I was one of this committee. We went over the accounts and found that he had sold the stock in separate lots, getting a little more for one lot than he did for another. The cows that were turned in were all called at the same price and he settled with the owners on the basis of these figures, but as they were sold in separate lots the price he got varied some. He had accounted for every cent. Peter Wimmer, who went along to help drive the stock was the one who started the scandal. He said he got more for the stock than he reported. Jesse N. got a little more for a few than he did for some others, but as all the cows were turned in at the same figure he settled with the owners on that figure, that is, each one got the same for his cow. Apostle Erastus Snow was present at the investigation and said: "Peter Wimmer, you told the truth, but it amounted to a lie and you intended it for a lie." The scandal was started to injure Bro. Smith, but it was proved that every cent was accounted for.

On August 22, there was a grand jury impaneled to look into the case of Thomas Jose charged with killing an Indian (the one that has been referred to as being killed on July 8). I was one of the jury. An indictment was found but with considerable difficulty as some thought it of little consequence to kill an Indian, whether friendly or not.

Apostle Erastus Snow held meeting in the evening and also the next day. His preaching was mainly in relation to the Indians, how we as a general thing condemn all the Indians for the hostile acts of a few. This is not right nor just and the Jose case called for some steps to be taken, or the Indians whether friendly or not would be shot down like wolves on the prairie.

Bro. Snow went on north on the 24th and the case of Thomas Jose was brought up on Saturday, but was not finished until Wednesday. The case was tried before Jesse N. Smith who was Probate Judge of the county. Jose was found guilty of murder in the second degree and sentenced to ten years imprisonment in the penitentiary, he however was pardoned before his term expired.

On September 1, I went to Paragoonah in company with William H. Dame and Jesse N. Smith, where we expected to hold meeting, but the notice had not been delivered and most of the people were very busy so the meeting was postponed.

Things were moving on about as usual, the main trouble was in keeping up our picket guard, there were many who were finding fault because of the expense, but we still kept up the guard.

There were several of the brethren who went to the conference at Salt Lake City this fall, and at a meeting on the 20th they gave us a report of the instructions given. William S. Warren, our former bishop who had been on a mission to England made a report of his labors in Europe and spoke of the financial condition of the church in Europe. He said there was an effort being made to emigrate a large number of saints next year.

On the 26th of October we had a muster or drill of the militia. Jesse N. Smith and I had charge of it as Colonel Dame was not present. Most of the men were very well armed with breech loading rifles. This class of fire arms had not been very plentiful in this part of Utah until very recently.

I have been spending a little time in putting on an addition to my house and fitting up the main room for a school room.

William Roberts, the son of a widow woman, had been rather wild and reckless and had been cut off from the church. On the 27th he made a request to be re-baptized, which was opposed by some as they had no faith in his doing better. After some arguments pro and con, he got the consent of the meeting to come back into the church. It did him little good, however, for he was soon worse than ever and was again cut off.

The fall months this year were better than usual, and the people were extremely busy getting out lumber and poles. I had fitted up my house for a school room and commenced teaching in it on October 28. I did not feel qualified for a school teacher, but there was not a teacher in the place who felt like teaching so I took hold of the work. We had torn down our old log meeting house and had not completed the two log school houses we were building out of it, so I fixed up my place. I had a very good attendance and got along fairly well, but with my other duties I was very busy.

At different periods with various conditions arising, the preaching from the stand was varied according to the needs of the people, as it was thought. At about this time there was much said about trading and patronizing our enemies or those who were opposing the church and the leaders of it. We had a few in our community who were doing all they could against the church. James McGuffie was one of the worst, he came here poor but commenced trading and keeping a little store. He increased it until he became fairly well off. He became proud over his success, apostatized, and was doing all he could against Pres. Dame and the church. He tried to saddle every error and crime, as well as every load he could, upon the president, and never lost an opportunity for this underhanded dealing. On one occasion Polly Newman, a widow's daughter, went to him to get a dress pattern on credit, saying that she would pay for it in a few days. He told her to go to the bishop, (meaning Bro. Dame, who was called Bishop often as he was Bishop's agent) he is the father of the people and ought to provide for his children. McGuffie soon left the place and went north.

It was not often that the place was visited by a United States officer, but about the first of the month Judge McCurdy passed through here. He was very sociable and pleasant, and did not show any of that bitter feeling that most of the U. S. officials did. This may have been for effect.

We still had something to keep us in mind that there were hostile Indians in the country, or we were led to think so sometimes. On December 13, one of the brethren came in and reported that while he was after wood, six Indians chased him and he only escaped by abandoning his team and wagon.

At about 11:00 P.M. eleven of us started out and rode to the Buck Horn Springs, a distance of fifteen miles where we remained until day light, then went west to the Cane Springs. We took this circuitous route, thinking that the Indians would retreat through this way to the mountains on the east. We next went along on the west side of the lake to where the Indians were reported to have been seen, but we did not find any signs of them so we were convinced that this was a false alarm. We reached home on the night of the 14th.

I might say here that I always left my school and went out when there was an Indian excitement, as I felt that to defend ourselves and stock was my first duty.

Our new meeting house was not completed for Christmas so we did not have any dancing or celebration of the day. We got it completed on January 1, 1868, so we had meetings and dances or something of the kind about every night for sometime.

In the forepart of the month, Apostle Erastus Snow and Jacob Gates passed through on their way to the legislature. They held meeting here and spoke on the subject of living temperate lives that we might preserve our health.

About this time we had a meeting and made an organization for starting a library. We had a few books and a few more were put in by those present. George Holyoke, Sen., said that we should get \$500 worth of the Jewish Bibles and \$500 worth of the life of Napoleon and then we would have a library worth something. Edward Dalton was elected president and I was elected librarian. We gathered a few books but the organization went to pieces before much was accomplished, still it did some good as it gave a start in getting books.

Pioneer day was celebrated on January 13, 1868, there were several from Cedar City and Paragonah. There were songs and speeches mingled with the dancing, all of which passed off well. This celebrating when the Pioneers reached this place was kept up quite regularly.

February 6, Brother Jesse N. Smith has recently given us a couple of lectures upon the life of Joseph Smith which evidently he had prepared or studied with great care as he covered a wide range and handled the subject in a masterly manner.

About this time a meeting was held for the purpose of raising means to assist in emigrating the poor saints from Europe. There was \$700 raised, most of it was in stock which would have to be taken to Salt Lake City and there sold for cash. This move for raising means to assist the saints in emigrating from Europe was a general one throughout the territory, and the people of Parowan were not behind in all these moves, although they had no money and their stock had to be driven to Salt Lake City to be sold for cash. There were no stock buyers who came this far south to buy stock for money. A few peddlers or merchants came down occasionally and bought stock for goods at a high price. I remember one coming and opening his goods at Bro. Hanks' place. Bro. A. S. Hadden brought up a cow to sell for goods. After settling on the price, which I think was about \$25 or \$30, he went in to draw the amount up. The first thing he called for was some tobacco. Taking a chew, he commenced to select his goods. He next got a pound of tea and after selecting a few articles, he said he must get the wife a dress pattern. He then asked how much more there was coming and when told he said he would take the balance in tobacco. It did not take long to draw up \$25 or \$30 when tobacco was a dollar a plug, tea five dollars a pound, and prints ninety cents a yard.

About this time the subject of a woolen mill being established in Parowan was widely agitated. This subject had been before the people for some time, and some had become quite enthusiastic on the subject and wanted to commence the work at once. The difficulty in getting the cash prevented and showed that we are often given to overestimate our ability in doing things that we wish to accomplish. Although there were so many in favor of this move, it never materialized.

Our meetings were fairly well attended and things moved on about as usual. We were now having our theaters and dances in the new meeting house. The basement was used for the dances and theaters while the upper part for meetings. I helped a great deal in building this house. I helped to haul the rock and hauled some of the long timbers that went across the top, which were about forty feet long. I remember getting one alone. I had quite a hard time loading it.

1868
Chapter 30
School Teaching, Store Keeping, and Other Activities

The wolves in all new countries are very troublesome and here they were very bad. They were very numerous and bold, and in some instances they would come up to where persons were camping out and get hold of their shoes or hat and take them off. They were constantly raiding the poultry yards and often killed calves and colts that were on the range. For the purpose of getting rid of them, the men during the fall and winter months got up what they called a wolf hunt. They chose up sides and the losing party was to give a dance. This came off on the 9th of March.

At this party some who belonged to the company of wolf hunters did not attend and gave their tickets to others not belonging and who were objectionable to those in the party. These persons were not allowed to dance. William Roberts, backed up by Edgar L. Clark was the main one in claiming the right to dance on these tickets transferred by others. Things were getting terribly mixed up and everyone was taking sides when Pres. Dame got the floor and made a speech. He got very excited and acted like a crazy man. He yelled and shouted during his speech until he could have been heard all over town. His friends were ashamed of this break and that he should lose his temper so, and his enemies used this against him to some advantage. The trouble and confusion that this created, broke up the party, and we went home feeling greatly humiliated over the affair.

A few days after this party there was a piece written and posted up headed "A Tempest in a Tea Pot." This ridiculed and made fun of the whole affair and reflected strongly against Pres. Dame. The president at first accused Silas S. Smith of being the author of the article but Silas denied it. I suppose that the president suspected Silas sooner than anyone else as they had a little underground feeling ever since the picket guard affair.

On March 12, Apostle Erastus Snow and Joseph W. Young held a meeting and preached to us. The tenor of their remarks was against hunting gold and trading with our enemies. They stated that those who were doing the most against us were those who had made their money out of this people.

On Sunday, the 15th, I assisted Bro. Francis T. Whitney in the Sunday School. There were about 200 enrolled in the school and it seemed to be improving as the children were taking more of an interest in the work than they had in the past. The weather was cold and very disagreeable for the time of year.

On the 22nd I baptized nine or ten children, my daughter Mary Josephine was one of the number. She was confirmed by Bro. Silas S. Smith.

The Ward Teachers made their report today, which was fairly good. It showed that there was some improvement among the saints, that they were trying to lead better lives and tend to their religious duties.

The 27th was the closing day of my school. I had gotten along with it fairly well, but had made little out of it. I did not charge very much, four dollars a quarter and I furnished my own house, wood, etc. The wood was quite an item for it was rather a cold winter, especially the spring part, and I took anything that I could get, which was usually wood. Some neglected to pay so at the end of the term I had little coming that would be of much help in supporting the family; but I felt that I had done some good among the children and that was ample compensation to a person who was working for the welfare of others as well as himself and was not selfish, as I tried not to be.

Something like a year and a half before this period in my story, my brother Franklin R. had married a young lady by the name of Rebecca Wimmer, and about a year after a son was born. This boy died on April 14, 1868. There was considerable sickness among the children at this period. It was a sad blow in our family for Frank to lose his first boy, and we all mourned with him. We never fancied that his choice of a wife was a very good one as she did not appear to be the right kind for him.

On the 18th of April, Pres. Dame returned from Salt Lake City where he had been to attend the conference, and the next day he spoke at our meeting and gave some of the conference news. He spoke of the plan to get teams to go across the plains to bring in the saints that were coming in from Europe. A few of those who had gone to California had returned and seemed poorer than when they went away.

On May 23rd there was a review and inspection of the militia by General Erastus Snow and By. Pace. The next day, Sunday, Apostle George A. Smith, Erastus Snow, Joseph F. Smith, and By. Pace spoke to us, and after meeting the party drove on to Paragoonah.

We have had trouble getting our Cooperative store started because money was so scarce, we having to drive our stock to Salt Lake City and there dispose of it. It had now been nearly a year since it was first started and during this time Pres. Dame had kept it in his house. It was rather a small affair at first. I remember among the first arrival of goods there were four pieces of prints, and there was such a rush to get dress patterns that some of the women would get hold of a piece and hold to it until the clerk could wait on them. This rush, of course, would only last for a short time, for in a few hours the stock would be diminished.

On May 27 I took the store to tend. I fitted up the room that I had been using for a school room and the goods were moved into it. The beginning was small and was the first attempt in this direction that had been made in the place, but it grew steadily and soon was doing quite a good business. There was not enough trade at first to occupy all my time, so I had some time to work in the garden and around the home.

About this time there was again trouble from the redskins. A meeting was called on June 14 to consider what we were to do with our stock. The final decision at this meeting was to put out four men as a picket guard the same as we had the year before, and to levy a tax upon the stock to pay the expenses. Silas S. Smith was elected to take charge of this business of guarding our stock.

It had been the custom to celebrate the 24th of July every year here, but this year it was arranged to have a grand celebration at Pine Valley for all the southern settlements. Apostle Erastus Snow was to meet with them there. Brother Durham, who had brought our choir up to equal any of its size in the territory, took them down there. Several others went also, so our celebration was not much at home. I went down to Paragoonah in the afternoon to join with the people there in their amusements.

On July 27, I went down to Cedar City to meet the brethren who had gone to Pine Valley as we were to have some political points to fix up in regard to our county. In the evening we had a meeting for the purpose of appointing a committee to nominate candidates to be voted for at our coming election. I was chosen as one of the committee and we soon got up a ticket and presented it to the meeting, which approved and accepted it by the vote of the assembly. I returned home the next day. The election came off on August 3rd and passed off quietly. I was elected Justice of the Peace for the Parowan precinct. My commission was dated September 23, 1868, and was signed by Charles Durkee, governor of Utah.

Along in the forepart of September the brethren who had gone east for the saints came in, and their report of the railroad towns that they visited was not very flattering. One may expect to meet with a rough element in a railroad town during the time of its construction. These teams had been sent from this place to go east and bring in the saints who were coming in from Europe. For several years the Church sent teams to the Missouri River for this purpose. Many who were bringing in merchandise accompanied these trains, as it made it safer traveling in large companies because of the Indians that were raiding along this line of travel.

About the first of September I was appointed County and Probate Clerk. Jesse N. Smith had gone to Denmark on his second mission and Silas S. Smith was now the Probate Judge. This addition to my other labors with tending the store gave me plenty to do and I was kept very busy most of the time.

The grasshoppers have deposited their eggs in this valley in great numbers and we are fearful that the coming year will be a failure in crops on account of these pests that destroy everything in their path in the shape of vegetation.

On October 28, my wife gave birth to a son at 20 minutes past 7:00 A.M. We named him John Lazelle. He was a healthy child and larger than the others.

On the 29th, we had a drill and inspection of arms of the militia. General Erastus Snow was present, he gave some encouraging remarks and wished all to take a lively interest in all military matters.

Our Cooperative company that had been started was reorganized in November, 1868, and the business was started on a larger scale. In this change Richard Benson was placed as salesman in the store. I sold my place to the company and gave them possession of the room where the goods were, but I retained possession of the other part of the house until I could build. Having quit the store, I engaged to teach school at Paragoonah and commenced the term on November 30. I arranged to stay with John Topham but the arrangements were of the old style, to board around among the people according to the number of pupils that they had in school.

On the 16th of December we were treated to one of those things which are so common in the east but hardly ever get out this far west. That was a slight of hand performance by a man who called himself Professor Bosco. The next night he gave the people of Parowan a chance to witness his performances which had a few features that were very good in his line.

During the winter the holidays were about as usual. I spent some of my evenings at Paragoonah with my evening school and occasionally in writing letters. My old friend Jesse N. Smith had gone to Denmark on his second mission and I wrote to him occasionally. He told me later that he had published several of my letters in the Scandinavian paper that he edited.

I copied parts for the players in our theatrical troop. On January 26, 1869, we presented the play of "Pizarro" in Parowan, I took the part of Alonzo. This was quite hard on me to travel back and forth so much and sometimes the roads were very bad, but when they were good I did not mind the walk.

During the months of January and February there were several dances at Parowan and also at Paragoonah. I attended a few in both places and could readily see the difference in these places. As the latter place was much smaller there was not as good order maintained as at Parowan, and the same thing might be said of the children in school. They were more indifferent in their studies, especially the larger boys who had been on the range so much after their stock that they could not be tamed down all at once, particularly where they only went to school for a short time. Even then, they were often absent to go on a trip on the range. Some of the students did fairly well for the time they attended, the school closed March 3.

1868-1869
Chapter 31
Church and Military Activities

On November 6, 1868, Bro. Joseph W. Young held meeting with us, and the main items dwelt upon were in relation to our supporting our enemies by our trade.

After meeting a few of the brethren were called and met at Pres. Dame's house, where Bro. Young proceeded to organize a class of the school of the Prophets. This was done by order of Apostle Erastus Snow who had the presidency of the southern settlements in charge. William H. Dame was appointed president of the Parowan class of the school, Silas S. Smith was appointed vice president, and I was made secretary. There were about twenty-five members to commence with, but this number was soon increased considerably. These classes are being organized in all parts of the territory. This class held its meetings once a week, and these meetings were kept up during the winter and were very well attended. Several who lived at Summit and Paragoonah came in to attend these meetings. Our fast meetings were held on the first Thursday of each month, and were fairly well attended.

On March 2, 1869, County Court was held, I attended and have been acting as clerk since Jesse N. Smith went on his mission, Silas S. Smith was the judge. Probate Court was held on the 8th with the same officials taking charge. There is little business transacted at these courts.

On March 11, Samuel H. Rogers, I, and some others went over to Beaver to meet Apostle George A. Smith and party who were coming in from the north to visit the southern settlements. The party consisted of Apostle George A. Smith, Erastus Snow, Joseph F. Smith, and some others. They held meeting at Beaver in the evening, and on the 12th meeting was held at 9:00 A.M. at which a class of the school of the Prophets was organized. Meetings were also held at 10:00 A.M., 2:00 P.M., and 7:00 P.M. At the latter a stake organization was effected. John R. Murdock was set apart as president over the stake which comprised Beaver, Greenville, Adamsville, and Minersville. He was still to act as a kind of Presiding Bishop or Bishop's agent for the stake. There were four bishops set apart to act in the four wards, and twelve high counselors were set apart as the High Council of the stake.

On the next day, the 13th, the party went on to Parowan. Those of us who had come over to meet the party also went along. The School of the Prophets met in the evening at Parowan where the visiting brethren gave some valuable instructions.

On the 14th, Sunday School was held at 9:00 A.M. I am now the superintendent, having succeeded Bro. Francis T. Whitney in this labor. Apostle George A. Smith and some others were present and addressed the school. At, 10:00 A.M. William and Erastus Snow were the speakers.

At 2:00 P.M. there was a reorganization of the place, it being divided into two wards, and Samuel H. Rogers was set apart as bishop of the east ward, Harmon D. Bayles as bishop of the west ward, Silas S. Smith was set apart as bishop of Paragoonah (He had acted in that capacity before). William H. Dame was sustained a presiding bishop or bishop's agent for the stake (He was president of the stake). A high council was organized consisting of the following persons: Daniel P. Clark, Edward Dalton, William Holyoak, Joseph Fish, Niels Jensen, Jehiel McConnell, Francis Webster, Thomas Durham, Andrew J. Mortensen, William Dalley, William C. Mitchell, and Stephen S. Barton. The majority of these selected were set apart during the meeting. I was ordained a High Priest at this time and set apart as one of the High Council by Joseph F. Smith. There was a meeting in the evening at which Thomas Taylor and A. Neff were the speakers. George A. Smith was on a tour through the southern settlements straightening up the different wards and reorganizing where it was found necessary. The party continued their journey on south.

April 25, meeting was held at the usual hour at which some preparations were made to receive President Young and party who were expected in today. A company of cavalry and the brass band went out to Buckhorne Springs to meet the president. President Daniel H. Wells and some others came in at 1:00 P.M. and meeting was held at 2:00 P.M. Pres. Wells and some others were the speakers. President Young and the rest of the company came in at 6:00 P.M. I took the Sunday School out to the east side of town to meet the President. Meeting was held in the evening at which President Young and some others spoke. The company went on south the next morning.

On the 1st of May the Relief Society gave a party as it was the anniversary of the organization of the Society in this place.

On the 3rd, the Sunday School gave an exhibition, the children recited pieces, etc. I got it up to help the school and to create more of an interest in that line. I had most of the work to do and it was quite a tax on me, but I had the satisfaction of seeing it go off very well. There are about 200 in the school.

Having sold my house to the Cooperative company, I started as soon as I could to build, and succeeded in raising the frame of the house on the 4th. The building was 26 by 36 and part of it a little more than one story high. It was situated two blocks east of the store.

Pres. Young and party came in from the south on the 5th, held a short meeting, and went on to Beaver. The subject of cooperating in all our business seems to be the main subject that is treated on at the present time in our meetings.

On May 17, I again took the store to tend, did all the selling, kept the accounts, etc. The sales amounted to about \$75 per day, and the business seemed to be on the increase. This, with the Sunday school and other things that I had to look after, kept me quite busy.

About this time I began to pay some attention to a young lady by the name of Eliza Jane Lewis, daughter of David and Elizabeth Lewis, and on July 17 I started for Salt Lake City to have her sealed to me. My wife Mary went along with us. I also took up a young man by the name of Thomas Yardley. The first day we went to Beaver, the next to Dog Valley.

On the 21st we reached Salt Creek where we stayed all night with Ed. Williams. Ned, as we called him, was a tailor and lived in Parowan for a while. He took a part in our theaters, and being a tailor he was of great help in fixing up our costumes.

On the 22nd, we reached Springville where Yardley stopped as that was where he was going. The next day we drove to Lehi here we stayed with William Snow, his wife was a cousin of mine. On the 24th we stopped with Preston Lewis on Big Cottonwood, Preston was a brother of Eliza's, being a son of David Lewis but not the same mother as Eliza had.

On the 25th, we went into Salt Lake City and attended meeting in the afternoon. Apostle George A. Smith spoke upon the history of the church, there were several prominent visitors present, some of them were members of congress.

On the 26th I went to the endowment house and had Eliza sealed to me. My wife Mary gave her consent for me to take another wife, but she was quite blue about it and did not like the move very much. It was hard for her to get over it, but this is natural and could hardly be otherwise. In the afternoon I did a little trading, buying a few goods for the store.

On the 27th we started on the return journey home where we arrived on the 6th of August. As we were loaded, our journey was rather slow.

I at once took up my labors in the store, where I was occupied all the time except Sundays and then I had the Sunday School on my hands which made that day with the meetings as busy as any day of the week.

During the latter part of September there was a general muster or drill of all in the Iron Military District. This was held at Harmony, about forty miles south of Parowan. This drill lasted for three days, I being the adjutant of the first regiment of infantry I attended the drill as such. Many from Parowan took their wives along. I took my wife Mary. Many women and members who were not in the service were present, having come to witness the drill and sham battle which was to wind up the maneuvers. There were three regiments present, two of Infantry and one of cavalry. After the drill there was a sham battle, the Cavalry against the Infantry. Colonel John Pearce had command of the cavalry and A. P. Hardy of the Infantry. Colonel William H. Dame should have had command of the Infantry but he was sick, and it was thought that a large part of it was a timid and nervous fear to enter into such a conflict. General Erastus Snow had command of all the forces. A man by the name of George A. Hicks was court martialled for

refusing to take part in the battle. He was in Col. Dame's regiment. He claimed that he had talked so bitterly against John D. Lee that he was afraid that some of Lee's friends would take advantage of the conditions in the conflict and shoot him. The court, after hearing the case, found him guilty of cowardice. There were twenty-one general orders issued during the three day's encampment. We had three bands, two from Parowan and one from the Dixie country. The martial band under Mr. Clark seemed to take the lead. Bro. Adams from St. George went through the camps in singing the favorite song, "If you cannot on the ocean." Everything went off very well except a little feeling of rivalry between the boys from Beaver and some of those from Dixie which led to a bitter feeling between some of the boys of the two places.

On September 30, there was a mass meeting held in Parowan for the purpose of petitioning congress to admit Utah into the Union as the State of Deseret. Calvin C. Pendleton was chairman of the meeting and I was secretary. A short petition was drawn up and signed by nearly all present. Congress seemed so indifferent about the admission of Utah that these mass meetings were being held all over the territory to see if there was any possible way to break down the prejudice that existed against Utah and her people, but this seemed a hopeless task under the conditions that then existed.

The winter of 1869-70 passed off about as the previous ones had gone. The people were mostly farmers so during the winter there was little that they could do, and there was a certain class who did not want to do much in the winter and these congregated in the stores, harness shops, shoe shops, and such places on cold winter days and spent their time discussing certain subjects and topics that came up and telling stories. John H. Henderson was a prominent figure in these gatherings, while Edward Ward was a prominent one in all the games when there were outdoor sports, such as running, jumping, wrestling, as well as pitching horse shoes when the weather would permit. There was occasionally a shooting match. I was busy in the store and at other things like Sunday School, so I took only a small part in the sports. I always went out to a shooting match for there were few who could surpass me in this line. Jesse Lowder, however, was acknowledged to be about the best in the place. He was an old Virginian, and been in the war of 1812.

1869
Chapter 32
The Navajos Get All My Stock

Now that the Indian troubles in Utah had died down to some extent a new danger arose, this was from the Navajos on the east side of the Colorado River. Early in the fall of 1869 these Indians commenced their depredations in the southern settlements and drove off quite a number of animals from Kannarah and vicinity. The brethren from Kannarah followed the raiders and succeeded in getting back part of the stock. Part of the Indians came up by Cedar City and gathered some stock, among them some freight teams, and crossed the mountain to the east opposite Johnson's Fort. A party from Parowan went over to the Sevier by the Fish Lake route and over took one party of the Indians and recovered about thirty head of horses. Upon the return of this party a meeting was held to consider what we should do to protect our stock from these raiders. It was thought advisable to look after our stock as best we could and watch the passes where stock could be driven out of the valley.

During the latter part of December 1869 the Navajos came in and passing our line of settlements crossed into the west mountains where apparently they stayed a day or two gathering stock to the number probably of six hundred head, horses and cattle. It was soon discovered that there were Indians to the west of us, and thinking they had gone east with the stock, a company was sent out on January 1st to go east and head them off. Going as far as Bear Valley, they came onto an Indian on the trail and killed him. This Indian apparently was one who had left the main body. He had probably disagreed with the others or else had gone ahead to look for the route and see that the way was clear. Not finding any signs of other Indians the party returned.

Another party had gone west and found one Indian whom they captured. He however proved to be a Mexican, who was a captive among the Navajos and I suppose took this opportunity to making his escape from his captors.

On the return of the party that went out to Bear Valley, a meeting was held and it was decided to send out a party to try to intercept the Indians, for it was known that they had gathered stock and would doubtless go east with them.

On January 3, a company of about twenty-five fitted up and started out to try and get ahead of the Indians before they reached the Paria. I fitted up and went with this company, not having a horse I got one from Christen Rasmussen. We started late in the day and got up over the Hogs Back near the head of our canyon about dark. We crossed over the big mountain to Fish Lake in the night, some places where it was the steepest we had much difficulty in getting up as the snow was about a foot deep. I was well acquainted with the trail so I took the lead much of the way.

After getting over the highest part of the mountain, we stopped and rested about an hour and ate a midnight supper in the snow. We then went on, passed Fish Lake about 2:00 A.M. where we found the snow up to our horse's bellies. We made another stop at about 4:00 A.M. and shortly after daylight we resumed our march and soon reached the Sevier River, which we followed up a short distance, then turned to the east and directed our course toward Upper Kanab. We found the snow quite deep, so we took turns in going ahead and breaking the road, as a horse could not stand it long at a time going in the lead. We arrived at Upper Kanab about 11:00 P.M.

Our march had been terribly hard and trying. Being in the snow so long had its effect, some had their feet, ears, and cheeks frosted, and some of our best and strongest men actually fell from their horses from exhaustion. They had to be helped on and cared for, so in this condition we camped until morning.

On January 5, we arose early and started on our march to the southeast, but after going a few miles we became satisfied that the Indians had not gone out in this direction, so after a short consultation we decided to retrace our footsteps to the river and follow that down to the north and see if the Indians had passed in that direction. We followed down the river until about midnight, then we stopped until daylight so we could examine the country and canyons to see if anything had passed up in this direction. This point was about seven miles above Panguitch.

The next morning, the 6th, we started out looking for signs. We had an Indian along with us that we called Panguitch John. At this point he went ahead to look for trails. We continued our march to the north, keeping near the mountains and leaving Panguitch to our left.

About the middle of the afternoon we struck the Indian trail where they had gone out with the stock. Edward Dalton, who had charge of our company, and one or two others rode up to the mouth of the canyon to ascertain as near as possible how many had passed and how old the trail was, while the company rode down to the river and camped until we decided what to do.

There were several of the party who were sick and quite exhausted because of the extreme cold and the hard marching day and night.

Before we reached the river some of the boys reported that there were Indians off to the southwest, so a portion of the company started in pursuit, but it soon turned out to be a false alarm. This move had divided our company, and it was about 9:00 p.m. before we all got together again.

Thinking that it would be difficult to strike the right canyon in the night, we decided to wait until daylight, and as some of the company were sick, we camped for the rest of the night.

January 7, we got up at about 3:00 A.M. and started out on the Indians' trail. We first sent six of our number home who were sick, some of them quite serious, and I hardly knew whether some would live through the night.

About sunrise there came up such a dense fog that we could hardly see our way, it was extremely cold and the men and horses ere covered with frost and looked as white as snow. We followed the trail over the range of mountains into the valley of the east Fork of the Sevier. The road was terribly rough and in places almost impossible.

We arrived at the valley of the east Fork a little before sunset where we stopped a short time to rest. We had found some signs all along and thought that the Indians could not have been very far ahead of us. Judging from the trail we thought there must have been 500 or 600 horses and cattle, mostly horses.

While here eating the last crumbs of our provisions, we were overtaken by a small party of our boys from Parowan who had struck the trail in the valley and were following it. We could see the valley ahead was covered deep with snow and we were now without a mouthful of anything to eat. This had a discouraging effect, and our Captain, Edward Dalton, said he did not think it wisdom to follow the trail any further, and said he should go back. He said he wished those who were willing to go on and follow the trail of the Indians any further to step out. I thought it too bad to give it up after the hardships that we had already endured and if we could reach the herd before we gave out we might get an animal to subsist on, so I and two or three others stepped out, but the majority were in favor of returning home and started out, so we followed, feeling rather disappointed in not being able to go on. It probably was as well, for it was a cold trip and in our exhausted condition it is probably that some of us would have perished.

The next night we got back to the river where we had camped the evening that we struck the trail. Here we met a small party of men from Beaver who were out on the watch for the raiders.

January 9, We started for home quite early and arrived at Paragoonah about dark. While here fires were seen on the west side of the valley, so we thought it possible that there might be more Indians in the west mountains and that those might be their signal fires. We now divided up our company and went north to guard the passes that led to the east. It was very cold and we suffered much as we did not dare to make a fire for fear we would be discovered. We spent a most miserable night standing around with the bridle reins in our hands.

At daylight we looked over the country and did not see any signs of Indians, we then returned home. I had been on the march for six days and much of the time during most of the night. The last thirty-six hours I had not unsaddled my horse as I was on the move all the time.

After this raid our stock was gathered up, what we had left, and herded, and a guard was kept up at nights and things were watched very closely. This was about the last trouble we had with the Indians stealing our stock. Many of the brethren had lost quite heavily, some had lost all their horses and many had lost some of their cattle. I was very unfortunate for I lost everything I had, three horses and a cow. I now had to commence anew, get a team and cow if I could. It meant beginning again at the bottom of the ladder and struggling again as I had done when first married.

On January 15 there was a meeting of the High Council, these meetings were not held very often, but we generally had a little business to attend to when we met. I always attended these meetings, and continued my labors in the store which occupied most of my time.

On March 7, the County Court convened. I am still clerk of this court and attended it, but there was very little business done at this court.

President Young and company came in on this day on their way to the south. Meeting was held in the evening. I understood that the president had some idea of going across the Colorado River to look for places where the saints could settle, as land and water in Utah would soon be very scarce and hard to obtain, and then there was a large immigration coming in each year.

On March 14, 1870 Probate Court was held. Silas S. Smith was the judge and I acted as clerk, but little business was attended to. There were one or two divorces taken away from these courts later on.

On the 23rd, Sarah Delcena Barton died. She was an intimate friend of mine and Mary's, she had attended my school, had learned telegraphy, and became an operator on the line. Her funeral took place the next day.

My sister Betsey Jane, who had married John A. West, had not lived very agreeably with her husband for some time. He had married for a second wife Mary Jane Robinson. She was a good girl, but John put her at the head of the family in many things. His neglecting his first wife in a measure and placing his second in charge of many of the family affairs was more than my sister was willing to put up with. She came home to her father, and on April 4 she got a divorce from her husband. John's own folks blamed him more for the separation than they did her. She had four children, two boys and two girls; she never married again.

We had occupied the basement of our rock meeting house for some time, but the upper part had not been finished. We were working on it as much as possible considering our Indian troubles. On April 7, we had it done so we could hold meeting in it, and President Young arrived from the south on this date. He held meeting with us and went on north the next day. He had not been across the Colorado as he had expected to do when he was on his way south.

On the 13th we had a very heavy fall of snow, it fell to the depth of about fourteen inches, which is very unusual for this late in the spring.

On May 1, we had a very interesting talk at our meeting from Bishop Covington of Washington in Dixie. He had been on a mission to the Southern States and the picture he drew of the conditions there after the war was very dark, gloomy one.

Bro. Zachariah B. Decker who had been on a mission east gave a short sketch of his labors while gone.

On May 21, I started in company with Silas S. Smith and eleven others to go over to Panguitch Lake (We generally called it Fish Lake). We left Parowan in the afternoon and went to the head of the canyon where we camped, it snowed some during the night. Starting on the next morning we were at the top of the mountain by 11 A.M. Here we stopped, as people generally do when crossing one of these high mountains, to take a view of the country. From the top of this range one can see plainly the valley both on the east and the west, also the lake nestling among the pines at a distance of about seven miles. There are few places in the west where the view is more beautiful and attractive than this.

We went on down to the lake where we met Bro. Jacob Hamblin who had about forty Indians with him. Hamblin and these Indians were guarding the passes leading to the Colorado River, and he had been laboring to bring about peace with the Navajos and to get them to stop their raiding our ranges and driving off our stock. We had gone over to meet him and consult upon the best methods of protecting our stock and settlements, and upon our Indian policy.

After a consultation with him and catching a few fish, we started back on the 23rd and crossed over the mountain. Bro. Hamblin came with us this far where we camped, he staying with us. He is trying to settle our Indian troubles in a peaceable way and it appears that his labors are being crowned with success. There was very little trouble with the Navajos after this.

On the morning of the 24th we started on home and Bro. Hamblin returned back to the lake, from where he and his Indian scouts went east to watch the country and passes to see that no hostiles passed in toward our settlements.

My sister Jane often wrote short pieces of poetry or rhymes. At about this time when we were bothered with the grasshoppers she wrote the following:

To My Brother

When will the hoppers Bid us farewell
And leave for other lands That we again
In peace may dwell And cultivate the land?

When will the Indians Break their bands
And bury their bended bow The scalping knife
No more to raise To Lay our kindred Low?

When will our banner, That dear old flag,
The ensign of our land, Be free again
From blood and stain A star to other lands?

Jane

1870-1871
Chapter 33
Death of my Father

The prospects for a harvest this year look rather poor. The grasshoppers are hatching out in great numbers and already are doing much damage to the wheat. Their commencing so early in the season makes it look discouraging.

On the first day of June we had the most severe snow storm that we have had for some time. It began a day or two before, the snow falling in the mountains to the depth of about a foot, and it froze in town so hard that there were icicles a foot long on the brush along the creek.

On June 12, I attended to the ordinance of baptism, baptizing about twelve persons, mostly young.

Amasa M. Lyman held meeting in this place in the afternoon, there were quite a number went out to hear him. He had been cut off the church, but he still continues to preach a kind of infidel or universal doctrine that would save all mankind. There are several in the place who are following him, they have pinned their faith to his sleeve so long that they cannot break away.

The next day Probate Court was held, Silas S. Smith was the judge and I acted as clerk. There was little business attended to, a few cases were laid over.

My father had been failing for a year or more, and the last six months had been quite bad with a kind of diabetes and lung trouble. The latter had troubled him for years and he had never been strong after his severe spell of sickness in 1859. June 29 I received a telegram from my sister Julia at Beaver that my father was quite sick. He had gone over there a few days before with Bro. William H. Dame hoping to get some of the doctors to prescribe for him or do something that would help him, but he soon became worse. Upon receiving the telegram I took my mother and went over to Beaver, getting there in the night. On arriving here I found my father quite low. The next day I got some of the elders, and we administered to him and he seemed to get a little better. He was quite bright in his mind and he seemed to improve some. Dr. Christian was looking after him and gave him something that he thought would help his kidneys. After doing what I could to make him comfortable, I returned home on July 2, my mother stayed with him.

The 4th was celebrated as usual with a meeting in the forenoon and a dance in the evening. I was orator of the day, but as I never claimed to be a public speaker I fear that I did not create much of a sensation among those who are so fond of sensational talk on such occasions.

On July 6, I received a telegram that my father died at 3 p.m. My brother Franklin and I started for Beaver at once and got there in the night. We found that every arrangement that could be made had been attended to by my sister, Julia, at whose house he died. We returned the next day, my sister Julia and my mother going along with us. Franklin and I brought my father in my carriage. The funeral took place at Parowan at 4 P.M. All of his children were present and most of his grand children, which numbered twenty-eight. He was highly respected wherever known, and although not much of a public character he was known for his industry, straight forward and honest course. He was considered almost a model in this respect by many who knew him. The following was sent to the Deseret News and published for the benefit of his numerous friends and relatives:

"Died at Beaver on July 6, 1870, Horace Fish, aged 71 years six months. The deceased was taken to Parowan for interment. Horace Fish was born on the 6th of January, 1799, in Hatley, Stanstead County, Lower Canada (Quebec). He was the youngest son of Joseph fish who was one of the first that moved from the eastern states into that locality. Horace married Hannah Leavitt by whom he had a family of six children. He first heard the gospel in Canada in the year 1836. Himself and family left their home for the purpose of gathering with the saints in 1837, although he had not been baptized and did not become a member of the church until two years after. He had never joined any denomination previous to his becoming a Latter Day Saint. He settled in Will County, Illinois, and remained there until 1840 when he removed to Nauvoo. He there labored on the temple and for the building up of that place until the early part of 1846 when he removed with the saints to the west. He remained at Council Point until 1850 when he again removed and came to the mountains. He has been a resident of Parowan City for the last seventeen years, and highly esteemed by all who know him. He was ever faithful to the trust reposed in him, and led an honest and

industrious life, one worthy of imitation. He died in full faith of the gospel and a hope of a glorious resurrection, he was at peace with all mankind and did not fear for the future."

He was greatly missed among us as a family and his home seemed to be broken up, but my sister Jane lived with my mother.

Our election came off on the first day of August, 1870. I was elected Justice of the peace for Parowan city, and my certificate was issued by acting governor George A. Black on the 16th day of March, 1871.

On August 20th I went to Cedar City in company with Samuel H. Rogers, William C. Mitchell, and William West. We arrived there in time to attend the School of the Prophets in the afternoon, and the next day we attended the meetings both in the forenoon and afternoon. We each spoke during the meetings and returned home the next day, Monday.

September 3, 1870, President Brigham Young and party arrived in Parowan from the north, and apostle Erastus Snow and a few others came in from the south to meet the President and company. Meeting was held next day, and on the 5th President Young and party left Parowan to visit Kanab, going by way of Panguitch. They expected to be gone sixteen days and to return by way of St. George. Pres. William H. Dame and a few others from this place accompanied the party.

Major J. W. Powell who is exploring the Colorado River and the country adjacent to it was along with the party. I had an introduction to the Major. He was getting all the information that he could in regard to the country. I gave him the rough map that I had made of the country that I passed over while on my trip with Captain Andrus in 1866.

President Young and party returned from the south on the 18th, and held meeting in the afternoon. The President gave a sketch of his trip and said that he was very favorably impressed with the country and intended to have it settled up and have a large ranch and dairy at Pipe Springs. The company started on their journey north the next day.

In the fall of 1870 there was quite a number of people from Parowan went to the Salt Lake Conference. Brother Durham, our choir leader, made arrangements to take our choir up. It was not very large but was considered to be one of the best in the territory. I went along with this company and started on September 25. Most of the company started the same day but we did not all get together until we reached Cove Creek. There were about seventeen wagons of us. I took my wife Mary and my mother along. We got as far as Salt Creek (now Nephi) on the 29th, I stopped with my old friend, Ned Williams. We arrived at American Fork on October 1st where I stopped with my cousin Rocksanna, wife of William Snow, and the next day we reached Salt Lake City. My nephew Horace C. Smith and Elizabeth Miller were married on the 3rd, they had traveled with us from Parowan. In the afternoon we all went up to Centerville where we stopped with my uncle James Adams. We remained here the next day visiting relatives and friends, after which we returned to the city.

October 5, my mother and I did some work for our dead relatives. I was baptized for my grandfather Joseph Fish and great grandfather Jeremiah Leavitt, and two uncles Joseph Fish and Josiah Leavitt. My mother was baptized for one of her sisters, Lydia Leavitt Rowell. When my parents got their endowments in Nauvoo things were hurried through as the people were leaving the place and they were not sealed, so I had my mother sealed to my father, I acting as proxy.

The next day conference began which I attended. Our choir did a portion of the singing during the conference. At the close of the conference we all started for home where we arrived safely, but we encountered a very disagreeable wind storm just after leaving Nephi and got badly separated, but when day dawned we found that we were not very far apart.

During the trip to Salt Lake City and especially while there I noticed a difference in my mother. Doing the work for the dead, having her and father sealed, and the loss of father seemed to have an effect upon her that she did not overcome and she was never the same after this. She gradually grew worse and finally she had a kind of paralytic stroke which affected her speech and left her an invalid for a long period. I always thought that the death of my father was a blow that she never got over, and she suffered for years in a helpless condition.

Our military drills were still being kept up but with a little less spirit than was manifested in the past. This may have been because of the federal officials opposing these military labors. This year our drill or muster came off on October 24, and was held on the bottoms below Paragoonah where the militia of Beaver and Iron counties met. Because of rain it did not go off as well as anticipated. General Erastus Snow was present. Jesse N. Smith who had been on a mission to Denmark had returned and was with us, we camped together on this occasion.

The second day (October 25) we had dress parade along with band music. The camp was broken up a little before sunset and we returned home, and I resumed my labors in the store where I worked every day unless called away by some other duty.

On December 5, 1870, President Brigham Young, George A. Smith, Brigham Young, Jr. and some others arrived in Parowan from the north on their way to St. George to spend the winter. they left the next morning, and on this day we had our first snow storm of this winter.

For sometime past there has been some excitement about mines, and there has been a great deal of prospecting for gold and silver this fall. Some have claimed to have found mines that were rich but on testing the ore it was found to be worthless. Notwithstanding all the failures, there are some who still work and live in hopes of striking something that will make them millionaires, and they still keep up the search for the precious metals.

Our winter passed off about as the others had, but my labors in the store kept me busy so I had little time to spend with the loafers and ball players. Our theaters lagged a little when compared with what they had been in former years but still they were kept up. At times some new members came in where old ones had dropped out and gave it a fresh start for a short period.

On January 10, 1871, the store was broken into and robbed of about \$70 The parties were apprehended and arrested. They were John C. Johnson and Albert Hanks, the later was an Indian boy who had been raised by Ebenezer Hanks. The Indian boy acknowledged breaking in and committing the robbery, he also told of some other thefts that had been committed in which some of the whites had been parties to the stealing.

On February 3, Apostle George A. Smith came in from the south and Pres. Young came in the next day. They only stopped about an hour then went on to Beaver.

On February 14, there was a meeting to take into consideration our farming interests, and there were several of these meetings at about this time where the subject was thoroughly ventilated. The final decision was to throw up all our farming land and relocate our field according to the government survey, draw over for our lands, and thus start anew as to this feature of our work. This plan seemed to give general satisfaction, and I believe that this move of changing the location of our farming lands was the last, as this move was made mainly to conform with the government survey, the first locations being made before the government surveyed the lands.

Our school matters were always decided at a public meeting by vote of those present and not by ballot as generally adopted later on.

A meeting for the election of school trustees was held on March 23, it was also for the voting of a school tax. This measure was defeated as I suppose the people were afraid of being taxed.

My second daughter Frances Amelia was baptized on March 26, 1871 by Charles Adams and confirmed by George Holyoak, Jr.

1871-1872
Chapter 34
Politics, Polygamy, and Store keeping

The spring and summer of 1871 passed off about as others had in the past. I was in the store all the time so it was the same old grind with me, but little to note and few changes in local matters.

My thirty first birthday came on the 27th of June, and some of the relatives often remember the day and contribute something as a souvenir or reminder. My niece Emma Thompson sent me the following on this occasion:

To My Uncle

Dear Uncle on your birthday,
I address these lines to you,
To assure you though distant,
With me, kindred ties are true.

You like all others left your home,
A separate one to build,
With what success your friends well know
Have you your mission filled.

Around you gathered in your home,
Is a family and wife,
Of which the most fastidious,
Might be proud to love through life.

I think that the best wish that I could make
Is that your remaining years,
May be equally as prosperous
And as free from bitter tears.
For in your home no flower is missing,
In your heart no void unfilled,
God has kindly spared to cheer you,
All the treasures he has willed.

Emma, June 27th, 1871

A convention was held on July 15 for the purpose of getting up a ticket for the coming election. Daniel P. Clark was elected chairman and I was secretary of the meeting. Jesse N. Smith was nominated for Councilman to the legislature, Meltiah Hatch for select man, William C. McGregor Superintendent of Schools, and Edward Dalton county Surveyor. The precinct officers were also nominated and the full ticket was elected at the August election.

In August I took a few days vacation from my store labors, and taking my family we went up Little Creek Canyon to E. W. Thompson's saw mill. This was a stream mill and one of the first of the kind to saw lumber in this section of the country. We had a pleasant time and I went out and killed a few grouse, so we had something rare to eat on the occasion.

During the fall of 1871 my wife's sister, Jane Steele, came up to make us a visit and to stay for a short period. While she was with us she took very sick and was quite dangerously ill for weeks, but finally recovered. On September 25 I started to take her home to Toquerville, where we arrived safely. She soon after recovered.

From Toquerville I went over to the Santa Clara on the 28th, and had a short visit with relatives and old friends.

On the 30th I started on my return and stopped a short time at St. George, which is being built up quite fast and is becoming a very beautiful place.

Coming on to Harrisburg I stayed all night with our old friend James Lewis.

Going on to Toquerville I remained a day and then went on home, where I arrived October 5.

On the 30th of October President Young arrived in Parowan from the north, He had been arrested and was out on bail, so had left Salt Lake city for a short period to see if things would quiet down, as there was quite an excitement about his being arrested for polygamy. Many others were arrested, and still others sought after, especially the leading authorities of the church.

The government officials were bringing a heavy pressure to bear on the saints, especially those who have more than one wife. Some have become frightened over it and are putting away their plural wives. This has evidently stamped them as being weak and cowardly, they have not gained much favor with the government officials by it and have become disgusting to their brethren. President Young did not hold meeting as he went through.

He returned on December 20 on his way back to salt Lake City to stand his trial set for the 8th of January. Many of the citizens in Salt Lake city and vicinity were arrested, but a decision of the Supreme Court has checked the prosecution so that there is a lull for a short time or until the officials can mark out a new program, when it is thought that they will start again.

January 1, 1872, the new year came in as the preceding ones had come, bringing cold weather and the usual holidays passed off very pleasantly.

A meeting was held to celebrate the advent of the new year, and on the 13th a meeting was held to commemorate the settling of the place twenty-one years before. Bro. Jacob Gates and some others were here and a party was given in the evening.

The next day was Sunday and we were favored with some of the brethren from Cedar city being with us who spoke at our meeting.

On January 31, I received a letter from Silas S. and Jesse N. Smith who were in Salt Lake City attending the legislature, requesting me to issue notices for an election for the purpose of electing delegates to draft a constitution for Utah and her admission into the union as a state. A bill had been passed by both houses of the legislature providing for the convention, but the governor vetoed it so both houses went into joint session and made provisions for it. A telegram was received here this evening advising us to go on with the matter, so I made out the notices and the election was held on February 5th. The largest vote was polled that ever was in the county. Silas S. Smith, Jesse N. Smith, Edward Dalton, and Seth M. Blair were elected delegates from Iron County. Similar elections were held in all the counties of the territory and delegates elected for the same purpose. On the adjournment of the legislature the delegates met and drafted a constitution, but it amounted to very little as congress refused to admit Utah as a state.

On Monday, April 22, Apostle Erastus Snow came in from Salt Lake City and held meeting in the evening. He spoke at length on the conditions of affairs in Salt Lake City. He said that our enemies had made a failure of their prosecutions, and that the recent decision of the Supreme Court of the United States was hailed with joy by our people.

The anti "Mormon" element never falters in its endeavor to break up Mormonism, failures only cause the people to find something new to work on. They put in circulation several works which they said would expose Mormonism. One was the Life of William Hickman and another was a work put out by Mrs. Stenhouse. These with others of a similar character were soon circulated through the United States. Although the evidence on the face of them stamped them as being false and unreliable, they had the effect of poisoning the minds of the people against the saints and their doctrine. I have thought that at the great day of judgment, what a fearful record of lies, frauds, persecution, and misrepresentations they will have to face. Can any sane people pile up against themselves such a mass of falsehoods to meet hereafter? Judge M. Kean, R. N. Baskin, Maxwell, and others were the principal leaders in this campaign of lying, persecution, and the spreading of falsehoods. They branded themselves as being hypocrites as they persecuted under the cloak of the law, using that for their prosecutions and said that it was law. However, there was very little law about it when they got through twisting and changing and twisting it to suit their plan of prosecutions.

On May 15, the snow fell to the depth of about one foot, this however was considered a benefit as it would help to moisten the ground and add to our water supply in the mountains. The spring had been rather cold and backward.

About this time the Cooperative company commenced the erection of a new building for their business, the building was of rock, 27 by 44 feet with a cellar under it full size. The store had been kept in my old house up to the present time, and I have been in as salesman looking after the business for over three years with very few vacations except when I went out after Indians. This period of my life like many others has little to record as to my labors since it was the same every day, the same old worry and going to the store sometimes at all hours of the night and on Sundays to accommodate someone who was sick or traveling.

I had moved into my new house and was fixed fairly comfortably, but was without a team or cattle of any kind because of the Indian raids. I had little use for a team while I was in the store.

On the 19th of May my wife Mary gave birth to a daughter at a quarter to 9 A.M. We named the little one Jessie May. My wife regained her health rather slowly, she had not had good health for several months and this tax upon her energies was quite severe. The little one seemed rather frail and puny but with all this she was never very sick. As the mother had such poor health, we had to raise her on a bottle. My wife Eliza did a noble part in looking after the family and taking care of the sick.

On June 1, Apostle Erastus Snow and some others came in from the south for the purpose of holding a two days meeting. In the evening Bro. Joseph W. Young called a meeting in order to organize a Republican party. The meeting adopted the National Republican principles as far as they conformed with the Constitution and Justice. There was a committee of five chosen to represent the party in this county. The members of this committee were as follows: George W. Sevey, Silas S. Smith, Samuel H. Rogers, Christopher J. Arther, and Joseph Fish. This was the first move in politics that had ever been made in this county, and this was just to get the machinery in order in case we might desire to work in that direction.

As my wife Mary had very poor health, especially after her last child was born, I rigged up a conveyance and on June 8 took her down to Kannarah where her sister Elizabeth Stapley resided.

The next day I attended the meeting at that place and occupied a portion of the time. We returned home on the 10th, a very short visit, but the ride and getting out seemed to help my wife considerably and she appeared to be improving.

My thirty-second birthday came this month and my sister Jane often wrote a few lines on these annual occasions. The following was what she contributed at this time:

Parowan, June 27, 1872

On your thirty-second birthday, brother dear,
I think of those that once were here,
Of them that now are passed away,
And we are hastening day by day.
Dear brother, memory bids recall
The days that are past, when we were small,
When hand in hand to school we went,
And many a happy day we spent.

Dear Brother, changed has been the scene
And broken has our circle been;
That little band that gathered then
To strangers now would seem but friends.
Dear brother, though that little band
May never more go hand in hand,
Yet in the heart there still must dwell
Affection that no tongue can tell.

Jane.

On the 4th of July, the Nation's birthday, we had a celebration, but it was not a success; some of the rougher element, as it was termed, had been barred out and our dance in the evening was broken up by this element. The rough and rowdy class in the place had increased very much lately, and this spirit is encouraged and fostered by apostates of whom we had several in the place. This class, with the government officials, would sustain any measure which had a tendency to break down good order, Mormonism was the main thing that they were striking at. They would readily sustain, defend, and foster thieves and rowdies in opposition to the people. This made it almost impossible to punish law breakers, and this state of affairs led them to be very bold in their acts. Several had been arrested for theft and other offenses and taken before the Federal Courts where they were immediately bailed out and appointed United States Deputy Marshals. This plainly showed a determination in the government officials to sustain anyone who would encroach upon the rights or property of the saints. This was one way to try to hedge up the path of the Latter Day Saints, and every block that could be used by the courts was utilized.

On July 15, four of the party who broke up the dance on the 4th had been arrested and were tried before me as Justice of the Peace. They were J. R. Morse, Lorenzo D. Watson, Edgar L. Clark, and William Roberts. They were quite insolent and independent in their demeanor. They were each fined, but through the lawyers at Beaver and the officials who were fighting the Mormons on every point possible, they succeeded in getting a writ of certiorari from the District Court and they finally got out of paying their fines. However, it cost them more in lawyer's fees than the fines amounted to. They cared little for that as long as they beat the Mormons and the people of the place. Lorenzo B. Watson and Edgar L. Clark afterwards turned around, changing their course of life, and became among the best of citizens, being highly respected. J. R. Morse later moved away and led, as I understood, a very good life in his older days, but William Roberts grew worse. He was a thief and a whoremonger, drifted off into Arizona where he grew worse, and became a murderer. Leaving one place after another, he was finally lost track of and it might be said was forgotten, only for the mischief he had done.

1872

Chapter 35

My First Ride on a Railroad Train and I Go on a Brief Mission

My mother's health had been poor ever since my father died. She had been a strong and healthy woman until this, when she apparently broke down. The bloom on her cheeks never left her before. She had a slight paralytic stroke which gradually grew worse, she slowly lost the use of her limbs so that in time she became entirely helpless. She became very nervous and fretted and worried all the time, so a person had to be waiting on her most of the time.

She worried considerably over my brother Franklin who was naturally a smart and good boy, but he got with the wrong company and lost the spirit of the gospel. Mother talked to him a great deal, but it had little effect. Franklin once told me that his mother talked to him so much on religion that it turned him against it. She over did it, in other words.

I had been thinking of taking a trip to Canada to visit my father and mother's relatives and try to get a little more of a record about our ancestors. I made arrangements with Jesse N. Smith to tend the store while I was gone, I did not expect to make a long visit as I could not afford the time. I lacked money but my brother Franklin and my sister Julia assisted me some, so I was able to go. About the 27th of July I commenced to make the arrangements.

July 31, I started on my journey to Canada. There were some going to the City and our company consisted of Daniel P. Clark, Edgar L. Clark, Sisters Mary Smith and Zilphia Smith and myself. Clark was going for goods for the Cooperative store. We got as far as Beaver the first day, where I went out in the evening and saw the first billiard game that I had ever seen.

On August 1 we got as far as Dog Valley and the next day we reached Meadow Creek where we stayed all night with Bro. Bennett whose wife was a sister of George A. Smith, I believe. We found the roads very dusty.

On the 3rd we had dinner at Fillmore with Bishop Thomas Collister. Here in Fillmore I met a cousin of mine, Lucinda Leavitt Brown. I had never met her before, she seemed to be a very intelligent woman.

August 4, We went as far as Chicken Creek where we stopped with Bro. Harris, who was quite an elderly man.

On the 5th we got as far as Pungent Springs, later called Cheney's Ranch. As we passed through Nephi, the people were having their election. There were two tickets in the field so they were having some trouble over the matter. It was not common in an early day for our people to have two tickets. They generally united on one.

We had fallen in company with a man by the name of William Ford from Kannarah who was sick, and we drove his team and rendered him what assistance we could.

On the 6th we took dinner with Taylor Butler at Spanish Fork.

Passing on in the afternoon we met quite a large body of Indians in Springville with whom the whites had some trouble. There was much excitement over the affair but I think that nothing serious occurred over it.

On reaching Provo I stayed all night with Apostle George A. Smith as I had one of his wives along as a passenger, and one of his wives went to the City with me.

The next day we reached American Fork about noon and I had dinner with my cousin Orilla Leavitt Brown, her husband was at work on the railroad at \$4 per day. He was later thrown from the top of a box car and killed while the train was going.

In the afternoon we got as far as Milo Andrus's place where we remained for the night.

On the 8th we reached Salt Lake City about noon, it took some time to wash off the dust for we had a very dusty trip.

Salt Lake City was not the quiet little town that it was the first time that I saw it in the fall of 1850. Then it was composed of a few adobe and log houses and was only a small village in the heart of a wilderness, and now it was the center of trade for all the country between the Rocky Mountains and the Sierra Nevadas. The City now contains hundreds of very fine respectable buildings, and its orchards and gardens are not surpassed by any place in the west. The slow ox teams have vanished and the iron horse has taken their place, and comes thundering into the valley through the rocky defiles of the Wasatch range loaded with merchandise from all parts of the world. The telegraph line brings the news with the rapidity of lightning. A few short years have wrought a wonderful change. The desert has been made to blossom as the rose. One would hardly recognize the former city of a few years ago. But with all these improvements and advancement the people seem less contented, have less faith, and less desire to be Latter Day Saints. The great change has brought luxury and wealth, and with them have come the vulgar, the idler, the thief, the money monger. The gambling houses and the brothels have been started in the shadows of the churches, and a class of people who fear not God nor keep his commandments are found on the streets.

August 9, I attended to some business about the city, went to the Cooperative store and made some purchases for our store. I called on Apostle George A. Smith. He treated me with the greatest respect and showed me around his place. He took me to Judge Elias Smith's, and then we went to the President's office where I was introduced to several of the leading men of the church.

Apostle George A. Smith proposed to President Young that I be ordained and set apart to go on a mission, so he did so, stating that my calling was to preach the gospel to my kindred in the states and in Canada, and he gave me my certificate as a missionary. This was quite a surprise to me for I had no idea of such a thing when I went to the office.

I then bade Daniel P. Clark and Edgar L. Clark goodbye as they were going to return to Parowan. I went down to the depot and at 2 P.M. stepped aboard the first railroad car that I was ever on and went to Ogden. My cousin, John Leavitt, was the conductor so I had a pleasant ride and visit with him.

On arriving at Ogden I stopped with my cousin Nathaniel Leavitt, I also saw my cousin John Leavitt, not the one who was conductor but another John whom we called Little John. He had lived with my father for seven years when he was a boy.

August 10, I took the train east at 9 A.M. and had a pleasant ride through Ogden and Echo canyons. The latter is where the Mormons built some fortifications to prevent Johnson's army from coming into Utah in 1857.

We arrived at Evanston about 1 P.M. where we met the west bound train. I had been told that my uncle, Franklin Chamberlain would be on the train, so after I stepped aboard the train I soon met him and his wife Rebecca, who was my mother's youngest sister. I had never met them before so was pleased to see them. Our visit was very short but interesting to all of us.

Proceeding on, we arrived at Green River about sunset and had supper. The place did not look as if it were improving much, in fact it appeared to be on the decline.

We passed along the Bitter Creek country which looked like a desert.

At Rock Springs there was much coal mining. I got some sleep during the night, notwithstanding this was my first night on a train.

August 11, When I awoke we were speeding along the Medicine Bow country and arrived at Laramie city about 9 A.M. where we stopped for breakfast. In this vicinity there was an abundance of grass and the plains were dotted with herds of stock.

We soon came to Dale Creek bridge, which was 650 feet long and 125 feet high. With two engines attached to the train we soon made the ascent to Sherman, the highest railroad point at that time in America, it was said to have been the highest in the world.

We made a stop at Cheyenne for dinner, and soon after leaving this place we saw thousands of cattle that were being driven west from Texas. Occasionally there was a herd of antelope that bounded away on the approach of the train.

We passed Julesberg¹ which is noted for the last resting place of many a victim of the savages both white and red, the soil here had drunk the blood of many a poor traveler who was trying to make his way west.

We reached the Platte River with its low banks and quicksand bottoms about dark.

August 12, We reached Wood River² early this morning. It is a very fine looking country, and here we began to come in sight of some fields and a few houses. After leaving this place we soon passed Loup Fork and Elk Horn rivers and arrived at Omaha about 11 A.M. This I thought was a very beautiful place, situated on a high bluff on the west bank of the Missouri. It has an air of thrift which characterizes most of the western towns. The distance from Ogden to this place is 1037 miles.

After a short delay we crossed over the river on the new iron bridge which is some distance above the water, the steamers were plying up and down the stream under us in that muddy and turbulent water.

At Council Bluffs I bought a ticket to Montreal over the Rock Island railroad for \$28.80. Here I could see over the prairies and bottoms where I spent three years of my boyhood days, you might say in poverty, being an exile and an outcast.

For the next one hundred miles we passed through a most delightful country. The rolling country dotted with houses, farms, and groves gave it a most enchanting air.

Passing many a town and village we arrived at the Des Moines River a little after dark. The appearance of the country had changed considerably from what it was when I first saw it in 1846. There were now neat farm houses, mostly frame while the public buildings were mostly built of rock or brick. The timber is largely oak, ash, and hickory and is rather small.

August 13, Passing Cedar River early we soon arrived at Davenport where we took breakfast. This is a place of some importance, has good buildings, and has a population of about 25,000 inhabitants. There are two bridges across the Mississippi at this place.

We soon crossed into Illinois, passed over a fairly good wooded country, and reached Blue Island fourteen miles from Chicago, where I got a chance to ride over to Black Oak Grove where some of my relatives lived. Here I met Mr. Chamberlain whose wife was my cousin. I spent a pleasant evening with them and remained with them the next day. The farm belonged to my Uncle Frank Chamberlain and contained about 160 acres and was worth about \$100 per acre. Much of the land here is meadow or hay land, hay is worth about \$10 per ton and butter 25 cents per pound.

August 16, My cousin James Chamberlain hitched up his team and took me into Chicago. We went around over the burned district which was being rebuilt with rock and brick as it was against a city ordinance to build a construction of wood in the business part of the city.

My wife Mary has an aunt, a sister of her mother's, who was living here and I called to see her, her name was Eliza Hamilton. She treated me very kindly but had some strange ideas about the Mormons, and of course was strongly prejudiced against them.

Chicago is a thriving city. It is the great commercial center of the northwest but from what I could observe the morals of the people were not the very best. The Catholics were celebrating the day as the assumption of the Blessed Virgin.

At 9 P.M. I took the Michigan Central and started on east, as we passed along the shore of the lake we could see quite a number of boats of various kinds near the shore.

August 16, We arrived in Detroit early and changed cars, I taking the Grand Trunk railroad. I was soon on the way to Port Huron which is situated at the outlet of Lake Huron. Here we were ferried across into Canada on a steamer, and had our baggage overhauled by the custom house officials.

This was the first time that I ever set foot on soil outside the United States. Here we had a view of the lake and shipping, the later was something new to me.

I took breakfast on the Canada side. I was told here that the land in this vicinity was worth from \$50 to \$60 per acre. We stopped for dinner at Stratford and sunset found us at Lake Ontario.

We passed the city of Toronto which has a beautiful location on high ground near the shore of the lake. I found most of the inhabitants in this vicinity to be Canadian French. Some were mixed with the Indian I should judge by their features. All speak the French language and some speak English.

August 17, I did not feel very well this morning.

We passed Kingston, a prominent place during the time of the French and Indian War.

Crossing the Ottawa River on a fine bridge, we soon reached Montreal where we had breakfast. This is the largest city in Canada, and has a fine location on an island in the St. Lawrence River. The place has many fine buildings but the streets are narrow and crooked. I stopped at the Franklin House kept by Mr. Hodge, a Scotchman by birth. There were none of the waiters who could speak English, although the hotel runners could. I took a walk through the city, visited some of the wholesale houses, also the fire department. There are many fine churches here, among them is the Catholic Cathedral, which was said to be the finest building of the kind at that time on the continent. I had a fine view of the city and shipping on the river from the top of the Nicholous Hotel. There is a small island a little below this point where all the government stores are kept, such as arms, ammunition, etc. Everyone who visits this city should take a view of the surroundings from this point.

I left the place at about 2 P.M., crossing the river on the Victoria Bridge which is about two miles long and rests upon twenty-six piers. It is considered one of the finest structures of this kind in the world.

We crossed the St. Francis River where considerable lumbering is done. My father worked on this river in that business and had several adventures and narrow escapes in rafting logs. We arrived at Compton about 7 P.M.

I left the train here and expected to go over to Hatley where my uncle lived, a distance of about seven miles. I looked about for a chance but did not succeed in finding any conveyance going over, so I stayed all night with a Scotchman. This man had come over to Canada when young and married a French Woman. He had lived with the French so long that he spoke his native language with considerable difficulty. Most of the Scotch and English who have come over here have lived with the French and married in with them so they have practically become Canadians, for about nine tenths of the people are French and all speak the French language.

Chapter Notes

¹ Julesberg was named from Jules who was killed by Jack Slade, Jack Slade was for some time an employee of the stage company. Slade was a Kentuckian and was said to have been a quiet man when sober. It is not known the number of men he had killed, but he certainly had a large number to his credit. He had killed a man in Illinois when he was a young man and fled west to the Missouri valley. Joining a wagon train bound for California he was given the position of train master. He became involved in a quarrel with one of the teamsters, killed him in a most treacherous manner, and made his escape. Soon after Slade made a record as an Indian fighter. This gave him the confidence of the managers of the stage line and they employed him, placing him as a division agent at Julesberg in the place of Jules Bernard who had been agent. This place was infested with horse thieves who were bold and laughed at the idea of anyone resisting the outrages. Slade determined to make a change. Whenever there was trouble on that division the life of the offender was short. He made friends by killing half a dozen of the worst characters. After this, the company's property was not molested. Order having been restored, Slade was sent to

another district, the Rocky Ridge division, that was infested with horse thieves and road agents. In taking up his abode where the country was so full of horse thieves and desperate characters, Slade came to the conclusion that the only thing to do under the circumstances was to shoot all such offenders as fast as they became known. He immediately began a forward movement on their works, and one by one he picked out and killed the leaders of the notorious gang. In a short time depredations ceased and much of the stolen stock was recovered. While the trouble made by the thieves and cutthroats lasted, he was the high court of the district he was Judge Lynch all by himself. It is related that one time when a party of emigrants were going overland, some of their stock had suddenly disappeared. Slade having been apprised of all the facts went with another man to the ranch where he was satisfied, from the character borne by the occupants, that the stock had been taken and scattered. Opening the door, he commenced blazing away at the promiscuous crowd inside, three of whom he killed while the fourth was badly wounded.

Slade had decided that Jules, his predecessor at Julesberg, had some stolen property that belonged to the company, and Jules nourished a feeling of enmity against Slade for supplanting him as agent; thus there was a deadly feud between them. Slade went to Jules' store and they both opened fire on each other. They both fell badly wounded, but recovered at length. Slade swore vengeance and watched his opportunity. Jules moved away. Finally after five years Slade found him and succeeded in capturing him after breaking his leg by a shot. Jules was then taken and tied against a wall and Slade amused himself for some time in shooting off his fingers, then his ears. Wearying of this sport, he ordered his men to empty their revolvers in Jules' body. Slade nailed one of the ears to the door of the pony express office and wore the other for a watch charm for some time.

Slade soon became as much of a road agent as those whom he had killed. He located in the vicinity of Denver and was a terror to the country. He later went to Montana where he lived on a ranch not far from Virginia City. Here his favorite pastime was to ride into Virginia City, fill up on the vilest liquor, and then in his peculiar way would begin to "paint the town red", shooting off his revolver right and left and terrorizing all law abiding citizens. He appeared to be in the height of his glory and apparently master of the situation. One of his favorite pastimes in which he seemed to take great delight was riding his horse roughshod into the saloons and gambling houses and proclaiming in unmistakable language that he was the veritable "bad man from Bitter Creek". He was captured in a saloon and hung by a vigilante on suspicion of being the leader of a band of road agents. His wife soon left the country, carrying with her, as it was believed, a large amount of the proceeds of her husband's robberies.

² Wood River is about 150 miles a little south west of Council Bluffs. It is a general stopping place on the great emigrant route through the Platte valley, and in order to afford Post Office facilities to parties of emigrants the government of the United States established a mail station there in January, 1854. It was called Nebraska Center Post Office. The mail went to and from Council Bluffs twice a week.

1872
Chapter 36
I Visit My Father's People

August 18, I hired a man to take me over to Hatley and paid him \$2.50. I found my uncle Lemuel Fish and family and introduced myself to them after which we had a pleasant chat on family affairs. Most of his children lived near him but all were gathered here at a kind of reunion or family gathering, so my coming at this period was quite timely. I was able to meet and talk with many that I might not have had the chance to meet if I had been forced to hunt them up in the different towns.

After dinner Thomas Fish hitched up a team and we went around and took a look at my grandfather's old home. There was no one living in it. The building had been put up seventy years before and was fast going to decay as no one was caring for it.

We then visited my father's old home. No one was living here and the place was going down, I was told that it remained just as my father had left it thirty-six years before. It was looking quite dilapidated, the wood shed at the end of the house had fallen in.

We then drove over to Nathan Rowell's, his wife was a cousin of mine. Here I remained all night visiting and discussing Mormonism, that being the main topic when family matters were not on the docket.

August 19, There was a family gathering at my Uncle Lemuel's place, and there was a representation from three families of Fishes. This was the first time in thirty-six years that they had all been represented together. I was the stranger and the honored guest on this occasion and had the largest amount of talking to do. During the time of our being together I took the opportunity, as it was very agreeable to those assembled, to explain some of the doctrines of the Latter Day Saints. I found that many of our principles were not known or understood by them, and I was pleased to enlighten them on several points. It was a pleasant day for me as well as for many of them, I believe. Meeting so many of my relatives gave me much satisfaction.

I went home in the evening with my cousin Eleanor Abbott, she was a daughter of Uncle Champion Fish. she had two sons, one was at home, he was a bright young man of about twenty-four named Horace. Her husband had been dead for several years.

August 20, I spent much of the day with my cousin Kendrick Fish, we had lengthy talks on religion as well as on family affairs. He seemed to be quite a religious man and an honest one, he had no children and I found that there were several others who had no families.

On the 21st, I visited the old church yard where my grandfather and grandmother were laid to rest with many others of my relatives. I got several dates of births and deaths from the grave stones which I wrote down, as every item I could get added a little to the work of tracing up our genealogy.

In the afternoon I went with my cousin Thomas Fish over to Magog Lake, and as my cousin Leonard Fish lived on the way we stopped there and had supper. He and two of his sons went on with us to the lake. Here we got a boat, rowed up the lake about two miles, and fished with fair success until about midnight. He then raised our anchor and pulled for shore. We fastened our boat and, as it was raining, we got in a barn nearby and spent the rest of the night there.

August 22, I woke up feeling worse for my fishing trip, as it has been a rather wet rainy night. I had taken cold and I felt that I was a long way from home to be sick. I was just a little homesick during this sick spell.

We gathered up our fish and went over to cousin Leonard's and got a cup of tea, which settled my stomach and I felt much better. We then went to my Uncle Lemuel's place where I had another visit.

In the afternoon I went to see Sally Emery, a cousin of mine. Mr. Emery, her husband, owned my grandfather's old place and he showed me over the old building. It was a two story building and had sixteen rooms in it, old fashioned in construction.

I stayed all night with Mr. Emery and as he was a religious man we talked a great deal about religion, I think that I did some good in explaining some of our doctrine to him and his neighbors.

August 23, I went up to see Mr. Fowler this morning, he was a cousin of one of my neighbors in Parowan. He treated me very kindly and was pleased to hear from his relatives in Utah.

After a short visit with Mr. Fowler I went to Jonathan Leavitt's, he was rather elderly and was well acquainted with my mother's folks. I had dinner with him and he related to me many things of interest about my relatives on my mother's side. He raises stock horses and takes them into the United States to sell. He had some hogs that weighed 600 pounds each.

I went around to my Uncle Lemuel's and commenced to bid the folks goodbye. I had not been with them very long but I had improved the time to the very best advantage and had done a great deal of talking. Generally after talking on family affairs we drifted on to Mormonism. I had never seen any of them before and would probably never meet them again.

My cousin Lydia took me as far as Celeman Keser's where I stopped all night. Here I had an extended talk on religious subjects.

Many of my folks had never seen a Mormon, knew nothing about their religion, and were anxious to hear something about it. However, their interest did not go far enough for them to investigate as they should to become converted. Perhaps if someone could have followed the matter up and talked it up longer, it might have resulted in some of them joining the church.

August 24, I was up early and took the train for Barton Landing. We passed through Newport in the edge of Vermont, it is at the head of Memphre Magog Lake and a fashionable place of resort in the summer.

From Barton Landing I got a ride with a young man who was going over to Albany. We arrived there about noon. Here I stopped and took dinner with Enoch Rowell. His first wife, Caroline Leavitt, was a cousin of mine. She had been dead two years and he had married again. This woman had never seen a Mormon and she was greatly interested and asked many questions, the main theme being centered on polygamy. She held up her hands in holy horror over it and said that she could never believe in such a terrible thing. I asked her if she expected to be united with her husband after death, and she said certainly she believed in a future and that she would have her husband in the next world. I then told her that according to her own belief she was in polygamy, his former wife having just gone on ahead would have the same claim on her husband that she had, the only difference was that the other wife had just stepped over on the other side and she would soon follow. Then they would certainly be in that position at which she was now holding up her hands in holy horror. She said with a long breath, "I had never thought of that before."

After our talk, a couple of Mr. Rowell's daughters took me over to East Albany where my Aunt Sally resided. She was my mother's sister. She lived with her son-in-law Enoch Rowell. She had two children, Jane and Viola, the later was the wife of Rowell. The former was married and lived about nine miles distant but happened to be over to her mother's on a visit, so I had a short visit with her also.

August 25, I spent the forenoon in conversation with Mr. Rowell and the family, mainly on religion and conditions in Utah.

In the afternoon he hitched up his team and took me over to Barton Landing, twelve miles away, where I found another cousin of mine, Clarisa Leavitt. She was keeping house by herself, she had been married but had left her husband. I remained here all night. There were some camp meetings going on here at this time but I did not go out to them as my visiting occupied all my time.

August 26, I took the train and had a most delightful ride down along the Connecticut river. Our engine gave out and we stopped for some time.

I rambled about on the banks of the river for an hour and a half enjoying the sights and the new scenery which was so much different from that in Utah.

We arrived in Springfield, Massachusetts about 10 P.M. I did not get much of a view of the place, but I thought that they had the finest depot that I had seen on my trip.

Here I took the train for New Haven. Passing through Hartford, we reached New Haven at about midnight and at once took a steamer for New York City. I got a berth, but the beating of the waves against the sides of the boat kept me awake for some time.

August 27, I arose early, went on deck, and enjoyed the fresh sea breeze that came from the Atlantic Ocean. We soon came in sight of the lights that were along the wharves of New York, and landed on the east side at about 6 A.M.

I walked about the city for an hour looking at the shipping along the wharves and the buildings. I then registered at the Merchants Hotel in Cortland Street, had a bath and changed my clothes. I went to Pine street to find Judge Hawley to whom I had a letter of introduction, but he was away on a summer vacation.

I spent the day in looking around the city, visited Park Fountain and Castle Gardens.

In the evening I took the train and started for the west. Going along the banks of the Hudson River, I had occasional views in the moonlight of the river and boats as they plied up and down the stream.

I fell in with a party of French who were leaving their native land and were going to Canada because of the late war that had added some of their territory to Germany.

August 28, We arrived at Albany early in the morning and at this place we left the Hudson River and turned up the Mohawk Valley. Here our train broke in two and delayed us a short time.

We soon passed the Remington works where the Remington arms were made.

We passed Rome and Syracuse, at the latter place there are immense salt works where hundreds of acres are covered with the vats, and the chimneys look like a forest of trees deprived of their branches.

At Rochester I thought that there were the best looking orchards that I had seen on my journey.

Coming to the Suspension Bridge I stopped as I wanted to take a view of the Niagara Falls. I put up at the Western Hotel.

August 29, I arose early and went down to view the Suspension Bridge and after breakfast I went up to the falls. I went over on Goat Island, the fare was fifty cents, and took a ramble over the island. There was an excellent view of the rapids above the falls. I went up in Terapin Tower (since torn down) where I had a fine view of the Horse Shoe Falls. In the afternoon I visited Whirlpool Rapids and took much interest in viewing the greatest water falls in the world.

I took the train at 10 P.M. and we crossed over the Suspension Bridge, which is 225 feet above the water. On the Canadian side we were detained two hours, then we were again journeying westward.

August 30, we passed through London this morning, and when passing Lake St. Clair I noticed that to look over the lake the water seemed higher than the land.

We arrived at the Detroit River about 11 A.M. Here the cars were run onto a steam ferry boat, eleven cars at once, and ferried across. I spent the time until about sunset looking about the city, then I again started for the west.

August 31, when I awoke this morning we were speeding along the shores of Lake Michigan, and we arrived in Chicago about half past six in the morning.

I stopped with Eliza Hamilton, my wife's aunt, and had breakfast. I looked around the city a little, went through the Washington Tunnel, and after dinner I went out to my cousin James Chamberlain's, where I arrived about sunset. I was cordially received and we had a family chat and talked over the history of the relatives.

September 1, there was a camp meeting a little distance away that had taken the folks from this place, so there was no meeting here today. I visited with the folks and went out to the grove with some of them and picked cherries.

September 2, my cousin James Chamberlain hitched up his team and took me over to Joliet where my cousin Oliver Chamberlain resided. He is in the mercantile business, has a wife and two sons who are nearly grown. I spent the afternoon in conversation about relatives and the different families, and religion was not left out in our talk. I stayed all night here.

September 3, my cousin Oliver and I walked about the place, looking at the rolling mills, and then we visited the penitentiary which appeared to be kept up to date. The prisoners are not allowed to talk and have to work ten hours a day. It is a paying institution. There were at this time 1212 men and 14 women in the prison.

After dinner I bade the folks adieu and took the train for the west. We arrived at the Mississippi about sunset, crossed over, had supper at Davenport, then proceeded on west.

September 4, when I awoke this morning we were near the Des Moines where I spent the winter of 1846-7. Here I had played upon its banks and slid over its frozen surface. Some of the people who then suffered upon their perilous journey to the wilderness were now well fixed in their mountain home, while some had been laid to rest by the way side, overcome with the fatigue and toils, sickness and disease, coupled with famine that beset the path of the pioneers of the west.

Passing Council Bluffs we arrived at Omaha about 11 A.M. where I got a ticket to Ogden for \$60.00, missionary rates, and started on up the valley of the Platte.

September 5, We had breakfast at Sidney and we were soon in sight of the Black Hills and snowy peaks of the Rocky Mountains. We got our supper at Laramie.

September 6, Passing along the Bitter Root we reached Green River where we had breakfast. Evanston was reached by noon and we arrived at Ogden at 6 P.M. where I stayed all night with my cousin Josiah Leavitt with whom I had a Pleasant visit.

Here I met a gentleman who had just come from the Yellowstone Park; he was greatly interested in what he had seen and gave me a vivid description of that wonder land.

September 7, I took the train at 8 A.M. to Centerville where I spent the day with my uncle, James Adams, and family. My Uncle Frank Chamberlain and wife whom I met on my way east were there, and other relatives coming in gave me an opportunity of meeting many of my kin folks.

In the evening I went down on the train to Salt Lake City where I stayed all night with my cousin John Leavitt who was conductor on the railroad.

September 8, I arose early and went around looking to see if my wife Mary had come in, as I was expecting her. I found her at my cousin Charlotte Baker's, she had reached the city the evening before with her brother John Alma Steele. I was very pleased to meet her, as I had not heard a word from home since I left. I had been going so fast that letters failed to reach me.

I attended meeting in the afternoon in the Tabernacle. Benjamin Hulse spoke, he had just returned from a mission to Long Island.

September 9, I attended to some business at the stores, selecting a few goods. I went to the Historian's Office and reported myself as returned. I gave Apostle George A. Smith a short sketch of my travels.

I started for home with John Alma Steele in the evening, going out as far as Bro. Burrows.

September 10, we came to the point of the mountain where we met my Brother-in-law, Mahonri M. Steele, and talked with him a short time. then we went on to American Fork where we stayed all night with my cousin Orilla Brown.

September 11, we went over to Provo and had dinner with David Cluff. He was in the furniture business and I ordered a small bill for the purpose of starting a little business in Parowan. We then came on to Spanish Fork and stayed all night with Taylor Butler.

September 12, as we passed Payson we learned that there were two cases of small pox in town.

Some soldiers passed us today on their way to the post at Beaver. We came nearly to Nephi.

September 13, we drove into Nephi and had breakfast with our old friend Ned Williams. We went on nearly to the Sevier and camped, and the next day we came nearly to Holden.

September 15, we came to Fillmore where we took dinner with McBride. I had a short visit with my cousin, Lucinda Brown, and in the afternoon we went to Meadow Creek where we stayed all night with Bro. Bennett.

September 16, we got as far as Dog Valley but our team was about tired out. We had traveled slowly but had a very heavy load. The next day, however, we got as far as Wild Cat where we stayed all night, and the next day we drove to Beaver.

I found my sister preparing to go to San Francisco; she was taking her oldest daughter there for her health. We drove out a short distance and camped and got home on the 19th, after a tiresome journey from the city.

I at once commenced my labors in the store. Bro. Jesse N. Smith had tended it while I was gone, and he was anxious for me to get back, as he was preparing to go to conference and had other work to do before going.

I soon fell into the same old groove at the store, but my trip had given me an insight into the outside world, even though it had been short.

1872-1873
Chapter 37
I Become Manager and Sawyer of the Coop Sawmill

My trip east had been a revelation to me. I have never seen any of the outside world before. Then my meeting so many of my relatives added to the many new scenes made it a trip long to be remembered.

I now went at my old post in the store where there is little to do and talk about but the same old thing of waiting on customers and trying to explain some mistake or fancied wrong that a customer may have complained about. Thus the days, weeks, and months passed by.

On December 20, 1872 President Young and party arrived in Parowan from the north, they passed on south the next morning. General Thomas L. Kane was with the party, he was traveling for his health. I had the pleasure of again meeting him, I had met him before when he came into Utah under the assumed name of Dr. Osborn. He was a warm hearted and genial man and one that the saints will long remember as a true friend in time of need.

February 19, 1873. Our holidays passed off about as usual. Business is a little dull, partly owing to the money market panic caused by the failure of some leading companies in the east.

President Young and party came from the south today, and meeting was held in the evening at which Apostle Erastus Snow spoke on the subject of our sustaining ourselves; he was on his way to Europe.

On March 1 and 2 our conference was held, President Dame presiding. During the session there was a meeting of the High Council. There were several brethren present at the conference from other settlements near by.

March 5, Elizabeth Smith, wife of my nephew Horace C. Smith, died and the funeral was held on the 6th. She was a daughter of Robert E. Miller, was a telegraph operator, and her loss was greatly felt and mourned by all, both relatives and friends.

Daniel P. Clark and some others had bought a team saw mill and put it up at the head of Dry Canyon and had sawed a little, but for some cause or other they decided to sell it, probably because they were not mill men. They had talked the matter up with the Cooperative company and the latter had decided to purchase it.

March 15, Silas S. Smith and I went up to the mill for the purpose of receiving the property and to take an account of what there was to be turned over to the Coop company, such as tools, etc.

We returned home the next day, after which I went to work fixing up the accounts and making arrangements to go up and take charge at the mill, as it was arranged for me to look after that branch of the business. Silas S. Smith was the president of the Cooperative company and he had requested me to go up and look after that branch of the business. William C. Mitchell was to take my place in the store.

March 18, I went up to the mill to take charge of affairs there. I took my wife Eliza with me, she was to cook for the hands. Most of the men who had been working for Clark and Company were kept by us, so they continued on the same as if there had been no change. I was to receive \$4 per day for my services, which was much more than I got while in the store, but this work was away from town and more expensive for me. I could not look after things about home to keep them up.

On the 22nd I went down to town for some articles that we wanted in fitting up the mill. I went by the trail down Dry Canyon, this being about six miles, but this road could not be traveled with horses or wagons.

My wife had been caring for my mother, who was helpless, and she had gone over to Beaver with her as my sister Julia was going to take care of her for a while. Julia, Sarah, and I were taking turns in caring for mother, and Jane had done a most noble part in the work.

I went back to the mill on the 23rd and fitted up things so that we started up on the 24th and cut out about 3000 feet. Riley G. Clark was our sawyer and Guy Becker, who had served in the Union army, was our engineer. He and Clark did not get along very well and in a short time Silas S. Smith requested me to discharge Clark and run the mill myself. I never had run one of these mills but told Silas that I would try it, so I discharged Clark about the first of April and I did the sawing and the other business such as keeping the accounts.

June 22, My daughter Della was baptized today by William Holyoak and confirmed by William C. McGregor at Parowan.

The 27th being my birthday all my family came up to the mill to spend the day. Jesse N. Smith and a part of his family came up and we had a very enjoyable time, with singing, recitations, etc.

I am getting along very well with the sawing business considering the fact that I had never done any before. I continued my labors at the mill and there was a sameness that makes a vacancy it might be said in ones life, as there was no change and the labors of one day were about the same as the others. I generally went down to town once a week for supplies and sometimes to attend special meetings.

It looked as if we would soon cut all the available timber in this narrow place, so we commenced to look around to see where we would move to next. On September 6, Collins R. Hakes, J. R. Morse, and I took a trip over to the head of Red Creek Canyon to look for timber and a site to move the mill to. We found some timber but the country was quite rough, which was a very discouraging feature.

July 17, The country was being surveyed in this region by the government surveyors, and a party came up into the mountains today to survey this township which was 34 South, Range 8 West. Silas S. Smith came up from town yesterday to see where the survey came, as we were interested in the timber and wanted to find out where the lines ran. On the 18th, Daniel P. Clark and I went over to the head of Red Creek with the surveyors to see about some timber land being surveyed. Silas S. Smith joined us from the other way. We found that the survey did not take in much timber.

July 19, I went to town to attend a two days' meeting. Bro. Stayner from Salt Lake City was the principal speaker.

On the 23rd all the hands from the mill went to town to spend the 24th.

July 25, I went back to the mill by way of the Second Left hand Canyon so I could get a set of saw teeth. A little below Yankee Meadow I stopped at Oscar M. Lyman's shingle mill and had supper. Amasa M. Lyman was there spending a short time in the mountains for his health, which was quite poor. He seemed greatly changed from what he was a few years before, and I thought how fast apostasy tells upon a person. I went on to the mill and the next day was spent in putting in the new set of saw teeth.

We do not have hands enough to keep the mill going all the time, so we run the mill about four days in a week and the other two days we spend in cleaning up, stacking the lumber, getting wood, etc. This made it a little inconvenient and we did not get along quite as fast as we would have done had we more men, but we did the best we could with the help we had.

Bro. James Hart had come down from the north with a project to open up the iron mines and build a railroad, and on September 15th there was a meeting in Parowan of a few of the Brethren for the purpose of organizing a railroad company. William H. Dame was elected chairman and I acted as secretary of the meeting. Articles of association were drawn up and adopted. There were eleven directors chosen: George A. Smith, Silas S. Smith, Ebenezer Hanks, W. B. Pace, W. N. Dusenbury, Unstead Rencher, A. J. Stewart, Edward Dalton, William H. Dame, A. J. Stewart Jr. and Homer Duncan. Some other business was attended to during the meeting. The road was to run from Payson to Iron City, a distance of 273 miles. The project for building the road was to bring out the iron mines, shares were to be sold to build the road. The iron and rails were to be made at the mine and the road built beginning from the mines. The road was to be bonded to raise the money, but nothing further than this meeting was ever done.

September 19, A fair was held at Parowan. These exhibitions of fruits and the industries of the country were displayed about every fall. This fair showed a little better than one would expect. Bro. Durham went around and

gathered up about all the organs that there were in the place and had them on exhibition. He spent considerable time playing on them during the fair, first playing on one and then on another.

Sunday, September 21, Smith D. Rogers was chosen and set apart as a counselor to Pres. William H. Dame. He was a very fine, exemplary young man, but several thought that he was too young for the position.

The mines at Pioche had failed or gone down so there was little sale for lumber. We did not rush things. We were working with fewer hands, so we did not saw quite so much, and on October 25 I closed the mill down for the season.

I then went to work in the store helping to post up the accounts, got out a balance sheet, and make a settlement of the accounts. The store and mill accounts had been kept separate to see which had done the best.

On November 4, the directors of the store met and declared a dividend for the past year of 25%, 15% had been made by the mill and 10% by the store.

On the 7th there was a meeting of the High Council, and as there was a great deal of business, they were in session two days. As I was a member, I attended all of these meetings.

On the 30th I went out to Summit with Jesse N. Smith, Samuel H. Rogers, and William M. West on a missionary trip. We held meeting and all spoke. We had dinner with Br. S. C. Hulet and returned home in the evening.

December 2, The weather was cold and stormy, and the closing down of some of the mines had made business rather dull.

Roberts and Watson, who kept a saloon, closed out their business today and sold the balance of their stock and effects to James Calhoun. After he had run the business a short time, he managed to seduce one of Robert Miller's daughters and then left the place soon after.

December 11, President Young and party came in from the north and held meeting in the evening. Pres. Young, Apostle George A. Smith, and A. Milton Musser were the speakers. The party went on south the next day. When they reached Kannarah they had to stay over a short time because of the snow on the Black Ridge, which has said to be the deepest that was ever known in that place.

December 12, The assessor, William C. Mitchell, was suing several parties for delinquent taxes and the different cases were brought before me as Justice of the Peace. The parties acknowledged judgment and made arrangements to pay in ten days.

In the evening there was a party held in the basement of the meeting house. This was the first of a series of parties to be given by a committee that had been appointed for the purpose of conducting our dances. This plan had been adopted to exclude from our parties a certain rough element that had been trying to break up our dances.

December 23, was my wife Mary's birthday, she was thirty three years old. As the weather was cold and there was snow on the ground, there was good sleighing, which is not always the case at this season of the year.

Our meetings were kept up very well, there were two on Sundays, one in the day and one in the evening.

The dance question seemed to be a vexing proposition, and the appointing of a committee as above stated did not altogether bring peace and harmony. There was a rough element, mostly apostates, who were trying to run things, and our dance committee did not invite this class to our parties. They declared that they would come at all hazards and by force of arms if necessary. At our dance on December 25, they were not invited, so they got their Henry rifles and marched around town making some very loud threats (they may have marched around for recruits). They went to the house where the dance was going on but did not attempt to go in. One of the party, Lorenzo D. Watson, got some kind of a pretext as he thought and knocked Josh Fielding down. A complaint was made and I issued a warrant for Watson's arrest. The party got together and fortified themselves in an old saloon building and swore that they

would not be taken, so the officer, William M. West, did not make the arrest until the next morning, which he then did with little trouble. The party was at once brought before me to be tried on a charge of assault and battery. Watson and his party were very impertinent or independent over the matter. He was fined \$10. He demanded an appeal and to be given bail. I refused, and when he saw that he would have to go to jail he paid the fine. This crowd at this time was giving much trouble at our public gatherings. Watson was backed up mainly at this time by J. R. Morse, William Roberts, and Edgar L. Clark. Their getting their guns did not frighten any one, and lost them friends instead of gaining them.

I have stated that our railroad project did not amount to anything, which was practically the case, but on December 28 the directors of the company which we called the Iron Mountain and Utah Valley Railroad had a meeting, and a little business was done. A move was made to bond the road but this never materialized.

I was the secretary of the board, but I do not remember what became of the papers. This was about the last of the move, as I remember it.

In the afternoon there was a meeting of the Coal Company, I was elected secretary of it. There was little business done at this meeting. This company was formed to open up a coal mine in Summit Canyon or near it, some money was expended. The two brothers W. and B. Croft were hired at four dollars a day and they managed to come home every night and some nights played for parties, so their work went on very slowly but the expense did not slacken up any. I put in \$40 and spent much time looking after the business of the company, keeping accounts, etc. and never got a cent out of it. There was no coal to speak of, and it was a complete failure. Shortly after our meeting James Adams and I went out to measure what had been done on the coal mine. It did not appear that there had been much done and only about a bucketful of coal had been taken out of a seam in the rocks.

January 1, 1874 was on fast day, meeting was held in the forenoon. I spent the rest of the day working in the store.

In the evening John W. Young spoke, his remarks were mostly on railroad matters.

At about this date Jesse N. Smith started for Salt Lake City to attend the Legislature.

1874
Chapter 38
Entertainment, Legal Matters and Other Activities

We were still doing something at the theater business; our troop had gone over to Beaver and put on plays three evenings some time before.

On the 5th the troop from Beaver entertained the people of Parowan by presenting the play of "Damon and Pythies", S. A. Kenner was the principal actor and did very well.

January 9, William C. McGregor, my sister Sarah, and I went over to Beaver, partly on a visit but I had some business with the lawyers there, especially with Lawyer Adams who was collecting some accounts for our Cooperative store.

On Sunday I attended the meeting there, and in the afternoon I went up and visited the military post about two miles above town. There were four companies of soldiers at the post commanded by Colonel Wilkins.

In the evening I attended a Methodist meeting which I thought was more show and polish than gospel truths.

We returned home on the 12th, and the next day the annual pioneer dance was held. This as usual passed off very well with songs, dancing, speeches, etc.

We had been thinking some of working up the slabs and odd pieces of broken lumber edgings at the sawmill into lath and pickets, so I went up to the mill on the 15th for the purpose of putting in a lath saw.

I returned on the 17th, and on the 18th there was a meeting of the directors of the Coal Company. A little business was done but the prospects for coal was not very good, and as I have stated, the enterprise was a total failure.

January 21, Nat. Goodman, Caesar Collister, and I went up to the mill to start up our lath saw. Charles Harris hauled our supplies but the snow was so deep that we could not get to the mill with a wagon, so we had to carry our bedding and supplies on our backs for about a half mile. We were both tired and cold when we reached the mill. I worked at fitting up things and returned home on the 23rd, leaving Collister and Goodman sawing lath.

During the odd days that I was in town I posted up my books, but I did not work in the store regularly.

On the 25th, Samuel H. Rogers, William C. McGregor, and I went down to Paragoonah where we held meeting with the brethren there, and we all spoke during the meeting.

I again went up to the mill on the 27th, N. Goodman and C. Collister were there sawing out lath.

The next day I went over to the Pony Mill to get some blacksmithing done, and the following day I went back to get a little more work done. The snow was quite deep and it tired me considerably.

On the 31st I returned home having got the machine fixed up so that the boys could go on with their work. It snowed some during the day.

There had been rumors for some time past that cattle were being driven off to the west and that the firm of Warren and Fish were implicated in this business. A party fitted up in charge of Daniel P. Clark and started out to try and trace this matter up. On February 1, Edward M. Dalton, one of the party, came into Parowan and reported that they had found quite a number of cattle 200 miles to the northwest that belonged to people in Parowan, but they did not get them. One of their number, William M. West, was dangerously ill when he left the party. A company immediately started out to meet Clark's party and to render what aid they could to Bro. West.

February 2, I went back to the mill, having spent what time I could while in town posting up the books. I found the snow about three feet deep. I worked at the mill until the 6th, when I went down to town with Charles Harris.

On the 5th there was a telegram sent in that William M. West had died and a party came in with the body the next day. The funeral was held on the 7th. Bro. West was a man in the prime of life and had many warm and ardent friends. He was a man of worth and was respected by all who knew him. I was intimately acquainted with him. We were boys together, had herded, hunted, and worked together. We had grown up together and a warm friendship existed between us. He was a true man, a faithful Latter Day Saint. He left a loving wife and three little daughters to mourn his untimely departure.

The next day I attended meeting and occupied part of the time.

After meeting Samuel H. Rogers and I went to see Daniel P. Clark and others who had been out to see about the stolen stock, to see what arrangements could be made about sending a party out to gather up and recover what stock could be found in that vicinity.

The next day after working in the store part of the day, I went up to the mill and helped the boys saw out pickets and lath. When we ran the saw, we cut out about 600 lath per hour.

On the 15th I went over to the Pony Mill on snow shoes and stayed all night, Caesar Colister went with me. Guy Becker, who ran the engine for us last year, is at work here. He rented the mill, but is not making anything. He has a poor set of workers, and the snow is a great hindrance.

I went to town on the 20th and found the snow about four feet deep for a short distance, which I made on snow shoes.

This was about the last I had anything to do with the lath making or the mill for a year or so, but I helped in the store, mostly at posting up the books and fixing up the different accounts.

Soon after Clark's return from looking after stolen stock George B. Warren was arrested and brought to Parowan. He was supposed to have been the leading one in driving west cattle that belonged to the people of Parowan. He had his hearing before Samuel H. Rogers, Precinct Justice of the Peace on February 21. He was bound over for the sum of \$2,000 to answer the action of the Grand Jury of the Second Judicial District court. An indictment was found against him, but he ran away leaving his bondsmen to get out of the scrape as best they could. His bondsmen followed him into Nevada but he refused to come back with them. They then got a requisition from the governor of the state and the sheriff was sent after him. This officer succeeded in getting him, but on the way in Warren managed to make his escape. He was the son of William S. Warren who had been the bishop of Parowan for some time and was proved to be dishonest. George had learned the tricks of his father. Shortly after Warren's arrest, Franklin R. Fish was arrested for the same offence. He was a partner of Warren's and was doubtless more or less implicated in the affair. He was tried later on and acquitted, but Warren kept out of the way until the matter had died down, and never was tried. He never came back to Utah to live. Soon after Franklin was arrested, Joseph A. Young came to me and told me that he thought there was something good about my brother, and said that he was a brave man and something ought to be done to save him from the life or path that he had fallen into. Although there were no convictions made in this wholesale stealing of stock, the ring was broken up, for of course there were others implicated in it, and the moral atmosphere was purified to some extent. Some of those who were supposed to be connected in the affair changed their course of life and became excellent citizens. Franklin had his examination on March 10 before Samuel H. Rogers, Justice of the Peace, and was acquitted, but was indicted later on. Adamson, Christian, and Browne were his attorneys.

Jesse N. Smith who had been to the legislature returned during the last days of February and on the 1st of March gave us a sketch of things in Salt Lake City and the working of the governor against the Saints. The two factions were not in harmony, the governor vetoed almost every bill the legislature passed.

The 11th of March was my daughter Josephine's 14th birthday, so we had a social party of the young folks at my place.

During the Indian troubles I had lost my team, they and my cow being driven off in one of the raids. I had let William Fowler take my team just before they were stolen to haul wood on shares. He ran races with the team and

broke the wagon all up so I was left without team, wagon, or cattle. I had been in the store so long that I had got out of the way of farming and when I went to work in the mill another clerk was engaged for the store.

My employment was no longer regular, the mill was not run in the winter and the making of lath was not of any consequence as a source of employment. About this time I received a proposition from my brother-in-law Edward W. Thompson at Beaver to go over there and take his store to tend. Thinking that this probably would be for the best I went over to Beaver on the 12th to fix up the contract. The next day I looked over the situation and we fixed up a contract that I would take his store and tend it for \$1,000 per year, or in that proportion if I did not stay the full year. I started in with the business on the 14th.

The store had been a partnership business between Shipp and Thompson, Shipp had drawn out so much of his interest in the store that Thompson was not satisfied, so he took the whole business and paid Shipp off what interest he had in the business.

March 15, I attended meeting and spoke a short time. There seemed to be a good spirit prevailing but there were many in the place who have apostatized. There being so many apostates, outsiders, and government officials working against the saints has caused quite a strong feeling against them in Beaver.

The 22nd of March being the anniversary of my wedding day brought up many reflections, and I confess that I was a little lonesome. I thought of moving some of my family over, but it costs to rent and the city property was very high.

I boarded with my sister Julia. She and her husband have left the church and are quite bitter, they have nothing good to say about the church or its authorities, which makes me feel a little out of place. Still they are very kind to me and do all they can to make me feel at home.

My labors in the store have not been very heavy thus far as the stock of goods that was on hand when I came over was not large, but I have been arranging and looking over it to see what was needed and I expect to put in a new stock soon. I also spent some time in arranging and fixing up the accounts and trying to get things squared up.

My wife Mary came over on the 24th, I was greatly pleased to see her. She had been very poorly so much that her lively and genial disposition coupled with her very fine efforts to brave the world had endeared her to me. She remained one day, then returned home. While she was over we looked over the situation about her moving over and we decided to get a place.

The next day I looked around and purchased a lot from Daniel Tyler for \$275 and got the deed for the place the following day. I put out some trees, etc. on the lot.

April 9, I went over to Parowan with Pres. John R. Murdock and arrived there about noon. I found the family as well as usual, Mary was never very well but always cheerful.

Pres. Young and party had just arrived from the south. Meeting was held in the afternoon which I attended. Pres. George A. Smith, Angus M. Cannon, and some others spoke. The subject was the United Order. There was a meeting in the evening at which the same subject was spoken on. The next day at 10 A.M. the same subject was spoken on a great deal. Pres. Young seemed very anxious to get this subject before the people and to get the Order established. At 2 P.M. (April 10) meeting was again held and an organization of the United Order was made for Parowan Stake. William H. Dame was elected President of the United Order, Jesse N. Smith Vice President, and William Adams Secretary. (I was nominated but declined on account of my work at Beaver.) At the meeting in the evening a paper was drawn up and the majority of the men signed to go into the United Order. The plan was to have all property belong to the Order and all work together like one family. Many signed the paper that I had thought would not sign, and some signed who did not work in it as they should. The plan of having everything belong to the Order had a tendency of making many indifferent about taking care of the property, for the rule held good in this case that what is everybody's business is nobody's business. Some shirked when there was an opportunity, while the willing ones were left to carry the burden. These with kindred causes had their effect and the Order in many places soon went down. It was established for the purpose of uniting the people in their interest in temporal things especially, that we might have a more common interest in each others welfare, and to prevent people from allowing the spirit of speculation to get possession of them. Most of the people it appeared were too selfish for this, and some

claimed that the Order held them back so they did not have a chance to go ahead as they wished. Some for various causes became indifferent and careless about company property, much of which was not taken care of as it should have been, and it was soon found that there would have to be a change in the principles or in the men before it would work satisfactorily. The principles no doubt were correct but the people did not know how to work it out.

The next day after meeting, I returned to Beaver with Pres. John H. Murdock. We went along in company with Pres. Young and party, arriving in Beaver about 3 P.M. where meeting was held in the evening.

On the 12th meeting was held at Beaver at 10 A.M. and at 2 P.M. where the subject of the United Order was presented about as it had been at Parowan. An organization of the Order was effected, John R. Murdock was chosen president of the Order. It worked here as it did in many other places, some started out with considerable faith and worked to make it a success while others hung back and did little. The machinery did not work very smoothly with some half hearted and selfish hanging back and adding their influence in the wrong direction. With these drawbacks the people became discouraged and soon gave it up.

April 19, there was a load of goods came in today for the store. This helped to liven up the trade, which had been rather dull as money appeared to be scarce.

I have been up to the Post which was named Fort Cameron. I spent a short time with Lawyer Brown, who appeared to be quite a gentleman. He was raised in the south and had inherited many of the generous, frank, and sociable qualities of that people. He was addicted to drink, which was probably the principal cause of his early death. His partner, Captain Beale, was a man devoid of principle and also addicted to drink. Colonel Wilkins was a kind of inoffensive man who did not wish to infringe on any man's rights, he had been in the service for thirty years and was quite gray.

My brother-in-law Mahonri M. Steele came along on May 1st on his way to Salt Lake City, he was going up to get him another wife. My daughter Mary Josephine was going along with them. I made arrangements to go with him also as I wished to go to the city to make some purchases of goods.

We started on the next day and traveled as far as Dog Valley. The young lady that he had along was Mary Ellen Jeppson.

On the 3rd we got as far as Corn Creek for dinner and in the afternoon we went a little past Fillmore. We reached Provo about noon on the 7th.

Here I left Bro. Steele and the others, took the train a little after noon, and reached Salt Lake City at 4 P.M. I stopped with my cousin John Leavitt while I was in the city. The next day I made a few purchases at the Z. C. M. I.

I attended the session of conference which had been adjourned until this date because Pres. Young had been south. The speakers were Wilford Woodruff, Erastus Snow, Joseph Young, and President Young. Apostle Snow said in his remarks that large dividends tended to corrupt men. President Young said a man could not give up his agency, it could only be directed. I had heard many speak on this subject but had never heard it explained right. At the meeting in the afternoon Pres. George A. Smith spoke mostly on the subject of building temples, Pres. Daniel H. Wells spoke on the subject of the United Order.

I did some trading at F. Auerback and Brothers.

In the evening there was a torch light procession of the fire department, Bro. Steele arrived in the city this evening.

May 9, I attended the meetings. The main subject was the United Order. In the afternoon there was an organization of the United Order and the officers were elected. It was said that some of the rich opposed it for fear the poor would be benefitted by their means, and many of the poor feared that the Order would make slaves of them.

May 10, Having finished up my business and made the purchase of about \$3,000 worth of merchandise, I started on my return to Beaver. I took the train at 7 A.M. and went to Provo. My cousin Orilla Brown was on the train so I had a pleasant visit with her on the road. From Provo I took the stage to Payson where we had dinner. We reached

Chicken Creek about 11 P.M. and changed drivers. It was rather cold for this time of year and I passed a rather miserable night. We arrived in Fillmore where we had a late breakfast. Owing to a failure of the mails to connect on time, we layed over until 2 P.M., then started west across the desert country and after traveling all night reached Riverside a little before day. Here we got our breakfast for which they charged me one dollar for a little bit of food. We reached Beaver about 10 A.M. The coach was a very poor one, so I was quite tired from my continued work and riding day and night. John Gilmore, one of he proprietors of the line, was a passenger part of the way, and according to his own story about himself he was as corrupt a man morally as I ever met, he was a disgrace to any decent community.

On the 16th I went over to Parowan to make the folks a short visit, I attended meeting the next day and spoke on a few items of conference news.

I returned to Beaver on the 18th, going over with the mail which ran in the night. When I was out of the store Thompson or his wife looked after the trade. A few of the goods that I purchased came in on the 22nd, and the balance was to follow in a few days.

On the morning of the 7th of June my wife Mary came in from Parowan on the mail. She returned on the 9th.

June 8, the saints here are holding their semiannual conference, but there are quite a number of apostates.

Some time ago my brother-in-law Edward W. Thompson married a second wife, Miss Anna A. Lee, daughter of John P. Lee. They did not live together very long, they separated and he later left the church. I met her during this conference.

As the trade in the store is not very rushing, I spend my idle time reading and studying law. I have free access to Adamson and Christian's law office and their books, so I am trying to make myself acquainted with the law.

1874
Chapter 39
The Anti-Mormons at Work - I Study Law

Beaver was full of apostates as well as a large number of gentiles and the feeling against the Mormons as quite bitter. The starting of the Order seemed to increase their hatred against the saints, and the main subject on the streets was the Mormon question. Oaths and vile epithets were heard against the saints on every corner and it was a common saying that they ought to be hung. The apostates were even worse than the gentiles. They were constantly predicting that the church would be broken up in a short time, and they were working hard to accomplish it. Jacob S. Boreman, Judge of the district, was not doing very much in his court. He was just as anxious as anyone to fight the Mormons, he kept adjourning his court and waiting for congress to pass some law that would help the people out in their fight against the saints. Things began to look very dark for the people, from outward appearances it would not be long before it would be next to an impossibility for a Mormon to live in the place, and they would not be allowed to if the apostates had their way.

About this time General Morrow came down to inspect the work that was going on at the Post. He seemed a perfect gentleman but was strongly prejudiced against the Mormons and his visit no doubt added or encouraged the ring in its persecutions and war on the saints. The principal business men who did not belong to the church took a strong stand against the saints and particularly those who had joined the Order. The doctor at the Post said he would not doctor any who had joined the Order for less than about five times the amount that he would anyone else. The Superintendent of the Mine at Star said he would not hire a man on his works at any price who had joined the Order. William Lefever, a Mormon from Parowan, went to the doctor at the Post with his wife who was sick to get some advice or medical treatment for her, the ailment was supposed to have been a cancer. When the doctor learned that they were Mormons he told Lefever in a very slurring and sarcastic manner to take his wife and lay hands on her. Lefever said he would do so. They went home and she recovered and lived to raise a large family. The quartermaster said that he would not award a single contract to a man who belonged to the Order. There seemed to be a united effort to work against the Latter Day Saints as a people. There were two of my old neighbors living at Beaver at this time, George W. Crouch who had taught school in Parowan and John M. Coombs. They had apostatized and joined in the cry against the saints. They often said that it was a Godsend that the Methodists and others of the various denominations had come to the country to save the apostates and gentiles from insult and oppression from the hands of the Mormons.

Along about the middle of July there was talk of some of the soldiers at the post being ordered away. Judge Boreman telegraphed to President Grant to have them remain. The ring, as a certain clique was termed, wanted them to remain to assist in the prosecution of the saints. It looked very contemptible in a Federal Official like Judge Boreman to go out of his way to assist in the prosecution of the Mormons. It is hoped that he will get his reward as a missionary judge.

June 17, I received a letter stating that my wife Mary had gone over to Panguitch on a visit to her brother M. M. Steele, and on the 23rd I went over to Parowan where I found my mother-in-law Mrs. Steele. I had not seen her for two years, and I was pleased to meet her for she was not like most relatives of this class. She was one of my very best friends and we were always on the very best terms with each other.

While in Parowan I fixed up the minutes of the Iron County Coal Company and made out some certificates of shares. I returned to Beaver on the night of the 25th on the mail.

June 23, We received word by telegraph that the "Poland Bill" had passed both houses of Congress. This was a bill gotten up especially for Utah. It changed our jury law and was calculated to work against the saints and polygamists especially, this being the main thing that they were intending to reach by this special legislation for Utah.

On the 27th there was an auction sale of some government property at the Post. Most of the things were sold quite cheap, E. W. Thompson bought a few things for the store.

July 4, the Nation's birthday was celebrated with considerable enthusiasm by both parties, the Saints and the gentiles, there were two celebrations of the day. The Mormons had their celebration in town, while the gentiles or "Liberals" as most of them styled themselves, held theirs up at the Post. Quite a number of miners from the surrounding mines came in to spend the day, but all went up to the Post. Owing to the bitter feeling of the gentiles

and apostates, some had fears of trouble but all passed off quietly though it was a deplorable thing to witness a community being so divided that they could not celebrate the nation's birthday together.

The Liberals still kept up their talk and bitter feeling against the Mormons and almost the entire talk on the streets was against that people. They were constantly recounting and rehearsing the imaginary swindles, crimes of various character, and murders which they laid at the doors of the Mormons.

On the 8th Hyrum H. Clawson passed through the place on his way north, he had been south on railroad business. There are rumors afloat that a railroad will soon be constructed as far south as Iron City.

About the 16th some of the soldiers that were stationed at the Post left for Arizona and others took their place.

I stayed in the store and read law all the time I had to spare, but I had ample opportunity to witness the increasing bitterness of the Liberal party, and it looked at times impossible to keep things from coming to an outbreak and clash resulting in the shedding of blood.

I went over to Parowan on the 23rd and spent the 24th with my family. In the forenoon the children had a jubilee which I attended. There was a party in the evening that I went to, this was my last party with my wife Mary.

The Order in Parowan was doing only fairly well, there were some becoming dissatisfied and things were not working as smooth as they should.

I returned to Beaver on the 26th on horse back. It rained considerable during the day so I got quite wet, which gave me a cold that lasted for a few days.

About this time the Liberal party, who were mostly carpet baggers and apostate Mormons, were making quite a stir about the coming election. They were holding a great many meetings at which fiery speeches were made against the Mormons and Brigham Young in particular. They resorted to all manner of stories and lies to create trouble wherever they could. Lorenzo D. Watson came over from Parowan to get some Liberal tickets printed for Iron county. A few Liberals were trying to do something in that county but they were not many and their influence did not reach very far.

The election came off on August 3, and the Liberals were quite busy at the polls. Three of their number, Crouch, Brown, and Hawley, stayed at the polls all day for the purpose of challenging voters. They got Crouch to help the lawyers as he had been a Mormon and knew about everyone in the place. I was not allowed to vote, not being a resident of the precinct. Notwithstanding the great efforts of the Liberals they were badly defeated. They only got about one vote in ten. They however made more noise and trouble than the other nine tenths. Their endeavor to change the affairs of Beaver was a grand failure.

My work in the store was not very crowding, Thompson was a Liberal and I thought that this kept many of the saints from dealing at his store. I had much leisure time which I spent in reading law.

On the 9th I went down through the fields, harvesting had just commenced and there was only an average crop, but the hay was better. One noticeable feature was that in many places where the land had been dry and covered with sage brush that water had come up seeping from the ditches and irrigation. This was forming meadow land so that the pasture and hay land was increasing wonderfully for this dry country.

About August 15, United States Marshal George R. Maxwell arrived in Beaver. He came down from Salt Lake city to arrange for the running of the court under the new law, the Poland Bill, as it was called. He soon commenced to stir things up, and on the 17th he arrested John E. Lloyd for illegal voting. Lloyd had his naturalization papers from the Probate Court. In early days in Utah the Probate Courts issued these papers but the U. S. Officials would not credit these papers as valid or good. Lloyd had voted on these papers, and he was held to answer the charge in \$500 bonds.

The next day Austin Shipp was arrested on a charge of polygamy. Maxwell said he was going to raise hell with the Mormons, and it appeared that he was doing his best to make his word good and to make all the trouble he could for them.

Shipp had his examination before James R. Wilkins who was a commissioner. The case was laid over for lack of evidence or witnesses on the part of the prosecution. Wilkins was clerk of the court and later committed suicide. He was bitter against the Mormons.

My sister, Julia, had been caring for mother for some time and on August 22 I took her over to Parowan to look after her. My wife Mary was not able to take care of her but my wife Eliza cared for her and did an excellent part, and no one ever excelled her in caring for the helpless and rendering assistance where needed. Mother had been failing ever since Father died and then she had a stroke which rendered her helpless, it also affected her speech so that it was very difficult to understand her. She required a great deal of attention, so we children aided each other in taking care of her.

I went back to Beaver on the 23rd, taking my wife with me. I then resumed my labors in the store.

About this time there were some preparations being made for the September term of court, such as the summoning of witnesses and jurors. The case of Austin Shipp came up again, but as there was not much evidence against him the case was again laid over. This case created much excitement and the court room was filled with anxious spectators watching what was to be done. There were several lawyers present from Salt Lake City.

The District Court convened on September 7. It took about the entire day to get the grand jury impaneled for all who had any conscientious scruples about indicting for polygamy were thrown off the jury.

The Shipp case again came up this evening, his attorneys proffered to give bail to await the action of the grand jury. When court opened on the 8th, a motion was made to dismiss the jury on the grounds that they were not legally impaneled. The motion was over ruled. The judge then charged the jury, and as one of the attorneys said, when he did charge he charged like hell.

He told the jury that they should first inquire into U. S. business such as mail robbery, illegal voting, counterfeiting, etc. He then came to Polygamy and said that in this territory it was practiced with impunity against the laws of the U.S.; that Brigham Young had preached it knowing it to be unlawful and when he came to face the law he denied having but the one lawful wife; that the legislature had done all in its power to prevent free schools and had tried to stop him when he tried to have a jury; that it was the policy to check all advancement in civilization, etc. He told the jury that if they could not find indictments for polygamy, they should try and find them for lascivious cohabitation under our statutes; that polygamy must be stopped and hoped that the jurors would do their duty before a more rigorous law should be passed. He then referred to the Mountain Meadow Massacre and some other crimes. He then went on to the blood atonement, and of favorites having large tracts of land granted to them contrary to law. He said that the law for voting in this territory was the best to practice fraud under of any that he knew of. The above shows a few points of the judge's charge to the jury, and it showed plainly in his charge his bitterness against the church and the Mormon people. No man ever sat on the judicial bench that was more prejudiced against the saints than Jacob S. Boreman. His remarks were insulting and some of them untruthful. After all this tirade of abuse heaped upon the church and Mormons, the jury was found to be defective, some of the jurymen not being able to read or write; so that body had to be reorganized and then he delivered to them a second dose of abusing the Mormons.

During the term of court there were two men who had some difficulty over a mining suit that was in court, these men began shooting at each other near a crowd of sixty men who were standing near the court house, which endangered the lives of the bystanders. One of them was killed and the other, James Hedges, was wounded. This was on the 15th and on the 17th my brother Franklin came in and was arrested on the charge which had been up before the Justice in Parowan and was discharged there.

On the 24th Erastus Snow and George Q. Cannon came in from the south, Silas S. Smith came in with them. The next morning Bro. Snow returned south and Bro. Cannon went on north.

The Grand Jury was still in session and was grinding out several indictments. The jury was trying to pry into all the little and obscure incidents of an early date.

Daniel Page, one of the jurors, came to me and tried to find out about a murder that was said to have been committed soon after Parowan was settled. I was told that a man came into Parowan and that word was sent from the north to arrest him as he had gotten into trouble. I believe it was a girl affair. The man was arrested and brought before an officer who asked him which he would choose to do; be sent back to the north, or be sent over the Rim of the Basin and there run the risk of getting to California. He chose the latter so five or six men went to escort him over the rim, and it was rumored that they killed the man a little south of Cedar City and that Samuel Gould was one of the escorts. There was a report that one other or perhaps two had been sent over the rim in this way and that Gould was a party to these. Page tried to work this up, but I could tell him very little more than he knew as he lived in Parowan and doubtless had heard something of these stories years before.

September 26, I got word that my folks were quite sick so I went over to Parowan with John H. Henderson, traveling in the night and getting there about daylight. On reaching home I found them somewhat better and I returned to Beaver in a couple of days.

During the summer I had spent all my leisure time in reading and studying law, and during this term of court I made application to be admitted to the bar as an attorney at law. The court appointed R. T. Beale, D. P. Whedon, and John W. Christian as a committee to examine me on my qualifications, which was done and I was sworn in as an attorney. My license was signed by the judge and dated September 26.

A telegram came to Beaver on October 22 that the Fish and Warren Saw mill had blown up and killed Oscar M. Lyman, son of Amasa M. Lyman, and Francis Westbrook. Three others were injured. Both the men killed left families.

I had received several letters from home stating that my wife Mary was having very poor health, and on the 29th I got word that she was worse. I went home and on reaching there I found my wife and baby quite sick, so I made arrangements to stay with the family for a few days.

1874
Chapter 40
Death of My Wife Mary

On November 7, President Young and party arrived in Parowan and the next day Pres. George A. Smith held three meetings, Pres. Young had the rheumatism so he did not attend.

Dr. Seymour B. Young was along with the party and I got him to go over and see my wife. He said she had a bad case of heart disease. He gave me some medicine with directions on how to give it, for which I paid him his bill of ten dollars.

Her father came in from Toquerville and stayed all night, he was on his way to Salt Lake City. He went on the next day, and the President's party went on south.

While I was in Parowan I assisted Bro. Jesse N. Smith to post up and balance the store books, also the Coop. stock herd books.

On the 15th I went over to Beaver, taking my wife Mary with me as I thought the trip might help her some. She stood the ride very well and we returned on the 18th.

While I was at Beaver I did what I could in fixing up the accounts, Thompson and his wife had done the selling while I was away.

About this time there was much excitement over the arrest of John D. Lee whom the Deputy Marshal had captured at Panguitch. This took place about the time that Pres. Young was in Parowan. Collins R. Hakes told me that he got word that the Marshal had learned that Lee was over there and was going after him, and he went to Pres. Young and told him of it and that if he, the President, said so, he, Hakes, would go across to Panguitch and tell Lee to get out of there. the President would have nothing to do with it but let the law take its course. The arrest of Lee was a starter and William H. Dame was arrested on the 18th by Deputy Marshal William Stokes on an indictment for the Mountain Meadow Massacre. Dame was taken to Beaver the next day. The Deputy Marshal got some of the noted thieves and whisky bloats in the country to assist him in his work, and it became a common saying that if prosecution was started against a cattle thief he would come out a Deputy Marshal. Daniel Page was very pleased at the arrest of William H. Dame and tried to get them to take Dame to his house to be guarded.

December 11, my wife's father, John Steele, came in from the north. Mary was still growing worse, and it was soon seen that her hours were numbered. She died on the morning of the 12th at twenty minutes to six. Her death was a heavy blow to me. She had been a kind and loving wife and an affectionate mother. She left six children, a husband, and many relatives to mourn her untimely departure. She would have been thirty-four years old on the 23rd of the month. She was five feet two inches tall, weighed about 120 pounds being rather heavy set. She had very light brown hair, dark eyes, and a very white transparent skin. She was of a very sociable disposition, very good company, being rather quick witted. She was very ambitious, high minded, and an incessant worker; she despised anything low or mean, her social disposition never failed to win friends wherever she was placed. Her father was with us when she passed away and her mother was sent for at once and came up that day. My sister Julia came over from Beaver to attend the funeral which took place at the meeting house at 2 P.M. on the 13th. Bro. Jesse N. Smith and Edward Dalton were the speakers. She was interred in the Parowan cemetery where many kind friends and relatives followed her to her last resting place.

On the 15th I went over to Beaver as a witness in a trial. As I entered the court room, John Ward Christian, one of the attorneys with whom I had long been acquainted, took my hand and got me a seat with such a sympathetic grasp as if he would say I sympathize with you in your loss. His expression and greeting showed that he had the milk of human kindness within him, it was a greeting that I never forgot. It may have been a small affair but it is small things that show the stuff men are made of. I returned home on the 17th.

While my children were left without a mother, no children were ever left in this condition under more favorable circumstances as to care and attention. My wife Eliza had no children of her own and she was more than a mother in

every respect where it was possible to be so. Her undivided attention was bestowed on Mary's children, and no one could have done more.

The weather was quite cold, but little snow. The winter was passing about as other winters had gone by for most of the people, but as for me it was a dreary and lonesome one.

I had given up my work at Beaver on account of my wife's sickness and death, and now I felt that I ought to be at home more with the children.

I had lost my team and wagon had been broken up, and I was left at the foot of the ladder to commence again.

On the 21st I went over to Beaver to help Thompson settle up some of his accounts and try to collect some of the debts. This I found to be very hard work as the older a debt gets the harder it is to collect.

While there I attended a concert and distribution of gifts given by the Methodist Sunday School on Christmas eve. Judge Boreman was prominent in this work. I do not suppose that I would have stood as well with him and some of the attorneys, but he and Thompson were great friends and as I was a relative, they always treated me with the greatest respect. I returned home on the 27th.

On December 28 I went up to the Coop. saw mill to work for a few days. William Hobbs and his brother had got out some logs and had arranged to get the use of the mill to saw them out, and they got me to go up and do the work of sawing. I spent New Years day sawing thirty-one logs. There were about 150 logs in all which we finished in a few days and returned home January 6, 1875.

On the 8th I went over to Beaver and took two of my daughters with me. I spent a few days helping Thompson with his accounts and in collecting a few debts. We returned on the 13th. I made another trip over there on the 25th and returned on the 29th. During the intervals while I was at home I did little.

I attended to a little matter for my brother and occasionally helped Bro. Jesse N. Smith with the Coop books.

I went to Beaver again on the 31st as a witness in a law suit and returned February 2.

February 3, I worked on the Coop books making out some accounts, among which was a bill of items to use in a case where the store was suing Thomas Winn for a debt he was owing the store. He refused to pay it and managed to get it in such a shape that he never did pay. He acknowledged that he owed it but would not pay because the company sued him. The collecting of debts was slow business, as well as uncertain. I cite one instance, Thomas Rowley had been owing the store for some time. He brought a load of wood on the account but the balance was not paid, so the store sued him. The case was taken before William Davenport, then Justice of the Peace. John W. Brown was Rowley's attorney, who said that the debt was outlawed by the statutes of limitation. The books were presented to the justice who balanced the account back two years. That left the wood to Rowley's credit and the debt being prior to that period was thrown out. It was pled that paying the wood on the account renewed it so that it was not outlawed, but the justice ruled otherwise so the store lost the debt and paid Rowley for the wood. I looked upon this as one of the queerest decisions that I ever saw rendered in any court.

On February 10, I went over to Beaver and attended to some law business. While there I assisted Edward W. Thompson in taking an inventory of his stock of merchandise. He did not care to run the business, and I had been forced away on account of family troubles. He sold out to Philo T. Farnsworth, Jr.

I returned home on the 17th, and on the 22nd I attended to a case in the justice's court for Edward Wilcox. It was settled satisfactorily to Wilcox, if not to the other party.

On February 27 Sidney R. Burton, my brother Franklin, and I started out west to look for some lead ore that I had noticed when I was out that way in 1857. We went through the Gap at the foot of the lake and then turning a little to the north we traveled near to the spot and camped. The next day was a stormy one and we looked over the ground some but we didn't accomplish much because of the storm. The following day we returned home. It was one of the

worst and most disagreeable days of the season, so we failed to discover anything. I cared little for the lead mine, if there was one, but I went with Burton as he wanted to hunt it up.

March 9, There was a kind of reorganization of the United Order. I was a member then. This meeting was to organize under the statutes of the territory. The capital stock was fixed at \$75,000. There were eleven directors elected (by ballot): William Adams, Jesse N. Smith, Samuel H. Rogers, Joseph Fish, Charles Adams, William C. Mitchell, William C. McGregor, Thomas Durham, Thomas Davenport, George Holyoak, Jr., and Lars Mortensen. We did what business we thought necessary to conform with the law. The next day the directors met and organized, some business was done, but the people did not take hold of the Order with much spirit. They were afraid of it.

During the latter part of the month and the forepart of April I worked for Bro. Neils Mortensen, putting up a frame house or an addition to a house.

April 10 Sidney R. Burton and I started for Beaver to attend the District Court. There was little business done at this time. The main item to attract attention was some arguments on the John D. Lee case. This however was laid over until July. The federal officials seemed to have lost some of their prestige, Judge McKean had been removed and that seemed to have quite an effect upon the Liberals and they seemed much more quiet and sober than usual. I returned home on the 15th.

On April 16, I attended a meeting of the High Council, Mrs. William Adams brought an appealed case from Bishop Rogers' court before the council which was heard and settled satisfactorily.

The next day the Council met and took up the case of Daniel P. Clark who was a member of the council. Some of the members spoke and said that they did not think that Clark ought to continue to be a member of the council as he did not endorse all of the doctrines of the church. Daniel P. Clark then made his statement, in which he said that he did not believe much in revelation. Several members of the council spoke on the case. Pres. Jesse N. Smith said in his remarks that he felt delicate about judging men. He had a dream in which he saw many whom he knew go up to the gate which led to the celestial kingdom and saw some who he thought would go through without a doubt turned back, and some who he had thought would not be able to go through were admitted. This convinced him that he was not qualified to judge men. After some remarks on the case, Daniel P. Clark was suspended from the High Council.

1875
Chapter 41
Some Legal Notes and Mill Work

On April 18 I went over to Beaver for the purpose of attending the District Court. The next day the case of John E. Lloyd came up, he was charged with illegal voting. He had voted on papers of naturalization issued by the Probate Court. The defense offered proof that he had voted in Nevada on these papers and that they were held good there, but the judge would not allow this evidence to go before the jury; he was acquitted however. The suit was doubtless like many others brought to bother our people. This suit cost Lloyd about all he had, being a poor man it about broke him up.

The Shipp case through some ruling of the supreme court died out I believe.

The next day a man by the name of Bacon was tried for larceny. He was convicted and sentenced to the penitentiary for a term of three years.

On the 21st the case of my brother Franklin R. Fish came up. The prosecution called one witness who apparently knew little about the case, after which the prosecution stated that the principal witness in the case was away, and that he had filed to make a case and submitted it to the jury. The jury then signed a verdict of not guilty without leaving their seats. D. P. Whedon was for the prosecution and R. T. Beale, O. F. Strickland, and Joseph Fish for the defense. The trouble that led to this prosecution grew out of the firm of Fish and Warren taking cattle to Nevada to sell, many of which did not belong to them. Warren was not an honest man and Franklin being in partnership with him, it was naturally supposed that he should bear his share of the theft. While there was nothing proved against Franklin R. Fish, I have thought that he was implicated in the affair more than he should have been. This trial and other things connected with the case broke him up. Warren ran away, the partnership was broken up, and the mill blowing up and other things left him quite destitute as to money. When he started out in business he took what cattle father had and for a time seemed to prosper, but bad speculations, plunging deeper into speculations than he should, together with an extravagant wife soon brought him to the foot of the ladder. Soon after this he went in partnership with the Thompson boys, but they were not cattle men and this business was closed out. He later went to Klondike but made little. Returning, he located in Oregon. He never did anything in the church capacity. When a boy he was always counted as strictly honest and truthful, but as he grew older he cared less for religion. He stated to me once that Mother talked to him too much on religion which disgusted him on that point. After the trial I returned home.

On April 25, my oldest son Joseph Campbell Fish was baptize by William C. McGregor and confirmed by William Holyoke. This being Sunday, John A. West who had been on a mission to the Sandwich Islands, gave a report of his labors in that field.

On May 1, Jesse N. Smith, I, and several members of the High Council went down to Cedar City where a meeting was held in the afternoon and evening, and the next day two meetings were held which we attended and spoke at. We returned home on the evening of the 2nd.

On May 3rd, I went up Little Creek Canyon to go to work on Thompson's mill, but when I arrived there I found that part of the main belt was gone. I suppose that it had been stolen by Indians, so I returned the same day.

The next day I succeeded in obtaining a belt and returned to the mill. George Halterman was the sawyer and I sent for him. We soon fixed up the mill and commenced sawing.

On the 10th I got my hand cut on the saw, cutting two fingers on my right hand, one nearly off. I went home in the evening and the next day I got a man to help us and returned to the mill and went to work, my hand bothered me some but I got along better than one would expect.

Some of us took the opportunity of going up on Little Creek Peak Sunday, the 16th, as we did not run the mill on Sundays. Arriving at the top we had a most magnificent view of the surrounding country, the valley of the Sevier on the east and the Parowan valley on the west were spread out like a map before us, which made a very beautiful view. After sawing out what logs there were in the yard we returned home on the 23rd.

On June 1, I went up to the Coop saw mill to get ready to saw. While up there in the mountains I worked at peeling tan bark. I sawed some during the month.

There was not such sale for lumber as the mill was not run all the time and we only had about half enough help to run as it ought to have been to make the lumber that it would have made.

I went to town occasionally and spent my thirty fifth birthday at home, taking dinner with the family but returned to the mill in the evening.

The season so far had been dry and the rabbits did much damage to the crops and these pests seemed to increase. Steps were taken to kill them off, hunts were gotten up and thousands of them were killed, but it did not appear that they were greatly diminished.

July 3, Several members of the High Council, including myself, went to Cedar City, Meeting was held in the afternoon which I attended and in the evening there was a meeting of the High Council. The next day (Sunday) meeting was held which we attended, all of us spoke during these meetings. We returned home in the afternoon.

As the 4th came on Sunday the national holiday was not celebrated until the 5th, and then it seemed to be celebrated with less spirit than usual on such occasions. I went back to the mill to work on the 6th.

July 10, I was sent for by Attorney George C. Bates who was defending William H. Dame in the Mountain Meadow case. Bates was trying to get up material witnesses for the defense in the case and wanted to look over the military record of the Iron Military District, and as I had kept that record he had sent for me so he could look it over. We went over the records very carefully, especially during the period of the massacre and a little before and after. Bates said after looking over the papers that he thought that he could clear Dame on the record alone while all orders apparently were recorded, there was not one that had any bearing on the case. Bates was very affable and kind and appeared to be a kind of political lawyer.

After this I went back to the mill and resumed my work.

About this time there commenced to be considerable excitement about John D. Lee turning states evidence in the Mountain Meadow Massacre case. It was thought by some that he would lay the blame of that affair at the doors of the leaders of the church, and would bring in Wm. H. Dame as being responsible for a large part of that affair if thereby he could save his own neck from the gallows. There are many however who do not put any confidence in what he says or may divulge as the guards, and those who are trying to get him to confess kept him drunk most of the time for the purpose of getting him to say something to implicate others. Generally when they commenced questioning him he breaks down and cries, so they get little that could be relied on that has any bearing on the case.

During all these times of excitement there was one thing of a far different nature that had been going on for quite a long period and at about this time was at its height, and that was Spiritualism which had taken a strong hold on many. I presume that Amasa M. Lyman was in a measure one whose influence aided it in the start. His wife and Ebenezer Hanks' wife Jane were the two leading spirits in this and they had their meetings as a general thing at Hanks' house as he was away a great deal. This may have been the case. However there were about five or six who were greatly taken up with it and they gathered around the table so I was told and would make it dance and call up dead friends and talk to them. They came to me and wanted me to go over and talk with my wife Mary. They said they had called her up and talked with her and thought I would like to talk with her. I did not have any faith in their talking with the dead so I didn't go. I thought if Mary wanted to talk to me she could come to me as easily as she could go to them. This rage over these meetings and circles as they termed them did not last a great while but gradually died out and went among the forgotten humbugs that we have encountered so many times since the church was established.

July 23, I went down to town, but there was no celebration on the 24th, as was common with us. My sister Julia came over from Beaver with her son Edward W. Thompson Jr. who had been east attending college; they took dinner with me on the 24th.

The trial of John D. Lee started at Beaver on July 23. The prosecution refused to take his evidence and allow him to turn states evidence, so he was put on trial. The Jury however disagreed and he was held over to be tried again.

Our election came off on August 2, I was the clerk at Parowan. Two of the Liberals, Daniel Page and Lorenzo D. Watson, stayed at the polls all day challenging voters. After all their trouble the liberal ticket only got twenty-two votes which was not much more than one tenth of the votes cast.

On August 21, I went down to town as Apostle Erastus Snow and some others had come up to Parowan. They held meeting at which the subject of the United Order was spoken on. Meeting was held the next day and the same subject was dwelt upon. After meeting baptism was offered to the Presidency and the High Council. Apostle Erastus Snow baptized some fourteen into the United Order. I was baptized by him and confirmed by A. F. MacDonald. President snow gave instructions to Jesse N. Smith (Bro. Dame was still in custody) to go with those who had been baptized and baptize the people into the United Order. These instructions were carried out and in a short time nearly all the people were baptized into the United Order. This seemed to strengthen many and to give new life to them, at least for a short time, but all were more or less aroused to the necessity of living as Latter Day Saints.

On August 24, I started south to make a short visit with relatives and friends, taking all the family along. We went as far as Kannarah the first day where we stopped and visited with James Stapley and family. The next day we went on to Toquerville where we spent two very pleasant days visiting with Bro. Steele and family, feasting on peaches, grapes, etc.

The peach and apple crop was not very good owing to late frosts, but the grape crop was very good and the people were making considerable wine of which they were drinking quite freely. In some instances they were making drunkards of their sons as well as themselves.

On the 28th we started on our return and reached home the next day after a pleasant visit, but we found the roads quite dry and dusty.

During the fall I worked most of the time at the mill and in the fore part of November we moved the mill five miles, or over to the north end of the valley where the Hosier Meadow stream sinks. There I put up the mill, sawed out a little lumber, roofed in the mill, and fixed up things for the winter as we would not saw any more until late in the spring. John Lowder assisted me in moving and putting up the mill. We returned to town November 15.

Shortly after coming down I took a case for James Applegate who was suing Edward Wilcox on a note, John W. Brown assisted me and John Ward Christian from Beaver was Wilcox's attorney. We spent several days on the case and had a hard fight but finally got judgment for all that we asked. This was a test case on one of a number of notes that Wilcox had given for timber claims. This case and others similar going against Wilcox and his crookedness in this and other affairs was the cause of breaking him up and his valuable saw mill soon passed into other hands.

1875-1876
Chapter 42
Starting Another Order

On December 13, I started to teach a term of school, this was for three months, four weeks in a month. They had torn down the old log meeting house and had built out of it two school houses a little north of the old fort, one on the east side of the block and one on the west side. I taught in the east house. It is probable that I would not have attempted to teach but my wife's long illness and losing my team and then the mill work that I had followed was shut off in the winter so there was but little that I could do to earn a penny. The room was somewhat better fitted up than the one that I had before. I had about fifty scholars, and I got along as well as I could have expected.

January 1876 was a cold month and the winter was one of the worst that we had for several years. The amusements were about as usual, theaters and dancing, But we generally had something else to attract attention for a short period and this winter we had the gypsies. They came along the forepart of the year and the young folks as well as some older ones got quite excited over their getting their fortunes told. Some poor persons who could ill afford it paid as high as five dollars to get their fortunes told, and when it was told it amounted to simply nothing. It soon was seen that they had worse than thrown their money away for they had helped to sustain a fraud.

The winter being uncommonly severe there was but little done in the way of out door work. On February 20 Bishop Henry Lunt and a few others of the brethren from Cedar visited us giving us a talk at our meeting.

The Dramatic association did a little more than usual putting on a few plays in which I assisted, taking the part of Alonzo in the play of "Pizzaro" and the part of Pedro in the play of "Meralda".

On March 9 we had the worst storm of the season and on the 10, I finished my term of school. We had an examination and in the evening a party was given. Many of the pupils made a creditable showing.

About this time there was quite an excitement over the silver mines at Leeds, which had recently been opened up and were reported to be very rich. This aroused quite a number in Parowan as well as other places in the south to go out prospecting and the whole country was tramped over by the searchers for the precious metals. Some were almost wild over imaginary mines and the prospect of soon becoming enormously wealthy. For a while each one thought that he had found a rich mine but they amounted to nothing and the excitement soon died down. However, there were a very few that never gave up but kept up the prospecting at intervals I suppose as long as they lived or were able to get out in the mountains.

On March 14th there was a meeting of the members of the United Order. Some business was done and the same board of directors was reelected, I being one of the number. A report of the past year's proceedings was made and a dividend was declared upon the different departments which was as follows: On the tannery 25%, on the farm 6% and on the hay 4 ½%. the stock holders appeared to be satisfied with the results, and they had good reason to be for much of the means that was turned in was almost worthless to the owners, since few turned in property that they could handle to a good advantage. There was a lack of faith in the enterprise and the company soon broke up as it could not be carried on successfully with hard stock, so to speak, and then some were afraid that they would do more than their neighbors and that they would receive less.

On March 19 I went over to Beaver to take my mother as my sister Julia was going to care for her for a while. She was gradually getting worse and harder to understand. Julia, Sarah, and myself took care of her in turns. Jane had lived with her until she got helpless and had done a noble part but with her children she could not take care of her. Franklin was not in a position to help in that line but assisted some with means and Anna Maria had very poor health and could not do anything about taking care of her. My wife Eliza was strong and willing and did a noble part while I took care of her.

The order that had been going on was but a half way measure and it was fast falling to pieces and there was but little satisfaction in trying to work in this half way manner. It soon crumbled and went to pieces. On March 23rd a few of us who were anxious that the Order should be made a success met to see if we could arrange to work more in unity or in the Order more than we had been doing. Jesse N. Smith was elected president of the company and Joseph Fish was secretary. We were to turn in all of our property and then work together like one family but each one was to be

charged with what he drew out and each one live as he had before so that the extravagance of one would not militate or work against the others who might be more economical. We were to farm together, a price being set upon all produce, each one getting it at the same price. When there was no work in the company each one could work for himself. I worked in this order a portion of my time or when there was work that I could do, and worked for myself some of the time.

During the forepart of April I worked at making a plat of Parowan City, Cedar City, and Paragonah, showing each lot and the name of the person that it was awarded to by the court at the time of the entry of the land. It took considerable time to hunt up titles, etc. so as to find the original corners. The plat was for the county, for which they paid me \$40.

On April 23 I started for Salt Lake City for the purpose of getting a load of goods for the store. The store had a team which they used for freighting and I took this. John C. Dalton was along and two of Jesse N. Smith's daughters Adelaide and Hannah, whom we expected to marry, and this was the main object of the trip.

We reached the Beaver Ridge the first day and the next morning drove into Beaver quite early where we stopped a short time. Here my sister Julia took the opportunity of giving me a lecture on polygamy, and spoke in no gentle terms against it and the church which she said was all wrong and she wished to reclaim me from such a grand fraud. I thought that her speaking evil of the church and its doctrine did not make it so.

Going on we reached Cove Creek that night, and the next day went to Kanosh for dinner where we stopped at Columbus Freeman's. Sister Freeman was an aunt of the girls. Things at this place looked lovely, the peach trees were in full bloom. We reached Meadow Creek that night.

Journeying on we reached Cheney's ranch early in the afternoon of the 28th. Here we made arrangements to have our teams taken care of while we went to the City.

We then drove on four miles to York, then the terminus of the Rail Road, and we sent our teams back to the ranch to be cared for. There were no accommodations at the station and we sat up all night, the train not going out until morning. April 29 we took the train for the City paying \$2.00 for our tickets and reached the city at about 9 A.M.

I spent the day in making some purchases of goods for the store, and in settling up some accounts for different persons.

The next day being Sunday I took a walk up on the bench above the City where the magazine exploded a short time before. The shattered fragments that were scattered around gave proof of the terrible force of the explosion, which did much damage to the city, breaking out windows, etc. Here I had a good view of the surrounding country. The water was very high at this time and much of the land south of the city was inundated.

In the afternoon I attended meeting at the 17th Ward Meeting House. The main subjects treated upon was for the young people to go to the endowment house to get married.

On May 1, I went to the endowment house where I got Adelaide M. Smith sealed to me, after which I transacted some business at some of the stores.

I went to the land office and got a patent for Parowan City.

I made arrangements during the evening for the shipping of the goods that I had purchased, and a wagon that I had purchased for Bro. Neils Mortensen.

While in the city I stopped with Mrs. Susan West Smith, an old neighbor of ours in Parowan, and the girls aunt.

On the 2nd we started on our return taking the early morning train for York. We paid \$4.00 for our tickets, double the amount that it was coming down but that was on the market train. We reached York about noon.

I then went over to the ranch and got our teams, they had been left with Mr. Starr.

Our goods did not arrive until noon of the 3rd. We then loaded up and started out, there being more than we could haul I got a freighter to take the balance.

On the 5th we drove a little past Round Valley where we lost our teams which detained us over a day. We reached home on the 11th.

On May 15 I went up to the head of Red Creek to help fence a meadow, it was a cold time and on the night of the 17th it froze quite hard killing all the fruit or nearly so in Beaver and Iron Counties. In the early days of Parowan it was so frosty in the spring that fruit could not be raised but as the country became settled up the climate seemed to moderate so that fruit was raised nearly every year, but occasionally we had a late frost in the spring that damaged it considerably.

I returned home from the meadow on the 20th, but returned again on the 22nd to help finish fencing it. Jesse N. Smith was with me in this labor. Silas S. Smith was the principal owner of the meadow and Jesse N. Smith owned an interest in it and our Order was working out his part of the work in fencing. It was a most beautiful place in the mountains. There was about 30 acres of hay land and good pasture land adjacent to it, making it a fine place for a summer ranch.

While there, Richard Benson came on and I might say, crowded in, making a place near by.

We returned home on the 26, and on the 29 I went up to the Coop. Mill and fitted up some so as to commence sawing soon, returning home on June 3rd.

June 5th I went up to the mill to work. I took my wife Eliza, she was going to cook for the hands. I worked for awhile quite steady but generally went to town Saturday evenings and returned Sunday evenings. It was about ten miles by the way I went across the mountain between Parowan and Paragoonah.

On the 16th I attended a meeting of the High Council. Silas S. Smith presented a charge against Henry Holyoak for damages done by his sheep herd in and about the meadow. The Council heard the case and President William H. Dame gave the decision which virtually amounted to a non-suit. Brother Smith was not satisfied with the decision, and I thought it did not cover all the ground and consequently was somewhat defective but perhaps it was as well for it doubtless had some effect in checking litigation as there was a prospect of more or less litigation in consequence of the sheep intruding in different places. I returned to the mill on the 18th.

The 4th of July was celebrated with a little more spirit and zest than usual. There was a large procession in which there were 62 girls with banners. I was master of ceremonies on the occasion. In the afternoon I went down to Paragoonah where the people had prepared a supper for all the people under a bowery, a good social time was had and all enjoyed themselves. The next day I returned to the mill.

On July 22, there was a mass meeting held in Parowan for the purpose of electing delegates to attend the county convention which was to be held for the purpose of nominating candidates to be voted for at the coming election.

There were a few Liberals in the place that made considerable noise and opposition to the people, they frequently sent to the Salt Lake tribune a budget of complaints and abuse. A short time before this there was a piece in that paper supposed to have been written by a person in Parowan by the name of Cash. In the article he abused the church generally and made several false statements about some of the leading men of Parowan. The writer promised to have me and some others indicted for polygamy, and dealt out considerable abuse upon the people of the place.

I worked tolerably steady at the mill until August 5th when we closed down and I fixed up things for the winter as we did not know that we would run it any more that season. The reason for shutting down so early was the dull market for lumber. Pioche had failed to be what it was thought to be, an endless producer of silver, and we had been sending considerable lumber to that place. That market going down left us with considerable lumber on the yard so it was thought not advisable to make much more at that time, or until we disposed of some that we had on hand.

On August 7, the general election for City, County and Territorial officers came off. I was clerk of the election. It passed off quietly except the City ticket, that part being fought by the Liberals more than the other part of the ticket. They centered their opposition on the city. I suppose that they thought that they could make a point in that direction better than on the other officials or tickets. At this election I was elected Justice of the Peace for Parowan Precinct, My commission was dated August 26, 1876 and signed by George W. Emery, Governor of Utah. The vote at Parowan was rather light being only about 160 votes cast.

Soon after this election I was taken with a sore throat which was quite severe for a short time, but soon recovered and on the 15th I commenced to put up the frame for a building for the Coop. Tannery which was 44 x 25 feet and two stories high. Brother Charles Harris assisted me in the framing of the building, and we got it up by the 26th. We that were working in the order which Brother Smith and a few of us started had the means that we made on the side so to speak, but if any of it was needed in our Order for any special purpose we generally divided, getting our credit for the same.

1876-1877

Chapter 43

My Mother's Death and the Mountain Meadow Massacre Comes Up

Willie Copeland of Beaver was in the saw mill business and in moving his mill, the engine fell on him, mashing his breast down to a 4 inch space. His recovery was a miracle. He survived, but it was some time before he was able to do anything. He had just got in quite a number of logs and none of the men were able to run the mill so he telegraphed for me to go over and saw out what logs he had in the yard.

I had just got the tannery building up so I concluded to go over. I started out on the 27th of August on a horse that was none the best and I was half sick. I had to walk a part of the way so I was about used up by the time I got through. I arranged with Brother Copland about the work, he was to give me \$4.00 per day.

I went up to the mill which was on the south fork of the Beaver River and about 13 miles from town. On the 29th I fitted up the mill and started to saw when I broke the gig wheel in several pieces. We had a good blacksmith and he bent some wagon tires around and we riveted the wheel to it, pieces and all, the tire being on the inside. Albert Minerary helped me in this work and we got it done sometime during the evening.

August 30, I started up the mill again, and everything worked fine, no more trouble. Copland had a good set of hands and he set a good table and expected his men to do good work, as he stated to me before I went up. He claimed all the daylight. I sawed out what logs he had in the yard, about 180,000 feet, and went down to town on September 30. The mill was in a very pleasant locality, there was some game and many berries in the vicinity and we spent a part of our Sundays in gathering them.

On October 1, I went to James Fennamore's gallery and had my picture taken.

I met Mahonri M. Steele here in Beaver, he was here attending court, being a witness in some of the cases. The noted trial of John D. Lee had just closed (this was his second trial), he was convicted and was sentenced to be shot.

On the 2nd I attended Court, the trial of Joseph Wood for the killing of James Maxwell was in progress. In the evening John MacFarland and I got the United States Marshal, William Nelson, in the back room of the Coop. Building where they kept liquor to sell. Treating him liberally we got him fairly started and he gave us a full story of the prosecution. He stated that he and Sumner Howard were sent out to Utah to prosecute John D. Lee for the Mountain Meadow Massacre, and that when they arrived in Salt Lake City they went to Brigham Young and told him their business and asked for his assistance in the matter, that is they did not mean for him to go to work with them but to put them on the road where they could get the witnesses and evidence. The President told them that they were the first United States Officials that had ever asked him for his assistance in this case and that they should have it. He directed them where to get the evidence and who to look up as witnesses. He stated that they then went to work and hunted up the witnesses and evidence in the case, that they followed this business thoroughly, and that out of 105 witnesses that the prosecution had used in the former trial they only used one of them and that they could have done without that one but they had agreed with the defense to put that one on the stand. He intimated that the former trial and the witnesses used were more for convicting the church than they were for convicting Lee. He intimated that the church was entirely innocent of the Mountain Meadow Massacre, and said "I know more about that affair than Brigham Young, for I have hunted up the witnesses and the evidence in the case and know how it was done, and I know that he (Brigham Young) does not know as much about it as I do." It was gratifying to hear this statement from the Marshal, for all former United States Officials had tried to lay the blame of the Mountain Meadow Massacre on to President Young and George A. Smith.

I returned home the next day, and gave a portion of what I had made to our Order to help pay for a wagon that they had bought.

On October 11 I went up to the Mill and sawed out a bill of lumber and fitted up the mill so as to leave it for the winter and returned on the 20th. I worked in the store the rest of the month.

My mother had been brought over from Beaver some time previous to this and my sister Sarah was taking care of her. She had been sick for nearly six years and helpless for a greater part of that time and she was gradually getting

worse during this long period. She had, however, been a strong healthy woman up to the time of my father's death. She passed away on November 5, at 2 P.M. at the age of nearly 70 years. She had always been noted for her hospitality and generous disposition. She was ever strong in the faith of the gospel and was a true Latter Day Saint. She had been a most kind and affectionate mother, rearing her children during the period of persecution and trials that the saints went through from the settling of Nauvoo on until they found a resting place in the valleys of the mountains and then she had passed through all the trials and hardships of settling this mountain region. She and my father had toiled until their hands were knarled and the bloom had left their cheeks, but still the hills echoed back the songs of Zion that my mother sang. My nephew Horace Calvin Smith who had been sick with typhoid fever died the same day at 15 minutes past on P.M., forty five minutes before my mother. His last words were, "Come, grandma, this is the way." He was a little over 27 years old. He was a promising young man, strong and active. He left a wife and daughter. His first wife had died some years before and his second marriage was with Miss Elizabeth Benson who with an infant daughter survived him. The funeral of mother and Horace took place together on the 7th, at 2 P.M.

On the 6th, President Young and party came in from the north, they held meeting in the evening and went on south the next morning.

During the month of November I worked at various jobs about home and on December 4th I again started to teach school, I had about 40 scholars.

The Christmas holidays passed off rather dull as there was no general celebration of the day. Some of the boys, however, celebrated the day in their way by getting drunk, and were brought before me as Justice of the Peace. I fined four of them, amounting to \$38.00 in all.

January 1, 1877, came in as all other days came in their regular rotation. There was little done on the occasion as to a celebration but it was a period of spiritual awakening. The temple at St. George was to be dedicated and many of the citizens of the place had gone down there to be present on the occasion. On their return they reported that the temple was completed so as to do work in it both for the living and the dead. President Young was quite desirous that all the saints should attend to the ordinances both for themselves and their dead without delay that the great chain that extends back to where the priesthood was taken from the earth may be connected.

On January 6, I was occupied in Justice's court with a civil case.

On the 13th the Relief Society gave a ball as it was the anniversary of the Pioneers coming to Parowan in 1851. The first snow of the season fell on this day, the winter having been very mild thus far.

About this time the mining excitement at Leeds was attracting some attention as it was creating something of a market for lumber, shingles, and different kinds of produce. Much of these goods were shipped to that place, but the price was not very high. It however gave the people a chance to get a little ready cash, which was a real opportunity in this part of the territory.

On March 1, I finished my term of school. This with my other labors had kept me quite busy during the winter and I had but little time to spend at other things.

The work in the Justice's Court claimed considerable time as during the winter there was more trouble on account of drunkenness than in the summer.

I had done fairly well with the school, some of the pupils had done very good work for the time that they had attended, the terms being so short that they only got a fairly good start before the term was out. The winter had been very mild, the streets being dry and dusty the most of the time, but there was considerable sickness in the place.

About this time William H. Dame took steps to organize a company for the purpose of going into home manufacturing. He intended to pattern as much as possible after the organization at Brigham City. There were several that joined, but I was working in our little order that we started a year previous. He thought that his company should take in all other companies in the way of business. This move of his, however, never amounted to much, the people were not well enough united to center on this or any other new move at this time.

Our little order as we termed it, that is the company that Brother Smith and a few of us started had been going a year and we now had a settlement and after each one had been paid up for his work there was a dividend declared of 7%. This was as good as we expected under the circumstances, this being the start and it always takes a little time to get the machinery going smoothly in such an organization. We were all satisfied so far in our efforts in working together.

On March 10 I started to go to St. George for the purpose of doing some work in the temple. I took my wife Eliza and all the children but Della. My daughter Josephine had been quite sick and was just able to sit up. I took her partly on account of her health, thinking that the trip might help her. We went as far as Kannarah where we stopped with Brother Reeves.

The next day we went to Toquerville where we stopped with Brother Steele. Here we left the children except Jessie May. There was a meeting in the evening at Toquerville at which I spoke a short time.

Hearing that they did not baptize in the temple on Tuesdays we hurried on the next morning, stopping at Leeds for dinner where I met Marshal Stokes and George Wilson, both from Beaver.

Leeds at this time was attracting considerable attention as a mining center of the south. There was a mill running and the mines were being worked, but the mines soon gave out and the run was of short duration.

We arrived in St. George just as the last rays of the setting sun brightened up the dome of the temple, a most beautiful sight as well as a very impressive one, to look upon this sacred house with its snow white walls standing alone in the desert (it was a little below the town). Its spire silently pointing to heaven stood as a silent witness that the divine command given by the lowly Nazarene was being fulfilled "Go ye into all the world and preach the gospel."

We stopped while there with Bishop Millin, an old friend of Brother McGregor who with his daughter Ellen was with me. Brother David H. Cannon and some others came in and we spent a very pleasant evening together in a social chat.

On March 13, I went to the temple and was baptized for six of my relatives. There were 841 baptisms for the dead. In the afternoon Brother John M. MacFarland conducted us through the tabernacle which is a fine building for a new country, it would seat about 1500 or 1600 persons. There was a basement to the building which was used for evening meetings, etc.

On March 14, I went through the temple having my endowments for my Grand father Joseph Fish. President Young went through at the same time for some of his dead relatives, this being the first time he had gone through. On the next day I went through, getting my endowments for my great grandfather Nathan Fish, there were 222 persons went through on this occasion. On the 16th I went through the temple doing the work for my uncle Joseph Fish after which we started for home going as far as Washington where we stopped for the night with Brother Price.

The next day we went to Toquerville where we found the fruit trees in full bloom, a most lovely sight.

Continuing our journey, we reached home on the evening of the 19th. Brigham Young Jr. and Orson Hyde came in this evening and held meeting with us, going on north the next morning.

1877
Chapter 44
Re-organization of the Stake

On March 23 Apostles Charles C. Rich and Franklin D. Richards arrived in Parowan from the north with some others. Brother Richards, wife, son, and son-in-law stopped with me.

A few days previous to this John D. Lee had been taken from Beaver privately to the Mountain Meadows, a distance of some 80 miles, where he was executed for the part he took in the Mountain Meadow Massacre. The taking him that far and to the place where the tragedy occurred was doubtless for effect and to work up all the prejudice possible against the Mormons. It was stated that he was promised pardon, that is he expected it, or at least to be rescued. This he believed until the last moment. His body was taken through Parowan on the 24th, on the way to Panguitch to be interred at that place. Josiah Rogerson came in about the same time. He had been down as a reporter and operator to report the execution to several of the papers. He gave several of us who gathered at Brother Dame's place a vivid description of the execution and what was said at the time.

Meeting was held at 10 A.M. on the 24th, the speakers were Bishop Budge, F. D. Richards, C. C. Rich and F. S. Richards. The sisters had a meeting in the evening. There were two meetings on the 25th, the speakers at these meetings were Orson Pratt, Joseph F. Smith, Lorenzo Snow, and Brother Preston, Layton, and Budge. Apostle Snow spoke upon the workings of the order at Brigham City. In the evening, John Taylor spoke upon prophecy.

The next day the party went on south, several of the saints from the place going along.

On the 30th Daniel H. Wells and George Q. Cannon arrived from the north, they held meeting in the evening, going on to St. George the next day. Our choir and some others also started with them to attend the conference at that place.

On April 11, the people commenced to return from conference. F. D. Richards and his folks came in and stopped with me. Those returning reported that the main subject at the conference was the order.

Some missionaries were called, among the number was John Steele and his son Mahonri M. The Twelve were called to go through the different stakes of Zion and regulate, reorganize, etc. where needed.

The execution of John D. Lee had revived the opposition to the saints and there was a strong feeling against the Mormon people at about this time and the Mountain Meadow Massacre was the main subject. The country was flooded with publications treating upon that and the teaching of the authorities, which were all pictured in dark colors against the saints. All comments by the newspapers on the execution of Lee were unfavorable to the Mormon people and their doctrines, and every effort was made to prejudice the people against the people of Utah.

On April 18, President Young and party arrived from the south and held meeting at 5 P.M. The President stated that the object of the meeting was to reorganize the stake, fill up vacancies, etc. He asked the people who they would have for their president. Brother Paul Smith said William H. Dame. The President then said he is your bishop (he was bishop's agent and was acting as bishop). The President was then requested by some one to nominate one. The President then nominated Jesse N. Smith. William C. McGregor objected. He was asked his objections, he said, "We have had some of Jesse's rule while Brother Dame was in prison and it was tyrannical". President Wells then put the vote which was about equally divided for and against Jesse N. Smith. Daniel H. Wells and John W. Young then spoke upon the division of the people. President Young then spoke a short time upon the same subject, and then said he would put off the organization of the stake until some further time and dismissed the meeting.

The division among the people on electing a president was a great drawback to the place and was the root and foundation of many bitter and lasting feelings among many of the saints. The party went on north the next morning except George Q. Cannon and Brigham Young Jr., the latter being too sick to travel and Brother Cannon remained to care for him. I sat up with Brother Young a part of the night. There was a meeting in the evening of the 19th, at which Brother Cannon spoke.

There was a reporter for the New York Herald here with the company by the name of Stilson. He had come out from New York for the purpose of interviewing President Young on the Mountain Meadow Massacre. He met the company at Cedar City and went north with them. He had about forty questions written down before he started and filled in with others as the circumstances required. One of his questions as I remember was about as follows: "Did you say that all you had to do to have the people do as you wished was to crook your little finger?" President Wells spoke up and said the sequel to that was that President Young never crooked his little finger. Stilson tried to be a gentleman at first but later on showed his bitter feelings against the saints and colored everything that he reported. It was a time of excitement and every thing was colored to suit the Liberals and the outside world and the execution of Lee brought up all the old stories that had been circulated for years.

Brigham Young Jr. soon recovered so that he and Brother George Q. Cannon started on north.

On April 25, two Spaniards who were buying and driving stock were arrested and brought before me as committing magistrate. On examination, one was released and the other was bound over to await the action of the grand jury. The investigation led to the arrest of another party but the examination was postponed on account of witnesses, when it again came up. He was finally set at liberty. There were quite a number of horse and cattle thieves in the country but it was hard to convict one as they helped each other and then they have the aid of the Liberals and the Federal Officials, who always favor them when prosecuted by the Mormons.

On April 27th, I was over to Brother Jesse N. Smith's place in the evening, his mother, Aunt Mary Smith, as we called her, had been in poor health for some time or rather very feeble. She lived in a room to herself. Sister Emma Smith went in to see if she wanted anything and soon came back and said that there was something wrong with her. I went in and found Aunt Mary lying on the hearth as if she was asleep. I picked her up and laid her on the bed. She was dead and had evidently passed away without a struggle. The funeral was held on the following day.

On the 30th, my wife Adelaide started south for the purpose of doing some work in the temple in connection with her father's family. John R. Hulet went along also, he was our postmaster and I tended the postoffice while he was gone.

There was some cold weather this spring that killed most of the fruit.

About this time there was a movement to reorganize the militia of the Territory. There was a terrible howl made by the apostates and the outside element against this movement which they called treason, as we were not permitted to drill or hold musters, this being forbidden by the governor.

The anti-Mormons were using this to the best advantage in trying to get Congress to pass more stringent laws, and Governor Emery asked the government for troops to put down the uprising of the Mormons. Orders had been issued by Colonel Dame to the companies to come out and reorganize. I as regimental adjutant sent a copy of the order to Captain Joseph Betterson of Beaver who had apostatized. He sent this order to the Salt Lake Tribune and that paper published it and in the commenting upon it called it treason. Every move in the line of having our drills as we formerly had was called treason by the Liberals and Federal officials.

During the last week in May Joseph W. Smith and I worked in the canyon getting out some saw logs. The weather was very bad, we having more snow in one storm than we had during the month of February. I went up to Wilcox's mill and got a load of lumber on June 1, the road was very rough and bad.

On the 4th, Meeks, Benson and his son were brought before me as Justice of the Peace, for breaking the peace, they were all fined. In the afternoon I started to Bellvue with a load of lumber and reached there on the 6th and started on my return. I met Sister Steele and returned with her to Kannarah, and the next day I reached home.

On June 14th, I went up to the meadow at the head of Red Creek to make some improvements on the place that we fenced the year before. I came down on the 16th but returned again the next day and worked at making a cellar, for the purpose of establishing a dairy there during the summer months where we could make butter and cheese, also worked at fencing, etc. My wife, Adelaide, went up on the 23rd and we returned the next day.

On my birthday, June 27th, my folks got up a grand dinner and some of our friends came in and we had an agreeable time together.

I baptized my son John Lazelle and he was confirmed by William H. Dame. In the afternoon I married two couples, George S. Halterman and Phebe M. Lyman (widow of Oscar M. Lyman), William F. Benson and Miss, P. J. Winn. this was the first work of this kind that I had ever done, I officiated as Justice of the Peace.

On July 2nd, I went up to the mill, William H. Dame went along, I worked there all the week returning on the 7th, but went back again on the 9th, and took my wife Eliza. She always cooked for the hands when I ran the mill. I worked at sawing until the 14th when I returned, and the next day meeting was held at which Apostle Wilford Woodruff and David H. Cannon spoke. After meeting I returned to the mill and worked until the 21st when I again returned to town.

On July 28 there was a meeting at which it was expected that there would be a reorganization of the stake. Wilford Woodruff, Erastus Snow and David H. Canon were present. In the forenoon Brother Snow spoke on the order of a stake of Zion. In the afternoon the time was occupied by Brothers Snow and Woodruff. They referred to our election and the folly of putting up two candidates which had been done here and at Beaver in the case of the councilman.

In the evening there was a meeting of the priesthood for the purpose of arranging for the reorganization of the stake. There was a vote taken in the afternoon to dissolve the stake organization preparatory to a new organization. Meeting was held again on the 29th, David H. Cannon and Erastus Snow spoke. In the afternoon Brothers Jesse N. Smith, William H. Dame, and Samuel H. Rogers were called upon to make some remarks in relation to the order and cooperation. There was no president appointed but William H. Dame and Jesse N. Smith were sustained as the presiding authorities of the stake, thus leaving the president out but sustaining his counselors as it appeared. William C. McGregor was elected as bishop of the first ward and president of the priests quorum, with Thomas Davenport and Samuel T. Orton as his counselors. Samuel H. Rogers was elected bishop of the second ward with George Holyoak and Charles Adams as his counselors. Silas S. Smith was elected bishop of the Paragoonah ward with William E. Jones and John Topham as his counselors. Sylvester C. Hulet was elected bishop for the Summit ward with William Dalley and James Dalley as his counselors. Christopher J. Arthur was elected bishop of the Cedar City ward with Jens Jensen and Francis Webster as his counselors. Myron Roundy was elected bishop of the Kanarrah Ward. Henry Lunt was elected president of the High Priests, and John Lowder president of the Elders. Morgan Richards Jr. was elected superintendent of Sunday Schools. There was quite a number of minor offices filled up. The High Council were as follows: Thomas Durham, Edward Dalton, William C. Mitchell, Joseph Fish, William Holyoak, Andrus J. Mortensen, Stephen S. Bartom, Lars Mortensen, John E. Dally, Samuel H. Rogers, John A. West and John White. (There may be some error as to S. H. Rogers being bishop and councilman both, H. D. Bayles was bishop about this time. Smith D. Rogers is named as high councilor in Joseph Fish's Journal instead of Samuel H. Rogers.) After meeting, the most of the above brethren were set apart to the various offices to which they had been elected by Erastus Snow and Wilford Woodruff. This was a little out of the regular order, it seemed, to have a complete stake organization except a president, the counselors taking charge.

1877
Chapter 45
Making a Start on the Sevier

On August 5th Apostle Wilford Woodruff and Brother David H. Cannon held meeting with us and spoke.

The next day was our election, I was judge of the election. There were but seven Liberal votes cast which was a plain indication that the opposition, or Liberal party, were losing their influence in the place. there were 156 votes cast in Parowan and 640 in the county, this being the largest vote ever polled in the county.

August 7, Apostle Wilford Woodruff and Brother David H. Cannon with a few from Parowan started on a pleasure trip to the Panguitch Lake. I went along with the party and took my daughter Frances. We went up Little Creek Canyon, then a part of the company crossed the mountain at the head of the canyon while the rest of the party went about three miles to the south and crossed at the Robinson Ranch. The most of the party got through to the lake that night, but a few of us stopped at Butler's Mill some four miles below the lake, and went on in the morning. There were six wagons and carriages along and from four to six persons in each vehicle. We spent the next day in boat riding, fishing, etc.

I rowed Apostle Woodruff out some distance in the lake where he remained some time fishing. One of our boats was that old canoe that we made in the early 50's. Later in the day I went out and brought Brother woodruff in. He had caught a few very fine trout.

I returned home on the 9th, most of the company however did not start until sometime in the afternoon.

Apostle Erastus Snow who had visited the lake a few days previous to our visit, proposed to have a road made by a nearer route, which would not be very expensive as it would not require a great amount of work.

After this trip I went to work in the harvest field for a short period.

On August 29, the wires conveyed to us sad news, notifying us of the death of President Brigham Young. This was a sad loss and especially at this particular time when the Liberals and government officials were doing all in their power to break up Mormonism, and disfranchise them. He had led the church since the death of the Prophet Joseph Smith, and had proved himself a most wonderful leader in settling this mountain region, His labors having been crowned with success.

The next afternoon Apostle Erastus Snow passed through on his way to Salt Lake city to attend the funeral of the President.

On September 1, my wife Adelaide gave birth to a son at about fifteen minutes past five in the morning. We named him Horace Nathaniel, after his two grandfathers. He was not a very strong child. He was blessed by his grandfather Jesse N. Smith on the 9th.

On the next day (the 10th) I went up to the mill and worked there sawing for about five weeks and then fixed up the mill so as to leave it for the winter. We had some snow about the middle of October.

On October 21 several of the brethren who had been to conference spoke at our meeting giving a sketch of things in the north and the conference news. They said that the Apostles were extremely taxed in straightening up things after the death of the President and getting the run of the affairs of the church.

The next day I went up to Wilcox's Mill and ran his mill for about a week sawing out what logs he had in the yard.

On November 3rd there was a priesthood meeting but it was not well attended, some of the brethren were up from Cedar City and preached to us.

On the 5th there was a meeting of the stock holders of the Parowan Cooperative store. A dividend of 5% was declared for the year. The meeting did not go off very pleasantly as there was considerable sparring and ill feelings over the business transactions between William H. Dame and Silas S. Smith.

Not having much to do after the mill closed down I concluded to teach school for a term of three months. I commenced on the 12th, had a very good attendance, so this labor with what I had to do besides kept me fairly busy for the winter. But this work never brought me much, as I took my pay in anything that the people were a mind to give me, and I never got any cash.

I spent December 24 in hearing a civil case. It was Joshua Fielding vs. William Wilcox and John Mitchell. The trial lasted all day and a part of the night, the case was finally won by the defendants, but the plaintiff was not notified and asked for a new trial, giving some reasons for the same.

The next day was Christmas, which passed off with the usual holiday amusements.

During the day I married a couple, Enoch Wardell and Harriet Maria Orton. A supper was furnished and a ball given by Alexander Orton the bride's father.

On the 26th I went over to Beaver and returned on the 30th. Thus I had hobbled along working at different things and apparently had accumulated but little, still working some for the order and some for myself.

Thus the year had flown with its joys and sorrows, and in its swift course it had left its mark on each brow and its shadow in each heart. Still there was light ahead which beckoned us on and made our labors a pleasure and joy to know that we were eating our bread by the sweat of our brow as was promised Adam and his posterity.

The 1st of January 1878 came in as all others had come with the usual festivities, but bringing us colder weather than it had for several years.

Our conference was held on the 5th and 6th, the reports as to the condition of the people was fairly good but the people lacked a president. At the last organization no president was appointed but the counselors were sustained, so we were blundering along without a head so to speak. We however kept up the social spirit and brotherly love as well as could be expected, and to help to make things agreeable the choir gave a party on the 9th. A supper was furnished and everything done that could be to make it an enjoyable time, which was accomplished.

On the 19th the case of Joshua Fielding vs. William Wilcox and John Mitchell came up. The plaintiff had been granted a new trial. Fielding was not present but his lawyer, John W. Brown, who appeared to love litigation, looked after his case. The trial was a tiresome one and lasted all day and until midnight. The case went against Fielding as it had before.

The next day Apostle Wilford Woodruff who was on his way south stopped and held meeting with us and spoke of our doing the work for our dead.

On the 26th there was a meeting of the High Council, the first of the kind since the reorganization of the stake. William H. Dame laid the matter before the council of building a social hall. He thought that we should have one. There was one already in course of erection but he thought that the parties were weak in the faith, and he wanted one built by the good Latter Day Saints. Some remarks were made on the subject. Some of the brethren thought that the one already started would be sufficient, that the parties were members of the church and that it would create division among the people to start over. This was considered a good view of the case by some of the others.

On February 8, I finished my term of school. I had about 50 pupils and they had done fairly well considering the short time that they had attended. The trustees wished me to continue longer, but as I felt the work a little too confining I decided not to try another term.

On the 14th, I was one of the arbitrators in a case between William Adams and Ebenezer Hanks. We got the matter finally settled and apparently to the satisfaction of both parties, which was not often the case.

During the latter part of the month there was considerable snow fall.

I was keeping up a correspondence with Silas S. Smith who was attending the legislature, and derived some benefit in getting the news as to what they were doing as well as some other items.

During the latter part of the month and the fore part of March I worked for the order helping to build a blacksmith shop. I have not said much about the order but we were still working at it. Some worked all the time such as farmers while others worked when there was anything that they could do to advantage. If there was anything to dispose of any member could get it at the stated price and we found this to be quite an advantage as we did not have to pay cash, it going against the labor that we performed.

Our conference was appointed for the 9th and 10th of March but was postponed until the 23rd and 24th when it was held, Apostles Erastus Snow and Wilford Woodruff being present. The bishops gave in their reports. The stakes at the time contained five wards viz. Parowan two wards, Paragoonah one ward, Summit one ward, Cedar City one ward. (It appears that Kannarah had been added to Washington stake) The total population of these wards was about 1940 souls of which about 500 were children under eight years of age. William H. Dame was sustained as president of the stake with Jesse N. Smith and Henry Lunt as his counselors. Apostle Erastus Snow stated that this organization was to stop contention, and was subject to any change which they might see fit to make in the future.

In the evening there was a meeting of some of the brethren called to talk over a difficulty that existed between Silas S. Smith and some of the brethren at Paragoonah in relation to water rights in the Little Creek field. The matter was talked over to considerable length, but there was no decision arrived at in the case.

During the latter part of the month I worked at making fence for Jesse N. Smith.

My sister Julia from Beaver made us a visit about the middle of April. It was rather a cold and disagreeable time and the frost killed much of the fruit.

Silas S. and Jesse N. Smith and I had talked some of taking up a place on the Sevier. I think that the disunion or party feeling that had existed in Parowan for some time at the division in getting a president for the stake had some effect upon the Smith boys and particularly Jesse N. This may have had some influence in our taking the move that we made at this time. We decided to go over to Panguitch and see what we could do there. I had but little land and felt that there was nothing to do here since I had been so badly broken up by the Indians. So Brother Jesse N. and I started out on April 29th, going down to Paragoonah on foot where we were to join Silas who was going to take a team and we all go on together. We stayed with Silas that night and the next morning we started for Panguitch where we arrived about sunset and stopped with Allen Miller (his wife was my niece, Sarah Jane Smith).

On May 1, we visited several of the brethren in Panguitch and talked up the subject of taking up land in that vicinity. Some of these parties were engaged at the time in taking out a ditch on the east side of the river. We went across the river and down about three miles where we found a very good location that had not been taken up. There was quite a body of land and it lay very well for irrigation. The next day we returned home where we arrived about 9 P.M. It was a cold and disagreeable day.

After reaching home we arranged to go over and commence work on the place we had selected, or rather on the ditch so as to get the water out on the land. Jesse N. Smith furnished a team and his son Jesse N. Jr. was to go along and a young man by the name of Parley R. Butt joined us in the enterprise, Silas did not send a man at this time.

We started to on the 8th, I took my son Joseph C. along. We reached Upper Bear Valley where we camped, and the next day we drove to Panguitch where we saw several who were interested in the ditch that we expected to work on, and ascertained what was to be done. The work was to be staked off in what we called jobs, that is so much being staked off for a certain number of rods according to the amount of work to be done, as some places required more work than others.

The next day we moved over to the Butler place, about three miles, which was near the point where we expected to work, and made our camp. We selected two jobs and started to work, we all working together. One point that we were working on had to be done with a pick and shovel.

The 12th being Sunday, I went over to town and attended meeting and was called on to speak during the service.

On the 13th I went down to select the land that we wished to take up, that is, find the corners, etc. Brother Allen Miller went with me. We soon found a government corner and then traced the lines from that, finding the other corners. I selected Section 3, Range 5 West, Township 34 South. I took the north half for Brother Smith and myself and the other half for the other parties. It was a good location and the soil seemed very well adapted for farming, and was about three or four miles from Panguitch to the north east. There was quite a large body of land here that was easy to bring under cultivation, but it required about seven miles of ditch to convey the water to it. This, however, was not very difficult to make, as a large portion of it required but little work, there being a few places around points where there was some hard digging.

We all went to work on the ditch the next day. This ditch was one that the Butler Brothers had taken out but it did not extend down very far, they using the water at their place near the head of the ditch. They talked over the matter of our company using their ditch and they came to the conclusion that this might lead to some complications such as disputes of water rights and amounts each one should have. They stated their objections to me and I then went over to town which was on the 15th and saw Brothers Pratt and Judd, two of the locating committee about the matter and we decided to change our ditch and take the water out of the river about three quarters of a mile above the Butler ditch. This would be a little more expense but would be better in the long run as this ditch would cover more land and the complications that the Butler boys were afraid of would be avoided.

After selecting the spot where we should take the water out of the river, which was at a point where it would not require any dam to speak of, we surveyed about one hundred rods of the ditch. We then commenced at the head of the ditch making it as we went along down.

During this time I obtained a small piece of land, I believe that it belonged to the Butler boys, and Parley and Jesse put in a few potatoes. We spent the rest of the week working on the ditch, and on Sunday I went over to town where I spent the day, wrote some letters, etc. and took dinner with Allen Miller.

On the 20th we went to work and continued during the week, the boys worked on the ditch most of the time while I spent a part of my time in getting out house logs and hauling them down to where we expected to build.

I went about four miles east from our camp for the logs and then hauled them down to our location which was about seven miles more. The timber was of a very inferior quality, and it was hard to get to it.

Sunday the 26th I went over to town and spent the day.

On Monday the 27th we finished the first job of the ditch which amounted to about \$60. We were now about out of provisions and we decided to return home, and the next day we started out, going as far as Bear Valley where we took supper with Stephen S. Barton.

We reached home on the 29th where I found the family reasonably well except my little son Horace N., he was rather poorly and had not been well for some time.

Having fixed up around home and arranged for another trip to the Sevier, we started out on June 6th, this time I took my son John L. with me. We arrived at our old camp the next day. Here we found John E. Eyre and Ira R. Whitney who had come over to get an interest in the ditch, they were at work on it. We worked on the ditch for about three weeks, that is Jesse and Parley worked on the ditch most of the time while I worked a part of the time getting out house logs, hewing them, and hauling them down to where we were going to build. We got the ditch finished and the water in it for about one mile.

I had got out about one hundred house logs and the most of them hewed and on the ground, and had got two of the log houses up to the square, thus making quite a start. I had worked hard having the heavy part of the work to do as Jesse and Parley were but boys and did not know how to take hold as an older person could.

Having made this start and being again nearly out of provisions we concluded to return home. There were several of the people from Parowan and other places coming up to Panguitch Lake to spend the 4th, so we concluded to go that

way and join them at the lake and spend the National holiday with them. My wife Eliza was coming up and I expected to meet her there.

1878
Chapter 46
A New Venture

Having decided to go home by way of the Panguitch Lake, we left our camp on July 2nd and started out reaching the lake at about dark, and the next day we spent in boat riding and fishing. During the after part of the day there was considerable wind and it was a little dangerous in the old canoe to be out among the white caps of the lake. My little son John was delighted to see the white caps rolling up as we returned for shore. When I made some expression that there was some danger, he was very quiet after that until we reached shore.

It was rather late in the evening when the party from Parowan came in. They came by way of the new road which was rather rough. Just before reaching the lake, Brother Mortensen's wagon upset in a bad place and hurt him quite bad. My wife Eliza and daughter Jessie May were in the wagon but they were not hurt very seriously, Eliza receiving a few bruises on the rocks.

There were quite a number gathered here from Parowan and other places, and on the 4th they all went up to the Blue Spring some three miles above the Lake where meeting was held under the shade of the stately pines. The speakers were Jesse N. Smith, Erastus Snow, William H. Dame, and Jesse W. Crosby, Jr. Brother Snow spoke upon the force of character and independence of a mountain raised people.

After meeting we had a picnic dinner, after which we returned to the lake where a ball was given in the evening. The next day I started for Parowan where we arrived at about sunset, going by the Robinson Ranch.

On July 9th, I went up to the coop Mill and worked sawing, cut out what logs there were in the yard and returned on the 19th. The lumber trade was rather dull and the mill was not sawing very much, just enough to supply the home market and to fill orders. Just before the lumber trade went down, Thompson shipped his lumber to Pioche getting \$110 per thousand for it, I measured it for the teams that hauled it out.

The 24th was celebrated in the usual way of having a procession, a meeting, and a dance in the evening.

After returning from the mill I went to work repairing wagons for our Order, which was still going on. I had not done much work in it but did what I could when I was around, and as I was not much of a farmer there was but little that I could do to any advantage.

Our regular election came off on August 5th, William C. Mitchell, Daniel Page and I were the judges. This was the first election held under the new registration law. This law required each voter to hand in his vote in a sealed envelope, and if his name was found on the register and had not been canceled the vote was put into the ballot box. There was no challenging at the polls, all of that work had to be done before a Justice of the Peace at a certain time before the election came off, and if a person was found not to be a voter, that is if he was not entitled to vote, his name was stricken from the register. The vote in the Parowan precinct was rather light, there being only 146 votes polled. I was elected Justice of the Peace for the precinct. My commission was dated September 23, 1878 and signed by George W. Emery, Governor of Utah Territory.

On August 12th I went up to the mill and sawed out what logs there were in the yard and returned on the 25th.

On the 27th Apostle Erastus Snow came in from the north, he was on his way to St. George from which point he was expecting to go south through Arizona to explore and visit the saints in that Territory. He arranged for Jesse N. Smith to accompany him through Arizona.

On September 3rd I went up to the meadow at the head of Red Creek to work getting up some hay.

On the 5th Brother Jesse N. Smith came up and stayed all night, he was on his way to meet Brother Snow and some others at Orderville, and from that point they were going on their trip through Arizona.

I returned home on the 7th with a load of hay, going back to the meadow again on the 9th for another load. The weather was fair but there was a frost at this date that did some damage to the crops.

Our conference came off on the 29th and 30th. The reports were fairly good, Brother Henry Lunt presided at the conference, President Dame being north and Brother Smith being south with Apostle Snow.

The next day after conference I went up to the mill and sawed out what logs there were in the yard and returned on October 12th.

On October 13th, I went to Paragoonah as a home missionary. Brother John E. Dalley and Brother Leigh of Cedar City were my companions. We had a very good meeting. This was about the commencement of home missionary work after the reorganization of the stake. This work had some good results, for when these missionaries went out they generally speak on the principles of the gospel, while it had been more or less the case that our home preachers fell into a groove of speaking upon local conditions and affairs that we were called to meet in our every day life, and in this case the younger people had not been educated or instructed along the gospel lines as they should have been. The home missionary work was remedying this to some extent and brought speakers from other places.

During the latter part of the month I worked at getting out the register list for voters, and also worked at posting up the books of the Cooperative Stock Herd.

On November 3rd I went out to Summit as a home missionary, Brother Smith D. Rogers was my companion.

The next day the Parowan Cooperative Mercantile Company held their meeting and declared a dividend of 10%, a new set of officers were elected. Jesse N. Smith, the secretary, being absent I acted in his place.

On the 5th, the election for a delegate to Congress came off, William C. Mitchell, Daniel Page and I were the judges of the election. Brother Jesse N. Smith returned from his trip through Arizona just in time to cast his vote. The election passed off very quietly, there being no opposition votes cast.

On the 11th the yearly meeting of the Parowan Cooperative Stock raising Company was held but as the statement of accounts was not prepared, the meeting was adjourned until the 13th when a new board of officers was elected and a dividend of 30% was declared.

Brother Jesse N. Smith, while absent in Arizona, had been called to go there and assist in colonizing that country, and on his return our little company that had been working in the order commenced to settle up their accounts. Several of the company were however making preparations to go with him.

This plan of our making a place on the Sevier was also broken into, and as I was partly broken up I concluded to go to Arizona also. My wife Adelaide was extremely anxious to go as most of her folks were going. Brother Snow and also Brother Smith gave a fair report of the country, that is of portions of it. Several were going and as I had practically nothing but my house and lot to tie me to Parowan I decided to make the venture.

On November 20, I sold my place to Edgar L. Clark for two span of horses, harness, a wagon, and two cows. This was not near what the place had cost me, but one can never get for improvements of this kind what they cost, it however gave me something that I could work with such as a team and wagon. The lack of these had forced me to work to a disadvantage after I lost my team and had my wagon broken up at the time of the Indian raids.

I then commenced to arrange for the family, or a part of them, to remain for awhile as I could not take them all at this time. I fixed for my wife Adelaide to go with me and of course our little son Horace, also my sons Joseph C. and John L., and to leave Della with her grandmother Sister Steele. My wife Eliza and the rest of the family were to remain with Brother Niels Mortensen (Eliza's step-father).

1878
Chapter 47
The Journey to Arizona

Having made these arrangements I soon got ready for the start to Arizona. The season was far advanced when a person could journey with safety, and we made all haste that we might get over the mountains before a heavy fall of snow would block the roads.

On December 3rd we left Parowan, that is the most of us, and drove as far as Paragoonah where we stayed all night. Our loose stock was driven on ahead in the morning.

On the next day we drove to the head of Little Creek Canyon where we overtook our loose stock, Amos Rogers and C. I. Decker were the principal ones to look after them.

At this point I met my nephew Ambrose Thompson who came over from the mill not far distant to see me. He had been to Salt Lake City to school and I had not seen him for sometime, our visit of course was not very lengthy.

We went on to Bear Valley where we stayed all night. Here our company all got together which consisted of nine wagons, ten men, six women, and fourteen children. The company consisted of the following persons: Jesse N. Smith, with wife Janet and five children, Joseph Fish with wife Adelaide and three children, John R. Hulet and wife Josephine, Smith D. Rogers with wife Eliza and two children, Mrs. Margaret West, Lehi West with wife Clara and two children, Silas S. Smith Jr., John A. Smith, Amos Rogers, C. I. Decker, John H. Rollins and two children. We had about fifty head of work animals and about the same number of loose stock, and loaded about 2000 pounds to the wagon. We lost three cows at this camp ground, they ran back, one was mine. It was cold even for this cold region.

December 5th we drove to the Sevier River to a point called Lowder's Springs. My wife Adelaide was quite sick during the day, not able to sit up, and was quite sick during the night, but after that she got better.

The next morning we had some difficulty in finding our stock and did not leave camp until about 11 a.m. when we drove to Butler's place where we put our animals in their field, distance from Parowan 43 miles.

The next day we drove to a point a little above the Mouth of Mammoth Spring Creek about 14 miles. The next day an 18 mile drive brought us to Upper Kanab, (since called Alton) the roads were fairly good but there was no feed to speak of for our animals.

On the 9th we filled our water barrels as we passed Sink Valley and went on some sixteen miles to the Scootem Pah, the day was cold and disagreeable.

On the 10th we reached Johnson's, about 100 miles from Parowan. Johnson was but a very small place, there were a few springs that watered some meadow land from which the settlers raised a little hay, but there was not much water for farming purposes. There did not appear to be more than 10 or 15 acres under cultivation. William D. Johnson kept a very good stock of merchandise for the travel considering what a small place it was, and this being the last place on the road where anything could be obtained, he did a good business during the fall and early winter when the emigrants were moving to Arizona.

Sister West broke the axletree of her wagon at Upper Kanab, but we managed to get the wagon to this place where I spent the afternoon in putting in a new one. Here we expected to meet a company from Orderville going to Arizona but they had not arrived.

A little incident occurred here which was a little laughable to the company if not to me. The little spring branch was not frozen over, but was a solid broken bank on either side. There was no regular crossing and we selected a point where we thought we could cross and as my wagon was not loaded quite as heavy as some of the others they thought I had better drive in first. I did so, the horses went in to their bellies but making a lunge reached the opposite bank but when the wagon went in it struck the frozen bank and stopped, and I went on over striking the frozen ground on

my cheek in which I had a large boil. The fall mashed the boil all over my face and I was not troubled with it anymore. Another team hitched on and we got the wagon out but the others selected another place to cross.

We left Johnson's on December 11th and drove to the Navajo Wells, 8 miles. Here we found about enough water for twelve head of animals and the rest had to go without.

The next day we reached the top of the Buckskin Mountain, about 17 miles by the road, but about 15 miles across the mountain. The mountain is covered with a dense growth of pinion pine but at the southern end it is higher and is covered with white pine. There is no water on this mountain but we found good grass.

We reached House Rock Springs on the 13th, 20 miles, here we found good water but little grass. The Orderville Company were keeping quite a number of stock here, and generally kept a man here to look after them but at this time the place was deserted. They had made some troughs for the purpose of watering their stock in. The next morning some of our horses were missing and we did not find them until dark so we did not move camp. We cut up and put in a little wood as we did not expect to find any at the next camp ground.

Starting out late on the 15th, we only went six miles, Brother Rollins lost one more that we did not find. As the teams that we had expected to join our company did not come up, we concluded to make an organization as it might facilitate matters some in our traveling. Jesse N. Smith was elected Captain, John R. Hulet historian, and Joseph Fish Chaplain. On the 16th we reached Jacob's Pools for dinner, here we found but little water but got enough for our stock which had given us considerable trouble. Amos Rogers was the principal one that looked after them and he made it a point every night to put in his complaints about the trouble that he had. My boy Joseph C. helped to drive a portion of the way but the colt that he rode was not easily managed and weather was so severe that he had to give it up and the older ones looked after the herd.

From Jacob's Pools we drove out about six miles. P. C. Liston overtook us and joined our company but did not stay with us long as he traveled faster than we did so he soon left and went ahead.

The next day we traveled to Soap Creek where we took dinner. This is a very insignificant stream so shallow that an animal can hardly get a drink. There is a little more water further up and about a mile and a half above the road. The stream comes down the mountain and in one place falls over a shelving rock making a fall of nearly 100 feet. It is so far and the stream so small that it comes down like rain, making an excellent place to take a shower bath in warm weather.

Going on 6 miles we reached Badger Creek. The road from the Pools was very sandy and heavy dragging for our half-give-out teams. The country along here seems to be composed of rotten sand stone formation and appears to be wearing away very fast.

On the 18th we drove ten miles which brought us to the Colorado river a little below the mouth of the Paria.

The next day we went a little above the mouth of the Paria and spent the day in crossing the river. This was what has been known as the Lee Ferry, John D. Lee having come to this place when it was first established and lived here for sometime to get away from the Marshals. At the time of our crossing, Warren Johnson resided here and tended the ferry. He was a good careful hand and did all that he could to assist and accommodate the emigrants, the boat however was not a very good one and leaked quite bad. One wagon and team was taken across at a time, the fare was \$1 for a wagon and 25 cents a head for horses. This was half fare, or what was termed missionary rates. The river at the ferry was 240 yards wide and in the center was quite deep. In later years the ferry was moved some little distance up the river and the boat was run on a cable.

The scenery at this pint is grand, but does not compare with that further down the river where the cliffs raise their heads some 6000 feet above the water. At the ferry the cliffs on either side rise to a height of about 3000 feet. This is the only place for a long distance where one can get down to the water. The crossing of the Fathers is some 35 miles above the ferry, and below here the river runs into a deep box canyon which increases in depth until the banks are some 6000 feet high. All along this grand canyon the cliffs are grand and of various colors, the river running between them apparently makes a large fissure in the rocks. I went to the bank in a place or two and from these

points the river looked like some ten or twelve feet wide. The canyon is one of the wonders of the world. It is stated that in some places the sun never shines on the bottom of the canyon, and that stars can be seen at mid day.¹

We spent the 20th in getting over the Lee hill as it was then called, distance about three miles, we had to double teams and then going down it was so steep that we locked both hind wheels and tied on our spring seats for fear they would be thrown off. We managed to get over this hill without accident about sunset and then drove after dark to Navajo Springs, about 8 miles from the ferry. Here we found barely enough water for our animals.

The next day we laid over, and on the 22nd we drove to Bitter Springs, 12 miles, here the water was very bad and not enough of it. Lehi West broke his wagon wheel and we sent a wagon back to help him into camp.

The next day we laid over and Brother James Ellsworth who had overtaken us, and I went to work and fixed up the broken wheel. We took a break bar and sawed out some spokes, fitted up the wheel and set the tire.

On the 24th we traveled about 16 miles, no water. Brother Rolins lost a horse and he and Lehi West remained to look for it.

On Christmas day we traveled about eight miles, it snowed during the day. Joseph H. James passed us on his way to Utah, we sent some Postal cards back home by him.

On the 26th we drove to Willow Springs, about 16 miles. Rollins and West overtook us at this place. On the 27th we had some trouble in finding our animals and did not get started until about 11 A.M., we went 10 miles to Moencopy Wash. Our stock began to fail, especially the calves, and we left one that gave out, and we left several before we got through.

December 28th we reached the Little Colorado about 15 miles. We passed what was called the Bad Lands. The country was dotted with little hills, some like haystacks and some of considerable size. They were composed of a kind of gray or light colored clay and nothing grows on or around them. The Little Colorado where we struck it was about 20 feet wide and 15 or 18 inches deep, but at some seasons of the year it is a raging torrent of muddy water, and at other seasons it is dry. The small tract of bottom land along its banks has some gnarled and scrubby cottonwoods scattered over the bottoms. There was plenty of flood wood lodged along its banks but very little grass is found along the stream in this section.

On the 29th, Sunday, we traveled 8 miles up the river. It snowed some during the afternoon. The next day we lay over, it being stormy and some of the boys went out hunting but returned at night without any game.

On the 31st we drove as far as the Black Falls, about 20 miles. Here we began to come to a little grass, it being much better than we had found below. There was a fall here in the river of about 12 feet.

January 1st, 1879, was a foggy morning, a team passed us going on up the river. We sent some postal cards by it to be posted at Sunset for the folks at home.

We traveled as far as Grand Falls, twelve miles. Here the river descends some 200 feet in a short distance, the greatest perpendicular fall being about 80 feet.

There were several old ruins in the vicinity of these falls, they were built of undressed rock, some of the walls were two feet thick and stood ten or twelve feet high. There was considerable broken earthen ware scattered around these ruins, they still retained the bright colors, and gave evidence that a people more enlightened than the present inhabitants had once occupied the country and flourished here in ages past. Their mark is found in many places in Arizona and shows that portions of the country had been densely populated at some date in the remote past. One feature of the ruins in Arizona shows that there have been two distinct races who have occupied the country and at different periods. One class of ruins is built of rock, roughly dressed and laid up, while there is another class built of rock neatly dressed and of very large size. The latter class seems to be of great antiquity, some of them are many miles from any water, showing that when these buildings were erected that there must have been more water in that vicinity than at the present time. The former class of ruins is doubtless that of the present inhabitants of the land, and doubtless were deserted on account of wars, pestilence, or drought.

January 2nd, we traveled up the river about 13 miles, crossing it about five miles before we camped. We had some difficulty in getting across, as the banks were steep and icy.

The valley here began to widen out and looked as if settlements might be formed in this vicinity if there was sufficient water. The San Francisco Mountain, some 30 miles to the west, would furnish timber in abundance.

On the 3rd we traveled about 15 miles to Slough Bend. Our stock was getting worn out with traveling and not much grass, several of them had given out and were left on the road. Our main direction after striking the river was about south east.

On the 4th we drove within about two miles of Brigham City, our loose stock was so tired out that they did not come on, but were left further back. We lay over the next day. John R. Hulet and I looked after the stock, gathered them up, etc.

James N. Smith and some others went over to Brigham City and Sunset where they attended meeting. I wrote letters home and received one from my wife Eliza at Parowan.

On Monday the 6th we started out at the break of day to get our teams. On looking around, we found that two of Brother Smith's were missing. As soon as it was light enough he and I got on their tracks. We followed them over the plains and hills until near night when we found them near Sunset Pass. From appearances, they had been in search of water. We returned with them, reaching camp about 10 P.M., having traveled about 45 miles before breakfast. Going out, I had gone on the trot hunting their trail much of the time. This was about the hardest tramp hunting horses that I ever had. The next day was a cold and stormy day and we did not move camp.

On the 8th we moved on over to Sunset, about three miles, where we were all kindly received and treated by Lot Smith who had charge of this place. We all took dinner at the big table as they termed it. They were all working in the order and all ate at one table.

Brother Smith D. Roger's baby had been very sick for several days and was getting worse so it was decided for him and one or two others to stop here on account of the child, the rest of us moved on about two miles.

January 9th was one of the coldest days that we had experienced on the journey. There was some snow on the ground and a piercing north wind blew, which in the forenoon was what we might term a blizzard. In the afternoon we moved on about 8 miles.

On the morning of the 10th, John A. Smith came up and reported that Brother Roger's baby had died. Jesse N. Smith, Silas S. Jr. and I went back to Sunset. The funeral was held the next forenoon and in the afternoon we all started for our camp. Brother Lot Smith had done all that he could for us and for Brother Rogers while he was there with his sick child.

On the 12th we got within about a mile of St. Joseph and the next day reached the Leareaux wash.

The next morning we passed the Berardo place, now Holbrook. A Mexican by the name of Berardo lived here at that time and kept a few goods for sale, which were sold at an enormous price. I remember sending for some nutmegs, I got three very small ones for 25 cents.

We went on to within about a mile of Woodruff where we camped. Jesse N. Smith, I, and a few others walked on up to the place, where a meeting was held, after which there was a dance. This we did not attend, that is Brother Smith and myself, but some of the other boys stayed and looked on for a while. The people here had made an effort to put in a dam to take the water out but the floods had washed it out.

The next day we drove about half way to Snowflake where we made a dry camp, and on the 16th we reached Snowflake in good time where we were warmly welcomed by Bishop John Hunt and William J. Flake and others.

Snowflake is situated in a pleasant little valley that contains some 2000 acres of land that may be brought under irrigation and some more adjacent that may be used for dry farming but this is limited. The hills surrounding the valley were covered with a very good growth of cedars near by which would furnish fuel for several years. The place was named by Apostle Erastus Snow for himself and Brother Flake who had bought the place from James Stinson giving him \$11,000 in stock for his claim. Bishop Hunt had come in during the fall sometime and had just got up a log house but it was not finished. Brother Smith and I got the use of one of the rooms for a few days until we could learn what we would do or where we would locate. On Sunday we attended meeting.

On Monday January 20 Brother Smith and a few of our party started for St. Johns, a distance of 45 or 50 miles, to see about making a purchase of that place. Brother Smith returned Thursday not having made any purchase. The place did not suit very well and Barth, the principal owner, charged an exorbitant price.

Two or three of the boys went on from St. Johns up to Springerville, generally called at that time Round Valley, but did not make any purchase. The settlers thought that when the Mormons came in that they could get any price that they might ask for their claims, for that was about all that they had, for there was very little improvements made at that time in any of these pieces. There was not a rod of fence in any place that I was aware of at that time.

After the return of Brother Smith and party, our company talked the matter over and concluded to locate at Snowflake. A town site had been surveyed off by Samuel C. Ladd and there were six log cabins that had been put up, mostly by Kartchner and his boys, who had taken one third of the purchases. We selected our lots. Brother Flake divided up his land and lots and let us have it the same as he paid, that is making an estimate of the amount of land and the cost per acre. Each of us got a city lot and 20 acres of land and where any of us had more than one wife we drew a lot for each wife. We were to pay for it the same as Flake, in cattle and at the same price. We moved our wagons on to the lots that we had selected and took off the boxes and arranged to camp until we could build. There was not any water in the place so we had to haul it from the creek near half a mile, but for a short time there was water in the wash which was much nearer. Wood was handy, I got two small loads in a half day.

Chapter Notes

¹ The Colorado River rises in the Wind River Mountains and whirling down ten thousand feet in some two thousand miles it reaches the Gulf of California, after passing through the Grand Canyon and many a desert plain. Onate in 1604 named the Little Colorado the "Colorado" and from this it is supposed that the name was extended down to the main stream. But just when the term "Colorado" was applied to this stream is not known. It bore four names before Colorado took its place, viz.: "Buena Guia", "Del Tizon", "Esperanz", and "Las Martires". The last was given by Kino. Its upper waters are Green and Grand Rivers. It was first visited by Spaniards in 1540.

1879
Chapter 48
The Pioneer Work of Building a New Home

On January 29, several of us started for the forest about 19 miles distant to get out house logs. Brother Smith D. Rogers and I went horse back for the purpose of looking after a couple of Brother Smith's horses that had strayed off, and expected to join the wagons at some point in the timber. We reached the camp about bed time after a very disagreeable ride. It rained all the afternoon and we got quite wet and began to think before we found the party with the wagons, that we would have to lie out all night. We did not find the horses, but the party with the wagons did.

The next day we went on further into the forest and made our camp. It snowed some during the day. This forest is one of the largest in the United States. It consists of a heavy body of timber mostly pine and is quite free from underbrush. There are some scrubby oaks scattered around and some cottonwoods and black walnuts along in places on the washes. There was a growth of grass through all this region and it was dotted with a great variety of wild flowers. There was considerable game such as deer, turkey, some bears, while antelope were found in great numbers down on the plains below the forest.

Here in this beautiful and secluded place, where the Apaches had ruled and roamed for ages, I commenced the hard and tedious labor of building a home by hewing house logs. We had all decided to build Brother Smith's first, so we turned in on this work. I cut and hewed most of the logs while the other boys hauled, and when the logs were out I laid them up, or did the main part of it. I worked hard at getting out logs and my little boys hauled some, they coming up with the team and I would load them and then when they got down to Snowflake, some one would throw off the logs for them, they making about three trips a week.

After getting out logs for a two room house I got out some timber for shingles, and on February 17, I commenced to make shingles for Brother Smith's house. I got a log and made what we called a shaving horse. I got an old horse shoe and got Amos Rogers, who was a kind of a tinkering blacksmith, to fashion it so as to hold the shingles while I shaved them. I split out and shaved enough for the house in a short time, and then helped to put them on. A few teams had been sent to the Sunset saw mill, 125 miles distant, and got a little lumber for sheeting, etc. and the rafters were made out of poles hewed down to get them in shape. I am quite positive that this was the first shingle roof made in this part of Arizona and that I made the first shingles in this county.

I spent the most of March and April in the forest getting out house logs. My little boys hauling much of the time. I got out a set of house logs for the two room house for Brother Hulet. He put in some grain for me in exchange. I got out a set of logs for myself for a two room house, I hewed all the logs down to five inches thick, this made them much lighter to haul. I was in the forest much of the time alone and worked every minute when it was light, getting up before day and eating a bit (I had but little to eat) so as to start work as soon as it was light enough to see to work. I toiled on, the anxiety of getting a home nerved me up, and the labor did not seem so hard. A person sometimes takes as much pleasure in building a home as in occupying it after it is built.

The life of a pioneer is a hard one but it is mingled with rays of light and joy in seeing the waste places made to blossom, and houses and gardens take the place of the sage brush that cover the deserts.

Added to all this labor was that of making our irrigation ditches. Stinson had taken out a ditch which covered about three hundred acres of land, this however had been practically ruined by the floods the previous summer and it required almost as much work to clear it out as to make a new one.

During the winter of 1878-9 the Legislature of Arizona had created the county of Apache out of the eastern part of Yavapai, and the officers were appointed for the county to hold until the election of officers was held which was appointed to be held on June 2nd.

About the first of May a convention was held to get up a ticket for the coming election. When the officers were appointed, Snowflake was named for the county seat. The gentile element split on the ticket, the main point of the controversy was the locating of the county seat, one party wanted it at St. Johns and the other party wanted it at Springerville. The Mormons did not take much interest in this quarrel over the county seat, but the party that favored Springerville also favored the Mormons to some extent.

On March 25th I was appointed Justice of the Peace for Snowflake Precinct by the board of Supervisors of Apache County, and the first work that I did as Justice was on May 22 when I went up to Walker (since named Taylor) and married James Stinson and Margaret Mallissa Bagley. Stinson had been to the legislature and was the newly appointed Probate Judge for the new county and M. M. Bagley was a Mormon raised girl, she had been in polygamy and had left her husband.

Our elections for county officers as well as county seat came off on June 2nd. I was one of the judges of election at Snowflake. There were two tickets in the field, my name was on the Springerville ticket as we termed it for District Attorney. The returns of the election were counted by the Board of Supervisors at Snowflake on the 16th. It was evident that the Springerville ticket had a majority of the legal votes, but there had been a great amount of fraud practiced in some of the precincts and through this fraud the St. Johns, or Barth ticket as it was called, had a large majority. It was evident that near half of the votes cast were fraudulent, as some precincts polled four times as many votes as was actually cast. There were some objections to counting in these votes but the Board counted everything that was in favor of St. Johns and this of course elected that ticket. C. E. Cooley, Milligan, and Stanley, and some others who favored Springerville, contested the election as to the county seat and took the case to Prescott where after dragging along for sometime it was decided in their favor. This moved the county seat to Springerville but it did not remain there very long for at the next election Barth managed to get it moved to St. Johns. The officers on the Springerville ticket were undoubtedly elected but they did not contest the case, so they did not get into office.

I spent the month of June working on Brother Hulet's house and mine, getting them up and roofed in. Our first conference for the stake was held on the 28th and 29th. We convened in a bowery fixed up between the two adobe rooms of Brother Flake's, the Stinson place that he got with the purchase. President Jesse N. Smith presided. Apostle Wilford Woodruff was present, also President Lot Smith and Bishop George Lake from the Little Colorado Stake.

During the conference the following officers were sustained: Jesse N. Smith President of the Eastern Arizona Stake; John Hunt Bishop of the snowflake ward with William J. Flake and John Kartchner as his counselors; Oscar Mann Bishop of the Forest Dale Ward with Orson Cluff as his counselor; Jacob Hamblin Presiding Elder of the Round Valley Branch; James C. Owens Presiding Elder of the Frisco Valley Branch, (Alpine); Luther C. Burnham Presiding Elder of the Savoia Valley Branch; and Joseph Fish as Stake Recorder. There were several home missionaries called, also some missionaries to the Lamanites.

When I first arrived at Snowflake I turned out two of my horses as I did not want to use them and they strayed off with some others. I had hunted for them a great deal. Finally word came while I was in the timber that the Indians had them at Forest Dale. Brother Hulet, who had one with them, went over and got them about the 4th of July.

I spent much of the time during the month in the forest getting out house logs and making shingles. I worked at building houses most of the time and laid up about 12 of the log houses of the place.

We celebrated the 24th, had a meeting in the forenoon, Brother smith was orator. In the evening there was a bow party.

Having got my house up and roofed in with a shingle roof, and grain in, (Brother Hulet put in the most of it while I was working on his house), and getting things in shape so that I could leave, I commenced to fix up to go back to Parowan for the rest of my family. I also arranged to have what little grain I had in taken care of and harvested while I was gone.

1879
Chapter 49
A Trip to Utah and Return

On July 25, 1879 I made the start to Utah to bring in the rest of my family. In the company were Silas S. Smith Jr. and R. W. Dotson, besides I had in my wagon Sister Gale and her five children who were returning to Utah on a visit. Silas and Dotson each had wagons.

At the Butte a little below Woodruff we met the Apache mail. This was a buckboard that the officer sent down to St. Joseph once a week for their mail and the driver had an empty sack which the settlers got him to carry and bring their mail in. St. Joseph was the only office in this part of the country and was kept by John McLaws, the first post master in the northeastern part of Arizona. While the driver was watering his team we looked through the sack but found no mail.

Continuing our journey we reached Sunset on the evening of the 27th where we had a very pleasant visit with Apostle Wilford Woodruff who was stopping here for a short time. He was what we called on the underground, and was making some extended visits in this new country. They told us at this place that it was so dry that it was hardly safe to attempt the trip at this season of the year.

We were kindly entertained by President Lot Smith who always was very kind to our people who were moving in from Utah. The next morning we got our breakfast at the big table.

After breakfast we started on, as we passed Brigham City about a mile distant and on the south side of the river we got some letters. We traveled about 18 miles. We found but little grass and no water to speak of, occasionally there was a little in holes along the bed of the river but it was so salty that it could not be used. We dug near the mouth of some of the large washes that came in where we found some water that was a little better. The next day we found a little water at the San Francisco wash where we got enough to water our horses. At the crossing of the river we found a little in a hole but it was very salty. On the 30th we found enough at the Grand Falls to fill a ten gallon keg. At Black Falls we found a little but it was not fit to use as the fish had died in it and it smelt very bad, like carrion.

Going to where the road leaves the river we met a company from Utah, they told us that they had been four months on the road, having lain over at different places.

On August 1, we traveled on some eight miles from the river to a wash where we found some water in a hole that had been dug by the company that we met the day before. We then drove on to Willow Springs where we found plenty of good water, the first that we had it might be said on the whole trip. It was a very warm day, the warmest that we had on the journey.

The next day we had some trouble in getting our horses and did not get off until late.

On the 3rd we had a slight shower near Limestone tanks which furnished enough water in holes in the rocks for our horses. At Bitter Springs, the water was not fit to use and but very little of it at that, but we found very good grass for our animals.

We reached the Ferry on the evening of the 4th. There had been a slight shower, enough so that it loosened some of the large boulders at the top of the cliffs, and during the night we could hear them falling thousands of feet into the river with a loud and booming noise which gave another evidence of the wild grandeur of this noted canyon which contained so many wonders.

On the 5th we were ferried across the river by Brother Johnson. On getting over we stopped with him for a short time and got a little hay for our horses.

Going on some six miles we tied our horses up as there was no feed in this vicinity.

We reached House Rock on the 7th and the next day we drove to the Buckskin Mountain, reaching Johnsons on the 9th.

On the 10th we were at Sink Valley where there was no feed and we tied our animals up. The next day's drive took us to Asa's ranch and on the 12th we reached Panguitch where I stopped with my brother-in-law M. M. Steele, and had a very interesting time in visiting with him and his wife.

On August 13 our little party that had traveled the mountains and deserts of Arizona separated. R. W. Dotson went up to Panguitch Lake and Sister Gale and her children remained at this place as she thought it more likely to get a chance to go on to Beaver where her folks resided than to go on to Paragoonah. Brother Smith and I went on to Bear Valley and the next day I went on to Parowan. Brother Smith stopping at Paragoonah where he resided.

On getting to Parowan I stopped with my sister Sarah. My wife Eliza was up at the saw mill but she came down in a few days.

August 24th I attended meeting at Parowan and spoke, giving an account of our labors in Arizona.

In the evening I started to go to Beaver going as far as Paragoonah, and the next day I went on to Beaver where I found my sister Julia in very poor health.

On my return I stayed all night with Silas S. Smith Jr. His father had gone to the San Juan Valley, Colorado, to found a settlement there. Going on to Parowan the next day I found a letter from my wife Adelaide in Arizona, I was happy to learn that they were all well.

On September 2nd I started to Toquerville to make the folks there a short visit. My daughter Della was staying there with her grandmother. I took my wife Eliza and daughters Frances and Jessie May. We went as far as Kannarah, where we stayed with James Stapley and the next day went on to Toquerville where we found my daughter Della and I was very pleased to see her. We visited with Brother Steele's folks until the 7th when we started back and reached Parowan on the evening of the 8th.

Dixie or the part that I visited was experiencing very dry weather, crops were light, and at Bellvue it had dried up so that they had to haul their water for house use. After our arrival at Parowan I assisted Brother Niels Mortensen in thrashing his grain.

On the 15th I went up to the Coop. mill and sawed for them for some three weeks. I however came down once during the time and attended the fair for one day which was held in Parowan.

On October 6th I started to fix up for my return to Arizona. I went around to collect some debts that were due me, some of them were Justice of the Peace fees, some forty dollars, but I could not get any of these and did not get much of the other debts. I found what I already understood very well that collecting old debts was a hard and a slow job and that they were not worth the time spent in collecting them.

On the 9th my eldest daughter Mary Josephine was married to John Barraclough, at the residence of Peter Wimmer, Brother William C. McGregor performing the ceremony. On the 11th the young couple went over to Beaver where Barraclough resided. He had been raised a Mormon, came over from England with his mother when quite a boy, had worked for Walker Brothers in the mercantile business and had accumulated a little money and was prospering fairly well. He had but little faith in the gospel and did not attend to his religious duties. I was not very favorably impressed with the union of the two but I thought it best to let the girls have their choice in selecting husbands.

On the 10th the choir gave a party in honor of some parties who were leaving for the San Juan to make their home. My second daughter Frances Amelia concluded that she would get married and probably the affair, as well as that of Josie's wedding, was hurried up some as I was about to start to Arizona, so on the 13th she was married to Samuel V. Carson, a relative of my wife Eliza. Brother William C. McGregor performed the ceremony at the residence of Brother Niels Mortensen. Carson was a Mormon and started out very well in life but in later years took to drinking and became a wreck and a worthless character. I never had much acquaintance with him. He later accidentally shot himself and his death was not regretted very much by those who knew him.

During my stay in Parowan I made my stopping place most of the time with Eliza's folks, Brother Mortensen being her step father. This place was about a mile and a half to the west of town and from here I started on October 14 on

my return to Arizona going on up into town in the evening where I stopped with my sister Sarah. I had with me my wife Eliza and daughters Della and Jessie May.

The next day we drove to Bear Valley, a very cold and stormy day, Samuel V. Carson and Frances came this far with me, partly to see me well started out and to haul a portion of my load up Little Creek Canyon. Here we found John H. Willis who was in camp on his way to Arizona, he had quite a number of stock so was traveling rather slow.

The next day we drove to Panguitch and stopped with M. M. Steele. Here we lay over for one day and I attended the funeral of Sister Lizzie Houston and spoke a short time on the occasion.

Brother Steele had taken what interest I had in the water ditch which I was working on when I decided to move to Arizona giving me some oats, etc., which helped me out on the road for horse feed. I never got half what the place was worth, which is always the case when a person moves away.

On the 18th we started out on our journey again, taking dinner with John Butler. We went on and the next day we went nearly to Upper Kanab.

On the 1st we met Brothers Jesse N. Smith and John R. Hulet on their way from Snowflake to Parowan. They brought a letter from my wife Adelaide and reported all well at Snowflake. Brother Smith gave me some instructions about building the School House at Snowflake, said I had been elected one of the committee, and he also instructed me about surveying the water ditch for Snowflake. After this they moved on and I proceeded on to Johnsons.

We had traveled thus far without company, but expected to remain here until we could fall in with some one who was going to Arizona as there was considerable travel on this road at this time. I was quite fortunate for I soon found a man by the name of Lundgreen who was waiting for company and we moved out the next day and drove to Navajo Wells where by digging considerable we got barely enough water for our animals.

The next drive took us nearly across the Buckskin Mountain where we found good grass but no water.

On October 24th we passed House Rock Springs and went out some six miles where we made a dry camp but got tolerably good grass. The next drive took us a little past Badger Creek, no grass in this vicinity. Here we had some trouble with Lundgreen's horses, they were a little wild and not well broken and he was a Danish man and not accustomed to handling horses. They got frightened and ran off, and we followed them some distance before we succeeded in getting them.

On the 27th we reached the ferry where we got to put our teams in Brother Johnson's field. Here we met some teams coming in from Brigham City on their way to Utah.

In the forenoon of the 28th we were ferried across the river and we spent all the afternoon in getting up the Lee Hill. It was a very hard pull and I had to unload a part of my load and Aunt Eliza and I packed it up on our backs. My team was not able to pull the load and we hitched Lundgreen's on a head and they were no account to pull and only made matters worse.

The next morning we thought to give our horses some water before starting on so drove them back down the hill to the river. They waded in a short distance and started to drink but kept on wading and drinking as they went until they got to where the water was too deep for them. They then commenced to swim, and were soon on the other side where they lay down and took a roll in the sand and then started off for Utah on a trot. You can hardly imagine my feelings as we sat there and watched them taking the back track for home. As they came to Brother Johnson's place he saw them and managed to stop them and put them in his corral and then came over with a skiff and took Brother Lundgreen and myself over. We tried to swim the animals back but with all our efforts we could not get them to go into the water, It was going the wrong way for them. We had to get them on the ferry boat and take them over. Brother Johnson was very considerate in this matter and accommodating and only charged us a dollar for this extra work.

We then went on to Navajo Springs where we got some water and then drove out some four miles to where we could get a little grass. On the 30th we met a company going back to Utah, we sent some postal cards by them to the folks at Parowan.

The next day we drove nearly to the divide. During the afternoon we met Jacob Hamblin who was on his way into Utah, he had Sister Wilhelm along with him.

On November 1, we were at willow Springs and the next day we camped at the sand wash where we found a little water in holes that had been dug.

On the 3rd we reached the Little Colorado and traveled up it some eight miles. This stream was dry when we went in, but now there was plenty of water but it was hardly ever very clear and not very good at best. The next day we reached the Black Falls.

On the 5th we drove to the Grand Falls where we found two of the Shumway boys herding stock that they were driving in from Utah.

Our next camp was at the San Francisco wash, where Thales Haskel and T. W. Brookbank who were on their way from Moencopie to Sunset camped with us. The next day was cold and windy.

We reached Sunset on the 8th where we were kindly treated and made welcome by President Lot Smith. Apostle Wilford Woodruff was still here and I had quite a long talk with him. During the time he read me several letters from President Young to the saints in this locality and in relation to settling the country, all of which contained some valuable instructions and advice to the new settlers. On the next day I spent a part of the morning with Brother Woodruff and attended the meeting and spoke a short time. After the meeting we drove on about eight miles.

On the 10th we passed St. Joseph and the next day we reached Woodruff. Two more days of traveling brought us to Snowflake where with much pleasure we met the family and found them all well. We had made the journey full as soon as I had expected and had a very good trip, but the last few days it was rather cold and disagreeable.

After spending a few days in the place, Brother Lundgreen who had traveled with me all the way went on to Round Valley, and afterwards moved on south and was in the San Simon Valley the last I heard of him.

While I was gone, Smith D. Rogers had put up a log house, and before going I had arranged to store my grain with his in it, when it was thrashed. This was done all right but by some accident the house took fire and burned down with all the grain in it. It was true that I did not have very much in there but it was all that I had and now winter was coming on and I was left without anything to go on in that line. This accident was reported to the people in Parowan who helped us out some by donating some means for our relief, thus showing that liberal and sympathetic spirit for which they were always noted.

1879
Chapter 50
A Trip to St. Johns

After getting back from Utah I worked for several days on my house which had not been entirely completed.

On the 16th on November I attended meeting and spoke giving an account of my recent trip.

On the 23rd Brother John Kartchner and I went up to Taylor (then called Walker) and held meeting as home missionaries.

I then went to work on the School House which we were trying to finish before Christmas. The building was 23 X 33 feet, made of hewn logs and was 12 feet to the square. It was intended to use this building for both schools and meetings until we got along further and could build a better one, which we did for sometime when it was accidentally burned.

On December 6, I started to go to St. Johns in company with Bishop John Hunt. He was a member of the Board of Supervisors and wished me to go along with him and proffered to pay me for my time. He had not acted before and as the other members were Gentiles and bitter opponents to the Mormons he wished someone to counsel with. We went as far as Concho 30 miles, and stopped all night with B. H. Wilhelm.

The next day we held meeting with the people of Concho, Bishop Hunt and I occupying the time. There were about six families of the Saints here and two or three Mexican Families. Those of our people had not been here very long, Brother B. H. Wilhelm had recently bought in here getting the most of the land and water right.

The Concho Creek is a beautiful little stream and afforded about enough water for one irrigation stream. The valley is quite narrow, but the soil appeared to be good but was very sticky when wet, which was a very disagreeable feature in a rainy time. There was considerable grass in this vicinity, and an excellent range for sheep. There were several old ruins near by and signs of an old reservoir which like many other places in Arizona gave evidence of the country having been settled at some distant date in the past by an industrious and farming community. After meeting we drove on some ten miles where we camped.

The 8th we drove into St. Johns a distance of some five miles where we stopped at Mr. Hubbell's store where we got our breakfast which was rather a poor one. There was no woman about the place and no regular cook, everyone cooking or getting his own breakfast. There was no hotel in the place.

St. Johns was a Mexican town, and I was told that there were about 75 families in the place. The houses were all built close together and of the Mexican style, having no floors, no windows, and flat roofs covered with dirt. There were two stores, two billiard halls, one saloon, and one Monte bank, where most of the male population spent the greater part of their time and money. There were a few Americans in the place who held all the offices, did all the business, and got all the money and kept most of the Mexicans in a state of peonage.

I attended the meeting of the Board of Supervisors with Brother Hunt. There was not much business done, the greater part of the officers who attended were very ignorant upon law matters, and they did but little, and what they did do was wrong. They however, got extravagant fees for their services.

We stayed all night at Mr. Hubbell's store and at a late hour he gave us the keys and went off, and it was surmised by us that he had an engagement with one of the gentler sex of the Mexican race. He returned about daylight. There was a hard wind during the night and it quit with a snow storm.

On making preparations to start home on the morning of the 9th, Bishop Hunt missed a Navajo blanket, and on going down the street he discovered it under the saddle on a horse tied to the fence. He knew the blanket by a mark on the corner which stuck out from under the saddle. On inquiring it was found that the horse belonged to Dr. Rudd of Springerville. The Dr. was found and he excused himself for taking the blanket saying that he was drunk when he took it and did not know it until he had got out of town, and he then returned to find the owner.

We then started home going as far as Concho where we took dinner with Brother Brady, after which we drove out about six miles and camped. This was a very cold day and we walked the most of the time to keep warm, the next day we reached home.

December 15th I went up to the timber to get out a set of house logs to build an addition to my house, and returned on the 20th.

On the next day meeting was held as usual, there were several of the brethren spoke who had been back to Utah. They stated that they were satisfied with this country.

We had worked hard to get our meeting house completed and this was accomplished on the 4th, when we gathered in the building and had it dedicated, Brother Oscar Mann offered the prayer. A few short speeches were made on the occasion, expressing our gratitude in having a place for our meetings and schools. A dance was held in it in the evening.

On the 27th our quarterly conference was held, Apostle Wilford Woodruff was with us, also President Lot Smith and Bishop George Lake of the Little Colorado Stake. President Jesse N. Smith was absent attending the Legislature in Utah having been elected to that position just before coming out here.

The scarcity of bread in these colonies was the main subject of the conference. There had been a fair crop raised for the amount of land that had been put in, but with all the building, fencing, and ditch work the people had not been able to get in much of a crop, and then there had been a large number of colonists come in which soon created a scarcity of flour and other provisions. This question of lack of sufficient food began to be a serious one, even at this early period of the season.

At this conference Apostle Wilford Woodruff prophesied that in ten years there would be no United States, that the Government would be broken up. I understood that he was taken to task about this soon after and told not to set dates to his prophecies.

After conference, Apostle Woodruff and some others started over to St. Johns to see about locating the saints at that place that had recently come in from Utah. A portion of the land and water right had been purchased by Ammon Tenney for the church, he gave 700 head of American cows and he afterwards bought some other claims for the church so that the whole purchase came to about \$17,000. This was considered by many to be an extravagant price, and it was claimed by some that this might have been bought the year before for \$3,000. Tenney did the main business and purchases through Sol Barth who doubtless saw that the Mormons were coming in and wanted homes, so he asked an extravagant price for his claims also for the claims of the others who sold. There were very little improvements on these claims, it was simply giving this sum for their claims on the water and land.

On January 12th, 1880, Bishop John Hunt and his counselor John Kartchner went up to Showlow to Moses Cluff's place to settle a difficulty that had arisen between him and Martin Mills. The Bishop's other counselor, William J. Flake, was absent so the bishop got me to go along and act in his place in hearing the case. The bishop's court was held at the M. Cluff residence on the 13th and lasted all day. Cluff and Mills were both very unreasonable in their demands. They had been in partnership and had fallen out and could not agree on a settlement. After an all day trial of the case Bishop Hunt rendered the decision which did not appear to suit Mill and may not have suited Cluff either.

We held meeting in the evening and spoke to the saints. There were but few here and they did not hold meetings regularly. This place was later occupied by the Ellsworths. It was two miles above the old Cooley place, (later Showlow).

On the 14th we started home, as we passed, we called on Mr. C. E. Cooley. He seemed quite friendly towards our people and said he would like to see our people govern the county as he thought that taxes would be much lighter if they did. He told me later on that he had a letter from President Brigham Young stating that the saints were coming into this country and if he would befriend them he would be blessed, and if he turned against them he would go down. He stated that he prized that letter very much. He however got in with Mr. Huning later on and apparently

turned against the Mormons, but falling out with Huning he again turned to the Mormons and was their friend as long as he lived.

1880
Chapter 51
A Hard Winter Followed By Famine

On January 17th, 1880, my wife Adelaide gave birth to a son at about 7 A.M. He was a large fine boy weighing 10 pounds. I blessed him on the 25th and gave him the name of Silas Leavitt Fish.

On the 26th I went to the timber to get out some more house logs. Joseph W. Smith also went along, he was getting out some for himself.

The next day it snowed a little. We loaded up on the evening of the 27th and during the night it commenced to snow and continued to fall all day. This snow was the heaviest that had been known for years. It fell, before it stopped, to the depth of from two to four feet deep in the forest.

We got our animals as soon as it was light and throwing off a part of our loads started for home, but on going about four miles we found it so hard getting through the snow which was constantly falling that we threw off the balance of our loads. Proceeding on we made but slow progress through the snow and before we reached Snowflake one of Joseph W. Smith's horses gave out and we left him. We toiled on through the snow until about midnight before we reached home and got warmed through. We went back for the give out animal the next morning but found it dead and half covered with snow. This was one of the worst storms that I was ever out in. It was a regular blizzard, the snow in town was about 18 inches deep. This snow lay on the ground at Snowflake for about 1 month and the weather during that time was extremely cold, the thermometer getting down at times to 20 degrees below zero. This storm stopped all out door work with us and all we could do was to try to care for our animals.

Many of the saints who had just come in from Utah were living in their wagons, and they suffered very much and the stock that had just come in were poor and weak and were not able to stand such a storm and cold weather with scarcely anything to eat and great numbers of them perished. Some of the brethren who arrived at about this time lost the greater part of the stock. John A. West was one of the heaviest losers, he had brought out quite a herd but they nearly all perished on the road and after he got through. This severe winter and the scarcity of bread was a trying time for the poor saints who were struggling to make homes in Northern Arizona, and the scenes like that in the settling of Utah was one long to be remembered by those who passed through them.

In the spring as soon as we were able to work I went to putting in some grain. My team had lived through the winter but was very weak and poor. The horses were able to do but very little and I had no feed to give them, so I would go out with them some three or four miles to where the grass was a little better and camp and the next morning would bring in a little wood or fencing. They were not able to haul much more than one third of a load. About the last of March I hurt my back and was not able to do very much for a week or so.

On April 3rd I started to St. James with Bishop John Hunt. He was going over to attend the meeting of the Board of Supervisors and as he wanted company and as I was not able to do much I went with him. He went out about six miles and camped, James Pearce came along and camped with us.

We reached Concho the next day just as the people were gathering for meeting. We attended the meeting and spoke to the saints after which we visited their reservoir which they had built for the purpose of storing water for irrigation. It was a credit to the few saints who resided here. The water at this time covered about eight acres in the reservoir and was about ten feet deep in the deepest part. They expected to raise the water some four feet more.

On the 5th we took an early breakfast with brother Wild and started for St. Johns where we arrived in time to attend the meeting of the Board of Supervisors. We stopped at what was called the Mormon town about two miles below the old town.

Here a few of the saints had just started to make homes, having laid off a town site and had cleared off a little land. There were about thirty families here most of them living in their wagons, some had piled up some sage brush as a kind of wall or protection against the wind, and weather. The town site not being very well located it was changed in the fall by Apostle Erastus Snow. He advising them to settle in or adjoining the old town.

On the 6th I attended the meeting of the Board with Bishop Hunt. There was not much business done, most of the officials seemed to be working for their own interest more than for the good of the public. Some of them were men of no principals and got their portions through fraud or bribery.

While I was in St. Johns Bishop Hunt gave me a job that I did not appreciate very much and still I felt that it ought to be done. Sometime before this James Pearce had brought a case before me as Justice of the Peace in Snowflake against a man for threatening his life. I sent the man to jail for thirty days, he had sworn that he would kill Pearce. The man again swore that he would kill Pearce, he had served his time and was at liberty in St. Johns and he was now watching a chance to kill Pearce who was here and was drunk and was almost in a helpless condition. The Bishop sent me to get Pearce away from the saloon, this I did but I had a hard job of it, for he was so drunk I watched him for sometime before I was able to get him out of the saloon and the man was around watching for a pretext and opportunity to carry out his threat to kill Pearce, but I got my man safely away by half carrying him.

On the 7th we started home late in the day and the next evening we reached Snowflake a little after dark.

On April 25th Brother Lorenzo H. Hatch and I went up to Taylor as home missionaries where we held meeting with the saints at that place.

I spent most of the month in fencing and working on water ditches, etc., and in putting in a little crop. We were destitute of clothing as well as food. I got a pair of boots from John A. West, they were made by Brother Butt of Parowan and West had brought them out to sell, I paid him for them in cutting fencing. I cut him 533 riders or posts and 1056 stakes, or a total of 1600 stakes and riders for the boots, I thought it rather a high price but I had to have something to wear on my feet.

Some little improvements were made notwithstanding the scarcity of provisions. The first lumber made in this vicinity was cut out by Thomas Willis about the 20th on a little stream mill that he had purchased second handed at Fort Apache.

On May 24th President James N. Smith came in from Utah with the remainder of his family.

The scarcity of bread was now being felt by all and it began to look quite serious. Brother William J. Flake went up to Springerville and purchased some barley, the best he could do. This was distributed among the people and they ground it on coffee mills and bread was made of this, but as the beards and all were ground up together it made rather coarse and rough eating with the beards still in it.

During this trial and famine and pioneer hardships the Apaches¹ broke out and killed and drove off quite a number of horses from our brethren who were locating in that vicinity. William B. Maxwell was the principal looser.

Among all our Indian troubles, famine, and making new homes we did not forget our religious duties. Our home missionary work was kept up.

On June 13th John R. Hulet, Joseph W. Smith and I went up to the Reidhead place some twelve miles above Snowflake on the Showlow road and held meeting with them there. There were but a few families located here. Brother Reidhead was not at home and Brother E. W. East was not feeling very well and did not attend the meeting which was held in Brother Reidhead's house. We returned to Snowflake in the evening.

My team being so poor I had not got in much of a crop, I finished putting in what little I could on the 15th.

Some months before this my son Joseph C. had gone to the Sunset saw mill with some others to get some lumber, a distance of some 125 miles and on the return he lost the horses and was not able to find them so this left me with one span and they were very poor and weak and not able to do much.

On the 16th the day after getting in my crop I started for Sunset to try and get a little flour. I took my wife Adelaide with me for an outing. Our journeying was slow and we did not reach Sunset until the 19th.

On arriving at Sunset I started out to look for the horses that Joseph C. had lost the fall before as I heard that they were in the vicinity of Sunset Pass. I rode up to near the pass during the afternoon and lay down for the night in the brush where I spent a most miserable night as I did not have any bedding and it rained some during the night.

The next day I spent in riding over the country and visiting all the watering places that I could find, but could get no trace of the horses so in the evening I returned to Sunset.

On the 21st I managed to get from President Lot Smith 100 pounds of flour, 100 pounds of shorts, and 100 pounds of bran. I got about as much more for other parties who had sent down to try to get a little breadstuff. Brother Smith was very generous and divided with the people all that he could spare and was to take his pay after the next harvest. Several who got provisions of him went on to the Gila River and never paid him back, but most who remained in the country paid him, however he lost considerable by his liberality. I now had about 600 pounds of freight and found that it was all that my team could pull through the sandy roads. I went to Blanchard Place 12 miles and reached home on the 25th.

Our quarterly conference commenced on the 26th. President Jesse N. Smith and Brother John W. Young were present. They had just returned from Pueblo, Colorado, where they had been for the purpose of getting a contract of grading on the new railroad that was now being started from Albuquerque to California. The incentive for getting employment for the brethren was so they might be able to get a little provisions during this period of scarcity of bread. They had taken a contract to grade five miles a little east of the Continental Divide, and would probably take more when that was done as this was to enable the people to get some flour. The conference closed on the 27th and during the meetings there was considerable said about the work on the railroad, also about the scattered families through the country and advising them to move in to the larger settlements on account of the Indian trouble that were going on through the country. As yet there had not been any raids in the vicinity of Snowflake but the people around Rush Valley had lost heavily in horses by these raiders.

Chapter Notes

¹ The Apaches were long the scourge of New Mexico and Arizona, and northern Mexico. Living by plunder alone, they systematically robbed and killed Spaniards, Mexicans, and Americans. They belong to the Athabaskan family, and comprise many tribes and sub-tribes. Gregg states that at this time they comprised some 15,000 souls. After many fierce and bloody wars they were put on reservations where they now reside and are becoming somewhat civilized.

1880

Chapter 52

A Journey to the Grading Camp and Famine Averted By Work Building the Railroad

At the close of the conference several of the brethren prepared to go out to the railroad to work. I arranged to go with them. I started out on July 5th and took my wife Eliza, son Joseph C. and daughters Della and Jessie May.

We traveled about ten miles the first day. There was quite a number of us, about 20 wagons and about two men to a wagon. President Jesse N. Smith was along and took charge of the company. We expected to go out a short distance east of Fort Wingate where we would work on the grade of the Atlantic and Pacific Railroad, about 150 miles from Snowflake. (this road was later sold to the A. T. and S. F. Railroad.)

On the 6th we reached the ranch of Thomas L. Greer where we were joined by a few of the brethren from Woodruff. On the 7th we traveled up the river about a mile when we turned to the north east, and the next day a drive of seven miles brought us to Ammon M. Tenney's ranch, here we did not find enough water for all of our animals. Tenney raised the water with a wind mill about 60 feet and generally had enough for his stock, we went on some eight miles crossing the line between Arizona and New Mexico.

On the 9th a travel of twelve miles brought us to the Zuni Village where we stopped a short time to look at the place and its inhabitants. This was their main village and they all assemble here to pass the winter months, bringing in their produce that they had raised from their surrounding farms, and they spend much of their time during the winter months in feasting and dancing. In the summer they go out on their farms and ranches to look after their flocks of sheep and goats and plant their grain, etc. The Zunis as a rule dressed very well and the women appeared to be better clad than any Indian women that I had seen. They make their own clothes and are self supporting, not receiving any aid from the government as many other tribes do. They are a shade lighter than the Indians of the plains and mountains, and this is doubtless a result of their mode of living, being in houses more than the wild tribes. This is the case with all the Pueblo Indians of the South West.

This village was built on a hill and covered about 10 acres of ground. It was located in the center of the valley and near the Zuni River (which does not afford any water in the dry season of the year). The Zunis obtain their water for house use, etc., from wells. Their corrals or pens for their sheep and goats are on the outskirts of the village and adjoining the houses. I noticed that around in this vicinity they had quite a number of eagles that they kept in cages. Their houses were mostly built of adobes and were one and two stories high. They had the flat roofs, and were built close together and arranged around on the hill so that the roof of one house served as the door yard of the one back of it. There were two or three small alleys about 14 feet wide leading in toward the center of the town but did not quite reach that point. Most of the inhabitants reach their houses by means of ladders which we saw at nearly every house. The doors and windows were very small, the former being about four feet high. A few of their windows had isinglass in them while the most of them were mere holes in the wall which admitted light and air.

Near the center of the village was an old Catholic Church which was built of adobes with a few rock about the corners. The building was a curiosity on account of its great antiquity, it was said to have been over a hundred years old. Its size was about 30 X 50 feet, the walls were from six to eight feet thick and about twenty feet high. It, like all other of the Mexican buildings, had a flat roof. There was a kind of belfry on the top in which were hung two old bells. There was some carved work in the west end of the building which looked as if it was intended to represent a large organ, there were several rude pictures on this piece of work. There was a rude gallery in the west end of the building with some rude attempts at carving around it. The building was in a decaying condition, but it stood as a monument of the spirit of enterprise of the early fathers in pushing their conquest and religion over the wilds and deserts of the southwest at a date when our eastern colonies were in their infancy. No one can look upon these monuments erected by the Catholic Priests without being struck with awe and respect for those early adventurers who in 1540 first planted the standard of Spain in this the heart of the western desert.

There were two white men living in the village when we visited it, one a trader and the other a young man by the name of Cushing, a nephew of Caleb Cushing, who was there in the interest of the Smithsonian Institute at Washington. He dressed like the Zunis only a little more gaudy, he was becoming naturalized so as to get all the information possible about this people for a book which he was intending to write when he got what items in relation to their traditions, religion, laws and customs that he could, when he would leave.

There were several Albinos or white Indians among the Zunis. They had light hair and kind of pink eyes and were a sickening set to look at. There were several theories as to the cause of these among the Pueblos, some think that intermarrying for ages was the main cause.

In the afternoon we went on to Fish Springs about 15 miles. Here was located one of the main farms of the Zunis, where they raised considerable wheat, corn, etc. There was quite a number of houses here that they reside in during the summer months.

July 10 we had considerable trouble in finding all of our animals, notwithstanding the fact that we had a guard of four men all night to keep our stock from trespassing upon the Indians wheat and corn. We reached Sevoia after a drive of ten miles, here Brother Luther C. Burnham was found. Those who had resided here had moved away and he was only remaining here to care for a few Indian goods until our arrival.

I spent the afternoon in invoicing and packing up the goods which belonged to John W. Young and Ammon M. Tenney.

Sevoia is a very pleasant little place surrounded by low hills covered with pine timber, very good grass but water was rather scarce, a very good place for stock on a small scale.

July 11th, we remained here with brother Burnham in the forenoon and held meeting. He gave our company a hog to kill which came in very acceptable as we were on rather short rations. In the afternoon we moved on through the forest some eight miles over a very rough road.

On the 12th we passed over the mountain to Fort Wingate some 14 miles, here we stopped to water our teams. The orderly was quite uneasy for fear that we were going to camp near the fort, and was in a hurry to have us move on. We went out about 4 miles where we camped.

Fort Wingate had a very neat appearance, the buildings were made of adobes which were of a light color and appeared to be very durable for that kind of material. Being situated in the Navajo country it was quite a trading point and considerable trade in wool, pelts, etc., was carried on with the Navajos. There were three companies of soldiers at the post but one of them was expected to go south in a short time to fight Victoria and his band of renegade Apaches.

On July 13 a journey of 8 miles brought us to Bacon Springs. A man by the name of Crane lived here. He told us that his mother had come out from the east to pay him a visit, she was quite gray and in a short time her hair became black. They had used the water out of a well which appeared to have sulphur in it, but the water got better after they had used the well sometime.

From this point Brothers Smith and Mann went on ahead about 15 miles to ascertain exactly where the grading was to be done, and if there had been any change in the work which had been talked of on account of the scarcity of grass. They returned in the night and reported that there had not been any change in the work, and that it was about nine miles distant, there was hardly any grass and but little water.

July 14th we moved on over to where the work was to be done, about 4 miles east of the Continental Divide, the summit here is quite low, being 7303 feet above sea level.

Our camp as rather pleasantly located in a pleasant valley on the Atlantic slope skirted by hills covered with cedars on the north and south, but there was a scarcity of water and grass, the nearest water being at Brown's ranch about five miles south.

Our supplies that we had expected from Albuquerque had not arrived and we were entirely out of provisions. We sent a team back to Fort Wingate to get a few supplies, but all that we could get was 147 pounds of flour and a little beef and bacon. These provisions were divided out, each man getting about two pounds of flour and a little meat.

The next day we spent in fixing up our camp and arranging for work.

July 16th about nine teams started for Albuquerque to get supplies and tools, among the number was James C. Owens and his two sons Clark and Marion, Littleton L. Perkins, and Lewis Harris. The remainder who were left in camp commenced to work on the grade.

We had no scrapers and but few shovels so our work was very slow and we did not accomplish much to start with. Our company divided up as to their work, Anthony J. Stratton and few others took a mile of the grading and they moved their camp down about three quarters of a mile to where their work was, the rest of us went to work by the day to start with.

The next day I worked at fixing up a bowery while the others worked on the grade. On the morning of the 18th a team that had gone out to meet the supplies came in. This was quite opportune for we were entirely out of provisions and some had gone to bed the night before without their suppers. Meeting was held, Jesse N. Smith being the principal speaker.

The next day Brother Smith and I went down to Stinking Springs, about five miles, to see if there was any mail for any of the company. We were kindly treated by Mr. Chavez, a Mexican, but the station keeper, an American was quite shy. We supposed it was because we were Mormons.

In the afternoon I went over to Brown's ranch for water. This labor of hauling water was a heavy tax on us and we hired a man to haul it which he did for so much a day, he fixed up for it as well as he could and spent all of his time in hauling for sometime as it took considerable water to water all of our animals. W. G. Black did most of the water hauling, Arthur Tenney did some.

I worked on the grade when not called off for other work. On the 21st Brother Ernest A. Tietjen came in bringing some tools and provisions.

On the 23rd two loads of tools and provisions came in. The flour was old and had worms in it so we had to sift it, but we were glad to get it and soon fitted up a team and sent a part of the provisions on to Snowflake to our families whom we left on very short rations and we knew that by this time that some of them were entirely out. The balance was divided out among the men.

John W. Young and family came in from the Moencopie, there were five wagons, two of them went on to Albuquerque for supplies.

On the 24th I worked at fixing up a tent for a store room, put in a counter and put in what supplies we had. William S. Gibbons and Ed Nelson, who were freighting, started back to Albuquerque for freight.

The next day meeting was held at Brother Stratton's camp, John W. Young was present.

July 30th I was in the store and busy selling and distributing supplies and fixing up accounts. John H. Rollins and Solomon Wardell had started back to Snowflake but had been detained some on account of losing their horses, but soon started on again. Some of the brethren were now getting some supplies for their folks at home and were starting out with them, a few of these having got their flour on trust went on with it and their families to the Gila and never paid for what they got. John W. Young lost considerable in this as he assumed the debts when a settlement was made.

Ammon M. Tenney came in from Albuquerque with a load of oats and returned the next day. Most of the teams that went down to Albuquerque on our arrival here returned on the 31st with tools and supplies which were greatly needed for we not only had been short of provisions but had no tools to work with.

Meeting was held n August 1st. John W. Young and Jesse N. Smith were the speakers.

¹ The Zunis have been celebrated for honesty and hospitality. The inhabitants mostly profess the Catholic faith. They cultivate the soil, manufacture, and possess considerable quantities of stock. Their village is on the Zuni River some 150 miles.

1880
Chapter 53
Tending the Commissary for Young and Tenney

To take the contract for grading, it was done on Brother Smith's part solely for the purpose of furnishing the people a chance to get some flour for it was a desperate condition to have families over 250 miles from where any-thing could be had and those families out of bread. Now that they had got some supplies and work furnished for the people Brother Smith felt that he was needed at home to look after the interests of the young colony, so he arranged with the others to withdraw from the company which was called Young, Smith and Tenney, and on the 2nd a settlement was made. Young and Tenney were to go on with the business and they paid Brother Smith off for what he had done.

Young and Tenney started a boarding house today, my wife Eliza was engaged to do the cooking for the men. The men now had some tools and they commenced work with their scrapers and things were now commencing to have a more lively aspect. I was engaged to keep the store and the accounts of what supplies the men drew out and to give them their credits for their time that they worked. This kept me quite busy for there was considerable drawing out of supplies both for the men who were at work and to send back to the families at home.

On August 14 there were a few more of the brethren came in to work, and several were here who came from Springerville and St. Johns, and our numbers were constantly increasing, but we were greatly handicapped for want of grain for our animals as there was but little if any grass in this vicinity and we had great difficulty in getting supplies in as we needed them. Brother Young and Tenney were both in Albuquerque buying supplies.

A few days before this I received a letter from my wife Adelaide at Snowflake, she had received the few things that I had sent back. She wrote one of the kindest letters that I ever received, these supplies coming at the time when starvation was staring the people in the face were appreciated as no one can tell unless they have passed through these trials and scenes.

On August 28th President Jesse N. Smith and family started back to Snowflake, my daughter Della went with them. She expected to go on to Utah on a visit of a few months.

The grading having been finished at this place we moved camp to the west about two miles. In the afternoon John W. Young started for Albuquerque.

Young and Tenney had employed several Indians and Mexicans to work on the grade. Brother Tenney who had charge of the Indian Mission, looked after these workmen, he however got some of the brethren who understood Spanish to take charge of the laborers.

September 5, Sunday we had our meeting which was held regularly every Sunday. At this meeting there were several Mexicans present and August Wilkin, Edmund Richardson, and Ammon W. Tenney spoke in Spanish. The Mexicans were taking some interest in our religion, but it was not lasting, and they soon lost all desire for investigation.

The next day we moved the store about a mile to the west.

On September 8th J. L. Hubbell came to our camp and had a long talk with Brother Tenney upon election matters. This eventually was a source of much comment and ill feelings among the gentiles as well as the Mormons. Before Brother Smith went home he spoke to Brother Tenney about seeing Sol. Barth, the main man in the political field among the outsiders, and make some arrangements with him about election matters so that there would not be a split between the Gentiles and Mormons, and report to him. Brother Smith not hearing from Brother Tenney, went ahead at Snowflake as the time for the convention had been set, and got up a ticket. Brother Tenney had been busy and had not seen Barth until he met Hubbell at our camp who came over as Barth's agent. This was two days after the convention had come off at Snowflake. He then made arrangements with Hubbell and pledged the vote of the Mormon people to support the ticket which he and Hubbell had slated out. This was of course too late to do anything with those at Snowflake as they had gone ahead and got out their ticket. I received a letter from Brother Smith stating that they had gone ahead with the convention and got out a ticket as they had not heard anything from

Brother Tenney. I read the letter to Brother Tenney. He took it to heart very bad and felt very much hurt at Brother Smith. Had he reported to Brother Smith before the Snowflake convention it would have saved considerable ill feelings and probably a split between the Mormons and the Gentiles. Brother Tenney felt very much hurt over this affair and he resigned his position as President of the Indian Mission. He talked some of getting the First Presidency to investigate the case, even thinking of going to Salt Lake City to lay the case before the authorities of the Church. The whole trouble arose through his not attending to the business as promptly as he should have done and reporting to President Smith before Brother Smith went ahead with the convention. Brother Tenney talked considerable about it, trying to lay all the blame on President Smith, and tried to injure him in this respect all that he could. If the seeing of Barth had been done promptly it was probably that a compromise could have been made so that there would have been but one ticket put out and a bitter fight might have been avoided. Tenney had promised Hubbell, who was acting as Barth's agent, the vote of the Mormon people for the ticket that they had blocked out, and now it was too late as the Mormons had got out their ticket two days before this talk.

On September 13, Apostle Erastus Snow and Brigham Young Jr. arrived in camp about 6 P.M. and held meeting with us and spoke upon the missionary work among the Laminates. Brother Snow stated that to do successful work among the Indians the missionary should go among them and remain with them teaching them how to farm, and bringing them along in various ways and if needs be marry among them. The rest of their company did not visit our camp, but passed on beyond Fort Wingate where they were to await the return of Apostles Snow and Young. The company had come by the way of San Juan and expected to visit the saints in Arizona.

The next morning Apostle Snow and Young started back to join the company. August Wilkin and I went with them, we reached their camp at about 2:30 P.M. The company consisted of Erastus Snow and son, Brigham Young Jr. and son, William H. Dame, J. Houston, Israel Butt, ___ Calispie and ___ Knight.

We remained with the company for a short time. I however had the opportunity of having a short conversation with my old friend and President William H. Dame. This proved to be the last time that we ever met on this earth. Brother L. C. Burnham was camped near by getting out some timbers for Fort Wingate.

At about 4 P.M. the company started on for St. Johns with the exception of Brother Young who returned to camp with Brother Wilkins and me. As we passed Fort Wingate the band was playing and it seemed to me to be the finest music that I ever heard. Brother Young said that he had heard the New York band play but that it did not equal this.

We arrived at camp a little before 10 P.M. Brother Young had come back with us to meet his brother John W. Young who was in Albuquerque. Brother Tenney had come in a little before.

Brother John W. Young however soon came in and brother Tenney now laid his case about the election matters before them. The matter was talked over at some length and they finally decided for the two Brothers Young to start at once and overtake Brother Snow and have him see Brother Smith and see if something could be done to unite the two tickets or else join Barth in the election. They left camp on this mission at about dark, Brother Tenney going with them as he was going to St. Johns to attend the convention there.

On the 19th we had meeting as usual and some of the brethren spoke in Spanish as we had some Mexicans present.

On the 20th the lower camp having finished the grade where they were, moved on west some four miles locating on the divide, and the next day we moved some of our goods and supplies on to the upper camp, and on the 22nd we moved the store.

On the 23rd the Navajo Chief Manuleta and a few of his braves visited our camp and reported that the raiding Apaches were in the vicinity and that we would have to look out for our animals and guard them very close. We put out an extra strong guard but no Apaches were seen.

John W. Young returned from St. Johns. They did not accomplish much about the election case. His return was on the 25th and the next day meeting was held at which Brother Young spoke on the First Principles of the Gospel. There were quite a number of Gentiles working on the grade and several of them were at the meeting.

Brother Tenney came in from St. Johns, he seemed very much downcast over the election matters and blamed President Smith for all the trouble, he claimed to be acting under the instructions of Apostle Woodruff.

On September 28, John W. Young started for Albuquerque to receive a camp outfit that he had purchased.

We had our meeting on October 3, there were but few attended of the outside element and many of our brethren were becoming more indifferent about their meetings.

On October 4th Apostle B. Young, Thomas W. Brookbank and Brother Perkins came into camp from St. Johns, and on the 6th Apostle Young started for Salt Lake City, accompanied by August Wilkins and Thomas W. Brookbank, the latter two were going on a mission to the Mexicans in New Mexico and were accompanying Brother Young as far as Albuquerque.

On the 14th John W. Young came in from Albuquerque, bringing two of the railroad officials F. W. Smith, Supt. of the road, and J. M. Latta who had all the tie and timber contract on the road from this point on west. The camp outfit that John W. Young had purchased came in today, there was 76 mules, 15 wagons, quite a number of scrapers, etc.

On the next day Brother Young started west for the San Francisco Mountain, he taking Supt. Smith and Mr. Latta with him. Brother Young furnished the team, carriage, etc. for the trip. These expensive trips and other expenses were telling terribly on Brother Young's pocket, but he never stopped to realize it or check these expensive moves. He was trying to curry favor with the officials of the road. The party returned from their trip west on the 28th.

During their journey he had taken a contract from Supt. Smith of 100 miles of road to grade and the contract might be extended to 150 miles. In taking this contract he left Ammon M. Tenney out, taking the whole thing in his own name. Brother Tenney felt very much hurt about this as they had been in partnership on the work that they had been doing and he thought that the partnership should continue, he talked some of suing Brother Young. He claimed that they were partners in this first contract and should still continue to be so in taking the next contract. Brother Tenney had many trials and disappointments and shed many bitter tears over them and grieved over them very much. Instead of making them lighter than they were he always made them worse than they were, which constantly kept him in hot water.

I had been working for Young and Tenney steady since I came out from Snowflake, taking charge of the commissary department, keeping the accounts of the men's work, what they drew, etc.

I had made calculations to return to Snowflake for a short time, and I started back today going as far as the top of the mountain. I took my wife Eliza with me, she had been cooking for the men who were working on the grade and had worked extremely hard. I also took Brother Alexander Stewart, Brother Donahue and Gustav Johnson who were returning home. The 29th we drove nearly to the Zuni Village, we met Jesse N. Perkins Jr. who was returning to the camp and he stayed with us. Proceeding on our journey we reached Snowflake on the afternoon of November 2nd.

It was election day and I went and cast my vote for the Peoples Ticket. There were 63 votes polled at Snowflake. The Peoples Ticket was fairly elected in the county but the Board of Supervisors counted it out and the other ticket in. None of the candidates on the Peoples Ticket were allowed to hold office although they were fairly elected. Elections were of little use in Apache county at this time for the Board counted in whoever they pleased regardless of the number of votes that they received.

Apostle Erastus Snow and party had attended the Quarterly Conference at Snowflake in September at which there was a more thorough organization of the Stake. James C. Owens was put in Bishop at Woodruff, John H. Standiford was sustained as Bishop of Taylor Ward (this place had been called both Walker and Bagley but was named Taylor by President Jesse N. Smith) Sextus E. Johnson was put in Bishop at Erastus. (This name did not cling to the place as it was formerly called Concho and later the name of Erastus was dropped and Concho was again the common name for it.) Peter J. Christofferson was put in Bishop at Round Valley (Springerville), and Edward E. Noble was put in Bishop at Rush Valley. A High Council was organized consisting of the following named persons: Jesse N. Perkins, Noah Brimhall, Charles Shumway, Thomas L. Greer, B. H. Wilhelm, Joseph Fish, Samuel H. Rogers, William D. Kartchner, John A. West, Mons Larsen, Edward W. East, and John W. Freeman. I was set apart as a member of the High Council of the Eastern Arizona Stake of Zion by Jesse N. Smith on November 7th, 1880.

On November 8th I started back to the railroad, I took my wife Adelaide with me, there was also along with us, Joseph W. Smith, John H. Rollins, and Samuel Morris.

Moving on about as we generally travel over these deserts we reached the Zuni Village on the 12th where we stopped a short time to witness a dance that the Zunis were having. It as one of their annual dances which they were accustomed to have just before starting on a hunt. They represented the hunt in a kind of a theatrical way, the dancers or performers were all naked and each took his part remarkably well keeping the most perfect time to the music.

In the afternoon we drove on about ten miles when Ammon Tenney came on with us and we camped together, it was extra cold weather for this time of year.

Continuing on we reached the grading camp on the 14th, and the next day I went to work as usual in the commissary department or store.

John W. Redd a young man from Harmony, Utah, had been tending the store while I was gone. He had never had a great deal of experience in such kind of work and I found things rather tangled up, which gave me considerable work for a few days in getting things fixed up and mistakes rectified.

On November 24 we started to move the store down west about a mile below Bacon Springs to a spot where later the railroad built their station of Coolidge. It snowed some and the weather was a little disagreeable and we were several days in getting things moved and fixed up in shape again.

November 29th, I started for Albuquerque for the purpose of looking up and settling some of the accounts and correcting mistakes that had occurred. The purchasing had been done mostly by Brother Young but some had been done by Brother Tenney and some had been done through ordering by letters and there had not been the care that there should have been in getting the accounts in shape and they had got tangled or mixed up some and required looking after and straightening up. I took the buckboard that carried the mail at 11 A.M. at Bacon Springs. The first station reached was Stinking Springs about 16 miles, there was an American here who tended the mail animals, and a Mexican family. The next station was Blue Water where there were two men who were looking after the mail animals, they were the most depraved in their talk of any that I had ever met, and doubtless were murderers and highwaymen or robbers by profession. I got my supper at this place. After leaving this place a drive of some 14 miles took us to Old Fort Wingate where we stopped a few minutes to change horses, and during the time I managed to get partially warm over a little fire made of a few cedar limbs. Proceeding on we passed a number of grading camps, and found some rough road along here. We stopped a short time at McCarthy's, and our next station as Cevero, but as the Post Master was at a Mexican "Fan Dango" we went on without stopping and arrived in Laguna at about 8 A.M. I managed to get quarters in the room occupied by the drivers and got a little rest. I spent the forenoon in looking over the place, which was a Pueblo Indian town and was built very much like the Zuni Village. They like the other Pueblo Indians got the main part of their living by farming and tending a few sheep and goats.

The railroad had had their track laid out some six miles west of this place and ran their construction train from Albuquerque out here once a day, but no regular passenger or freight trains were run at this time. I took the train for Albuquerque at 1 P.M. There was an old box car which a few of us rode in, there were neither seats or fire so we managed to keep warm by walking and moving around the best we could. We struck the Rio Grande River¹ at the village Isleta² this being the junction of the A. and P. Railroad with the A. T. and S. F. Railroad. The Isalets village was the most prosperous Indian Village that I had ever seen. It had a good location in the rich valley of the Rio Grande, their orchards and vineyards looked well and gave evidence of an industrious people.

Twelve miles more up the Rio Grande brought us to Albuquerque where we arrived at about sunset. There were but a few buildings about the depot, this being what was called the new town and had just been started. The old Mexican town of Spanish days was about two miles distant. I went down there for as yet all the business houses were there not having moved up to the new location by the railroad. After some difficulty I found a lodging place at a kind of a boarding house kept by Mrs. Scott.

The next day I spent a short time in looking around over this ancient town which had figured so prominently in years gone by in New Mexican annals. It was stated that the town was almost 300 years old, its population were mostly

Mexicans, but since the advent of the railroad the Americans were coming in and fast taking the lead in all the business and all leading enterprises. The business was at this period being transferred to the New Town and the Old Town will soon be left as it was years ago with its careless, indifferent, lazy, idle and unprogressive people. The town did not look as if any advancement or improvement had been made in the last hundred years. The Mexicans here were very much like the Indians, they could not compete with the Americans or stand their civilization, that is they copied their vices and not virtues, and they soon took a back position and the places of most value and importance were soon filled by the more progressive race.

During the day I visited some of the houses that Young and Tenney had been doing business with and settled up some of the accounts.

John W. Young was in town and made some very foolish purchases at this time and later on as I thought. He bought at this time a common dirk knife that was highly finished, and the guards were of gold and gold inlaid on the handle. There might have been \$100 of gold on it. For this knife he gave \$250 which was about \$150 more than it was worth. Later he purchased a dog for which he gave \$500. He had no earthly use for this dog and he made several extravagant purchases all of which told on him a little later on.

Christopher I. Kempe was in to get some goods for St. Johns, he went into a sure win gambling place and seeing a good chance to win some money entered the game and lost all he had. He at once came to John W. Young. I was present when he laid the case before him with tears in his eyes. Brother Young gave him a severe lecture and they went to start the police on the case to see if they could not recover the money. I do not know whether they recovered it or not but think they got a little of it back. This I think taught Brother Kempe a lesson not to invest in a Sure Thing any more.

December 2nd I spent the day in looking over the accounts and correcting them at the houses of Stover and Co., Vose and Stein, Mc Kenzie and Krous, and a few other firms. I found and had corrected errors in their accounts to the amount of \$400. Most of these errors were against Young and Tenney but a few were in their favor. In many of these corrections it was not the fault of the firms but the loose way that Young and Tenney had done their their purchasing.

I had not quite gone over all the accounts that I would have liked to but the next day I was compelled to return to camp on account of a large amount of grain that had been shipped and I would have to return to see about forwarding it on to Holbrook, the station that was now being made the headquarters for John W. Young's new contract.

I took the train at 6 A.M. riding on an open car partly loaded with hay. It was a very cold and windy day and the ride was anything but a pleasant one. I curled down between some of the bales to get out of the keen north wind and made it as comfortable as possible which was not saying very much.

We reached Lagoonah about noon where I remained until about dusk when I took the buckboard for our camp where I arrived at about 8 A.M. the next morning. We had a terrible snow storm during the last part of the trip, it was extremely cold and the storm came directly in our faces making about as bad a storm as any that I was ever out in.

On arriving at camp it took something to get warm, I having been chilled through and was very tired having ridden all night in a storm, but I managed to put in the most of the day in settling up with some men that had been discharged for getting drunk.

I was very busy for sometime in shipping supplies on to Holbrook. Most of the Mormons who had come out to work had quit and gone home, some however had taken small jobs or sub contracts and were at work by themselves, and the most of the men who were at work on the grade at this time were Gentiles and many of them were of the tramp order and they were getting drunk at every opportunity. On Christmas some of them got drunk and were discharged. Brother Young was very strict in many respects and would not tolerate drunkenness.

On January 1st, 25 of the men quit and most of them went on west to the camps in advance and got work for a time there. There were several along the works that had come out from Utah. Some of these had outfits, teams, etc., and took sub contracts.

On January 12 Joseph W. Smith started for home. My wife Adelaide and her two little boys Horace and Silas went with him. They went down by the Pureco route as it was feared that the snow on the mountain would be too deep to get through on the Zuni road.

On February 1st, 1881 I balanced up my accounts for the month of January which showed the sales amounted to about \$23,000 including supplies forwarded to Holbrook. Young and Tenney were now settling up their accounts as their contract was practically completed, and the next contract, as I have stated, Brother Young had taken for himself. A F. Doremus from Salt Lake City had come out to look after John W. Young's business and to aid in settling up with Brother Tenney. The first week in February was spent in settling up the accounts of Young and Tenney and dividing up the property. Brother Tenney took mules, wagons, etc. for what was coming to him. He got some advantage of Brother Young who took all the debts, liabilities, and responsibility of the work. The settlement was completed by the 6th and Brother Tenney who had figured on taking a contract in his own name started for St. Johns.

Chapter Notes

¹ The Rio Del Norte rises in the San Juan Mountains, in southwestern Colorado. Closely hemmed in by mountains, it flows almost directly south as far as El Paso, where it reaches the plains and thence forms the western boundary of Texas. From El Paso it is called the Rio Grande, or Rio Bravo. But in later years the term Rio Grande is generally used for the whole stream, and Rio del Norte is seldom used.

² The old pueblo of Isleta was situated on an island in the Rio Grande, not far from the site of the present pueblo. Otterman advanced against this strong hold in 1681, captured it without being resisted, and carried away many of the Indians, who founded Isleta del Sur in Texas. The old pueblo was abandoned until 1718, when it was rebuilt by fugitives returned from among the Hopi (Moki). It has constantly been occupied since that time, and has now over a thousand inhabitants, who have a large agricultural grant in Bernalillo County.

1881
Chapter 54
Starting of the Arizona Cooperative Mercantile Institution

I had arranged to quit the railroad work and go home when the settlement was made between Young and Tenney. This was done by the 6th and on that day Brother Tenney started for St. Johns and I accompanied him. He left the camp about noon and went over the mountain to the Neutra, the road had been broken through and we got over without much difficulty.

February 7th we started early and after going about three miles one of the axle-trees that had been broken gave out and we changed all the load into the other end of the wagon and tied up the broken axletree and went on about two miles further when one of the thimbles came off the wagon. We got some sagebrush and made a fire heating the thimble and put it on again cooling it with snow. We then went on without further trouble and reached St. Johns the next day, where I remained one day waiting for a chance to go on to Snowflake. On the 10th I got a chance to go over to Snowflake with Brother Linton and the next day I reached home.

On the 13th Bishop John Hunt who had been back to Utah gave a short sketch of his visit at our meeting and I spoke of the experience that I had on the railroad.

Before going out on the railroad I had started to put up another room getting out a few logs, and now on my return I started to pick up things that had been neglected for nearly a year and on the 14th I started for the forest to get out some timber for making shingles, I made my own shingles. The rest of the month and March was spent in work on ditches and on public work.

Our quarterly conference commenced on March 26th at Snowflake, some Home Missionaries were called I being one of the number. I was now a member of the high council, and also clerk of the council, stake clerk, and I was now on the home missionary list which gave me enough of public duties besides my own affairs to look after.

On April 10th I went up to Taylor and held meeting there as a home Missionary. The next day I went to the forest and commenced to get out a set of house logs for brother Smith and worked at this for some time off and on when I got a chance.

On the 17th, Joseph W. Smith and I went down to woodruff as Home missionaries and held meeting. Brother Jesse N. Smith had been assisting John W. Young with his work on his railroad contract at Holbrook and he came up and met with us and we all spoke during the meeting. I returned home in the evening.

I spent the spring in farming and getting out logs and putting them up for a large house for President Smith. With this work and other things that demanded my attention I did not get in very much of a crop. Many of the brethren were at work on the railroad so there was some neglect in the farming with others as well as myself.

On June 25th our quarterly conference was held at Taylor. The next day Apostles Erastus Snow and Brigham Young Jr. arrived and attended the rest of conference.

A meeting was held in the evening at which the subject of establishing a Cooperative store was talked over. Apostle Snow took a great interest in this movement, and the next day, the 27th, a meeting was held at Snowflake for the purpose of organizing a Cooperative store at Holbrook for the two stakes, that is the Eastern Arizona Stake and the Little Colorado Stake. This was to be the parent store which would furnish the other stores and settlements of the two stakes. Jesse N. Smith, David K. Udall and I were appointed a committee to draft a constitution and bylaws for the company. A board of eleven directors were elected which was the President of the two stakes and the nine bishops viz: Jesse N. Smith, Lot Smith, Levi M. Savage, Joseph H. Richards, James C. Owens, John hunt, John H. Sandifird, Sextus E. Johnson, David K. Udall, Peter J. Christofferson, and Edward A. Noble. The board organized by electing Jesse N. Smith President and Superintendent, Lot Smith Vice President, and Joseph Fish was elected Treasurer and Secretary. Considerable means was subscribed and was not available at this time as Brother Young was not in a position to meet his obligations. This may be an interesting item in my life as this organization and my help in starting it took place on my 41st birthday.

The Nation's Birthday was celebrated in due form on the 4th of July, 1881. A meeting in the forenoon, a dance in the afternoon for the children, and one in the evening for the adults. I was the orator for the day.

On the 10th Bishop John Hunt and I went down to Holbrook to look after the business of the Coop. store that we were starting. This town was named for the chief engineer of the road, Mr. Holbrook. We attended meeting at Woodruff as we went down.

The next day we stayed at Holbrook waiting for Jesse N. Smith who was west looking after some of the business of John W. Young's along the lone. He and Brigham Young, Jr. came in about midnight.

On the 12th we went over the ground and looked at the lots that John W. Young was to turn over to the Coop. Store. We finally agreed to take them at his price which was \$500. Brother Young agreed to give us a clear title to the lots and to have the Superintendent of the railroad put in a side track to come up to one corner of the lot. We took his store building which was a kind of frame made of 2 X 14 scantling and covered with canvas for \$250. These prices we considered rather high, but these were turned on debts that Young was owing parties and it looked doubtful about getting anything on these accounts, at least there were no prospects in the near future, and we were glad to get anything that we could use.

Brother Smith, Hunt, and I, after looking over the lots and buildings, and settling on the price, started for Snowflake where we arrived about midnight, and the next day we started for St. Johns going as far as Concho where we stayed all night with Brother Martineau. We reached St. Johns at about 11 a.m. on the 14th where we had some conversation with some of the principal men of the place about the store business. One of the main objects of this trip was to see Chief Justice French, who had been here to hold court, but owing to some neglect of the clerk to docket cases, issue summons, etc., he had not held court and had left the day before.

On the 15th we drove down to Brother Thomas L. Greer's place where we stopped a couple of hours. We found him very sick with erysipelas, his leg was swollen very bad, he never recovered, dying not long after.

From here we drove on down the river some seven miles to where Brother Allred was making a place or was trying to start one but it did not amount to anything. It was storming and we got shelter in a cave near by where we slept but did not fancy our quarters very much. These caves have a wonderful history from the fact that Francisco Coronado, in his march to the seven cities of Sibola in 1540, traveled by this route, and his army that followed him were late in getting through, were overtaken by a cold and severe storm, and some of the men took refuge in these caves for shelter as we did 341 years later. The next day we continued our journey and reached home in the evening.

On July 31st I went down to Woodruff where I attended meeting as a home missionary and the next day I went on down to Holbrook where Jesse N. Smith, Lot Smith, and Joseph H. Richards arrived during the evening.

On the next day, August 2nd, a few of the directors of the Coop. store met and did some business. It was decided that David K. Udell go east to make a purchase of goods for the store. I started home in the evening and went as far as Woodruff, and the next day reached home. The rest of the month I spent in various kinds of work, the main job was the building of Brother Smith's house, it was quite large, being about 28 X 40 feet and had four rooms in it.

On September 1st, we received news of an outbreak of the Indians at Fort Apache. They had burned the outbuildings at the Post. In this condition of affairs all the scattered families in this vicinity moved into Snowflake and Taylor. The people who lived in the forest and out on ranches abandoning their homes for the time being or until the renegades were brought back on the reservation.

My labors on Brother Smith's house and many other things coming up had prevented me from raising a very large crop, however, I managed to raise a little, and to harvest it, even though it had been sadly neglected.

Our quarterly conference was held on the 26th of September. Apostle Erastus Snow was present and some valuable instructions were given. Brother Snow was doing considerable to help Brother Young in his many difficulties on the railroad work.

October 5th I went down to Holbrook for the purpose of receiving some goods from John W. Young, they were to be turned into the Coop. Store on capital stock, or most of them were. They were taken for Time Checks that different parties held against John W. Young. This was giving each man his credit on capital stock for his time checks. This was not as good as the cash to be sure but in this way we collected many debts for the men that they probably would never have got if left for them to collect. This seemed about the only way for some of the men to get their pay as Brother Young was not in a position to pay his men, and by taking the goods it gave the store a start as some who turned in these time checks would not have turned in the money had they been paid in cash. I took goods to the amount of \$1761, about everything that he had in the store. I gave each man his credit for his time check on investment.

Charles Jarvis had been acting as salesman in this store for John W. Young and was familiar with the running of it so I left him in charge. The store building had already been taken by the Coop. Store so this started the business of the Arizona C.M.I. as the building and goods were now the property of the new firm, and Jarvis now commenced to work for the Arizona Cooperative Mercantile Institution.

I returned home on the 8th, but again went down to Holbrook on the 16th, this time my main mission was to see about putting up a building. The Board had arranged to put up one in front of the one that we were occupying, this was to be a frame or lumber structure to be 16 X 24 feet, this was of course for temporary use until the company could build. We were trying to have this building up by the time that the goods came in that Brother Udall had gone east to purchase.

After making the arrangements getting material and engaging Brother John H. Standifird to put up the building I returned home on the 20th.

It had been arranged by the Board that I should take charge of the store, that is do the selling, billing out the goods, etc. On November 1st I went to Holbrook for that purpose, and remained there about a month before I returned home.

About the time that I went down, or a little after, the goods arrived. There was about \$10,000 worth, our capital stock or cash turned in was only \$5,000 so the other was purchased on credit, mostly from Samuel C. Davis and Co. of Saint Louis, Mo.

At this time a station that was then called Billings situated about 24 miles above Holbrook was as far west as the road was sending any freight, and I went up there to see what arrangements could be made about getting the goods forwarded on to Holbrook. The track was laid as far as Holbrook or a little beyond but only construction trains were running below Billings. At first the Agent refused to send the goods on but after a present of \$10 and a promise that I would not hold the company responsible for any shortage that there might be he sent the freight on. There were two cars, and they were hitched onto a construction train and taken on. On their arrival I was extremely busy unloading, unpacking, marking and putting up the goods. In unloading, there was one small box that got misplaced or overlooked in some way or other and we did not get it and we could not recover for the loss. It was carried back to Atchison and about a year after, the thing was traced up and we recovered it.

I worked here under several difficulties, there was not a house in the place except the store and we had no stove in it. The weather was getting cold and I remember there were several teams waiting to get goods and take them to St. Johns and other places, and I made out several bills, some early in the morning when the ink would freeze on my pen so I had to stick it in the fire occasionally to thaw it out.

Near the latter part of the month I made a trip home going up to Snowflake with Brother Jesse N. Smith. I left Brother Charles Jarvis to attend to the business until I returned, he had been with me from the starting of the concern.

On December 1st I returned to Holbrook where I was very busy looking after the business of trading and distributing goods as the teams were coming in all the time to trade and take goods away to the other places.

The railroad had got their track laid on beyond Holbrook and were bringing freight down as far as this point. They had put in a spur and had a box car for a telegraph office. I was appointed agent for Wells Fargo and company

Express, but there was very little to do in this line for as yet there was but little business of any kind on the railroad. It was just the starting of that line of business which assumed huge proportions as soon as the road was completed through to the coast.

I made a remittance of \$3000 to Samuel C. Davis and Co., we had as yet made no arrangements with any bank and there was none nearer than Albuquerque. I sent the money by Wells Fargo and Co. Express, this being the safest way at this date.

On the 21st I went up to Snowflake and attended the quarterly conference which was held on the 24th and 25th. I was extremely busy on these occasions as the High Council generally met on these occasions and I being a member and also clerk of the council as well as stake clerk I had considerable to do, besides there were many who had come in to conference who wanted some little thing sent up from the store or wanted to arrange for getting something or settle their account, so there was considerable business with the store to be looked after on these occasions, taking orders for goods, etc.

I returned to Holbrook the next day after conference where I again took up my labors.

About this time a very disagreeable thing came up or made itself manifested. Intimations were made that the railroad would move their depot or make their permanent depot at the Berardo place, about a mile and a half or two miles below.

It was stated that they had some trouble with John W. Young and as he owned all the ground at this place they moved below where Superintendent Smith had an interest in the land. But later on I was led to believe that the place for a Depot was better for them below than where they had their temporary siding and that they never intended to have a depot at this place which was on a curve and a steeper grade.

Brother Young ought to have known that they would never build a permanent depot on this curve. I did not know anything about this but understood the reason for the move later on. The moving of the depot would place us in a bad situation and we would be left out on the desert two miles from the depot, and we would be compelled to move our place of business. They had nothing to move but their box car and we had nothing but a tent building and a little frame one.

These conditions worried me some and on January 10th, 1882 I went up to Snowflake mainly to consult Brother Smith upon the matter. We talked the matter over but did not come to any definite conclusion. After this interview I returned to Holbrook. On January 28 the railroad moved their telegraph office, etc. down to the Berardo place.

After my visit to see Brother Smith I commenced to try and get a place for our store at the depot or near it. In this I had many obstacles. I tried to buy a piece of land from Pedro Montano, he and Supt. Smith owned it. Montano stated that he and Smith had made an agreement that neither one would sell any without the other's sanction and this he had not as yet been able to get from Smith. I wrote to Supt. Smith to see if I could rent a piece not being able to buy, he stated that they did not care to rent any. I was barred out on every endeavor to get in here and I believed that this was a plan to keep us out. Supt. Smith and John W. Young, it was stated, had some difficulty about their business affairs and Smith believed that Young had some interest in the store and so made this arrangement so as to keep us out. Brother Smith wrote to the authorities of the Church and explained the situation and asked their advice, and they thought that it would be as well to move our business to Woodruff, so I understood afterwards.

1882
Chapter 55
The A.C.M.I. is Moved to Woodruff

On February 6, 1882, I went up to Snowflake to see Brother Smith about the business of moving the store, I walked most of the way so found myself rather tired as there was considerable mud and it was very hard walking. The next morning I saw Brother Smith and we talked the matter over and the decision that we came to was to move the Store to Woodruff, as it was of no use to remain where it was. The railroad had moved the side track and we were left out on the desert so to speak.

I returned to Holbrook and commenced to pack up the goods and arranged to move. Charles Jarvis was still with me in the store and always looked after things and did the selling when I was gone. I saw Bishop Owens about getting a lot for the store. He and the people were very anxious to have the store at Woodruff and gave me any lot that I wished that was not taken.

On the 16th I took the books up to Woodruff and started a building 34 X 24 feet and had the one at Holbrook pulled down and moved up. The people of Woodruff turned out and in a few days the building which was a frame, boarded up, was completed and the goods brought up.

On the 23rd I went up to Snowflake, met Brother Smith on his way to attend the conference at St. Joseph (that is the Little Colorado Stake). He wished me to go up and level a ditch so as to take the water out high enough to cover the bench south of Snowflake, or a part of it. I spent the next day in fixing up a level for the work, and on the 27th I went up to lay off the ditch, John Kartchner and James M. Flake went along to help in the work. We spent two days at this work and surveyed it as far down as Taylor.

I returned to Woodruff on March 2nd, and again took up the labor of posting up accounts, making out bills, statements, etc. Brother Jarvis had done the selling.

I had been away from my family so much, and now that the store was in one of our Mormon settlements I decided to get a lot here and put up a cheap lumber house. I secured a lot near the store and started to put up a house 14 X 16 feet of lumber. James C. Owens built the fireplace and chimney for which I paid him \$30.

I went up to Snowflake again on the 19th and on the 21st there was a law case up before the justice W. D. Kartchner. C. E. Cooley had Brothers Haws and Norton and some three others who resided at Forest Dale arrested for killing beef that did not belong to them. They got a change of venue from Showlow and the case was then brought down to Snowflake where the parties got me to defend them. Cooley was prosecuting the case and, as I thought, was a little bitter against them partly, I suppose, because they had settled at Forest Dale which Cooley claimed was on the reservation. I was satisfied that they were guilty, but this was not the part that was the trouble, as I thought that they were being prosecuted through malice. The killing of beef was not very uncommon, as some Indians who had settled some eight miles above Snowflake some years before had been given some cattle by the government. On the Chief's dying, the Indians left the place, and many of the cattle were running through the forest and had become as wild as deer and people killed them whenever they got a chance, and I suppose that some were killed that did not belong to these wild ones. I went with the men and succeeded in having the case thrown out of court on the grounds that the papers were defective. Cooley then dropped the matter thinking that they had got a scare at least.

On March 22nd, I started for St. Johns to attend our Stake Conference which was to be held at that place. I took my wife Eliza with me and drove as far as the Tanks where we had a pleasant evening singing. There were about 23 persons in the company and these visits to different places were like a picnic and the people went for enjoyment as well as for religious duties.

The next day we drove to Concho (then called Erastus) where I took dinner with Columbus R. Freeman. We then drove on to St. Johns where I stopped with brother Ammon M. Tenney. On the 24th the Relief Society and the Y. L. M. I. A. held their conference. It was the practice to have these societies hold their conference the day before the Stake conference commenced. The next day the conference convened and in the evening a priesthood meeting was held at which James Richie resigned his position as first Counselor to Bishop David K. Udall. Conference adjourned

on the 26th to convene at Round Valley on the 1st Saturday of June, but was not held then on account of Indian troubles.

We started home on the 27th, going down the river and took dinner at the Meadows eight miles below St. Johns where a few of the brethren were starting to locate. In the afternoon we drove on down some six miles below the Greer place, where we camped and had a regular social time in singing songs, reciting, etc. President Smith and L. H. Hatch were in the party, about 30 in all. We reached home the next day and on the 30th I went on to Woodruff taking my wife Adelaide with me.

On April 8th I went up to Snowflake and returned on the 11th. On all of these trips I had more or less business to attend to for the store as well as other matters. President Smith was the Supt. of the store and as I was looking after it and doing all the work, I was compelled to consult him more or less upon all matters, and often went to Snowflake mainly for that purpose. I went up to Snowflake again on the 20th to look after my farming a little as I did on other trips. My sons Joseph C. and John L. were doing what they could at this work, tending and cultivating what land I had. I had the 20 acres that I drew at the start but there was about one third of this that could not be cultivated. The boys however did extremely well, as I sometimes took one of them and the team to take me back and forth on some of the trips that I was making to different places. I went back to Woodruff on the 22nd and the next day I attended meeting there as a home missionary.

On May 5th I went up to Snowflake and attended the meeting there on the 7th as a home missionary, and on the 20th I made another trip as a home missionary, going up to Taylor where I attended the meeting there on the 21st. This going and coming, keeping the books and doing the business at Woodruff, home missionary work, Stake Clerk, and various other duties kept me extremely busy. Often I had to take one of my boys and team to make these trips, and much of this work I got nothing for.

On the 26th I had an interview with Sol Barth about our political matters. Sol had fallen out with his party and wished to join our people in election matters. Before this he had been our main opponent in political matters. This interview ended satisfactorily to both parties and I was greatly in hope that it would help us very much, but it did not appear to, for Sol's party had learned his tricks so well that the ones holding the offices managed to count their ticket in every time, or the major part of it.

June 3rd I went up to Snowflake. News of an Indian outbreak had been brought in the day before. On the 1st the Indians chased and shot at Brother Plum near Walnut Springs, some eight miles south east from Snowflake. On the same day they killed Nathan Robinson some two miles below the Reidhead place on Showlow. He was out hunting his cows and apparently came on to the Indians who had killed two animals. They shot him and threw his body in the creek, where it was found the next day and brought to Snowflake where the funeral was held on the 3rd. It was thought that Robinson was killed by a raiding or roving party of Apaches. He had come into them while they were butchering the beeves and they killed him and threw his body in the creek to avoid being detected in their raiding campaign. A guard was put out at Snowflake and Taylor, and the next day arrangements were made to herd the work and riding horses, but no other depredations were made in this vicinity.

On the 5th, a party went over to Forest Dale to visit and consult with the brethren that had settled there. This party consisted of President Jesse N. Smith, Bishop John Hunt, Isaac Turley, Amos Rogers, Nolan Kartchner and myself. We arrived at Forest Dale at about 6 P.M. and meeting was held at 8 P.M. President Smith spoke upon these Indian difficulties that had so recently taken away one of the brethren. He advised the people to settle all their difficulties with the Indians about the land or else leave the place (The Indians were claiming that this place was on their reservation). He said that the place had been settled against his counsel. Some of the other brethren spoke on the subject.

When the treaty with the Apaches was made the water shed was made the line of the reservation. But when the survey was made the surveyors did not follow this exactly, they cut across in some places as the water shed line was extremely crooked and they made their map according to their survey, but this Forest Dale was cut off from the reservation. When our people went there they got a map from some of the officers and according to this they thought that they were outside the Indians land. But later the case was looked into a little closer and it was found by following the water shed that it was on the Indians Lands, and that Mr. Cooley was right when he told our people that it was on the reservation. We returned home the next day and on the way we stopped and saw Mr. Cooley who had married two Apache squaws and was virtually the main man in all Arizona to look after that tribe and adjust all

difficulties that might arise between them and the whites. In our talk with him he promised to go over to Forest Dale in a short time and help settle the difficulty there. The officers at Fort Apache having found out that the place was on the reservation soon ordered our people off, and the settlers made preparations to leave the place.

This move worked great hardship on them for they had to sacrifice in the way of losing much of their crops and what they had done in the way of improvement. Most all of them went to the Gila Valley there to commence again the pioneer work of building homes and reclaiming that desert land.

While I was gone, my wife, Adelaide, gave birth to a son on the morning of the 6th. We gave him the name of Joseph Smith Fish and he was blessed by Jesse N. Smith on the 15th.

I went back to Woodruff on the 9th and on the 12th I went down to Holbrook to attend to some business and was back to Snowflake again on the 15th. Our conference that was appointed to be held at Round Valley this month was not held on account of the Indian difficulties that had occurred.

July 4th, John R. Hulet came down to Woodruff and stated that Brother Smith wished me to go over to St. Johns and be admitted to bar as court was in session. I returned to Snowflake with Brother Hulet going up on the west side of the creek on horseback.

The next day I started for St. Johns going over with Brother Edward W. East. We went as far as Concho and the next day we reached St. Johns about noon. I attended the District court in the afternoon and made application to the court to be admitted to the bar. I was questioned or examined as to my qualifications by Chief Justice French for about half an hour and was able to give satisfactory answers. The judge said that he made it a rule to examine all applicants himself and then appointed a committee to examine the applicants. He appointed a committee consisting of W. H. McGrew, Dr. Rudd, and Mr. Dan, who gave me a very brief examination. The next day I attended court, the committee made a favorable report on my application and I was admitted as a member of the bar and sworn in. My commission was dated July 7th, 1882 and signed by Richard J. Baily, clerk. After my application, three others made applications to be admitted to the bar, a committee was appointed to examine them, but for some cause or other they never reported. I understood that the applicants were not found competent so they were not admitted. A. F. Banta was one of them. He was then going under the name of Charles A. Franklin but later had his name changed to Banta. Because of my labors in the store and the extreme prejudice against the Mormons, I never practiced any in the courts in Arizona.

On the 8th we started for Woodruff, going down the river and taking dinner with Sister Greer, after which we drove out some 15 miles and the next day we reached Woodruff where I found several teams there for goods, and I was kept busy in filling their orders and billing out goods. I went up to Snowflake on the 16th but soon returned to Woodruff again.

1882
Chapter 56
A Trip to St. Louis

On August 1st I went up to Taylor to collect some accounts for the store, and returned the next day. I had been making arrangements to go to St. Louis to take a purchase of goods for the store.

On the night of the 3rd I was quite sick and a little before day light I went to the store where Brother Jarvis was sleeping and he and I fixed up some medicine, we put in some Pain Killer, Alcohol, and Jamaca Ginger. I took a good dose of this and in a few minutes I thought that I was burning up, but soon vomited, after which I felt better, so that I was able to start for Holbrook at 6:30 A.M. going down with Clarence E. Owens.

Soon after our arrival I took the train for the east, and in a short time we reached Navajo Station. The springs were about three miles distant and at these springs the first governor of Arizona, John N. Goodwin, and his party stopped and a partial organization of the Territory was made. So it might be said that this desert spot was the first Capital of the Territory, at least it was here the first organization was made. On this occasion, punch was made in a wash tub and speeches, songs, and toasts enlivened the camp during the evening amidst a snow storm which was raging on December 23rd, 1863.

We got our dinner at this station and passing on we soon passed Sanders, Allen Town, Manueleta, Defiance and Gallup. At the last two stations there was considerable coal mining carried on. When we were working on the railroad, John W. Young tried to get possession of these coal mines but did not succeed in grasping them. We took supper at Coolidge, the spot where our grading camp stood when I quit work for Young and Tenney.

We arrived at Albuquerque on the morning of the 5th at about daylight where I put up at the Armigo House, and spent the day in visiting the firms that we had been doing business with and settling up accounts. I took the train at about 5 A.M. on the morning of the 6th and a forty mile ride took us to Wallace where we got breakfast. While I was eating some one stole my book that I had left on my seat in the car.

There were a great many Indians around here selling little colored stones and trinkets of various kinds.

At this point the railroad leaves the valley of the Rio Grande, and turns to the east up a heavy grade and we soon were at Glorietta a most noted place as it was here that the southern troops were defeated in the war of the rebellion. This point marks the division of the waters of the Rio Grande and the Pecos Rivers, there was considerable timber in the vicinity.

We soon crossed the Pecos River¹ where near its banks stood the ancient village of Pecos² and emerged onto the great plains at the edge of which stood Las Vegas³ where we got our dinner. This place is quite a resort for invalids as the warm springs near here are said to contain great mineral properties.

The afternoons ride was over the rolling plains to Ratoon Pass, where we took supper, after which we passed over the mountain, (there is quite a long tunnel here) into Colorado. This noted pass is on the old Santa Fe Trail that went from Independence to Santa Fe. It is a good stock country but not very well adapted for agricultural purposes. We reached Trinidad at 11 P.M. Here were large coal fields which make the place quite a center for that industry. The R. G. R. R. had a branch running in here mainly for the coal supplies.

We arrived at La Junta early on the morning of the 7th. Here we struck the Arkansas River,⁴ and near here was located the famous Bent's Fort of early days.⁵

Here we turned down the river and more to the east and soon reached Coolidge just over the line in Kansas where we took breakfast. The soil here did not appear to be very well adapted for farming, and stock raising seemed to be the main industry. There was but very little timber along here there being a few cottonwoods along the banks of the river.

We got our dinner at Kingsly, from this point the country begins to be settled up a little more and the soil looked to be better. We took supper at Newton.

Along in this vicinity we passed several fine and flourishing places, we passed Topeka in the night and skirting the Kansas River⁶ we arrived in Kansas City⁷ at 6 A.M. on the morning of the 8th, where we got our breakfast.

I then took the Mo. Pacific Railroad for St. Louis. We made a short stop at Independence⁸ where I fell in with an old settler by the name of Kimber who kindly showed me around, taking me to the temple block, and pointing out where the saints had their fortifications during the time of the mobbing, and where Quantrill, the noted guerilla leader, had his head quarters during the time of the rebellion. I took great pleasure in viewing these places for some of them were of great interest to our people as this was the place appointed for the center stake of Zion. The place had not improved as it ought to have done. The old settlers had done but very little in that line, and the major part of the improvements had been done by those who had come in later.

As we passed Sadelia I saw where a Kansas Cyclone had wrecked several buildings. One brick structure had one corner taken off while the balance was standing. One of these buildings was being repaired or rebuilt. We took dinner at Jefferson City.

We passed many fine places as we traveled along the banks of the Missouri, but a thing attracted my attention more than the mammoth grape vines climbing to the top of the tallest trees and entwining their branches in their embrace had killed those monarchs of the woods. It brought to mind the scenes of my boyhood days when we went graping in Iowa. We arrived in St. Louis at 6 P.M. where I put up at the Planter's Hotel⁹

August 9th, I looked around the old dingy city a little where everything is bustle and hurry, and called at several of the houses that we were doing business with and examined prices and accounts, and looked around to see where I could purchase the different articles of merchandise to the best advantage. In the afternoon a salesman by the name of J. D. Losekamp took me out to see the city gardens which were very beautiful.

August 10th I commenced to make my purchases, bought our boots and shoes from Claflin and Theyer, and hats and caps from Gauss Hunica and Co. our queensware from H. A. Wells and Co. We had been doing business with all of these firms.

August 11th I purchased our hardware from Simmons Hardware Co., our harness and saddles from Myer Bannerman and Co., and I also purchased a little ready made clothing and a few notions, etc.

August 12th I bought our dry goods from Samuel C. Davis and Co. We had done the most of our business with and through this firm.

In the evening Mr. Losekamp took me out with an excursion party down the Mississippi River on the steamer Charles P. Sotta. There were about 1500 passengers aboard, nearly all young people. The evening was spent in dancing but I did not take any part in this amusement. Supper was served and a pleasant time was had as we glided along on the bosom of the father of waters.

We returned to St. Louis about midnight. As we left the boat Mr. Losekamp said to me, button your coat. This was to guard against pickpockets in the jam as we left the boat. He had introduced me to a couple of young ladies of his acquaintance, and after I had gone he told them that I was a Mormon and had nineteen wives. One of the young ladies exclaimed in astonishment "What kind of a bed do they have to hold all that number?" I simply state this to show how ignorant they were of our customs.

August 13th being Sunday I tried to hunt up some Mormons who resided in the city but failed to find them.

In the afternoon I went to see a game of baseball between the Cincinnati and St. Louis clubs, the former was the winner the score being 7 to 5.

August 14th I made a few purchases and settled up with the firms that I had bought from, that is, I got their bills. I found that I had bought about \$12,000 worth of goods. When I went down I took \$7,000 which left \$5,000 that we were owing the different firms. I had been kindly treated by all the firms and several of the clerks were very kind to me especially John D. Losekamp who assisted me very much by giving me the run of the ropes as to purchasing, and telling me the most reliable and cheapest houses. I noticed that most of the employees of the different firms lived

very high. They spent much of their wages in attending the beer gardens of an evening and at theaters, and smoked a great number of cigars. It was all amusement for them from the time they left the store until they returned the next morning. I noticed some that spent from three to five dollars a day in cigars, beer, etc.

I took a train in the evening for home and felt relieved to get out of the endless hurry and bustle of the business life in a large city.

I arrived in Kansas City the next morning at about 8 A.M. and as the train that I wished to get on did not leave until evening I spent the day in looking over the city which was much larger than one would at first think on account of its location. I visited the Packing House of Armour and Co. where they slaughtered about 1000 hogs and 500 beeves a day and had a force of 1300 hands to do the work. It was very interesting to see how systematically everything was done, and how a hog was run through. Apparently each man had a clip at it until it was all gone.

I got my ticket for Albuquerque for \$36.65, this was special rates, the arrangements for this rate having been made by the merchants in St. Louis. I was extremely tired and sleepy so I took a sleeper, the first that I ever took, but I did not sleep very well.

On the 16th we passed through the beautiful corn fields of Kansas, and took dinner at Kingsly, and supper at Coolidge. On the morning of August 17th we were near the Ratoon Pass, and took our breakfast at Ratoon. The ride over the plains of Northern New Mexico to Las Vegas was very pleasant, and we arrived at Albuquerque at about 8:30 P.M. where I took the A. and P. R. E. for Holbrook where I arrived at 3 P.M. on the 18th.

Here I found Brother James Deans from Woodruff and rode up with him, and the next day I went on up to Snowflake, and attended meeting there on the 20th and spoke during the services giving a brief account of my trip and labors. I returned to Woodruff the next day where I was busy for sometime gathering up the odds and ends of accounts and posting up the books.

Chapter Notes

¹ The Rio Pecos is the largest branch of the Rio Grande. Rising in the Santa Fe Mountains immediately east of Santa Fe, and following a south east course for about eight hundred miles, it enters the Rio Grande in latitude 29 deg. 41 min. The name is derived from an old pueblo, situated on one of the mountain tributaries about twenty five miles southeast of Santa Fe.

² The Pueblo of Pecos was situated 25 miles southeast of Santa Fe., and at the close of the seventeenth century had a population of 2000, being the largest pueblo in either New Mexico or Arizona. It was visited by Spaniards in 1540. Soon after the revolt of 1680 it commenced to decline, and in 1840 there were but five men who sold their lands to the government and joined the Jemez who were their kinsmen.

³ Las Vegas, the county seat, though its history dates back only to 1835, has grown steadily and became the third town in N. M. with a population of about 6000, and with unlimited aspirations for the future. It is perhaps the most agreeable of all New Mexican towns as a place of residence.

⁴ Arkansas River was called Rio Napeste by the Mexicans; but among the early French voyagers it acquired the name of Arkansas or rather Arkansas from a tribe of the Dahcotah or Osage stock, who lived near its mouth. It penetrates far into the Rocky Mountains and has numerous tributaries, some of great length. It enters the Mississippi from the west about one hundred miles below St. Francis.

⁵ Bent's Fort sometimes called Fort William for its founder Colonel William Bent, was situated on the north bank of the Arkansas, between the present towns of La Junta and Las Animas, Colorado. Founded in 1829 it was an important furtrade post, and base of supplies for the mountain trail to Santa Fe. The United States army of occupation (1846) passed by this post. In 1852 the government attempted to purchase the post; but not satisfied with the terms, its owner destroyed the stockade.

⁶ The Kansas River and its tributaries drain most of the state of the same name. It heads in the prairies of eastern Colorado, and joins the Missouri at the point where the latter enters the state of Missouri. It is still sometimes called the Kaw. The name appears in various forms on early French maps.

⁷ In 1821 Pierre Chouteau Jr. of the American Fur Co. established a general agency in the bottoms opposite Randolph Bluffs, about three miles below the present site of Kansas City. His buildings having been destroyed by a flood in 1826 he erected others on higher ground, in the present Guinott addition near the foot of Walnut Street. The place was called Chouteau's Warehouse, and soon became a favorite shipping point for Indian Trade.

In 1831 John McCoy built a trading house at the crossing of the roads from Chouteau's Warehouse and Independence. Two years later he platted a town at this point and named it Westport. Westport first used Chouteau's Warehouse as a landing place, but later built a wharf on the high rock back of the river, at the present foot of Grand Avenue, Walnut, Main, and Delaware Streets. Because of superior natural advantages this latter place became the principal landing, and in 1838 a company purchased the site, platted a town and named it Kansas City. (Thwaites)

⁸ Independence, seat of Jackson County Missouri, five miles east of Kansas City, was laid out in 1827, and by 1831 had become the western rendezvous both for the Santa Fe and the Oregon traffic. Its early settlers were chiefly Tennesseans and Kentuckians. It was a gathering place for the Mormons in 1831-3. It is now a railroad center and in 1900 had a population of 7000.

⁹ St. Louis was founded by Pierre Leclade and his associates in 1764. It is one of the first American cities of the first class whose birth antedates the birth of the Union; Boston, New York, and Philadelphia on the Atlantic, Detroit on the Great Lakes, New Orleans on the Gulf, San Francisco on the Pacific and St. Louis in the interior, comprised the number. In relation to the poverty in that section at an early date it is stated that St. Louis was formerly called Pain Court, (Short of Bread), and the similar appellation of Carondelet (vide Poche--empty) and Ste. Genevieve (Misere--Poverty) are said to have originated in the good-natured raillery between the French of the several settlements. They probably point also to the want often experience by a trading people who neglect agriculture.

1882
Chapter 57
Mercantile Work and a Trip to Utah

Our political affairs were being talked up some, and I took some interest in this going up to Snowflake, and from there I started for St. Johns on September 24th. Samuel H. Rogers, John W. Freeman and John Kartchner accompanied me. We were going over to attend a convention, our people having joined with Sol Barth, and we were to meet him and party at St. Johns to get out a ticket. We arrived in St. Johns the next day and on the 26th the convention was held in the Court House, there was quite a number from different places present and we succeeded in getting out a ticket that we called the Democratic Ticket. It was a mixture of the Gentiles and Mormons, but at the election it was beat through fraud as no people in the world could beat the St. Johns ring in perpetrating frauds in election matters. We started back in the evening and arrived home the next day.

My wife Eliza, sons Joseph C. and John L., and daughter Jessie May started to Utah on visit, They went with a team, that being about the only way people went at this date in a new country, they went in company with Vet Hulet who was going back to Utah.

Our quarterly conference convened at Snowflake on the 30th and as we did not have a conference last quarter this lasted three days and was well attended, a number from the Gila Valley came up and attended this conference. During the time of the conference, board meetings of the A.C.M.I. were held, also shareholders meetings, the same board being reelected. A dividend of 35% was declared to be paid in merchandise or to be placed to the credit of the individuals on capital stock, whichever they chose.

After conference I returned to Woodruff where I took up the old labor of posting up books, straightening up accounts, selling and billing out goods, etc.

The month of October was a busy one for me. The stock of goods that I had purchased in St. Louis coming, added to the work. Getting them up from Holbrook, opening them, distributing them, and selling, and the general trade being increased by the arrival of a new stock of goods kept me extremely busy during the month, and my other duties in the stake were a very heavy tax on me at such times.

Political matters were bobbing up some and our people were trying to get in their share of the officers. On November 7th I went down to Holbrook to attend the election there and watch and see if I could prevent any of the frauds that were being perpetrated at the elections by the ring. I soon found that I could do but little. A man stood in front of the polls armed as if for war and I was not allowed to come nearer than fifty feet of the polls and was threatened with arrest even before I had spoken a word to anyone. I went up to vote and was marched back by the constable John Conley who again threatened me with arrest. In the meantime others who belonged to the party in power went up and voted without being molested. And this was the way they ran the election at this time. And when they counted the votes they counted those that they wished and threw out those that they did not want so as to give their ticket a good majority. I returned to Woodruff in the evening having accomplished but little only to find out how they ran things.

The practice of setting apart the home missionaries for their labors had been adopted in the stake. I had been acting for sometime but for some cause or another had not been set apart for this work but it was attended to on November 15th, President Jesse N. Smith officiating in this work.

About this time we had quite a heavy snow storm for this time of year.

On December 1st, I went up to Snowflake where I spent a few days in posting up the tithing accounts. I attended meeting while there and spoke, returning to Woodruff on the 5th.

On the 7th my wife Eliza and the children that had gone to Utah returned, they were well and had a very good visit and were glad to get back after their toilsome journey. They went on up to Snowflake the next day.

On the 14th I went up to Snowflake, in the evening President Smith gave a lecture on "Vision". While here I worked on the Tithing accounts. This was a hard and tedious job for the bishops had not been used to the business and in a

new country there were many obstacles and then some were slow and I had to wait on them and sometimes go to the nearer wards and help them with their accounts. After getting them in, some would be wrong and had to be revised before I could consolidate them to send the accounts off to Salt Lake City. I assisted Bishop Hunt considerably and acted as ward clerk for a time and these accounts gave me but little trouble. Some of the Bishops that were near by I could reach and help them, but those at a distance were mostly careless and indifferent it appeared, and did not as a rule send in their accounts when they should.

On the 16th President Smith lectured at Taylor on the subject of "Plural Marriage". I attended the meeting and the next day I attended the meeting at Snowflake as a home missionary, and returned to Woodruff on the 18th, where I was busy as usual with the accounts, buying and selling, etc.

On the 27th I went up to Snowflake to attend the quarterly conference and also the Board Meeting of the A.C.M.I. which was held on the 29th.

The Snowflake Dramatic Association had a theater at Snowflake on the 28th and 29th. The plays were fairly presented considering the house room and the scenery which was not much. At the starting of this association I took a part in it and played a few times and rendered what assistance I could, but my business at the store at Holbrook and Woodruff taxed me so that I could not continue with the association so I had to drop this very interesting part of the amusements of our town.

Our conference was adjourned on the 31st, it was held at Taylor this time, and this ended the year of 1882, which had been a very busy year for me if I had not made much money.

Brother Smith was the Superintendent of the A. C. M. I. but it was left for me to do all the work and business, and in the matter of trusting, etc., I had often to consult him and some times I made a trip to Snowflake almost on purpose to see him about the business of the store. This made it a little harder on me than it would have been if I had not had so much running to do but it took some of the responsibility from my shoulders. The business was increasing, the sales being near \$65,000 for the year.

This labor at the store with that of the stake clerk, home missionary, high council, and many other labors added, besides my own affairs to look after taxed my time so that my farm was sadly neglected. The boys were doing what they could to keep things up but take it all round I was not making much for myself and much of my time was for the public for which I got nothing. However, I was always on hand to help build up the place where I resided, for I had a desire to see it built up and I bent every energy to assist in this labor.

On January 2nd I went down to Woodruff and took up the never ending labor in the store again working with the accounts, bills, and marking and ordering goods, paying the same, and sending out statements of accounts, and all kinds of work that is connected with a business of this kind which kept me more than busy the most of the time. Once in a while we had a few days that we had but little to do but this was not often the case.

On the 7th I went up to Snowflake and the next day I went on up to Shumway's mill to level a water ditch. There was a disagreement among some of the brethren where it should be taken out, or its location, so I did not do much and returned to Snowflake.

On the 13th President Jesse N. Smith, Bishops John Hunt, and John H. Standiford and I went up to the mouth of Showlow to see Richard J. Baily about the ditch coming through a portion of his land. Baily hesitated some at first about allowing it to go where we wanted it, but finally consented if we would be responsible for all damages that might occur by the ditch breaking. After leaving Baily we talked the matter over and thought it would be best to buy Baily out so Brother Smith requested Brother William J. Flake (as he was a great hand to trade) to see Baily and to try and make a purchase of the place. A few days after, Flake succeeded in buying the place.

I went back to Woodruff on the 15th and took up the old labor of posting up books and making out bills, ordering and paying for goods, and looking after getting the goods from Holbrook.

After this labor I returned to Snowflake to survey the long ditch, Brother Flake having bought out Baily. We ran the ditch through his field and used his ditch as far as it went.

I returned to Woodruff on the 24th. We had got in a car of sugar, this being about the first item that we had got in car load lots, as our trade increased we commenced to buy in larger quantities and were trying to get out groceries in card load lots as it came considerably cheaper.

On the 31st I went up to Snowflake to fix up the tithing accounts for the year. I worked at the tithing accounts until February 9th when I returned to Woodruff to look after the business there but returned to Snowflake again on the 11th and the next day Brother Smith and I went up to survey the ditch. It rained considerable and we did not do much. The first work that I did at leveling ditches I fixed up a spirit level for the purpose, but this I did not think was very accurate so I sent to St. Louis and got a transit and compass which cost me \$140. This was an excellent instrument for the work as well as surveying and I was able to give good satisfaction in all my work but I never realized much for it and it was no benefit for me but aided the public. One reason for this was I never charged much for my work and a good deal of it was for public enterprises and so I let it go in that way for nothing, comparatively speaking. I worked at the surveying on the 16th and returned to Woodruff, where I attended meeting there and spoke a short time.

We were having considerable rain and the washes were running full and the streams like rivers. The buckboard which was carrying the mail to Apache while attempting to cross the Showlow some 15 miles above Snowflake was swept down stream and two soldiers who were on the conveyance were swept down stream and drowned, the driver however escaped.

The month was noted for an epidemic of small pox which broke out at Holbrook, John H. Perkins who was carrying the mail caught the disease at Holbrook, he died at Taylor on the 21st and his father, Jesse N. Perkins, who waited on him, took down with it and died soon after. The people were considerably aroused over this and strong efforts were made to prevent the spread of the contagion, schools, meetings, etc., were stopped and business was almost suspended, very little trading was done at the stores. These steps proved effective for there were no other cases in this vicinity.

March 1st I went up to Snowflake expecting to work at the surveying again but for various causes did nothing at it. I went up again on the 14th and did some work but the work moved slow. There was considerable opposition to this ditch, A. J. Stratton led the opposition. He thought that the ditch was too big a job and there were many changes clamored for and different places tried to see where the water would run, so that with the opposition the work moved slowly. It was a heavy job for the people without any opposition and this made the work go harder and slower. I returned to Woodruff on the 20th. President Jesse N. Smith accompanied me.

On the 22nd Apostles Brigham Young and Heber J. Grant arrived in Woodruff and held meeting in the evening. The next day, they with President Smith went on up to Snowflake. They were expecting to visit the most of our settlements before our conference.

On the 28th I went up to Snowflake and the next day I sowed some wheat for my boys who were doing the farming. With other labors and often running around with me they had not a good opportunity to do the work as it should be done but they were very good to work and improve the time as best they could.

On the 29th I started for St. Johns to attend our quarterly conference which was to be held at that place. I took my wife Adelaide with me. There were six wagons of us and we drove a little past Concho, it snowed some during the night. We went on to St. Johns where I attended the Relief Society conference and a Priesthood meeting in the evening. The regular conference commenced on the 31st, President Jesse N. Smith presiding, Apostles Brigham Young and Heber J. Grant were present. Their main object in visiting Arizona at this time was to attend our conference and visit among the Lamanites and strengthen that mission. Conference adjourned on April 1st to convene at Omer, Round Valley on June 30th next. The apostles and a few others remained at St. Johns a day or two and then they went north to visit among the Navajos. I started home in the evening where I arrived the next day and on the 3rd went on to Woodruff where I was as busy as usual in the mercantile work at the store.

On April 5th, 1883, I started to Utah for the purpose of getting Miss Julia A. Reidhead sealed to me. I was not intending to go so soon but Brother George C. Williams and Miss Letty Mortensen were going to be sealed and they wanted company so as I was intending to go before long I arranged to go with them. It was short notice for Julia, however, her mother set to work and got her ready only having two days notice of our starting, but the understanding of our going some time was had shortly before.

We drove to St. Joseph where meeting was held in the evening and Brother Williams and I spoke.

April 6th we took breakfast with Brother William C. Allen who was the founder and father of the place, we then drove on a little past Brigham City, and the next day we drove to the crossing of the Little Colorado. The water was quite high and it had been impassable a few days before, but we succeeded in crossing without much difficulty. On the 8th we drove to within about eight miles of where the road leaves the river and the next day we went nearly to the Willow Springs.

On the 10th we drove up to the Springs where we found Jacob Bigler and family who were living here, one of his wives (he had two) and one of his children were quite sick. They were quite destitute and had none of the comforts of life and nothing you might say to make them comfortable. It looked bad to see them so far removed from any habitation and in this sad condition. They however did not remain here very long. I gave them a bottle of Jamaica Ginger, all the medicine of any kind that I had brought along. We did what we could for them and then drove on going nearly to Limestone Tanks, and the next day we reached Navajo Springs where we found but little grass for our animals.

On April 12th we crossed the Colorado at the lower ferry, that is we went around a dugway that had been made and avoided the Lee Hill and crossed a little below the old crossing. We then drove on to Badger Creek where we got down into a ravine to avoid one of those terrible wind and sand storms that was raging and which is oftentimes met with in the spring of the year. Here we found Brother Thomas W. Brookbank who was on his way from Utah, he had taken shelter here to get out of the storm.

The next day it snowed some and was a very cold day and we drove nearly to House Rock Springs, and the next day we reached the top of the Buckskin Mountain where we had plenty of wood, and making a good fire, we enjoyed the evening. Brother Williams entertained us with songs and recitations, etc., while I helped him out a little.

Sunday, 15th, we drove on past Kanab some three miles taking the low road and not going up to the town. It was a cold day and froze during the night quite hard for this time of year. The next day we drove to Pipe Springs for noon but we found the place vacant, we continued on some ten miles where we found good grass for our animals.

The next day we descended the long and tiresome Hurricane Hill about as long and steep as I ever drove a wagon down. We camped at the Old Fort Pearse which was now deserted but had been kept in former days as a kind of lookout point where a guard had been posted to watch for the raiding Indians.

On the 18th we reached St. George at about 11 A.M. We looked around some and on enquiring we found that our recommends to go through the temple had not come. Brother David H. Cannon telegraphed to President John Taylor and soon got a reply that it was all right. We went to meeting in the evening where Brother McAllister gave some items of the late general conference which he had attended.

April 10th, I went through the temple getting my endowments for my uncle Champion Fish and Julia A. Reidhead went through for his wife. (Julia had her endowments before she went to Arizona.) Julia A. Reidhead was sealed to me in the temple after we had gone through for our relatives. Brother Williams and Letty Mortensen went through the same time.

Having accomplished the object of our trip we started back for Arizona at 3 P.M. going as far as Old Fort Pearse. I was extremely anxious to visit my father-in-law John Steele and family at Toquerville, but Brother Williams seemed to be in a rush to get back, as well as myself, and he objected to going that way, and Brother David H. Cannon advised me not to go that way as such a trip as ours was not to be made too public on account of apostates at Toquerville, etc. So I gave up going that route with many regrets not to see the folks while so near.

On the 20th we ascended the Hurricane Hill and drove some 25 miles, and the next day we drove nearly to Kanab passing Pipe Springs and as before we found no one there. It was a cold night and the next morning there was ice in the water buckets nearly an inch thick. This cold wave did considerable damage to the fruit crop at Kanab and vicinity.

The 22nd we drove to the top of the Buckskin Mountain and the next day nearly to Jacob's Pools. On the 24th we traveled nearly to the ferry, it was a terrible day, the wind blew so hard that we considered it dangerous to attempt to travel along some of the edges of the ravines in this section for fear that our wagons might be blown off into some of those terrible gulches, so we got shelter behind some rocks and tied our horses to the wagon. It was a terrible sand storm and we sheltered ourselves as best we could and our poor animals had nothing to eat.

The next day was calm and we crossed the ferry without difficulty and drove a little past the Bitter Springs. On the 26th we reached the Willow Springs and the next day we reached the Little Colorado River. The 28th we drove to Black Falls and the next day we got to Slough Bend. April 30th was a cold and very windy day and we reached St. Joseph, and on May 1st we took breakfast with Brother Bushman and then drove on to Woodruff where we arrived about 3 P.M. We had made what they termed a remarkably quick trip to be made with team and wagons. It had been unusually cold, windy and dusty, this had been very bad on my eyes, and I was almost blind when I got back. I never encountered worse winds and more dust than we had upon this journey and the last few days coming up the Little Colorado River was almost too bad for a person to attempt to travel in.

From Woodruff Brother Williams went on up the river. He had not belonged to the church very long. Before becoming a Mormon he had been a Baptist preacher of the western order as might be said as he was not a polished or educated man in the sense that a preacher should be. He was a man with more than ordinary powers of reasoning and research, he was an agreeable traveling companion, was wide awake, energetic and of industrious habits, and having strong prejudices. I will have occasion to mention him later and it is sadly to be regretted that he turned out so badly in his later life.

1883
Chapter 58
A Hold Up and a Trip to Purchase Goods

On my return to Woodruff I found things at the store in fairly good condition, Charles Jarvis had been in the store most of the time since it was started, but at this time James C. Owens Jr. (we always called him Clark) was in the store and he was a very good hand. He was a willing worker and strong, and able to handle the groceries with ease, and was kind, good natured, and accommodating.

I went up to Snowflake on the 2nd where I found the family as well as common and things moving in a fair way. I attended Fast Meeting on the 3rd, where I spoke, giving a brief account of affairs at St. George, Etc. In the afternoon I attended a meeting of the Relief Society and went to Woodruff the next day taking my wife Adelaide with me.

I had got my house done at Woodruff and some of the folks stayed down there with me most of the time. My sons Joseph C. and John L. went down with me to put in a little corn, I had bought five acres of land and I was trying to raise something on it.

On May 20th I attended meeting at Snowflake as a home missionary, and returned to Woodruff on the 23rd taking my wife Eliza with me. (On May 26th I accompanied President Smith and Brother John W. Freeman down to St. Joseph, where we attended the conference of the Little Colorado Stake. We returned on the evening of the 27th.

The afternoon of the 29th was very pleasant, and every man in the place was out in the field (there were no more than five or six) at work except two and they were in the old rock fort some distance from the store. Things were very quiet and I was hard at work in the office posting up some accounts. Clark Owens was in the back room tacking up some paper on the wall to improve the building. Just at this time two masked men entered the store one at the front door and one at the side door. As they stepped in, I heard them and looked around. They had their pistols in their hands cocked ready for instant use. They at once ordered me to throw up my hands which I hesitated to do. On hearing Clark in the back room one of them turned and held his pistol on him, the other who held his pistol on me ordered me to give him the money that was in the safe which was open at the time as I had been counting it so as to see if it tallied with the cash balance on the Cash Book. I hesitated a little and he commenced to gradually pull on the trigger of his pistol, in the meantime I had raised up from my chair and taking hold of the back and my first thought was to try and strike him with it, but I instantly saw that the way he was pulling on the trigger that I could not accomplish this, so I gave him the money throwing it to him as he would not allow me to get very close to him. The other robber had marched Clark in to where I was and one of them picked up the money while the other held his pistol on us. They then ordered us outside where one held his pistol on us and the other took a few things from the store--a revolver, a field glass, and a few cans of peaches, etc., he then got on his horse and held his pistol on us while the other one got on his horse. They then ordered us to march ahead of them for some fifty yards, ordering us not to hollow or make any noise or they would shoot us at once, getting us far enough from the store so that we could not get any arms to injure them they put spurs to their horses and rode off at a run. They got about \$500 in cash besides the few things that they took out of the store which was not much except the revolver and the field glass. This was about 4 p.m. and I soon gave the alarm but there was no one that was able to go out after them. Clark went out on the hill and saw that they went toward Holbrook but after getting out of sight of the place they turned to the south west towards the Tonto Basin country. I hired one of Brother Hatch's boys to go to Snowflake to give the alarm and see if a posse would go out from that place in pursuit of the robbers but no one went. I learned soon after from signs, etc., that they had lain by in the Box Canyon above town and where they could creep up and see the place for some 24 hours waiting for an opportunity when there was no one around so that they could attack the store. Their names were James Tweksburry and Gorge Blaine, this I learned afterwards. Clark however knew Tweksburry in spite of his mask, he had seen him in Prescott but a short time before. Tweksburry was a half breed Indian and resided in the Tonto Basin, he was later indicted, arrested and tried at St. Johns but got clear. I was in Mexico at the time and there was little evidence against him. If I had been at the trial he would doubtless have been convicted.

I went up to Snowflake the following day and returned on June 2nd. I made another trip to Snowflake on the 12th. The Snowflake Coop. did all their business through the store at Woodruff, buying all their goods there. This gave me some business in Snowflake to look after and was one of the many things that took me up there so often and I always had some orders to take from there and Taylor as well as from individuals when I went up.

About this time the cattlemen were having a general round up of their stock and at these times there is considerable trade with them. Some of those who attended these round ups were rather hard characters, many of them coming from Texas. Some had got in the habit of branding calves that did not belong to them whenever they got a good chance and some of these men who came to the country without a dollar soon got quite a herd of cattle, and to go out with such characters was a bad school for boys. Brother Smith and I had talked the matter over previous to this period about going into the stock business, but on account of these conditions which made the business one to educate boys to steal stock which existed to a large extent at this period we decided not to make the venture on account of our boys.

On June 26th I went up to Snowflake and the next day I started for Round Valley to attend our quarterly conference which was to be held there, I took my wives Eliza and Julia and son Joseph C. We drove to Concho. It was a very hot day. At the Tanks we stopped and dug down and got a little water for our animals. President Smith was along with the company. The next day we reached Round Valley, the ward was then called Omer. The Relief Society held their conference on the 29th, our conference commenced on the 30th and closed on July 1st. During the conference there were two persons chosen to fill vacancies in the High Council, viz.: Andrew S. Gibbons and Warren R. Tenney. While here we were treated very kindly by Bishop Peter J. Christofferson as well as by the people as a whole. Round Valley had many advantages, they had good land, good water, and grass, but all the best places were in the hands of the Gentiles. They however were troubled some with early and late frosts, these prevail throughout all this part of Arizona.

On July 2nd we started home where we arrived on the 3rd. There I attended the celebration of the nation's birthday and the following day I went on to Woodruff where I took up the old and never ending work of posting up the books, making out accounts, ordering goods, opening and marking them, as well as selling them. And thus passed the days of hurry and bustle, traveling from one place to another, and working at a variety of things, anything that a person could do to build up a new country, and never stopping to enjoy the pleasures of home comforts. It was a labor of making homes and developing a country for our children to enjoy.

On the 14th I went up to Snowflake and the next day I was a home missionary at Taylor, and returned to Woodruff on the 18th.

Pioneer Day, July 24th, was celebrated in Woodruff by a meeting in the forenoon, Brother Lorenzo H. Hatch was orator of the day, a dance was held in the evening.

The recent rains had raised the waters in the river and washed quite high and of a sudden and on the 26th it was discovered that the water had broken around the west end of the dam and had got such a start that it was impossible to check it, and in a short time a gap was cut in the dam some 25 feet deep and 100 feet wide. This was another very unfortunate blow to the place as dam after dam had washed away. This still continued being repeated for years, every few years. There were but few of the original settlers who stayed with the place. At most, the place never numbered more than 30 families and most of the time there were not more than ten or fifteen families in the place. So with the loss of the dam there was but little improvement for several years.

I went up the Snowflake on August 2nd preparing to take a trip east to make a purchase of goods. I soon returned to Woodruff and on the 6th I started on my journey going down to Holbrook with Marion Owens. Brother John Reidhead was along, he was on his way to Salt Lake City and from that point he was expecting to go on a mission to the eastern states.

We took the train at about 3 p.m. and arrived in Albuquerque at 4 the next morning. We stopped at the Balengall Hotel kept by Mrs. Scott. I spent the day in visiting some of the firms that we had been doing business with, looking after the business connections with our store. I took dinner with Mr. Grunsfeld of Spiegle Brother. I made a few purchases and got my ticket to Kansas City for \$19.50, it being missionary rates, the arrangements for this was made by Brother Hatch before I left home.

We started out at 10 a.m. being an hour late on account of some washouts, a ride of 8 miles brought us to Bernadillo, one of the finest grape growing districts in the Territory. 60 miles brought us to Lama Junction where a branch road takes off to Santa Fe. Just before getting to Las Vegas we passed where there had been a wreck but a short time before, the engine and cars were piled up in a heap with the contents of the cars strewn around. We passed on a temporary track laid around the wreck and going on we reached La Junta at about daylight the next morning.

Here Brother Reidhead and I parted company, he took the train for Utah, and I turned to the east down the Arkansas River. We were delayed some in starting but soon passed where a station had been struck by lightning and entirely destroyed. Along these bottom lands are meadows that yield about one ton to the acre of hay and the land was worth about \$20.00 per acre. The country here seemed more adapted for stock raising than for farming. As we passed Dodge City the country became more thickly settled, and a little further on it was one continuous corn field.

During the night we were detained several hours on account of a wreck on the track. We reached Kansas City late on the morning of the 10th and all the trains for the east had left except the Wabash and that was just ready to pull out. I soon got aboard this train and we crossed the Missouri River near here and followed down on the east bank of the river through a nice fertile bottom which is often overflowed in high water. At one of the ferries I saw a ferry boat with a stern wheel which was operated by a horse tread power the same as the old fashioned tread power threshing machines were run. We took dinner at Moberly and passed through the City of Mexico, Mo. and arrived in St. Louis in the evening where I put up at the St. James Hotel.

August 11th I met John D. Losekamp, the boot and shoe salesman, and made some purchases during the day and attended a theater in the evening. It was an Opera troupe from New York City and it was the grandest display of laces and legs that I ever witnessed. Such plays and costumes would not have been considered decent to present in some of our settlements in the west but in this enlightened community it appeared to be all right.

I looked about the city on the 12th and on the 13th made our purchase of dry goods from Samuel C. Davis and Co. Here I was kindly looked after by H. J. Lee, their principal salesman, and one of the best in the city. I made some other purchases during the following days, about \$15,000 in all.

I took a walk over the bridge to East St. Louis on the Illinois side. This structure was one of the finest of the kind then in the United States.

On the evening of the 17th I started for home taking the Missouri Pacific R. R. This line had reclining chairs which was not common on all the trains at that period, so I rested very well during the night.

On getting into Kansas City on the morning of the 18th I found that the train going west did not go out until evening so I lay over during the day, met Mr. Felix Mandell with whom we did considerable business and was returning home.

We took the train at 10 p.m. for the west. I arrived at Holbrook on the morning of the 21st, and went on up to Woodruff with H. R. Owens Jr.

1883
Chapter 59
Numerous Labors Added to My Mercantile Work

The next day after returning from St. Louis I went on up to Snowflake with L. M. Hatch, and returned on the 24th and took up the old work in the store.

On August 26th I attended the meeting and spoke during the services.

On the 29th we commenced the work of taking stock of our goods for our yearly settlement. We arranged to take stock before the new goods came in so as to do this work while the stock was low.

On September 1st I went up to Snowflake and the next day Joseph W. Smith and I went up to Showlow and held meeting there as home missionaries, returning to Snowflake in the evening. I returned to Woodruff on the 3rd where I was busy in opening and marking the goods that I had purchased and that had just arrived.

I made another trip to Snowflake on the 15th and went up again on the 27th, and the next day attended the conference of the sisters of Taylor and a meeting of the Board of Directors of the A. C. M. I., also a meeting of the Stockholders of that institution. A dividend of 30% was declared. A new board was elected but most of them were the old members re-elected, I was elected to the same position, secretary and treasurer.

Our quarterly conference was held on September 29th and 30th at Taylor, a meeting of the High Council was also held during the time. These double duties of the store, stake clerk, and clerk of the High Council always gave me considerable work to do at these conferences and for some days after, making out the missionary appointments and writing up the minutes, etc.

There had been considerable ill feelings between the people of Taylor and Snowflake over the water question, and President Smith was anxious to have this matter settled, so at this conference a committee was appointed to hear the case and settle the dispute. Those chosen were Miles P. Romney, Lot Smith and Andrew S. Gibbons. None of these were interest in the water claims at Snowflake or Taylor. They heard the case on October 1st and rendered their decision which was about as follows. All lands on the creek should have an equal share of water, and all of the lands of Taylor and above and new lands should be taxed for all improvements on ditches, reservoirs, etc., in the future at the rate of \$5 per acre, and Snowflake at \$3 per acre. They also appointed Jesse N. Smith, Lorenzo H. Hatch, Oscar Mann, John Hunt and John H. Standifird (who were the presidency and the bishops of the two wards) and their successors to act as a committee to regulate the waters for the two wards, also reservoirs, etc. The decision gave very good satisfaction as a whole but there were a few at Taylor who wanted the water for nothing as they had been getting it heretofore, while Snowflake had paid for it in the purchase of the place.

I returned to Woodruff on October 1st where I was extremely busy for several days. I returned to Snowflake on the 6th, and was one of the speakers at the meeting the next day. I again visited Snowflake on the 20th and I went up again as a home missionary and attended the meeting at Taylor and Snowflake on the 28th. This double duty of the store and church work kept me going and taxed me as I had often to take my own team or hire or pay my way. Besides it took me from my family the greater part of my time, and things were sadly neglected at home. Besides my expenses were such that I was not making very much so I was not climbing the ladder of prosperity very fast.

On November 3rd I received a telegram from Apostle Brigham Young to meet him at Holbrook on the arrival of the train with a conveyance to take him and party to Woodruff. I did not receive the telegram until about the time that the train should arrive at Holbrook. I arranged for Marion A. Owens to go down with a team for the party which consisted of Apostles B. Young, Heber J. Grant and Sister Young and child. They came up the next morning and meeting was held at 1 p.m. and at 7 p.m. at which they gave us some of the news of the late conference. They went up to Snowflake the next morning.

I went up to Snowflake on the 17th. The people of Snowflake had been at work for some little time starting on the erection of a stake meeting house. At this period the foundation was completed and they had just commenced to lay the brick. The building was 35 X 65 feet and the ceiling was to be 21 feet high. The people of Snowflake had

donated quite liberally for the erection of this building. I gave \$50 in cash besides rendering other services and help on the building.

I returned to Woodruff on the 20th and the 22nd President Lot Smith of the Little Colorado Stake and Joseph H. Richards of St. Joseph arrived in Woodruff and held meeting in the evening. They were on their way to meet the Apostles that were visiting around in the Stake.

I went up to Snowflake on the 24th, the Apostles coming in the evening. Meetings were held on the 25th. I returned to Woodruff the next day, the Apostles going along, and after dinner they went on to St. Joseph.

About this time there was some of the most beautiful phenomenon that I ever witnessed, these however are not infrequent in this section at certain times of the year. This occurred just after sunset and just before sunrise but in a less degree at that time. The sky appeared blue at the horizon, and a little above red, the majority of the horizon being a soft mellow blue. The light was quite soft and beautiful and gave a glorious scene at that time and was a little strange.

December 3rd I went up to Snowflake, there the stake house was being pushed as fast as possible, the walls being up about 16 feet high.

On the 9th I started for St. Johns to attend the quarterly conference. I took my wife, Adelaide, and son John L. President Jesse N. Smith was along. We went to Concho, and the next day we reached St. Johns where I stopped with W. S. Gibbons. On the 7th the sisters had their conference and there was a meeting of the Board of Directors for the A. C. M. I. Conference was held on the two following days and adjourned to meet at Taylor on March 8th.

There was considerable sickness in St. Johns at this time, quite a number of the children had the measles and several deaths had occurred from this complaint. On the 10th I started home going as far as Concho where I stopped with R. R. Wilhelm and the next day we went on home.

The leveling of the long ditch had been a constant theme and a drag, partly on account of the opposition, and then it was a big undertaking. The first of this work was done, as has been stated, with a spirit level, but this was laid aside when I sent for an instrument to St. Louis. To verify the work that had been done at the start, on December 12th I went up to the head of the survey and worked down going over that which I had done with the level, Brothers Smith and Hunt went with me. I surveyed about a mile and gained a few inches on the old survey.

On the 13th I wrote an article for the "Orion Era," a paper published in St. Johns by our people. I commented upon the President's message to congress wherein he recommended the taking away from Utah the Organic Act and place that Territory under the rule of commissioners.

In the afternoon I returned to Woodruff and was soon deep in the work of posting up accounts, etc.

On the 16th I attended meeting and spoke a short time, and again went to Snowflake on the 26th and worked fixing up the stake records.

On the 19th I went up above town about four miles to locate some corners and run some lines for some parties in town, and the next day returned to the store where I always found employment. On the 30th I was again called as a home missionary.

On January 1st, 1884, the people of Woodruff got up a shooting match. I always took part in these affairs and on this occasion I made about the best shot made on either side. There were some disputes over the affair and it came near ending in a row or fight which was regretted very much.

On the 2nd I started to Albuquerque on business, went down to Holbrook where I stayed all night and the next morning took the early train and arrived in Albuquerque in the morning and stayed all night with Mr. Mandell who took me around the place. We crossed over the Rio Grande River on a bridge 1600 feet long, we visited the Indian School kept by the Episcopalian Church, there were about 130 Indian pupils in the school, mostly boys, who appeared quite bright in their studies. The government appropriated some for the aid of the institution.

During the afternoon and the next day I attended to some business affairs and purchased a few goods that we wanted to fill up with, and on the morning of the 6th I started home, and on arriving at Holbrook in the evening I stayed there all night, going up to Woodruff the next morning.

On January 11th I went up to Snowflake and during the evening a messenger came in from St. Johns requesting me to go over there to attend to some law business. The Board of Supervisors had taken away the School District from the Mormons and added it to the Mexican District. The people were taking steps to recover it and wished me to go over and attend to the matter. I started out for Saint Johns the next morning and had a hard and cold ride going horseback but got through. On the 13th Bishop Udall and a few of the leading men of the Mormon community had a consultation to see what could be done about the recovery of the District. They had sent for me to come over and take the case for them. I told them that with the store and my duties in the church that I had more already on my hands than I could properly manage, and did not think that I could possibly leave the store business and come over there to look after this case which might drag along for months. So it was decided to retain Harris Baldwin in the case. He was a good lawyer but had not been in the place very long. Ammon M. Tenney made the arrangements with him, and he thought that he could win the case, but later when it came up it went against the people just the same as every case did when the Mormons were trying to regain their rights through the courts. It was quite evident that the Mormons could not win a case in the courts at this period when the ring were fighting them to the bitter end.

I attended meeting in the afternoon and spoke at some length after which I went over to Concho and the next day home.

On the 15th I returned to Woodruff where I took up the labors in the store, which required all of my attention in keeping the books, and looking after the business.

On January 26th my wife Julia gave birth to a son at 8 a.m. a fine healthy looking boy.

On the 28th I went up to Snowflake for the purpose of settling up the tithing accounts for the year.

On the 31st I went up and surveyed the Taylor ditch on the east side of the creek, making the fall in their ditch more uniform, and changing the old ditch some.

February 2nd I did a little surveying on the long ditch and on the 4th I was subpoenaed to St. Johns as a witness before the Grand Jury. I started out but on getting to the creek I found it so high that it was not possible to cross, it had risen suddenly and was the highest that it had been for years.

On the 5th I started out again and found that the stream had fallen considerably but was still so high that it almost swam my horse, I succeeded in getting over and the man that came for me was afraid to attempt it on his horse so I drove mine back as it was not afraid of water and he came over on my animal.

We went on to St. Johns horseback and the next day I attended court and went before the Grand Jury as a witness in the case of our store being robbed in May of the previous year. The business of the court moved very slow and there was a certain class that we called the Ring who were opposing the Mormons at every corner. They were not only working to oppose the Mormons but to get all they could out of the public crib, which they managed to keep drained to the very bottom, and the people were required to pay a heavy tax to replenish it. There were several rabid anti Mormons in and around St. Johns, some of the most prominent ones were E. S. Stover, J. L. Hubbell, Solomon Barth, C. L. Guterson, George Creigh, Charles Kenner, Henry Huning, and a Mr. Lopez. These with several others were doing all they could against the Mormons. Hubbell stated that he would fight them until Hell froze over and then give them a round on the ice, but notwithstanding this assertion he and two or three others turned and later became the friends of the Mormons. But later on when it was found that the Mormons could not be driven out E. S. Stover sold out and left the country stating that he would not live among them.

On the 7th I started home in company with John Hunt and stopping at Concho we reached Snowflake the next day, having faced a most severe snow storm on the way.

On my arrival a home I found two of my children sick with the measles, John L. and Jessie May. My wife Eliza was caring for the sick children and doing all in her power for them and they seemed to be improving some.

I went to work at the tithing accounts again. Having got these accounts in shape and finished up I went back to the store at Woodruff on the 12th.

February 17th I blessed our little new comer and gave him the name of Franklin Richards Fish. I returned to Snowflake on the 20th where I found my sick children nearly well and about over the measles.

The next day I went on up and surveyed the Taylor ditch as they wanted it to come out at a certain place in the lower part of the town so I had to give it a little less fall, and the next two days I surveyed ditches on the west side of the creek.

I went back to Woodruff but soon returned to fix up some tithing accounts and the 29th I worked on the long ditch doing some surveying.

On March 1st I went down to Woodruff and the next day I accompanied President Smith to Holbrook where he went to give a lecture on the principles of Celestial Marriage. He confined his remarks mostly to the points in the *Bible*. The meeting was held out of doors and only a moderate number attended and some of them seemed to take but little interest in the meeting. We returned to Woodruff where President Smith held meeting in the evening.

On March 6th I went up to Snowflake with Brother Lot Smith. There had been considerable rain during the past week and melted the snow in the mountains which raised the creek so that we could not cross and we went on up to Taylor on the east side of the creek. At Taylor I succeeded in crossing on a raft and then walked back to Snowflake.

On the 7th the Sisters Conference was held at Taylor, there was also a Board Meeting of the directors of the A.C.M.I.

In the evening there was a theater given at Snowflake by the Dramatic Association, my wife Adelaide had a part in the play.

Our conference was held at Taylor on the 8th and 9th. The water was so high that the people had to be taken across the creek on a raft, (Taylor was situated on both sides of the creek.)

On the evening of the 9th the High council met to hear a case between James Pearce and John H. Standifird. The latter had employed a man to jump a worthless claim that the former pretended to own. The investigation did not show very well for either party.

The next day I made a survey of a portion of the ditch that the high water had damaged, the ditch being changed some.

On the 11th I returned to Woodruff where I wrestled with statements, accounts, bills, etc., until the 24th when I again went up to Snowflake, and worked on the Long Ditch. It would naturally appear that an unreasonable amount of time had been spent on this work but there was a cause for it. There had been considerable controversy over it and various opinions where it should be located and several surveys were made to see where the best place was to be found as there were several cuts, which would be very expensive to make. The last survey we started at Shumway's Mill this made the ditch about twelve miles long, to bring the water to Snowflake. The ditch was never completed through but the upper part was made and used for the land in that section. I returned to Woodruff on the 26th.

1884
Chapter 60
A Trip East and Anti-Mormon Troubles

On the 28th of March I started to go east to make a purchase of goods. My wife Adelaide had wished to visit her relatives at Manassa, Colorado, and she accompanied me to La Junta. We went down to Holbrook with Clarence E. Owens where we found several who were going to the Salt Lake Conference. President Jesse N. Smith, Edson Whipple, Lot Smith, a Brother Carter and two women.

We did not leave Holbrook until about 4 p.m. and reached Albuquerque the next morning at about 1 a.m. where we lay over to see the agent about getting reduced rates or half price tickets to conference. After some running about we succeeded in getting the rates to conference for those going there.

During the day I visited several firms that we had been doing business with and made a few purchases of goods that we wanted immediately.

We took the train at 10:30 p.m. Brother Whipple and a woman or two not understanding about our stopping off to get our tickets were put off at a station a little above Albuquerque as they did not have any tickets. President Smith had their tickets and they were picked up as we came along.

We took breakfast at Las Vegas, diner at Ratoon and supper at La Junta. Here Brother Smith and Party turned west for Utah, and my wife Adelaide was to accompany them as far as Pueblo where she would turn off for Manassa.

I continued on east and on the morning of the 31st we stopped at Newton for breakfast, and reached Kansas City or supper. Here I took the Chicago and Alton R. R. for St. Louis where I arrived on the morning of April 1st, and put up at the St. James Hotel, and during the day I visited several firms and made some purchases.

On the 2nd I made some purchases from Samuel C. Davis and some others. The next day I made some purchases and went to see Mr. Ivers, freight agent for the St. Louis and San Francisco R. R. about getting rebates on freight, and succeeded in getting a rebate on his line.

I made some purchases on the 4th, and went to the Charter Oak Stove Foundry where I hunted up a man by the name of George D. Waterall, a nephew of Albert Minnerly, and had a short talk with him. I took his address to give to Brother Minnerly.

In the evening I took the train for Chicago, John D. Losekamp accompanied me. We passed through Joliet early in the morning and arrived at Chicago a little after 8 a.m. on the morning of the 5th where I spent most of the day in purchasing boots and shoes from Phelps, Dodge and Palmer.

I attended the theater in the evening where there was a grand display of scenery and costumes.

On April 6th I spent the day in looking about the city, visited the museum and the "Panoramic View of the Battle of Gettysburg" which was a grand representation of that battle. I took the train in the evening for St. Louis where I was met by Mr. Lee of the firm of Samuel C. Davis the next morning. I spent the day in making a few purchases and in arranging about our freight and other business.

At 8 p.m. I took the St. Louis and San Francisco R. R. for home. We passed through the southern part of the state and on the 8th we took breakfast at Springfield. I did not think that this part of the state looked as well as the northwest part did.

We got our dinner at Oswego, Kansas, and arrived at Halstead, the terminus of the road, at dark, got a ticket for Pueblo, Colorado for \$17.25. From the time I got to Kansas City to this point I traveled on a pass given by some of the merchants.

I arrived at Pueblo¹ at 1 p.m. on April 9th where I lay over for about 12 hours waiting for a train going south. I spent the afternoon looking about the city, and spent some time in trying to locate the spot where the old fort stood, and where a portion of the Mormon Battalion spent the winter of 1846-1847, my wife Mary having spent that winter here with the detachment. The Depot grounds occupied the spot as near as I could make out. The city was not very well laid out, it was divided into three parts each having a separate government. That portion of the city that was located on the hill was built up very well. There was a great amount of nails made here, which industry helped the place considerably.

April 10th I took the D. and R. G. R. R. at 2 a.m. and we reached the Levita Pass about 7 a.m. where there was some of the grandest scenery in this mountain region. Two engines were used in pulling the train up the mountain, and at the top the snow was hard like ice on either side of the track and was about six feet deep. On this mountain was an immense forest of poles. Descending we soon entered the San Louis Valley which is about 150 miles long and 60 miles broad and is surrounded on the east north and west by high mountains which are covered with snow the most of the year. The Rio Grande River flows through the valley and several streams come in from either side of the valley. The valley is quite level and in some places a little gravelly, its altitude is about 7,000 feet high and consequently is rather cold.

We arrived at Antineto at 1 p.m. where I remained about two hours when John C. Dalton came in for me and I went with him to Manassa, about ten miles distant. Here I met my wife Adelaide, she was not feeling very well, and had rather a hard trip in getting through as she was on the first train that had come over the mountain this spring.

I spent the two following days in visiting with old friends and neighbors and looking about the country. The appearances were that the place would soon become a flourishing settlement.

On April 12th Silas S. Smith, Jesse N. Smith, and Lot Smith came in from Salt Lake City where they had been to attend the conference there.

April 13th I attended Sunday School which appeared to be very well organized and in fair condition. Meeting was held at 2 p.m. at which Jesse N. and Lot Smith spoke. Silas S. Smith was the president of the stake. There was a meeting in the evening at which I occupied a portion of the time. There were quite a number of saints in the valley that were new converts from the southern states, some had apostatized and at that time there were missionaries kept among them to teach them a more perfect knowledge of the principles of the gospel.

After a pleasant but short visit, we started home on the morning of the 14th. Our party consisted of Jesse N. Smith, Lot Smith, myself and wife Adelaide. John C. Dalton took us down to Antonito where we took the train at 11 a.m.

We reached Espanola, the terminus of the road, at about 6 p.m. where we stayed all night. This place was about the first place settled in New Mexico by the Spaniards, it is situated on the west bank of the Rio Grande. At this time the fruit trees were in full blossom and looked very well, the most of the inhabitants were Mexicanos.

On the 15th we took the stage for Santa Fe where we arrived at about noon² and stopped at the Palace Hotel where they charged \$1 a meal, having plenty of silver ware but very little to eat.

We spent the remainder of the day in looking about the city. Mr. Staab showed us through his store and dwelling house which he said cost \$50,000, it was indeed a fine building. There were several nice buildings in the city, but the flat roof Mexican houses predominated but they were gradually giving place to the more pretentious and modern buildings. The country did not appear to be very prosperous or progressive considering the age of the place. There was some good music during the afternoon on the plaza by the military band.

We took the train a little after 11 p.m. and soon arrived at Lama Junction where we changed cars for Albuquerque where we arrived at 3 a.m. and then changed cars for Holbrook where we arrived at a little after 1 p.m. on the 16th.

Lot Smith went on to Winslow and the rest of us went on up to Woodruff with Clarence E. Owens, and the next day went on up to Snowflake with Alma Palmer, where I found the family tolerably well but two of the children had been quite sick, especially Joseph S. Aunt Eliza had taken care of the children during our absence. I had traveled so much of nights and while in St. Louis and Chicago had attended evening entertainments and the new kind of lights

appeared to hurt my eyes so by the time I got home my eyes were quite bad and added to this I took cold which settled in them so I had to be very careful of them for some little time. I was not able to read or write by lamp light. I returned to Woodruff the next day.

On the 19th a flood came down which raised the water up above the new work on the dam and cutting around one end of the work soon cut out a gap some 25 feet deep and 110 feet wide. This was most discouraging as it was now too late to repair the dam in time to raise a crop.

The latter part of the month was very windy but we had some little rain which was a little unusual when we had a windy spring.

My labors in the store were the same old thing, a rustle and hurry all the time when I was there and the same thing when I was out.

The Assessor came around and assessed the store at \$10, 350 which I did not think was out of the way but the taxes were very high, being generally \$3 on a hundred. That was as high as the law would allow them to go.

On May 4th, Joseph W. Smith and Levi M. Shumway visited the place as home missionaries. The people were feeling a little encouraged, there had been considerable rain and they were putting in some corn, etc.

About the first of April there was some trouble at St. Johns, a party of the Anti-Mormons jumped a city lot belonging to one of our brethren. There being a prospect of trouble over the affair some of our brethren went out try and stop the row and quiet the parties. For this act of peace they were arrested, while there and nothing done with those who created the trouble by jumping the lots.

A little later Brother Stradling of St. Johns was fencing a piece of land that was included in the purchase that the brethren had made when a party of eight men came out with their guns, and cut down the posts and destroyed the fence. While engaged in this work they took the opportunity of cursing the Mormons saying that they were a disgrace to the country and ought to be wiped out of existence. In consequence of this land jumping and other troubles President John Taylor called about 100 families from Utah to move to St. Johns to strengthen the place. Most of these called came but the majority of them sooner or later became disgusted with the conditions and the country and returned to Utah.

On May 6th We went up to Snowflake with James Pearce who was as usual when he went to Holbrook about two-thirds drunk.

On the 8th Apostles Brigham Young and Francis M. Lyman arrived in Snowflake. Their visit to Arizona had been hastened some on account of the troubles at St. Johns where they were expecting to go to hold conference, etc.

On the 9th I returned to Woodruff with Brother Owens. I took my wife Adelaide with me, but returned to Snowflake again on the 14th, where Apostles Young and Lyman arrived after their visit to Showlow and Pinedale districts. (Pinedale was then called Percheron).

On the next day I started to St. Johns to attend our quarterly conference and took my wife Eliza and daughter Della. I drove to Concho where meeting was held, the apostles occupying the most of the time. We stopped with Sister Wilhelm, we reached St. Johns the next day where I stopped with Ammon M. Tenney.

There was a meeting in the evening of the High Council and Bishops where the late troubles about the land jumping, etc. were talked over. On the 17th there was a meeting of the Board of Directors of the A. C. M. I.

Conference commenced today and adjourned on the 18th. The apostles were the main speakers during the meetings and the last day of conference the saints were required to fast all day and prayer was offered in behalf of the people of St. Johns and for the breaking up of the Anti-Mormon ring. This prayer was in a measure answered not long after.

I spent the forenoon of the 19th in making out the missionary appointments (a labor that I did every conference) and then drove to Concho. The next day we reached home where I worked some at fixing up the minutes of the conference and went to Woodruff in the afternoon of the 21st where I found several teams there waiting for flour which had not yet arrived.

On the 30th Apostles Young and Lyman came in and held meeting in the evening and the next day went on to St. Joseph.

June 1st, W. W. Roundy and I held meeting at woodruff as home missionaries. At our late conference the people voted to donate some labor to the people of Woodruff to help put their dam, and work was commenced on the 2nd, a number of men having arrived to help in the work.

I went up to Snowflake on the 6th but returned the next day taking my wife Adelaide with me.

On the 7th Apostles Young and Lyman came into Woodruff. I spent the evening with them and some others talking over matters pertaining to our election which was done after the meetings and we agreed to vote with them, they were getting up an opposite ticket to the ring at St. Johns. Among the number was Burgess, Zack, Harvey, and Higgins. They were trying to be friendly with the Mormons. There were now about fifty men at work on the dam.

About this time I was taken with a severe spell of cramping but it did not continue very long.

While there were a few at Holbrook who were friendly to the Mormons, mainly for their votes, the greater number of outsiders were bitter, this was especially the case with those at St. Johns. "The Apache Chief" an Anti-Mormon newspaper had been publishing some very strong pieces against the Mormons and this kept alive the anti-Mormon spirit. To show the spirit of this paper and of those who edited it I copy a few items taken from that paper of May 30th 1884:

"Brigham Young Jr., one of the twelve great whore mongers of the Mormon Church, is in town. A rope would be a good lesson for him."

"How did Missouri and Illinois get rid of the Mormons? By the use of the shot gun and rope. Apache county can rid herself of them also. In a year from now the Mormons will have the power here and Gentiles had better leave. Don't let them get it."

"Desperate diseases need desperate remedies. The Mormon disease is a desperate one and the rope and shot gun is the only cure. The government refuses to do anything, and the "people" of Apache county must do something or the Mormons will soon drive them out. Take the needed steps while it is yet time. Don't let them settle on any more of our lands; don't let them stop in Apache County. Hang a few of their polygamous leaders, such as Jesse N. Smith, Udall, Romney, Hunt and others of this nature and a stop will be put to it."

"The time has come when every man should declare how he stands on the Mormon question. If he wants an office let him define his position thoroughly. No half way cowards need apply. nobody but out-spoken, true blue anti-Mormons will hold an office in Apache county. The good of the country demands this, and we expect every Gentile to see that it is carried out. No Mormons should be allowed to cast a vote. He has no rights and should be allowed none. Down with them. Grind out their very existence or make them comply with the laws of the people and decency."

The above shows in a small degree the utter disregard that the St. Johns ring had for constitutional rights, and with such men in office made it almost impossible for our people to get their rights. They soon commenced their prosecutions of our people for polygamy. Ammon W. Tenney was arrested for polygamy, and they watched his house for sometime day and night to get some of his family, he was taken before U. S. Commissioner George A. McCarter who was the editor of the "Apache Chief" and was bound over to await the action of the Grand Jury at Prescott. McCarter did not intend to show any mercy or leniency to our people in these cases and it did not take any evidence to bind them over. Others were soon arrested and all treated the same.

Chapter Notes

¹ In the winter of 1821-22 Jacob Fowler build a log house on the modern site of Pueblo, Colorado and occupied it or upwards of a month. In 1842 a trading post was built at the mouth of Fountain Creek. James P. Beckworth claims that it was built under his direction in October of that year. Sage confirms the date of 1842, but simply says that it was built by "Independent Traders." He adds that it was called the "Pueblo." Other authorities mention George Simpson and his associates as builders of the post. By whomever built, the date seems clearly to have been 1842.

² Santa Fe is one of the oldest towns within the present limits of the United States. The site was first visited by Coronado in 1541; but the founding of the town was the work of Onate, who established the colony of New Mexico in 1598. The date of the founding of santa Fe is uncertain owing to the destruction of the records by the revolt of 1680; but it was sometime between 1605 and 1609. By 1630, Santa Fe had one thousand inhabitants; its first church was built on the site of the present cathedral, in 1522-27; the ancient government palace, still existing, dates from the seventeenth century. In 1580 the Spaniards were expelled, but twelve years later returned under Diego de Vargas. From that time to the present, Santa Fe has been continuously inhabited. In the eighteenth century, French traders found their way thither, and by the early nineteenth the American trade began. In 1822, the Mexican standard was raised over the town, and in 1846 General Stephen W. Kearney secured its surrender to the United States. Santa Fe has always been the capital of the territory. It had in 1905, a population of about eight thousand.

1884
Chapter 61
A Trip to Chicago and Other Items

On June 21st I went up to Snowflake and the next day to Taylor where I attended meeting as a home missionary. The Snowflake Coop. Store had just been putting up a brick building for their business at Snowflake and had just completed it and had it dedicated on the 22nd. I returned to Woodruff the next day, taking my wife Eliza with me.

On the 29th the water broke through the dam at Woodruff taking out a vast amount of earth work and fears were entertained that it would cut around the end of the work, so every one in the place turned out and worked all day and all night, there being two shifts during the night, and finally the work was secured from this break, but the getting out of the water in time for raising a crop was given up.

The 4th of July was not celebrated and I worked in the store all day. I again went on to Snowflake on the 12th and attended meeting there the next day and on Monday helped my boys haul five loads of lucern and then returned to Woodruff.

On July 19th I went up to Snowflake and the next day W. W. Roundy and I went up to the Mortensen ranch (some two miles from Pinedale) and held meeting as home missionaries. My wife Eliza and daughters Della and Jessie May went along with us. I returned to woodruff on the 21st.

The recent rains had raised the water in the river and on the 24th it was so high that it went over the new work, and the dam not being quite completed it soon cut out a gap 35 feet deep and 100 feet wide. This was another sad blow to the place and blasted all hopes of getting out the water very soon. The people however celebrated the day but there was gloom over the place.

On August 1st I went up to Snowflake, and the next day started for St. Johns in company with Jesse N. Smith and John Hunt. They had their wives along and were all going over as witnesses in Brother Hunt's case. He had been elected as one of the Board of Supervisors but they would not allow him to take his seat. There was no question about his election as he was on both tickets. But after the election they concluded that they did not want him so kept him out and he never did get his seat, the case being put off at various times until the term of office was about out. I was going over as a witness in the Tweksburry case for robbing the store.

We drove to Concho where we put up at Sister Wilhelm's. Next day we got into St. Johns and attended meeting in the afternoon, where Brother Smith and I spoke. Court convened on the 4th but adjourned giving the Court Room to the anti-Mormons to hold a convention in.

During the forenoon Jesse N. Smith, Miles P. Romney, David K. Udall, John Hunt and I called on Judge Sumner Howard. He treated us very well and intimated that his course on the bench would not be changed by party prejudices, but we did not believe him and his subsequent course proved that we were right.

Court was held in the afternoon, a Grand Jury was empanelled, most of them were Mexicans. It was the hardest looking jury that I ever saw. Sol Barth was appointed foreman, this was the fourth grand jury that he had been on which was every one that had been held in the county. He always managed to control the Mexican vote. There were some other anti-Mormons on the jury such as J. L. Hubbell, George A. McCarter and John Ball, etc. With such a jury the prosecuting attorney could get any kind of an indictment against the Mormons that he wanted to.

August 5th Brother Hunt's case was laid over for a week, and he and Brother Smith went home.

On the 6th Tweksburry had not arrived and his bonds were forfeited and the witnesses were released. (He however was tried later on and was acquitted; I was in Mexico at the time.)

I started for Woodruff with Brother Huff going as far as Sister Greers and the next day we reached Woodruff, where I was more than busy, but made a trip to Snowflake on the 11th and returned on the 14th.

On August 16th I started east to make a purchase of goods for the store, Brother Smith accompanied me on this trip. We went down to Holbrook with M. A. Owens and took the train for the east at 2 p.m. and on reaching Albuquerque we got commercial rates paying \$31.30 each for our tickets. Going on we reached Kansas City at about 6 p.m. on the 18th where we took the Chicago and Alton R. R. We arrived in St. Louis the next morning where we put up at the St. James Hotel.

We spent the time until the evening of the 22nd in purchasing goods etc., and among the other items was a car of furniture. Brother Jensen of St. Johns had started a kind of a furniture shop and had was going to take one half of it.

Leaving St. Louis in the evening we arrived in Chicago on the morning of the 23rd where we were met by John D. Losecamp. We spent the day in purchasing quite a large stock of boots and shoes from Phelps, Dodge and Palmer, after which we took the train at about 5 p.m. for Jefferson, Wisconsin where we arrived at 10 p.m.

We spent the next day in visiting with Mr. Foster and wife, she was a sister of Brother Smith's mother. Mr. Foster and wife treated us royally and Brother Smith improved the time in talking over family affairs and history while I added something occasionally to the conversation as a general talk on religion often came up.

Jefferson was a small place but the thick grass, rolling hills and groves of tamarack near by gave the place a most beautiful and picturesque appearance.

Next morning we left our friends and took the train at 9 a.m. and passing through Milwaukee we reached Racine about noon, where we stopped a short time and made arrangements with Mitchell Lewis and Co. to get a car of wagons. We had to buy them through Grant, Odell and Co. of Salt Lake City as the agency for Arizona was given to other parties.

We took the train at about 2:30 and arrived in Chicago at 5 p.m. where we stopped at the Crawford House. We went to see the "Panorama of the Battle of Gettysburg" and the "Siege of Paris".

The forenoon of the 26th we spent in visiting the Dry Goods House of John V. Farewell and Co. and in looking about the city.

We took the train for Kansas City at 1 p.m. where we arrived and next morning at about 8 a.m. and continuing our journey west we arrived at Albuquerque early on the morning of the 29th where we took the train for Holbrook.

On this train we found several with whom we were acquainted. Sol. Barth who was in financial troubles, Mr. Burges who was running for Sheriff of Apache Co. on the Independent ticket, and Mr. Van Horne who was running for Probate Judge on the same ticket. I am sorry to say that they were both beaten by the ring at St. Johns.

On reaching Holbrook we met David K. Udall, Miles P. Romney and John T. Lesueur who had been to Prescott before the United States Grand Jury. The Anti-Mormons of St. Johns as well as others had been making a general move against the saints and had gotten out several indictments at Prescott mostly for polygamy. They had bound indictments against David K. Udall, Christopher I. Kempe, Peter J. Christopherson, Ammon M. Tenney, William J. Flake, James N. Skousen, Bateman H. Wilhelm, and Miles P. Romney. Udall and Romney were indicted on a trumped up charge of perjury. We rode up to Woodruff in the afternoon with the brethren.

Our visit and business east had been quite satisfactory, we were well treated by all and we had a fine visit with each other when not engaged other ways. We had enjoyed ourselves but on reaching home we felt somewhat down cast to learn that the prosecutions of the saints had commenced in such a general way.

On the 30th Brother Smith and I rode up to Snowflake with William W. Williams where I found two of my children quite poorly but seemed to be on the improve.

On September 1st Brother Smith and I returned to Woodruff where we commenced to take stock of our goods and preparing for the yearly settlement of the business of the store. Charles Jarvis commenced to work in the store again. He had been out some time and Clark Owens had been working in the store. Some of the goods that we had

purchased soon came in and soon after taking stock this arrival kept me extremely busy in marking and putting them up.

One of my children that was sick when I returned from the east had been getting worse and in a short time it appeared to be very dangerous, so on the 11th I started to go up to Snowflake but before I reached there I met the word that our little son Franklin Richards had died at 7 a.m. that morning. I did not get through until along in the afternoon, when I found the family as would be expected on such a sad case, quite broken up and sad over the sorrowful affair. The little one had been ailing for some three months but was not dangerously ill as we thought, and up to a short time before his death nothing serious was anticipated. The funeral was held the next day which was largely attended as there were many in for conference.

September 13th our quarterly conference commenced today in our new Stake House, and adjourned on the 14th. The report of the different bishops showed that there was a shortage of crops in the stake. I went to Woodruff the next day with George C. Williams.

On the 24th I went up to Snowflake, President Joseph F. Smith, Apostle Erastus Snow and Elder John Morgan of the presidency of the seventies and their wives arrived in Snowflake in the afternoon. The next day two meetings were held at Snowflake and in the evening one was held at Taylor, at which the visiting brethren occupied the time.

On the 26th I returned to Woodruff where President Smith and party held meeting at 4 p.m. and the next day they went on to St. Joseph.

On October 5th I attended meeting at Woodruff as a home missionary and in the evening went up to Snowflake with John W. Freeman, and the next day I went over to the Coop. herd near the Dry Lake for the purpose of tracing up some government lines to see what section the herd house was on. Alma Z. Palmer who had charge of the herd went with me. I spent the next day in the labor of tracing lines, the nearest government corner that I could find was about four miles from the house. I was however able to find the proper location of the house and started home about sunset tired and weary from the hard work of traveling, and reached home the next morning.

On the 9th I returned to Woodruff with Jesse N. Smith and took my wife Eliza with me. My labors at Woodruff were made extremely hard and difficult as so many things took me away that I was over worked when I was in the store. I was busy every minute of the time posting up books, making out bills, marking goods, etc.

On the 18th I went up to Snowflake and the next day attended meeting as a home missionary, and returned to Woodruff on the 20th. I took my wife Julia with me.

On the 25th John B. Miliner arrived in Woodruff from Utah, he came to Arizona to assist the brethren in their legal difficulties and the next day he spoke to the people of Woodruff.

On the 27th I returned to Snowflake with Jesse N. Smith, and on the 28th I did a little surveying for the people of Taylor on their town site, returning to Woodruff on the following day.

November 4th was election day and after assisting in starting things at Woodruff I went down to Holbrook on some business and I voted there.

Mr. James D. Houck did the challenging of the anti-Mormon party, he challenged my vote on the ground of Polygamy, but as there was nothing in the oath as to polygamy I took the oath as prescribed in the statutes and was allowed to vote. The Mormons all voted for the Independent ticket which was gotten up at Holbrook. The principal candidates were F. M. Zuck, M. T. Burgess, E. R. Carr and W. L. Van Horn. This ticket was of course beaten by the anti-Mormon party as they always beat, generally through fraud.

On the 15th I went to Snowflake and the next day I went with John W. Freeman to Juniper where we held meeting and returned in the evening.

On the 17th I surveyed a ditch to the reservoir above Snowflake returning to Woodruff on the following day.

I again went to Snowflake on the 28th and the next day assisted in putting in a flume for the reservoir but as all things were not ready we did not complete the job.

There was a priesthood meeting in the afternoon which I attended, and on the 30th I went up to Taylor where President Smith and his counselors were the speakers at the meeting.

On December 1st I went up and leveled a few places where flumes had to be put in on the long ditch. President Smith was working with all his energy to get this work put through and the ditch completed, but his being taken away shortly after, the work was suspended and the lower part of the work was not done.

I returned to Woodruff on the 2nd where I worked extremely hard in making up the accounts for the month, I balanced the books at the end of each month. Our trade had amounted to over \$85,000 for the year. The crops in the country were short and we were selling at this time about 1,000 lbs. of flour a day.

1884
Chapter 62
The Polygamy Persecutions Take Me to Utah

The prosecutions of Udall and others gave the Anti-Mormons encouragement to continue them and soon plans were made to have others arrested and other indictments found. On December 6th Nat. Creer, whose parents were Mormons but he did not make any pretensions to be one, and a friend of mine sent me word from St. Johns that Henry Huning and some others were calculating to have me arrested for polygamy soon, and from the tone of the notice I might look for the officer any day. Under the circumstances I thought it best to go up to Snowflake and consult with President Smith what course to take in the matter. I at once started out going up with Brother Call. I met Brother Smith. He and some others had been notified that the officers would soon be after them, he had been at work on the long ditch and on getting the notice had just come down to consult with others about the move. Several of us soon got together and talked the matter over, and we decided to go to Utah to avoid these prosecutions for the present and to see President John Taylor and see what could be done in these matters.

We were not long in fixing up, our company consisted of Jesse N. Smith, Lorenzo H. Hatch, John H. Standifird, and myself. We left Snowflake at about 6 p.m. Silas D. Smith and my son John L. took us down to Woodruff where we arrived at about 10 p.m. Here we remained for about two hours arranging the business of the store. Charles Jarvis was the main salesman and he was left to look after the books, and accounts, etc.

James D. Smithson then fixed up a team and took us to St. Joseph where we arrived at 6 a.m. on the morning of the 7th. We got our breakfast with Sister Joseph H. Richards. Brother John Bushman then hitched up his team and took us on to Sunset where we arrived at about 1:30 p.m. Here we found President Lot Smith fixing up to leave on account of these prosecutions for polygamy. I took supper with Thomas W. Brookbank, meeting was held in the evening at which Brother David Savage and others spoke. I was very tired after my trip to Snowflake and then an all night's ride and the worry of the business, etc., which we left on such short notice.

On the morning of the 8th I took breakfast with Lot Smith and we then fixed a carriage a little and he took his team and Brother Bushman took his that he had come down with and these two brethren took us on with them. We left Sunset at about 10 a.m. These hasty preparations and trip were hastened some by the trial of the brethren at Prescott who were convicted and sentenced at about this time, and there being at this time such a strong feeling against the Mormons that there was no hope of getting a fair trial, and we knew if we were arrested that it meant conviction and a long term of imprisonment.

We traveled as far as the San Francisco Wash where we camped, I slept with Brother John Bushman on the ground. It rained some during the night and we got quite wet. The next day was stormy and we had a very muddy road. On going about four miles we met Brother Dotson from Minersville Utah, and about noon we met Brother Earl. We plodded on through the rain and mud and reached the Black Falls after dark.

A very large mule had strayed off from its companions and getting with our animals had followed us and after a while Brother Lot Smith put it and worked it in place of one of his, taking it on through to Utah. He later brought it back and its owner Adam Hanna got it again.

On the 10th we traveled a little below where the road leaves the Little Colorado River where we camped. We had our prayers morning and evening regularly upon the whole trip. On the 11th we drove to Willow Springs where we got supper and then drove on until about 10 p.m. where we found the snow about two inches deep on our beds the next morning. Brother Bushman and I slept out on the ground as we were the youngest and the others managed to sleep in the wagons. We traveled about 15 miles on the 12th and found the snow about one foot deep.

On the 13th we arose with another covering of snow on our bed, and on going about four miles we met Henry Fouls and some others. I wrote to Charles Jarvis and Clark Owens about some business pertaining to the store and sent it back by them.

Continuing our journey we camped within about two miles of the Bitter Springs. Here we found the snow about eight inches deep, the night was cold and we had no wood to make a fire, so we went to bed to keep warm.

December 14th our horses had left us during the night and Brother Bushman and I went back after them, we followed them some four miles before we found them. It was a very cold morning and it was very hard traveling through the snow. We were the youngest of the party and so took the hardest part of the work. We were about tired out when we reached camp.

We then drove to the ferry where we crossed a little after dark. We took supper with David Brinkerhoff, he told us that there were some Gentiles here so we did not go about much until they left. We took breakfast the next morning with Brother Brinkerhoff, he and Brother Christensen were tending the ferry and were all the men that were here. We remained here all day and held meeting at which we all spoke.

Here we fell in with Brother Henry M. Tanner, he had started for Utah but could not cross the Buckskin Mountain on account of snow so he returned to the ferry.

December 16th we started out on our journey, Brother Tanner hitched in a horse and went on with us. At Soap Creek we met Brother Robinson and bought a shovel from him so that we could dig through the snow drifts on the mountain if it was found necessary. We paid him \$2.00 for it, Jesse N. Smith paid \$1 and I paid \$1. Driving on about four miles further we camped, found the snow here about two inches deep.

On the 17th we proceeded on, the snow getting deeper as we advanced. At the pools we found some teams waiting for company to break the road, the snow here was about eight inches deep and had been deeper but had settled some. On reaching House Rock we found the snow about one foot deep, and in places where it had drifted it was much deeper.

Next morning as we advanced we found the snow some deeper, the axletrees of our wagons dragged in the snow. Our teams took turns in breaking the road as it was so hard on one to go ahead long at a time. I walked considerable, it being all that the teams could do to get through. In one place we had to shovel through a drift in a hollow. Brother Warren Tenney came up with us. he had his wife along and a boy by the name of Keets. We finally reached the top of the Buckskin Mountain where we camped and dried our clothes, they being quite wet as we had waded through the snow nearly all day.

December 19th we drove on about three miles when we met a company going to Arizona, from this on we found the roads much better.

Reaching the little settlement of Johnson we stopped with Nephi Johnson who was here at the time. Here we got a paper which stated that Tenney, Kempe, and Christofferson had been sentenced to three and a half years each imprisonment at Detroit Mich. and that Skousen and Flake were sent to the Yuma prison for six months. They were all fined \$500 each in addition to the imprisonment. Sumner Howard who was on the bench was doubtless trying to be the Jeffreys¹ of the 19th Century.

On the 20th we took breakfast with Brother Johnson who treated us very kindly and gave us some apples and beef to help out our scanty stock of provisions. At this point Brother Tenney left us, he going on to St. George while we started north.

It rained all the fore part of the day so we did not start until about noon when we managed to get about 14 miles through the mud and snow.

When we camped Brother Bushman and I made our bed down on the snow, preferring that to the mud that was under it, there was some rain during the night which turned to snow before morning. On the 21st we drove to Upper Kanab where we found the snow about one foot deep and it stormed some during the day.

Before getting in, Brother Lot Smith broke his carriage but we got to Brother Robinson's where we stopped.

The next day we spent the morning in fixing up the broken vehicle. Getting the damage repaired, we drove a little below what was called Asa's ranch on the Sevier, snow and mud all the way.

December 23rd Henry M. Tanner who had traveled with us from the ferry left us at about 2 a.m. He was very anxious to get through to Payson to attend a family gathering of the Tanners at that place. He went on horse back. Driving on to Hillsdale Jesse N. Smith and Lot Smith remained there to rest for the day. Brother Jesse N. had relatives here, (his wife's folks). The rest of us went on to Panguitch where I stopped with my brother-in-law M. M. Steele and had a nice visit with them during the evening. The next day Jesse N. and Lot Smith came in about 11 a.m.

I spent the day in writing letters and visiting with relatives, spending a portion of the time with my niece Mrs. Sarah Jane Miller. We remained here the rest of the day and there was meeting in the evening.

President James Henrie and Lot Smith had been old neighbors in the Farmington district and they had many jokes to pass on each other. Each had prided himself on keeping the best team in the county.

One day they were going to the City and a race was started which was very common. Henry came out ahead and raising his whip he looked back and shouted to Lot "See what carrots will do." (He fed carrots to his horses). This nettled Lot and he again put the whip to his team and a second race was on and he this time came out ahead and raising his whip looked back at Henrie and shouted "See what oats will do." (He fed oats to his horses).

December 25th our party had got along very slowly on the trip although Brother Lot Smith had joked Brother Standifird very hard during all the journey and always called him Cillblain Henry. Standifird had done the cooking on the journey.

Brother Steele borrowed a horse for me and I started to go across the mountain with the mail carried to Parowan while the balance of the company went on down the river. We had rather a hard time in getting through the snow but I very much enjoyed the old familiar scenes as we passed.

We arrived at Paragoonah at about 4 p.m. where I took supper with Joseph P. Barton, and as the mail carried did not go any further I walked on to Parowan in the evening where I stopped with my sister Sarah McGregor.

During the evening Brother William C. Mitchell, hearing that I had come in, called in and we went down to the meeting house where there was a party in the basement and I met many of my old friends and acquaintances.

December 26th I spent the forenoon with my daughter Frances Carson, she had two children. I took supper with Eli Whitney's family where my sister Anna Maria Burton, Brother Mortensen and wife and several others were present.

December 27th I spent the forenoon with my old friend Edward Dalton and in the afternoon went down to Brother Mortensen's place.

The next day I took dinner with my old friend William C. Mitchell and attended meeting at 2 p.m. where I spoke about an hour giving an account of the affairs in Arizona and the persecutions of the saints in that territory.

On the 29th I started to Beaver with my son-in-law, Samuel V. Carson, stopping a short time at Paragoonah. I called on Brother John Topham and the two sister Dames who were feeling quite bad and lonesome, Brother Dame having died the previous fall. After a cold and disagreeable ride we arrived at Beaver at about sunset where I stopped with my daughter Josie Barraclough. During the evening I met Apostle Francis M. Lyman and George Teasdale and had a talk with them about the persecutions of the saints in Arizona.

December 30th I spent the day in visiting with the folks and old friends. My daughter Josie had a fine boy she had previously lost three, all at child birth. Her husband John Barraclough was working in the District Court Clerk's office and was doing very well and to a certain extent aided our people in their troubles which soon followed those in Arizona.

December 31st I spent a portion of the day with my brother-in-law Edward W. Thompson, my sister Julia was in Salt Lake City. I went around and visited the new Court House which was then quite a credit to the place being well fitted up for a town like Beaver.

Thus closed the year 1884, I was among relatives and friends but still I was an exile from my home, doing nothing for my family and spending what money I had with me. In Arizona our troubles and persecutions had just begun and Utah was soon to feel the relentless hand of the persecution. We like the former day saints found but few friends, but many who were ready to speak evil of us. But I rejoiced that I had a knowledge of the truthfulness of the Gospel and knew that it would finally triumph, that right will ever come uppermost and justice will finally be done.

January 1st 1885, this was one of the most eventful years for me that I had for a long time, filled with hardships and trials long to be remembered. I continued my pilgrimage by leaving Beaver at 8 a.m. going on the stage which happened to be an old three and a quarter inch wagon, the regular coach being broken down. We reached Minersville at 11 a.m. where we remained about two hours and then went on to Milford. It was an unusually cold day and I suffered considerably before we got through, my fare for going down was \$4.

At 7 p.m. I took the train for Salt Lake City, I was kept awake during the forepart of the night by a few drunken miners who were along.

We reached Payson about daylight, on the morning of the 2nd. We reached Provo for breakfast where I met Brother Hatch, he told me that Jesse N. and Lot Smith had gone on to the city. Going on we arrived in Salt Lake City at about 10 a.m. where I met Brother Jesse N. Smith at the depot.

We went up to Judge Elias Smith's where Brother Jesse N. Smith was stopping and then went to the President's office where we spent a short time in conversation over current events and then went to the Gardo House where we took dinner with President John Taylor. There were present of our party, Brother Jesse N. Smith, Lot Smith, Lorenzo Hill, Hatch, and myself. Brother Standifird and Bushman were with the teams and had not yet arrived. I took supper at Elias Smith's and spent the evening with Brother Smith at Brother John Morgan's and stayed all night with Brother Smith at Elias Smith's.

January 3rd we got up quite early as Brothers Jesse N. and Lot Smith were going off with President Taylor. They and some others were going down into Old Mexico before they returned. The trip was not made public and but very few knew anything about it. The party started at 7 a.m. At the depot I met several old friends, John W. Young among the number. The train from the south came in soon after and I met Apostle Erastus Snow, I told him that President Taylor had left. He soon went and caught the D. and R. G. R. R. and started out on that to join the party somewhere in Colorado. I took breakfast with Brother Hatch at his brother's Abraham Hatch. I got my dinner at Susan Smith's, widow of George A. Smith. I tried to arrange to get a pass to go home on and then went to Centerville in the evening where I stopped with my cousin John Adams. His wife also was my cousin, my Aunt Beckey was here with them.

January 4th I spent the day with my relatives and visited my cousin, Emiline Smith, wife of W. R. Smith. I attended the meeting and met a few old settlers that were here when we lived in the place. I spoke a short time.

On the 5th I returned to Salt Lake City, met our old neighbor and friend Franklin D. Richards and his wife on the train and had a short visit with them. I took dinner at Mat. Cullen's who had married my niece Emma Jane Thompson. My sister Julia was here and we had a short visit. I then went to the President's office where President George Q. Cannon, Brother Hatch and I had a talk about the affairs in Arizona. I did some business in relation to our store at Woodruff.

I stayed all night at Mat. Cullen's where my sister Julia was. She treated me very kindly but urged me to drop Mormonism and put away my plural family. She said that polygamy was going to be put down, and urged me to drop it and be in line with the rest of the non-Mormons and avoid these prosecutions.

January 6th, Tuesday I bid my sister Julia good by and rode down town with my niece Emma Jane Cullen who had fallen in the footsteps of her husband was a Catholic. She was going to attend Mass at the Catholic church. I bade her good by at the door of the church and then went to the Depot and took the D. and R. G. R. R. for home. I did not get a pass but half rates, my ticket costing me \$42.

Leaving Salt Lake City we reached Provo for dinner where they charged the customary price of 75¢ a meal. In passing on up Spanish Fork canyon there was considerable snow. Towards night we passed Price Station, I would

have liked very much to have visited my sister Jane who I understood lived some twenty miles distant, but there was no conveyance or mail going out and I thought it too expensive to hire one and then the time was another item that I feared that I could not afford just then.

We arrived at Grand Junction a little after midnight. Here I got a cab man to take me up to my brothers for fifty cents. I found my brother feeling rather poorly with a bad cold. I fancied that he was a little cool in his reception of me but then he was never very demonstrative in his manners.

January 7th I spent the day with my brother Franklin, he had a nice family of five girls, but in later years they were given too much for fashion and amusements to make good wives. My brother was engaged in the stock business, and in partnership with the Thompson boys, they had about 3,000 head of cattle but were owing Mat Cullen for a large share of the money invested. Franklin was opposed to all religion, he favored Ingersoll in many things. I had a long talk with him but it did but little good as I could see. He said he had burned his *Bible* saying that it was not a fit work for his children to read.

January 8th I spent the day with the family and in looking about the place. Grand Junction had a population of about 1,500 and had mostly been built up within the past two years, there were several very fair brick buildings in the place.

There had been a large canal built by a company for the purpose of taking out the waters of Grand River for irrigation purposes, this canal had cost over \$300,000. I took the train a little after midnight.

January 9th we passed some beautiful country, the scenery through this mountain region was grand. The ascent of the mountain was quite interesting as our serpentine windings brought us near Marshall's pass. The scenery grew more grand and striking as the tall peaks that were covered with perpetual snow and the lower ones covered with a beautiful growth of tall pines came in sight. There was considerable snow here and the view from the summit was grand. The descent down the mountain was equally picturesque and grand. Winding our way down to the Arkansas River, and passing through that famous canyon we soon emerged out of it and arrived at Canyon City where the state penitentiary was located, and reached Pueblo city at about 4 p.m. Here I again changed cars, and reached Albuquerque at 6 p.m. of the 10th where I stopped with Mr. Mandell.

The next day I took a ride with him and during the day made a few purchases of goods for our store at Woodruff.

The evening that I arrived I attended a theatre. The "Danites" was presented, a play that had been written for the purpose of prejudicing the minds of the people against the Mormons. It was a scandalous play and was not a fit one to put on the boards. I may have judged it too harshly as it was made on purpose to poison the minds of the people against the Mormons.

January 12th President John Taylor and party came in last night. They had visited Snowflake and were on their way now for Old Mexico. The party consisted of President John Taylor, Joseph F. Smith, Erastus Snow, Francis M. Lyman, Moses Thatcher, John Sharp, John Q. Cannon, Gorge Reynolds; Brother Spencer, Jesse N. and Lot Smith. I went down to their car where a part of the company were (the others being out in town). I spent a short time with them in conversing upon the current topics (the polygamy troubles etc.)

Jesse N. Smith requested me to go home and look after the A. C. M. I. and the tithing accounts, etc. I took the train for Holbrook which was late and arrived there a little after 10 p.m.

As I did not wish to be recognized I got off on the opposite side from the depot and walked back two miles or more to the Puerco which was running in the center thick with much ice. Hunting around in the darkness I found a place that I thought I could wade across, and pulling off my boots, pants, etc., I made an attempt to get across. The ice near the shores was not hard enough to bear me so I broke through at every step. After crossing I put on my clothes and walked up to Woodruff where I arrived about 3 a.m. and stopped with Bishop James C. Owens.

Brother John B. Milner was there the next day, looking over the store books and accounts which were brought in to me as I did not make myself known to but very few. In the evening Clarence E. Owens took me up to Snowflake where we arrived at about 11 p.m. and found the family as well as usual.

Chapter Notes

¹ George Jeffreys, 1648-1689, Lord Chancellor of England "was probably on the whole the worst example of a period when the administration of justice in England had sunk to the lowest degradation, and the judicial bench had become the too willing tool of an unconstitutional and unscrupulous executive."--Encyclopedia Britannica. (See also "Bloody Assizes", 1685, conducted by Jeffreys.)

1885
Chapter 63
A Trip to Mexico

While I remained in Snowflake I kept out of sight as I was satisfied that the officers were after me for polygamy. But I worked diligently at the Stake tithing accounts until the 17th when I went back to Woodruff. I took my wife Julia with me, also my son Joseph C.

Here I worked at the store accounts staying at Brother Reidhead's and at Brother Charles Jarvis'. Brother Jarvis brought the books to me and I went to work and transferred all the accounts into the new ledger, there were 224 accounts. I made a list of all the accounts due the store, etc.

On January 22nd I went up to Snowflake with Brother James D. Smithson, we started after dark and arrived there about midnight.

January 29th I was notified that the officers were expected to be in town soon so I went down to Joseph W. Smith's where I worked on the tithing accounts.

January 31st Brother Jesse N. Smith came in this evening. He left the president's party some where in New Mexico and he and Lot Smith came across by the way of Rush Valley on horseback. He reported that all who were in danger of being prosecuted for polygamy were advised by the authorities to go into Mexico as a place had been contracted for, which was for the benefit of those who were in danger. The officers came for me while I was at Joseph W. Smith's but they got no clue where I was. It was stated that they wanted me as a witness in the Tweksburry case but undoubtedly if they had got me for that they would have arrested me for polygamy.

February 1st Brother Jesse N. Smith and a part of his family spent a portion of the day at my place, where we talked over the future move to Mexico. I had been expecting such a move for some little time, and I at once commenced to make preparations for the same. I got Bishop Hunt to purchase me a span of mules for the trip, we wanted mules or mares as there was no duty on them. He got the animals from William J. Flake, Several others in the place were making similar preparations. I arranged to take my wife Julia and son John L. with me. The company was soon made up and started out.

The anti-Mormon party had become more bitter if possible, and the high handed way that the brethren were convicted at Prescott and the heavy sentence imposed upon them showed plainly that there was no regard for law. To be accused was to be convicted. Judge Sumner Howard evidently violated and disregarded the law in the conviction of the brethren at Prescott, and to cover up the act and to turn the minds of the people against the saints, he, during the term of court, commenced lecturing of evenings against the Mormons. He treated mainly on the Mountain Meadow Massacre, but brought in some other points of a similar character. In these lectures he wilfully misrepresented the Mormons and did not stop at the truth but went far beyond that point. Many of his statements were directly opposite to those made at the Lee trial. He spoke in the most bitter and scandalous terms against the saints, trying to excite the public mind against them. These moves coming from the Judge who was at the time sitting on the Mormon Cases had their weight with our people and was the prime cause of forcing so many to leave the territory. Some went to Utah but most of those likely to be arrested went to Mexico.

February 5th, Brother Jesse N. Smith and I started for Mexico at about 5 a.m. We went horse back across the country and following any road expecting to meet our teams and those who were with them at or near Springerville, (Our teams had started out some two days before).

We traveled across through the cedars towards Springerville, and at night we found a dry place not far from where we struck the Apache road and lay down, we had no bedding but made a fire and slept fairly well considering our uncomfortable bed.

February 6th we started early and rode through to Amity (a ward in Round Valley). We did not follow any road and found the traveling very bad. Here we stopped with Joel Johnson, his mother Aunt Susan Johnson was here also.

We spent the next day in the place as we heard that our teams had not come in. We remained the most of the time at Bishop Holden's.

In the evening John T. Eagar and Ernest L. Taylor came up and spent a portion of the evening with us.

The next day was cold and stormy and we spent the most of the time with Bishop Holden and Sister Johnson.

On the 9th we started out for Nutrioso where we arrived about noon and stopped with Heber Jarvis. Here we remained some three days reading papers, etc., and looking about the place. About the first item that we saw in the papers after reaching these settlements, was an account in the Deseret News of the killing of Edward M. Dalton in Parowan by Deputy Marshal William Thompson.

February 12th Brother Lot Smith came in this afternoon, we were looking for our teams to come in, but they did not arrive so we got Brother Jarvis to go back to meet them. They came in the next day. They had lost their animals, which was the trouble that had detained them a day or two.

The folks had suffered considerably from the cold. It was quite hard on the women folks and little children that were along.

February 14th we started early before breakfast so as to get over the roads while it was frozen, and reached Bush Valley, some 12 miles distant a little before sunset. Several teams had joined us by this time.

Jesse N. Smith broke his wagon tongue in getting through the snow and mud. We however succeeded in getting on that would fit from Brother Burke. I stayed all night with Joseph S. McFate.

February 15th I started early and drove over to Brother Skousen's place about a mile where we got breakfast. We then pushed on through the snow which was found to be about two feet deep.

After my team came up at Brother Jarvis' I drove it and my son John L. drove a team for Samuel W. Jarvis who had two teams. By this time there had gathered altogether about twenty wagons and after a hard days toil we reached Luna Valley in rather a scattered condition. I stopped with Samuel B. Tenney.

We had a meeting in the evening for the purpose of organizing our company. Edward S. Noble was chosen captain, Sextus E. Johnson Chaplain, Levi M. Savage Historian, Ernest L. Taylor and Joseph H. James captains of tens, Lot Smith made all the nominations.

Bishop John Hunt came into camp this evening from Snowflake having left there the day before. He brought a telegram from Moses Thatcher to Jesse N. Smith and Lot Smith. Brother Hunt stated that Judge Howard who was holding court at St. Johns had dismissed his case wherein he was contesting for his seat as supervisor. The Defense had stated in their answer that Hunt was a polygamist. (He was not at the time the suit was started, and for sometime after). The Judge said that he would not entertain any case where a polygamist was a party, especially the plaintiff, for they were all a set of outlaws. This action of the Judge was rather extraordinary for he did not hear any evidence to show that he was a polygamist. All that was necessary in these cases was for the defense to set up in their answer that the person was a polygamist, and on this charge they were called outlaws. This ruling surpassed Jeffreys of England, for he did hear some evidence even though the witnesses were bribed. Bishop Hunt went back the next morning to meet his team that was coming in.

February 10th Jesse N. and Lot Smith and George C. Williams started out early and were expecting to go through to St. David or somewhere in that vicinity to meet Apostle Moses Thatcher. They got Brother Hyrum Clark to take them through on this journey.

Our company started at about 10 a.m. and traveled in a northerly direction for about four miles which brought us to Trout Creek, from here we turned a little more to the east and four miles further brought us to a dry spot among the pines where we camped.

William C. Merrill was chosen captain of the guard, and he detailed four men for guard duty two were to stand at a time. Our chaplain called the camp together and we had our prayers night and morning.

February 17th. Camp was aroused at 5 a.m. But, as some of the animals were missing a part of the company were detained for a short time.

Seven miles of toil through the mud and snow brought us to Mud Springs, and going on 11 miles more we made our camp among the pines, there was a little snow on the ground.

February 18th my wife Julia was sick during the night, the exposure and traveling through the snow and the hardships of such a journey began to tell on some of the women. It was indeed a hard journey, this wallowing through the snow, sometimes two feet deep, in the winter was not a fit trip for women to make but there was no complaining with them.

Camp was aroused as usual at 5 a.m. Three miles travel brought us to a ranch house where we entered a canyon which we followed down about four miles over a very rough road, some of the wagons had to be held up in places to keep them from turning over.

Here we left the canyon and took up the side of the mountain. This was another hard pull and bad road, snow was about knee deep and we had to double teams and the road in places was so sliding that it took six or eight men to a wagon to keep it from tipping over. We were about all day in getting up this hill. Some of the company however got up the next hill so our company was divided at night.

Brother Smith being gone, his son Walter, a boy of some fourteen years, was driving for him. I was looking after him, however, which added another responsibility upon me as well as additional labor. We succeeded in getting only about eight miles and were wet and tired after wading and toiling through the snow all day.

February 19th after some more hard work we all got up the mountain and two miles more travel brought us to the Milligan Hill where it was quite steep and we had to rough lock both hind wheels of our wagons to go down, but we soon reached the bottom and were out of the snow, and a short drive took us to Beca Plaza which was situated on the San Francisco River.

This was a most beautiful place nestling among the mountains and secluded and hid from the outside world. Good land and water and grass and timber were near at hand. A few Mexicans lived here and Milligan who formerly lived at Springerville had come in here to settle.

We passed on down below this favored spot a few miles and camped, having traveled about 17 miles. Brother Sulley Richardson was appointed chorister and from this time on we had a hymn at prayer time both morning and evening.

February 20th we followed down the San Francisco River about 18 miles crossing it nearly fifty times in that distance.

The canyon was quite narrow and along the banks of the stream there was a great variety of timber. Brother Hunt said that he counted 52 varieties of timber during the day. My son John L. and I stood guard during the night.

February 21st we left the river and traveled about six miles over to Pueblo Creek and then followed down this stream to the river again and went on a little past the town of Alma where we camped. As we passed through Alma the men came out of the saloons and stood in a line on each side of the road and made a few remarks such as "There goes the damn Mormons with their wives", staring at us as if we were a wild beast show.

We traveled about 18 miles today and as we were afraid that some of the roughs might attempt to take our animals we put out a double guard.

February 22nd a drive of about 9 miles took us to Pleasanton. Jacob Hamblin was residing here and his wife Percilla, a cousin of mine. George C. Williams had lived here and had a kind of a claim or interest in the place. We

found N. P. Worden who used to live in Parowan here. There were but a few of our people here, and the place soon after went into the hands of the Gentiles, and an apostate by the name of Wheeler sold the land, pocketed the money, and left. George C. Williams' family, son-in-law, etc., six wagons, overtook us here and joined our company which had increased considerable. We managed to get a little grain at this place and a few other items.

It rained all the afternoon and a part of the night. I wrote letters home and to Brother Owens about matters pertaining to the store.

February 23rd Monday, the mountains were white with snow this morning, the roads were muddy and we only drove to Dry Creek, seven miles.

February 24th it rained some and we pulled through the mud for about eight miles, when H. A. Martineau and his brother left the company, turning off towards Clifton, they were going to Safford to assist their families and relatives in moving to Mexico.

February 25th, there were a few wagons that did not get through to camp last evening and we sent three teams back this morning to help them in. We drove on through the mud 7 miles to Duck Creek where we remained the rest of the day.

February 26th we drove to the Gila River where we purchased \$170 worth of corn, it cost us \$1.80 per hundred. We bought it in bulk so as to get it a little cheaper and then divided it out according to what each man put in. I figured up each man's account and found that the man we bought of had made a mistake of \$4. We went on a few miles and camped.

There were but few settlers in this vicinity, but those who were here seemed to be doing well but they were quite isolated on account of schools, etc. The farming land was rather scarce, some rich spots along by the river were very productive, but no great amount of it.

February 27th we traveled about 18 miles, passed the Mancus (a noted rendezvous for some of the Apaches in an early day) and White Hill Wells. A few of the company did not succeed in getting up with the others this evening.

February 28th a drive of seven miles brought us to the Continental Divide, a very gentle slope. At about this point we passed Oak Grove where some little mining had been done. There was no water in this vicinity. We camped on Walnut Creek which contained no water but we found some pools from the late storms.

March 1st Sunday, I was sick during the night having a spell of cramping. We lay over during the day and held meeting at 11 a.m.

Brother Hyrum Clark who took the two Brother Smiths and Brother Williams to the borders of Mexico came into camp last evening on his return and remained with us over Sunday. We improved this opportunity of writing letters home and sent them on by him.

There had been considerable prospecting done in this vicinity. I was told that there were 30,000 claims recorded in this county (Grant County N. M.) in one year, but the mineral proved to be worthless and the mining fever collapsed and nearly all the claims and mines were abandoned. There was but very little mining done in this vicinity when we passed.

March 2nd we traveled about 18 miles in a southern direction, passing the Burro Sineca. We also passed the Old Mormon Battalion road where Col. Cooke and the Battalion went through to California in the fall of 1846. There was one of that number with us, Brother Johnson, who took quite an interest in pointing out the land marks and where the road went. Some of Brother Williams' folks killed a beef and sold it out to the company.

March 3rd a drive of some 13 miles brought us to Separ, a R. R. Station on the Southern Pacific R. R. Here we had to buy the water for our animals giving 5¢ a head to get to water them. They raised the water 500 feet with a pump. We remained here several hours, trading, etc., and then moved on some seven miles and made a dry camp.

The next day a drive of 14 miles took us to Eureka, an old mining camp, but at this time it was nearly deserted. There were numerous holes around where mining and prospecting had been done. We drove on about 11 miles and made a dry camp.

The whole country after crossing the Railroad was generally level and destitute of wood and water but there was some grass.

On March 5th we started on at 1 a.m. making this early start on account of water. We reached Mesquite Springs at about 8 a.m.

We were now on Mexican soil, these springs being about three miles inside the International boundary.

We lay over the rest of the day. I was to have stood guard at night but my eyes were very sore and painful and I hired Jesse N. Smith Jr., who was my partner, to stand my turn for which I gave him 50¢. He was one of the guards. The next day we went nearly to Ascencion.

March 7th just as we were starting out this morning Brothers Smith, Layton and some others came up. Brother Jesse N. Smith turned back with us and we went on to the Casas Grandes River about five miles. Brother Smith reported that Moses Thatcher, A. F. MacDonald and Lot Smith had gone to El Paso to see about completing the purchase of some land, etc. On arriving at the river Brothers Smith and Noble went up to La Ascencion about two miles distant to see about our passing the custom house.

1885
Chapter 64
Attempts at Colonizing in Mexico

March 8th on reaching the Casas Grandes River we made our camp and awaited the tedious formality of passing the custom house. While thus waiting, the guard which I thought an inferior lot, came out to watch us until we passed the Custom House. They were poorly clad and their horses were of a poor kind, small and inferior looking. The whole lot of them looked more like a lot of Indians than whites, and there was probably as much Indian blood in their veins as there was Spanish.

We had meeting at 2 p.m. Brother Jesse N. Smith said that steps were being made to purchase a place. He said that it was the understanding that the Church was to purchase the place and hold the title to it. It was thought advisable for some one individual to purchase all the supplies for the camp, as by so doing they could get better terms by buying in large quantities. Isaac Turley, Edward A. Noble and Joseph H. James were sustained as a committee to buy the supplies for the camp.

We were camped on a rich bottom near the river, the country around for miles is quite level, and the river which sometimes overflows had made a rich and fertile bottom which was covered with a heavy growth of sacaton grass which in many places grew to a height of six to seven feet.

There was no timber in the country but a few trees along the river banks. Further back there was some mesquite growing on the bottoms or prairie.¹ No one was allowed to cut or take away any timber or wood of any kind as all the land belonged to some one and those who took timber from it were trespassers.

March 9th the custom house officers came over to inspect our wagons, etc., they took a list of our teams, wagons, etc. They were very slow and awkward in this labor.

During the day the committee made a few purchases for the camp, paying 3¢ for beans and 2¢ for corn, almost everything was rather high.

March 10th, Tuesday John Hunt, John Kartchner, W. W. and N. R. Roundy and James Palmer came in today.

A few of us went over to the custom house at La Ascencion to settle our revenue tax. For a new wagon the tax was \$22.12 for an old on it was \$16 and for a stove it was \$10. Stallions, mares and mules were free but horses were about \$40 each. We had been posted somewhat on these matters before we left so we brought all mares and mules with a few stallions. They allowed us 8% premium on American coin.

Brother Jesse N. Smith and I went to see the president about getting some land for the season but we failed to find him.

During the day George C. Williams and Dillman moved their camp down the river some five miles.

On March 12th some teams started back to Deming for supplies. They were William C. McClellen, John Kartchner and George Bryan. There were three teams started back home who had come out to help Brother Williams move in, they were Allen, Mortensen and Carpenter.

William B. Maxwell and Jacob Hamblin rented some land of the Mexicans and moved over to the lower end of the town.

In the evening I got out my compass and made an observation as best I could of the North Star which indicated a variation of 12' 30'.

March 13th Jesse N. Smith and I went over to La Ascencion to see the President about getting some land to cultivate. Brother B. H. Wilhelm went with us to interpret. The President told us that all the land was claimed but a commission would soon be out to regulate the claims, however he thought that we might rent from individuals.

On March 14th the custom house officers got up a dinner for some of our party. Brothers Smith, Maxwell, Taylor and I attended. The dinner was very fair but was not on the American style. There was one of the officers, Domingus, who spoke a little English, there was none of the others who understood it and we did not understand Spanish so we had some difficulty in getting along, but otherwise everything passed off very nicely and the officers did all they could to entertain us.

March 15th we had Sunday School at 10 a.m. John Hunt was the leading one in starting this and he afterwards claimed to be the organizer of the first Sunday School in Mexico. Meeting was held at 2 p.m. at which Brothers Jesse N. Smith and Jacob Hamblin were the speakers.

We were getting anxious for the return of the committee that went to see about the purchase, the delay had made some feel discouraged, but some were quite hopeful. This put me in mind of what Jacob Hamblin told me at Pleasanton on February 22nd. He said that he heard the Prophet Joseph Smith say that the saints would go down this river (meaning the San Francisco River) and that the Lord and the Devil were playing a game of checkers. The Lord had one move ahead, that the saints were going into the King row (meaning Mexico and Central America) and when they returned they would sweep the board.

On March 16th, Brother Smith and I went down to visit Brother Williams at his camp. We hunted some for ducks on the trip but got none. The next day Brother Westover came in but he brought no news.

We got a surprise party for Brother Smith and the captains Noble, Taylor and James. The evening was spent very pleasantly with songs, recitations, speeches, etc.

The following day we spent in camp waiting patiently for the return of the committee, the time was dragging heavily on our hands as we had nothing to do but care for our animals.

On the 19th Brothers Joshua T. Willis, Mortensen, Foster, Harris, Gibbons, and Moffitt came in. There were some coming in every few days which was increasing the number in our camp. Brothers McClellan, and Kartchner came in from Deming on the 20th with some supplies, and Brother Smith and I went over to the custom house to assist in getting them through. We found that there was an immense site of Red Tape in getting goods through a Mexican custom house. There were a few of the brethren went up to Caroletus the next day.

On the 22nd Sunday School and Meeting was held, the speakers were Brothers Smith, Willis, Rogers, and Roundy.

On March 23rd Joseph H. James returned from Caroletus, but brought no news in relation to the purchase, a few of our brethren were locating thee for the present time.

Brother Johnson came in from Arizona. Our numbers were increasing all the time and now numbered about 175 souls, there being about 60 men and the rest being women and children. The next day Brothers McClellan and Pleasant S. Williams started back to Arizona.

On the 25th Brother Lot Smith came in. He stated that the committee had not as yet made a purchase and that Apostle Moses Thatcher was intending going into the mountains to explore for a location.

Brother Smith brought some letters for the camp, I got one from home the first since I left Arizona. It gave an account of Sister Lois Hunt (wife of Bishop Hunt) being burned to death.

March 26th we have our prayers in the center of camp night and morning. At these gatherings there was often some business transacted which was of a general nature. At this time a committee consisting of E. A. Noble, John Kartchner and W. W. Roundy was appointed to find a location where we could put in some corn, as it was now evident that a purchase would not be made this year in time to raise a crop.

In consequence of the death of his wife Brother Hunt fixed up at once and started for Arizona this afternoon. Brother Gibbons accompanied him.

On the 27th Brothers Ramsey and Scott came in from Arizona this morning and Brother Larson and some others came in from Caroletus on their way back to Arizona for their families.

The committee who were to look for land where some corn could be planted returned this evening. They had been down the river for some distance but had found nothing that they thought would do, they said that the best land was near our camp. This was another very discouraging feature added to the many that we were encountering almost every day.

March 28th E. A. Noble, Jesse N. and Lot Smith were appointed to select a new camp ground and to look for land for this season. Brother Isaac Turley had been up to Casas Grandes and had rented some land there and he, Taylor and Skousen started for that place. George Bryan came in from Deming with some supplies.

Sunday March 29th Brother Lot Smith was the principal speaker. Those who had been appointed to select a new camp ground reported that they had selected one about a mile and a half north west from the present location.

On the 30th we moved to our new camp ground, the camp was formed in the shape of an L. I located the lines with the compass and measured off a rod for each wagon. A few more of the brethren started up to Casas Grandes.

On the 31st Brother Jesse N. Smith started up to Caroletus for the purpose of meeting Brother Thatcher. I went out to survey a piece of land into garden lots that had been engaged from a Mexican, but on going over it I found there was but about 20 acres and some of that not fit for cultivation. We had expected to get 50 acres so I did not survey it. This was another disappointment added to the long list that was continually growing larger.

As has been stated there was no timber to be had so we made a corral out of willows for our animals. Some of the brethren commenced to rent small pieces of land near our camp so that a little corn might be put in to help out a little for we were earning nothing and nothing coming in.

Brother W. C. Merrill started out for Deming for freight, we all sent letters by him as this was considered the best way as the Mexican mail was weekly, and then it went a long way around.

April 1st, a company of nine wagons came in this morning. Apostle George Teasdale was with them. On account of the marshals being after him for polygamy charge he was going by the name of Heber Clark.

Brother Judd, a member of the company, had a lad die last night, it was buried today on a little mound close to camp.

Thursday the 2nd Fast Meeting was held, Brother Teasdale spoke very encouragingly to the saints.

April 5th we have been renting some small pieces of land near our camp, we were to give one third of the crop, there is no fence or water for it. I got a small piece and put in a few potatoes. I made a wooden harrow to harrow the land down with.

Meeting was held today and the sacrament was administered for the first time in camp. Next day conference was held. I took the minutes. By request the main subject treated upon was the United Order.

April 9th I have put in a little garden on the land that I rented. Brother Sextus Johnson moved down to Brother William's camp and Samuel H. Rogers was appointed chaplain in his place.

Apostle Teasdale started up to Caroletus on the 10th and on the 11th a letter was received in our camp from Brother MacDonald at Casas Grandes stating that the governor of the state had issued an order to the president of the county to remove all the Mormons from the state by the 24th of the month. He wished someone to go up there that they might go to the City of Chihuahua to try and get the order repealed. Lot Smith and E. A. Noble started and on going some 15 miles met Brother Jesse N. Smith and returned with him. Brother Smith reported that Apostle Teasdale and A. F. MacDonald were to start from Caroletus today for the city of Chihuahua to see the Governor and see if they could not get the order repealed. This order for our expulsion was doubtless the work of our enemies in the United

States who were doing all they could against us. They were sending all manner of lies and reports against us to Mexico and to the Mexican consul at Washington. Brother Smith stated that it was Apostle Teasdale's request that we fast tomorrow and pray for his success.

April 12th meeting was held at 10 a.m. and 2 p.m. and the brethren fasted as requested by Brother Teasdale. Brother Smith gave a sketch of his trip to El Paso with Brother Thatcher. He stated that Brother Thatcher had the offer of about 125,000 acres of land in the mountains for \$32,500, and that he had gone to Utah to consult President Taylor about the trade. Arrangements were made for a couple of the brethren to go out to the line and stop all who were coming in so that if we were forced out of the state that they would not have to pay the duty. Brothers James Freestone and Israel Call went out on this mission.

April 13th Brother Jesse N. Smith had been requested to take the number of persons in the camp, the amount of provisions that was on hand, etc. I assisted him in this work, the result of which showed that there were 169 souls, 75 days provisions, \$80 in cash and 44 families, several families that were at this camp had moved above recently.

On April 15th I did a little plowing and was trying to put in a little corn, etc. so as to help out in the provision line, corn and beans were our main articles of diet.

I received letters from home dated on the 6th which was the quickest service that we had up to this time. These letters stated that there was a rumor that there was a reward offered for Brother Smith and myself of \$900. This I did not believe, it might have been mentioned by someone but it never was offered by anyone authorized.

April 17th Brother Lot Smith's wife and Brother Williams' wife gave birth, the former to a son and the latter to a daughter. Brother Jesse N. Smith Jr.' wife Nannie was quite sick, she had several spasms.

The 18th the boys got up a horse race to liven up the camp, as we were waiting in suspense to find out what was to be done and were doing nothing as we did not know but what we would have to leave the state.

On April 19th meeting was held as usual. Brother Merrill came in from Deming with supplies, he got mostly corn meal as there was no duty on that.

April 22nd, a letter came in from Apostle Teasdale at Chihuahua stating that the governor would not rescind his order and that we would have to leave the state. In the evening another letter reached us which stated that the governor had finally submitted the whole matter to the general government at Mexico and that we could go ahead with our planting.

On April 23rd some of us went up and worked on a dam turning the water into a ditch that would lead to some land that we wished to cultivate. We stopped off all the water in this stream which was a very small one, nearly one irrigation stream, but it failed so fast that it never reached our land.

The next day we moved our camp some two and a half miles below and nearer the river.

On the 24th I went out on the prairie where the fire had apparently gone through some years before and dug up some mesquite roots with pick and crow bar for fire wood.

April 26th Brothers Teasdale and Mac Donald came in last evening and today they gave us an account of their visit to the Governor at Chihuahua. Apostle Teasdale thought that we might move into the mountains. Brother MacDonald thought that we ought to split our camp and scatter out as so large a camp created suspicion among the Mexicans.

Brother Jesse N. and Lot Smith were not in favor of either of these plans, so the subject was dropped.

April 29th our mail came in, I got a letter from home stating that all was well there. Brothers Teasdale, MacDonald and some others started on a short trip above.

Brothers Noble and Jesse N. Smith Jr. started for San Jose Station to get letters, telegrams, etc. This move was a plan of Brother Teasdale's in order to get some news that might relieve the strain that we were under, waiting to find out what was to be done.

For the next few days I worked in the garden some little and we all spent more or less time in caring for our animals.

Chapter Notes

¹ There are at least three varieties of mesquite trees in the southwest. It is related to the acacia and locust; and the fruit consisting of ten or twelve beans in a sweet, pulpy pod, is gathered by the Indians, pounded in a mortar, and made into bread. A prolific tree will yield ten bushels of beans in the hull. The Comanche also concoct an intoxicating drink from this bean.

1885
Chapter 65
Still Waiting For a Purchase to Be Made

On May 3rd Brother Teasdale and party that had been on a short trip above mostly exploring the country near by came in last evening, and meeting was held today, where several of the brethren spoke giving it as their belief that we would get lands and remain in the state.

The next day Brother Jacob Hamblin and some others started back home. Brothers E. A. Noble and Jesse N. Smith Jr. returned from San Jose.

A council was held at Brother Farnsworth's camp which was something over a mile above ours. A telegram had come for Brother Teasdale requesting him to go to the City of Mexico to see about the order for our expulsion and try and get it reviewed, but as this telegram had been 16 days on the road it was decided for him to go as others would doubtless be there before him. The subject of making some explorations was talked over but nothing was done in the matter.

Lot Smith and MacDonald had a few hard words over MacDonald saying that our large camps were the cause of our trouble as they aroused the suspicion of the Mexicans.

Next day was our fast day and Apostle Teasdale appointed Jesse N. Smith to preside over the camp.

May 8th I commenced to study Spanish, as we were doing but little, several of us took up this study, but we were so unsettled that we could not get our minds on the study as we would under normal conditions. We however had considerable time and some of the boys got along very well with their studies. There was a man here of mixed blood who went by the name of Apache Bill, he was not here long but what time he remained he helped me considerably in my first start in learning the Spanish Language.

I helped my son John L. plow some, it was a very warm day, the thermometer stood at 90o and I over worked and the consequence was that I was quite sick during the night.

Sunday School and Meeting were held on the 10th as usual.

The delay in getting a place and the unfavorable conditions under which we were placed in trying to colonize in this land had become very discouraging to many. Some had gone above in the Casas Grandas district and had rented a little land. Some had come out that were not forced to on account of having plural families, and some of these as well as some others decided to return home. On May 8th Brother Noble and Jensen started back for Arizona, and on the 11th there were a few more who started back home. However on the 12th there was an addition to our camp, four teams coming in. They were George W. Sevey, Samuel Haycock, Brother Staley and Isaac C. Height, the latter was going under the name of Horton.

On the 13th the mail came in, I received word from home the family were feeling very low spirited, and felt as if things were going against them considerably. They needed aid financially but they did not make this plea but were facing these trials with commendable fortitude. I knew their condition and that made me feel more downcast than ever for I could not help them, and I was not in a position to do anything for myself. I did a little work plowing, etc. but I had but little land and my son John L. did the most of the work on that.

On the 19th George G. Williams returned from San Jose bringing a letter from Brother Teasdale which stated that Brother Thatcher had telegraphed from the City of Mexico that the order for our expulsion had been revoked, and that he and Brother Young were expected to be in El Paso on the 23rd. Brother Samuel Jarvis started back home on the 18th but he expected to return again.

On the 20th an infant child of Jesse N. Smith Jr. and Nannie F. Smith died and was buried the next day.

On the 21st we were notified to go over to the custom house. We all went over on the following day and found that the duties which we had paid some two months before had been doubled on us. The officers stated that the returns

had been sent back from the city of Mexico with these amounts added. This was another discouraging feature that we had to meet, and to us looked very bad, after they had taken our money and passed us and then after two months had elapsed to come back and demand more saying that they did not charge enough the first time. This addition was about \$400, and they gave us 30 days to pay it in, and if not paid in that time they would take and sell property to cancel this additional charge.

On May 24th our meeting and Sunday School was held as usual. Charles Whiting and John Earl started out to hunt or recover some of our animals that we supposed were stolen.

On the following day most of the brethren went over to the custom house to give bonds for the addition of duties that had been booked against us.

On the 27th Whiting and Earl who had been out after the stolen animals returned. They overtook the thieves and recovered 5 head of the stolen animals but the thieves made their escape on the other two animals. We then started to guard our animals day and night.

On the 31st meeting was held as usual. Apostle Teasdale who came in from El Paso the evening before gave us an account of the labors of Apostles Young and Thatcher in the City of Mexico. He said that the government was friendly disposed toward our people, and that a committee was to meet in July to examine lands and set a price on the same for us. This was another delay that had a tendency to add to our already downcast feelings.

Brother Sulley C. Richardson came in from Deming bringing his brother Edmund, who had come out at the request of Apostle Teasdale to act as interpreter as he understood the Spanish language very well.

At about this time we began to get reports of the outbreak of the Apaches in New Mexico and Arizona, and that they were on their way for Mexico and committing depredation as they came being headed towards our location. Some of the brethren were intending to start for Deming for freight but on account of these Indian outbreaks Apostle Teasdale advised them to remain at camp for the present.

The rains started in a little about this time, which made it rather disagreeable for the women folks cooking out of doors.

On June 3rd a colonel in the Mexican army visited our camp. He seemed to be well informed and appeared quite friendly to our people.

On the 5th a council was held to decide about moving our camp as the present location might be too wet when the rains began to be more frequent. G. Teasdale, J. N. Smith and G. C. Williams were appointed as a committee to locate the new camp but after talking the matter over it was laid over for the present.

On the 9th I went out with the committee to locate a new camp ground, a place was selected about a mile west of our camp where water could be had by digging 8 or 10 feet.

Soon after his arriving in camp Edmund Richardson commenced to teach Spanish, he gave two lessons a day and as we had nothing else to do and had already started to study it some the majority of the camp attended.

On the 12th Brother Judd came in from Arizona. He reported that several persons in New Mexico had been killed by Indians. Brother Merrill came in on the 19th bringing the same reports that Brother Judd had brought of the depredations and murder committed by the Indians in New Mexico.

I had got in about 8 acres of corn, a few potatoes, melons, etc., and spent some of my leisure time in tending and hoeing it. I had to guard it quite close for the stock was bothering it considerably as there was no fence. When the stock got into the Mexicans' grain they put them in the stray pen but we were a little slow about this matter as we thought that this move might create a feeling against us and we were on the guard not to trespass on them or give offense in any way.

Some of the brethren were arranging to cut wheat for the Mexicans. They were to get 140 pounds for cutting and binding an acre.

Our mail came in on the 17th. I received letters, one from John Steele and one from John Hunt.

On the 24th Brother Teasdale received word that Apostles Erastus Snow, B. Young and F. M. Lyman would soon visit us to look after a purchase that we had been waiting for so long.

Time was dragging heavily on my hands, it is true I was trying to study Spanish some but had little heart or it under the circumstances. We were camped out on the open prairie exposed to the storms and hot rays of the sun, not even being about to get green timber for a bowery as there was but little of it and that belonged to the Mexicans and we were not allowed to take any of it. Under these circumstances I was feeling quite disappointed in our attempt to colonize. I was doing nothing for my family at home and spending every cent that I brought with me, and we were going half fed and half clothed, and to add to our anxiety the prospect of getting a place was apparently more distant than the day we arrived here. Brother Teasdale was constantly encouraging the people and regretted to see anyone leave the camp to return home, he was full of hope and was untiring in his labors and efforts to get a place and was concocting every scheme imaginable to relieve the situation.

On June 27th I was forty five years old and I found a few gray hairs in my head which reminded me that the cares and years as they hurried past were telling some upon me.

At 1 p.m. Apostle Teasdale called a priesthood meeting. It had been rumored that Brother Miles P. Romney got drunk and had attempted to rape upon a Mexican woman. Brother Romney was called on to answer the charge. He acknowledged to the drinking of whiskey but denied the other charge. Several of the brethren spoke on the case. There was very little evidence produced and none as to the rape, the rumor or complaint came from the Mexicans. Brother Romney asked forgiveness for getting drunk and was forgiven. The scandal was noised about some among the Mexicans for a time but soon died out as there was not so much to it as was first reported.

July 2nd Brother Teasdale spoke at our fast meeting very encouragingly as he always did. Time was still dragging heavily on our hands. I spent a portion of it in hoeing my corn and in tending what little garden stuff I had in. There had been but little rain and our cows were not doing well. Their lungs appeared to be affected. Water was scarce and very poor at that, the grass however appeared to be plentiful. Some of the brethren thought it was the poor water that had caused the trouble, others thought that it was the change of climate, as the native stock did not seem to be affected in any way.

July 4th Brother Teasdale, Jesse N. Smith, Edmund Richardson and Israel Call started this morning for San Jose or El Paso to meet Brother Lyman. They then expected to go on an exploring expedition to try and find a place where we could locate before they returned.

On the 6th some of us dug a well on the new location for our camp. We dug it quite large so as to afford plenty of water for our animals. It was a very hot day and we took turns at the work. I remember that Lot Smith who had a very white and tender skin, when he sat down to rest turned the palms of his hands up to prevent the back of his hands from being sunburnt.

Meeting was held on the 12th, at which Brother Lot Smith presided. The next day there were a few of the brethren moved up to the new camp ground but there was no union in this move as each one went when he got ready.

When Brother W. W. Roundy went back home I got a cow from him and the milk and corn meal was our principal diet with occasionally a mess of beans. From this cow we made a few pounds of butter and sold a part of it to the Mexicans for 35¢ a pound. The stock had commenced to trouble our corn considerably and I spent much time in watching it. This would have been a heavy task but as we had but little to do we did not miss the time so much.

My son John L., George C. Williams and Martin Sanders went up to Caroletus to take up some animals for those who were going out on the exploring expedition.

On the 17th Brother Lot Smith received a letter from Apostle F. M. Lyman requesting him to meet the party at Caroletus prepared to go on with them, and if he did not go to send up their mail. Brother Lot Smith, for some cause or other, refused to have anything to do with it., and sent the letter to me. I borrowed a horse from Brother Hugh Burke and rode about 15 miles bareback in hunting up the mail, going to the different camps.

The next day I moved to the new camp ground. My son John L. returned from Caroletus today, he reported that the exploring party were to start from Caroletus this morning. The party consisted of Apostles Francis M. Lyman, George Teasdale and Brother A. F. McDonald, Jesse N. Smith, George C. Williams, Martin Sanders, Israel Call, Edmund Richardson, Isaac Turley, and Farnsworth. The next day meeting was held at which Lot Smith and Miles P. Romney were the speakers. John L. Fish gave some items in relation to the exploring party.

The weather had been very warm and this affected me. I was troubled considerably with a dizziness which I thought was caused form the heat and being exposed to the sun so much in this hot climate.

On the 22nd we had a rain which cooled the air some and everything that we had got wet. It appeared that our wagon cover was not proof against a hard storm.

The 24th, being pioneer day, we got up a celebration, as we were not in favor of the day that the pioneers entered the Salt Lake Valley should pass unnoticed. Brother Lot Smith was the orator and we had a few songs, etc.

On the 25th Joseph H. James returned from Casas Grandes with some flour, he had bought some wheat and hired it ground. By doing this his flour cost two and a half cents per pound.

On the 25th, Samuel Jarvis came in from Arizona, and on the 30th Brothers Judd, Staley and Sevey came down from up the river on their way back to Arizona for their families.

August 1st, the exploring party came in the next day (Sunday) Apostle Lyman reported that they had found a mountainous country, that they thought would do for us, but the farming land was quite limited. They however thought of trying to purchase it.

Up to this time we had what we called camp prayers, that is all the company coming together in the center of camp morning and evening where we generally had a hymn sung and then the chaplain would call on some one to offer prayer. Brother Lyman thought that in our condition that we had better stop this and have our prayers at our own wagons and tents which was done after this. At about the close of Brother Lyman's remarks Apostle Erastus Snow, John W. Taylor and Frank Snow drove into camp just coming from the City of Mexico. Meeting was held at 2 p.m. at which Brother Snow and some others spoke, they gave an account of their labors in trying to purchase a place. They said that Apostle Young had gone to Sonora. The party drove down to the lower camp where they stayed all night and the next day they returned to Caroletus. On August 4th Brothers Lyman, Teasdale, Jesse N. and Lot Smith, and Sanders started for Caroletus.

There were some teams started back for Arizona. Brother Jesse N. Smith returned on the 7th. He stated that Brother Snow said that he would try and have a place for us in four weeks.

Our Spanish teacher Edmund Richardson had been gone so much that the Spanish class had been sadly neglected, but when he was present he did a most noble part in helping us along in the study, which we kept up most of the time.

On August 12th I received letters from home, some of my family were not well and Adelaide was very poorly as well as Joseph C. They had what we supposed was the typhoid Fever but did not know what it was at the time.

It was stated in some of these letters that the A. C. M. I. was in bad shape. Those in the store had not been united in their work and the management of the business, and the institution was about to go down. Besides the trouble in the managing of the business, there was another thing. When so many of us went to Mexico quite a number drew out some means and some drew out all of their capital stock (This evil was later remedied by incorporating and not allowing the capital to be drawn out for 25 years.) This with the news of the sickness in my family affected me considerably, I had worked hard to help build up and establish the A. C. M. I. and make it a success. It was in good

shape when I left it, but the division with those who were in charge and the drawing out of so much means when the parties went to Mexico was doubtless the cause of its decline.

On the 28th all the owners in the Institution met at our camp and the matter pertaining to the store was talked over. We all agreed not to draw out our interest at the present time.

A ticket was gotten up for the next Board of Directors and sent to John Hunt whom we authorized to vote our shares, we at the camp held the majority of the stock, so it would go as we dictated. I suggested John R. Hulet for Superintendent.

1885
Chapter 66
Mexican and Indian Troubles and Delays in Getting Lands

On August 15th meeting was held. Brother Lot Smith who had been to San Jose to take Brother Lyman, spoke giving some items of his trip and labors for a purchase.

We had lived very close but now the green corn commenced to come and this helped out some to sustain life and give us a little variety. Our corn had grown well and some of it was sixteen feet high.

On the 23rd the president of La Ascencion visited our camp and requested that we move further off as our stock was likely to do damage and if the river came up they could not come over to look after their crops. We told him that we would care for our stock.

On the 25th I went down to Brother Williams' camp where meeting was held, the speakers were Samuel H. Rogers, Jesse N. Smith, George Teasdale, and myself.

We had been paying considerable revenue to the custom house and this money was doubtless a great temptation to those who knew that it was there. The Custom House was broken into today and about \$1,200 was taken and this was doubtless some of the money that we had paid in and it may have been taken by some of the officers or their agents.

Brother Lot Smith, Isaac Turley and some others started for Arizona on the 26th.

September 4th we had four head of animals stolen last night and several of us were out today hunting for them or where they had gone to. I rode some 40 miles bareback but we did not get any trace of the missing animals. The next day three men fixed up for the purpose of trying to find the trail of the thieves and follow it. Levi M. Savage, William C. Merrill and Jesse N. Smith Jr. and two from the other camp. They started off in different directions and circling expected to come together when they struck the trail. On the 7th Williams and Sanders who went out from the other camp came in, they failed to meet and join the boys from our camp. On the 13th as nothing had been heard from the boys from our camp a council was held to see what should be done and if a searching party should be sent out, but it was finally decided not to send out one at present.

I dug what few potatoes that I had, there was only about two bushels of them. Potatoes do not do very well here and we did not have any water for ours and they did not yield very well.

On the 16th I received a letter from home stating that my wife Adelaide and son Joseph C. were very sick, the former dangerously so, this was sad news for me, for I was not in a position to help them any.

We received a letter from the boys that went after the stolen stock, they were in El Paso, they had trailed up the stock and had found where they had gone to, they had been traded off.

Apostle Teasdale received a letter from Apostle Erastus Snow at the City of Mexico which stated that he had failed to make a purchase of land and that he would start home immediately. This was another disappointment to discourage and vex our already worn out nerves. A council was held nearly all day. Apostle Teasdale wished to go to the City of Mexico to try and make a purchase, he was over anxious to do something but the brethren thought that it was useless at this time as Brother Snow had just tried and failed.

Other sad news reached us, that of sending David K. Udall to prison at Detroit for three years (this had ben mentioned) and still other news of foul deeds done by the ring in Apache County was the putting of Brother Norton in jail for cutting hay on land that he had fenced and occupied for three years. By some means another party had managed to file on it and laid claim to the land.

Meeting was held on the 20th and we again commenced our camp prayers morning and evening. We were all feeling more or less dejected and I in particular over the affairs of my family who were sick.

On September 24th Brothers Taylor and Thompson started back to Arizona. I arranged for my son John L. to go with them. The folks at home were sick and in a helpless condition and no one but my wife Eliza to look after them and they needed his help. He had done much for me and had done considerable for the camp. He had gone on numerous short trips to carry messages and take animals to different parties. He had stood watch two nights out of three for the past month, as well as many other public duties.

I spent the 25th in fixing a bin to put my corn in. I had to make it out of willows as that was all the timber that I could get.

The boys that went after the stolen stock came in this evening, they had followed them to El Paso where the thieves had driven them and traded them off. They were only able to recover two of them.

September 29th, Joseph H. James had put up a kind of home made molasses mill and we made a little molasses. I cut my cane and hauled it to the mill and stood guard at night. Our camp has been growing less for sometime and guard duty comes rather hard on those who were here.

October 2nd I commenced to gather my corn. We picked off the ears and shucked it and put it in our willow bins. These bins were made in the center of camp and so high that stock could not reach into them.

On the 4th several of us went down to Brother Williams' camp where meeting was held. Apostle George Teasdale prophesied that we would remain in this state.

Brother Jesse N. Smith and I worked together in getting up our corn by picking off the ears and shucking them. We were only able to get one load a day. The stocks were left standing for the stock to trim up, and in the spring they were cut down and piled up and burned.

Brother Teasdale came in on the 8th and on the morning of the 9th he called a council of the brethren, where he read a letter that he had received from Brother McDonald, which stated that the U. S. Marshal and detectives had come into Mexico to spy out who were here that they wanted, and as soon as the extradition treaty should pass they would have them all arrested who were from Utah, Idaho and Arizona. This was another scare. We generally had one about once a week and when the Americans failed to get up one the Mexicans came in with something, if nothing else than to steal our stock. Thus we remained in this uncertain condition between two fires, the whites outside harassing us and trying to get the Mexican Government to expel us and the Mexicans stealing our stock and robbing us in every conceivable way.

We had to pay for all the wood we used, at first we paid \$1 a load but we finally got it reduced to 25¢ but we had to haul it seven miles.

On the 11th we had a heavy frost that killed everything. The summer had been very hot and dry and a camp life on an open plain under the burning rays of a Mexican sun was anything but pleasant and agreeable aside from our other vexations and annoyances.

The excitement about the Indians still continued. We found where a large number had passed within two miles of our camp. Three companies of U. S. troops were in pursuit of them but they only went a short distance above our camp when they turned back. They have been fearful of trespassing upon Mexican soil or they might have been afraid that they might overtake the red skins.

On October 14th Brother Lot Smith came in from Arizona, he reported that many persons were being killed by Indians in New Mexico. In coming through he had a good saddle horse and when he came to a place where he might be ambushed he tied the lines of his mule team and let them go along the road and he jumped on his horse and circled around from the road meeting his team later on.

A man was killed about thirty miles from here and brought in here to be tried.

Brother Teasdale came in from Casas Grandes and he recommended that we put out a camp guard as well as a guard around our animals, this latter we were always keeping up. Joseph H. James was elected to look after the guard business.

On October 17th Dan W. Jones came in from the mines yesterday and stayed with us today telling many of his Indian stories. I lent him my surveying instruments, he wished to do some work with them at the mine and I am sorry to say that he returned them in rather poor shape covered with dust and some of the burrs were off.

Most of the brethren went down to the lower camp where meeting was held the next day.

October 21st I received a letter from my son John L., he had arrived home safely which I was very pleased to learn. I had worried about him very much for shortly after he left fresh reports of Indian outrages reached us which made me more uneasy, and to add to these rumors I soon saw in a paper about the Indians making a raid through the country and killing a man at a certain place on the line of travel. This raised my fears for his safety more than ever for I made an estimate of the days and speed that I thought that Taylor and Thompson would travel and calculated that they would camp at this very spot on the night that the murder was committed. I learned from my son later that they had anticipated getting to this place to camp on that night but some trivial delay had prevented them and they camped some four miles before getting to this place. The next morning when they came along they found where the man was killed and his goods were scattered all over the ground. (He was apparently a merchant or peddler or else freighting for one). Candy and can goods were scattered around. As they were in need of something to eat John said that he took a can of the can goods, which was all he touched, and then they went on feeling very thankful that they had missed the raiding party.

October 24th I finished hauling my corn. I had 21 loads and Brother Smith 19. The loads would average about 15 bushels each.

On October 29th Brother Teasdale returned from Caroletus where he had been to see General Campo about making a purchase. The general claimed to have considerable land in this vicinity that he was anxious to sell to our people, but later on we found that the title was not very good and the land was mostly in the mountains and very little of it fit for cultivation and scarcely any water on it. Brother Teasdale was anxious to make the purchase and at once sent Brother Dilman to Deming with letters and telegrams to Brother Thatcher requesting him to come down and make the purchase. Brother Teasdale had been very anxious about making a purchase and getting a place where we could go to, he has been untiring in his efforts and has spent his entire time in this work. He has kept some one most of the time going and coming to Deming and San Jose with letters and telegrams.

November 2nd I went over to La Ascencion with Apostle Teasdale and Brother Jesse N. Smith. We went over to see General Campo who had come down from above. We met the General who offered to sell the Church 10,000 acres of land for \$25,000 but on looking into the matter closely we found that he had no land that had water on it so the land was of little value to us. He had no desirable places to sell, all of these having been taken up years ago.

Meeting was held on the 8th as usual.

The weather was now getting rather cold and we made preparations for the winter. I commenced to make a kind of dugout or half cellar, digging down a couple of feet or more and making a mud wall above of about the same height and then covering the top like the roof of a house with a wagon cover. This made quite a warm and comfortable place of the kind when finished. I moved into it on the 11th.

Our camp at this time numbered about 16 families. Of this number 7 were sent to prison, 5 went to Utah and other places, and 48 went to Mexico. Of the latter number 16 returned to Arizona, Utah and other places. This left 33 in Mexico who were scattered about at different places. In this number there were from our stake the President of the stake and one of his counselors, 7 bishops and several ex-bishops as well as a number of leading and prominent men of the community. This large number of prominent and influential men leaving the stake that only numbered about 500 families was a heavy blow to the new settlements in Northern Arizona and stagnated business considerably. All improvements were checked and this was the main cause of our mercantile house coming so near to the verge of ruin. This expulsion, as we may call it, has few equals in history. It had broken up many homes, and had reduced many to penury and want who before were in tolerably good circumstances and had a bright future before them and

a prosperous path ahead that was leading to wealth, ease and comfort. The settling of Mexico was not made without many sacrifices, as well as hardships and dangers.

1885
Chapter 67
I Do Some Surveying

On November 15 meeting was held, Joseph K. Rogers was down from above to see what was being done about a purchase. General Campo was waiting to make a sale, but he had little to sell that we wanted, and I believed that he did not have any title to land that was worth anything, but some of our brethren were anxious to buy no difference whether the place was worth anything or not.

November 20th, I have been helping Brother Jesse N. Smith to fix up a place to live in. We put up a few old adobes that we hauled some four miles, and then covered the room with grass. Brother John Eaton and I dug a grave for J. D. Brady who had accidentally shot himself at the mining camp of Sebanal, he was a son-in-law of Daniel W. James.

Apostle Teasdale came in from Deming, he had been out to meet Apostle Thatcher, but the latter did not come as was expected to make the purchase.

November 21st Apostle Teasdale started for Caroletus to see General Campo, but on meeting the General he turned back.

The next day a priesthood meeting was held to see what was to be done about buying lands. Apostle Teasdale was very anxious to buy and thought that we should make a move in that direction. A committee of seven was appointed to see General Campo about the purchasing of some land. This committee consisted of George Teasdale, Jesse N. Smith, Lot Smith, George C. Williams, Joseph K. Rogers, George W. Sevey and Isaac Turley. The committee was to see what land the General had to sell. Brothers Jesse N. and Lot Smith were not anxious to purchase, they said that the business was in the hands of Apostle Thatcher, and they thought that we did not have anything to do with the purchasing. The next day Brother Teasdale went above with General Campo to look at his lands.

November 25th I received a letter from my wife Adelaide, she had been very low for a long time and this was the first letter that she had written for three months. My son Joseph C. had been very low also, they however were now gaining slowly. I have often thought that this severe spell injured both of them as they were never strong and healthy after this.

Brother Jesse N. Smith received a letter from Apostle Erastus Snow requesting Brother Smith to meet him at Smithville (now Pima) and go on to Snowflake to look after that stake.

Brother Smith at once commenced to make preparations to leave for home and started out on the 28th, Sulley Richardson and Jesse N. Smith Jr. accompanied him. They were going as far as Smithville with him on account of the Indian troubles. They were then to return. Apostle Teasdale who had been above came in but started back the next day. He did not like it very much about Brother Smith leaving Mexico and thought that he ought to have remained, but I suppose that Brother Smith thought that the call from Apostle Snow had the preference.

November 29th I started up to Casas Grandes to do some surveying for General Campo, Brother Bloomfield accompanied me, we reached Caroletus about 8 p.m. distance about 35 miles.

December 1st I went on up some 20 miles to the camp of some of our brethren, this was about five miles below Casas Grandes. I met Apostle Teasdale who stated that he wished me to do some work for General Campo, he said that it might gain us some influence with the General.

December 2nd I went on up to Casas Grandes, met General Campo and found out what work he wanted me to do, but the most of the work would have to be postponed on account of the Indian troubles. The next day I attended fast meeting with the brethren. I returned to Casas Grands on the 4th. Brothers Miles Romney, Haycock, Bloomfield and son went along to assist me in the work.

On arriving there General Campo informed us that the soldiers had just taken five Indians as prisoners and that it would not be safe for us to go without an escort of soldiers which he stated he would soon get, so we returned to camp. We went back soon after but the order for the troops had not arrived, so we again went back to camp.

While in Casas Grandes I visited the old ruins of that place which were at the upper end of the town. They gave evidence that many large buildings had been erected here. There were fragments of walls standing to the height of some 14 feet and as the debris was around them so deep they may have been several feet under the ground. They appeared to have been built of a kind of concrete. Evidence of a canal which conveyed the water supply is also to be seen, and some distance from the cluster of buildings is a kind of watch tower.

While in town I visited the five captive Indians, they were all in irons, one being hand cuffed to the one next to him. They were playing cards and their faces were like marble giving no expression of what was passing in their minds. I asked the captain who had charge what they were going to do with them. He said pointing to a cedar ridge some ten miles distant, "Do you see that ridge of cedars?" I said I did, he then said "We are going to take them to Galena and when we get to that cedar ridge they will try to get away and we will kill them." I thought that this was another proof of the cruelty and treachery that I had so often heard of. They had captured these Indians through treachery, a squaw came in and wanted to trade. They said yet and to tell others to come in and the next day some three came in and were told for others to come in and the next day five came in, mostly Indians, and the Mexicans thinking that this was about as many as they could get seized them and I suppose killed them as the captain said they would.

December 6th I attended Sunday School and Meeting at the camp. I received word from General Campo that he wished to start in the morning so I went up to town in the evening and stopped with Brother George Lake who was living in town and was practicing as a doctor among the Mexicans with very good success although he was not a doctor.

December 7th we started at 9 a.m. The General did not go but the Gefe Politico went along with us, also several others. We were escorted by a company of 20 Mexican soldiers, Brother Lake went along as interpreter for me. We went up the river some seven or eight miles where we stopped and got dinner after which I ran a couple of lines in a V shape one of them on the line of the San Diego Claim.

We remained here all night, it was a terribly cold and windy night and the poor Mexican soldiers curled up in the sand under the edges of the brush to get protection from the wind. They were only half clad, they had no shoes, nothing but a piece of rawhide fastened on the soles of their feet with strings, a kind of sandal. They were half starved and were treated very much like brutes. Some of them had been taken from prisons and put in the army and these had to be watched very close. I noticed one who was sent to the river for a bucket of water, two of the soldiers accompanied him with their guns to guard him while he carried the water.

I slept with Miles P. Romney who went along with us.

December 8th we started early going some two miles to a monument where we stopped. I set my compass and ascertained the angles of some lines, one on the San Diego claim. We then went on some four miles where we took dinner. Here we found where some Indians had camped but a few days previous. There had been five camp fires, and we supposed that it was Geronimo or a part of his band, as it was known that these hostiles were in this vicinity but a few days ago. I set my compass here and took the angle of several points that were designated as corners or land marks to different claims. The Gefe then told me that was all that was required at present. I thought that was the end of his interest in the survey, but not all the General Campo wished done. The Gefe may have been afraid to proceed further on account of hostile Indians, so we returned. On reaching Casas Grandes I saw the General. He was a little disappointed that I had not run the southern line of his claim but did not blame me as the Gefe Politico was responsible for not going on further.

Their system of surveying was almost a farce, it being that their lines ran from one point to another without any regards as to the points of the compass.

I made a rough plat of the work I did and had some difficulty in figuring it all out as all their measurements were by meters and I had to make it out in this way reducing my rods, feet, etc., to this system.

I went down to camp in the evening, the people were moving up to Piedres Verdes so as to prepare for the winter, as the purchase of this place was almost closed.

There were three horses stolen from the brethren last night, we suppose that it was the work of the Mexicans.

The next day I started home going as far as Caroletus where I stopped with Brother Mons Larson. The next day I reached camp.

December 13th meeting was held as usual, Samuel H. Rogers presided. I spoke a short time giving a sketch of my labors while above.

We received word from the custom house officials to bring our wagons over to have them inspected, stating that there had been some irregularities in the work of some of the officials that they wished to trace up. The next day I took my wagon over but found that they were coming over to our camp to inspect the wagons.

December 14th Jesse N. Smith Jr. came in from the Gila where he had been to accompany his father. He stated that Indian depredations were still going on in Arizona. He said that Apostle Erastus Snow was not much in favor of buying lands in Chihuahua.

On the 17th and 18th I worked at surveying a piece of land a little north of camp. I ran two lines of about five miles each and two lines of about three miles each and on the 19th I platted the land.

Meeting was held on the 20th at which Samuel Rogers presided.

December 23rd Brothers Cardon and Larson started back for their families. The next day General Campo came over to see me, he was quite impatient about the purchase, he had been around in this vicinity for about two months and nothing had been done. One great reason for this delay, he did not have any land that was desirable and it was very much doubted that he would give a clear title to it.

On the 26th I went over to La Ascencion to try and help Brother W. C. Merrill out of a bad scrape. The day before he had started for Sebanal with a load of freight for a Mr. Stevens, the load consisted of corn, flour, etc. He was brought back to the customs house by the guards and a part of his load was declared contraband. They confiscated his team, wagon, and freight and put him in jail for nearly a year. He was hauling the freight for Mr. Stevens and was not to blame at all in the matter, but he was jailed while Stevens, who was in town, was not molested. This was one of the curious ways that the Mexicans dealt out justice.

December 27th, Sunday, my wife Julia gave birth to a daughter at ten minutes to nine a.m. this morning. And during the night we had our first rain to amount to anything. The country was very dry and fires had been raging on the bottoms for some time.

Apostle Teasdale came in from Deming this evening. He had been to see Apostle Snow about the purchase of lands, he did not succeed in getting Brother Snow to come in but got permission to go ahead and get General Campo's proposals and forward them to President Taylor, Apostle Teasdale seemed very anxious in this matter and was doing everything in his power to make a purchase of land.

December 29th General Campo came over to our camp to see about the purchase which was still dragging along. Brother Teasdale went back to town with him. The next day Brother Joseph H. James came in from Deming and stated that Apostle Snow said if land and water could be had to make the purchase.

January 2nd 1886, I went down to the lower camp to see Brother Teasdale about my going back and bringing in my family, thinking that a purchase would now soon be made. He would not give me any council in the matter. He said that no one had permission to bring their plural families into Mexico. He asked me to go above with him, which I agreed to do.

January 3rd, meeting was held at which Apostle Teasdale gave an account of his labors in trying to purchase lands. He referred to Brother Jesse N. Smith's statement where he said that he did not wish to buy lands here on his own account. Brother Teasdale said that he did not want anyone here who did not want to stay.

January 4th we had our baby blessed this morning by Samuel H. Rogers, we gave her the name of Eliza.

I started above at 8 a.m. taking Apostle Teasdale and Sulley Richardson. It was a cold and disagreeable day and we suffered some from the cold. On arriving at Caroletus meeting was held and Apostle Teasdale gave an account of his labors in trying to make a purchase of land. The next day we drove to the deserted camp of the brethren where we ate our lunch and then drove on to Casas Grandes. Here we had an interview with General Campo, he felt considerably vexed and out of humor at the delay in making a purchase. He may have had some grounds for his vexed feelings. We stopped with Brother George Lake. Apostle Teasdale felt quite down cast over the way things had gone, and the gloomy appearance that they still had. January 6th General Campo sent Apostle Teasdale a note stating that as he (Teasdale) did not have authority to purchase lands that he (Campo wished to deal with the people. We went on up to Piedras Verdes about ten miles to where our brethren were camped. General Campo went along with us to see about someone going to the City of Mexico with him to make a purchase. A meeting was held in the evening at which it was decided that Brother A. F. MacDonald should go to the City of Mexico with General Campo. Apostle Teasdale told General Campo that we would sign the articles of colonization on the first of March next. There were about 30 families here at this time. There was but very little farming land upon this intended purchase.

On the following day fast meeting was held. January 8th I helped to trace out some lines of the Old San Diego Claim. January 9th Brother McDonald and I commenced to survey a town site, we only ran three lines. The town was to be laid out with 48 blocks, 4 lots in a block, the blocks 28 rods square with streets six rods wide, except the two main ones which were to be 8 rods wide. There was a priesthood meeting held in the evening.

January 10th meeting was held at 2 p.m. and a priesthood meeting in the evening. These meetings generally were for all the male population of the camps. I spoke a short time at the meeting.

January 11th, Monday, Apostle Teasdale and Brother MacDonald went below and I remained to do the surveying of the town site. I went above about two miles and leveled a water ditch, and the next day I finished it and commenced the survey of the town site. January 13th I worked at surveying the town site, Brothers Miles P. Romney, George C. Williams, and John Bloomfield assisted me, they carrying the chain and driving stakes. The next day I finished the survey. January 15th I surveyed off into 5 acre lots about 180 acres of land. A snow storm hindered me some in this work. This survey was made in contemplation of the purchase, and was all on the San Diego Claim. Brother MacDonald thought that he could get it in the purchase of the place which was adjoining. He however failed in this and this place was abandoned and the saints moved some distance above to a place later called Juarez.

January 16th, I started home going with John Bloomfield. We drove to Caroletus and the next day we reached our camp. I had been greatly assisted in my labors by Brothers Romney, Nelson, Sevey, Turley and others.

On January 20th I went up above camp some five miles with some of the brethren to look out a town site. I however was making some preparations to return to Arizona. Things were in such an unsettled condition, and we had been here so long on expenses that any were becoming discouraged and several had moved off in different directions. I was anxious to do something for my family that I knew greatly needed my assistance. Sunday January 24th, Apostle Teasdale who had been to El Paso gave an account of his labors in trying to make a purchase of a place for the saints. January 27th I went with Brother Teasdale up above to look at some lands and for a town site. On account of thieves, etc. it took about half of our time to care for our animals.

Some of the brethren have rented lands giving one third of the crop. Fires are raging most of the time on the prairies during the dry season. There was so much grass that these occur when it begins to be dry weather.

January 31st a child of W. D. Johnson's died yesterday and was buried today. As a general thing our camp had been healthy this being about the second death that we had at this place since our arrival nearly a year before.

1886
Chapter 68
My Return Home and Labors There

February 4th I had been preparing for several days to return to Arizona as my family greatly needed my assistance. Apostle Teasdale who had been above read a letter today in our meeting that he had received from Brother MacDonald who was in the City of Mexico, it did not speak very favorable of making a purchase. General Campo did not know that he could get the land that he had promised. This was another delay and disappointment to the brethren in securing a place.

In the afternoon I started on my return to Arizona going out about 8 miles. Martin Sanders was to travel with me as far as the Gila. There were two of Brother William R. Maxwell's sons along who were going to Pleasanton.

February 5, my wife Julia and the baby were both sick during the night, we however got an early start and drove to the Mesquite Springs 35 miles, and the next day we drove about 40 miles which took us some 5 miles past Eureka. A man by the name of McGee came down and spent the evening with us, he was investigating Mormonism or claimed to be interested in that line. I had quite a talk with him.

February 7th our baby was very sick during the night and I administered to it several times and it appeared to be some what better. We were very anxious over it as it was so bad to be traveling over these deserts at this time of year with a sick child, we reached Separ 16 miles. Here we bought water for our animals for 5¢ each. At this point the Maxwell boys left us, they going on the road that we had come in on while Brother Sanders and I turned down following the railroad to Lordsburg 20 miles. The baby seemed worse and we had a most anxious day of it. At Lordsburg the narrow gauge road comes in from Clifton. They bring all their water here from the Gila River 42 miles distant.

February 8th a drive of 20 miles brought us to Steins Pass where we bought water for two cents a gallon. As we came through the pass we crossed a trail that we supposed was made by Indians the day before from the looks. We followed the railroad some 15 miles to San Simon, here we left the track and turned more to the north going a couple of miles. Here we found a little water and camped having driven about 27 miles.

February 9th our baby seemed to be improving some, but we were still greatly worried over her.

We drove to Bailey's Wells where we bought water for our animals, then came on about ten miles and camped.

February 10th a ten mile drive brought us to Solomonville. We continued our journey on to Smithville (now Pima) where I stopped with Sister Larson. Here Brother Sanders left, he going on to the Tonto Basin, and I remained here to look for company that was going over the mountain to Apache County. The Gila Valley is well dotted with old mounds where once were the villages of a past race, and shows that it was once densely populated. The valley now bids fair to soon be a prosperous district. It will soon be one continuous settlement from Solomonville to Smithville (Pima). The country is new and there seems to be a great many cases of chills and fever, and several have died with this prevalent disease. However, later on this complaint was not so bad.

February 14th I looked around for company in crossing the mountain as I did not wish to attempt the journey alone.

I attended the meeting and spoke a short time.

I met James H. Martineau an old neighbor and friend of mine in Parowan.

In the afternoon I drove over the river to Thomas West's place about three miles where I stopped with him all night. West came out with the company under Nelson P. Beebe and when he resided in Snowflake was quite religious, but he had become careless as to his duties, and had given up Mormonism. He told me that he knew that Mormonism was true but he was not good enough to live it.

February 16th I went up to Thatcher and saw Caleb Haight, he wished to go over the mountain and we made arrangements to travel together and to start on Thursday, that being as soon as he could get off. Caleb was a son of

Isaac C. Height of Mountain Meadow fame. Isaac who was going under an assumed name, had been down in Mexico where I was and was now at Thatcher where he later died. The following day I drove over to Smithville and we stopped with Ed. Carter, a relative of my wife Julia.

February 18th Caleb Haight and I started out at 10:30 a.m. and went about four miles past Fort Thomas where we camped.

February 19th, we drove down the river about eleven miles, then we left the river and turned north going up a steep and rocky road for some ten miles, then we camped. There were many specimens of the giant cactus along these ridges.

On the 20th a drive of eight miles took us to Ash Creek. This flat had been noted for a fight of the soldiers with Apaches. We toiled on for the next ten miles to the divide over the worst road that I ever traveled over, the last part of the road up Black Canyon was almost impassible for wagons.

February 21st a drive of 15 miles brought us to Black River where we discovered some eight Indians but did not get very close to them. We crossed Black River without much difficulty as the stream had not commenced to raise. We came on to Turkey Creek 8 miles where we camped. This was the place where Geronimo was when he broke away from the reservation.

February 22nd, a drive of 14 miles brought us to Fort Apache. On this stretch of the road we came down Seven Mile Hill where Major Forscythe's wife and daughter were killed in an accident by the carriage tongue breaking and the vehicle going down the hill and besides killing the two it injured two others, the driver and another daughter of the Major's. Fort Apache seemed to be a neat little post and was built at an early date as a protection against the Apaches or to hold them in subjection. We drove on up White River some 14 miles and camped in the forest. The post at that time contained some three companies of soldiers.

February 23rd it rained and snowed the most of the night and the roads were in dreadful condition and we made but slow progress having to double teams in many places although we had but very little loading. During the day we met John A. West going to Fort Apache. The roads were so bad, just breaking up, that he was compelled to leave his wagon on his return. We managed to wallow through snow and mud for about twelve miles. It was indeed a hard day's drive and we were wet and tired when night came.

February 24th this was another hard day's drive, for we traveled through snow and mud getting mired several times and had to double teams, but finally got to the Ellsworth place where we got a bale of hay for our animals.

The next day we reached Snowflake. Miss Ellen Larson who later married Silas D. Smith came with me from the Gila. On arriving at Snowflake I found my family tolerably well, but they had considerable sickness.

I had been absent a little over a year and with the sickness of the family and nothing coming in the results were that I found that I was considerably in debt and the family were destitute and there was nothing in the house in the shape of provisions to speak of. While I was gone my wife Eliza had done her best to keep things going. She had sold a cow to pay the taxes, and one thing that I thought was unjust she had to pay my Poll Tax and I had not been in the Territory for a year. Before I left Mexico I traded my corn there for \$24 and got wheat for it at Snowflake so this helped me for a short time.

Here Brother Haight left me going on to Woodruff the next day on his way to Utah. He had his father's wife along with him. He had been a fine traveling companion, was a good singer and entertained us on many occasions with his songs and music from his guitar.

On Saturday I went up to Taylor and attended Priesthood meeting. On February 28th I attended the meeting at Snowflake and spoke giving a short sketch of the condition of things in Mexico. Notwithstanding so many had left the place and gone to Mexico there had been some improvement in Snowflake during the past year. Bishop Hunt and Albert Minnerly had each erected a new building, and there had been something done on the Stake House and the water had been got out on a part of the town site but there had not been any work done on the long ditch. The

brethren seemed to think that the cloud had past and that there was no danger of prosecutions for polygamy at least for the present.

It might be said that this trip to Mexico broke me up financially and I never got back to the prosperous state and condition that I was entering upon when I went away.

The store that I had worked so hard to build up was now doing very well. Brother John R. Hulet was now manager of the store. When I was in Mexico as has been stated we sent word to have him elected. I suggested him for the position and he was elected and it was a good thing for the store, for it was going down as Owens and Jarvis did not agree and then the drawing out of so much capital when the brethren went to Mexico had nearly swamped the institution. Brothers Smith and Hulet wished me to go to work in the store, as I had nothing else in sight I concluded to go to work there again. So on March 2nd I went down to Woodruff to look over the situation and to see how things were. I had a visit with Brother L. H. Hatch and several other old friends, and returned to Snowflake on the following day. The weather was quite stormy and there was considerable snow in the mountains, being about 18 inches in the forest.

On Thursday March 4th, fast meeting was held. President Smith spoke on the prosecution that had been going on against the saints.

On the 5th I went down to Woodruff and commenced my labors in the store. My wages were fixed at \$60 per month, my work was mostly in the retail department. On the 7th I attended meeting at Woodruff and spoke a short time.

March 12th, before I went to Mexico we had started to erect a new store building of brick, I set the corner stakes of the building and they were just digging the cellar when I left. This building had been erected, one of the finest of its size in the territory and they had but recently moved into it, and as yet not all the goods were moved into it. I spent some time in moving the goods in and putting them up. I went up to Snowflake today to attend the quarterly conference which commenced on the 13th. I acted as stake clerk.

On the 14th Brick Larsen was put in as a member of the High Council in place of Andrew S. Gibbons who had recently died. Presiding Bishop William R. Preston and Brother Thurber were present and gave some valuable instructions, they were making a tour through the Mormon settlements of Arizona. The next day I returned to Woodruff with Brother John Reidhead where I again took up my labors in the store.

On March 18th Bishop Preston and Brothers Burton and Thurber arrived in Woodruff from St. Joseph and held meeting in the evening and the next day they went on to Snowflake. Bishop Preston and party returned from Snowflake on the 21st and the following day went on to Holbrook where they took the train.

March 23rd, my wife Adelaide came down to stay for a while, my sons Joseph C. and John L. also came along, the former came down to work in the store.

Brother Brookbank was keeping the books and I had less to do in this line than when I went away, but we were kept fairly busy. Trade however was not very brisk as money was scarce and the spring was windy and cold, being late coming on.

April 11th I attended meeting as usual on Sundays and at the meeting on the 18th, by request I read the epistle of the first Presidency that had just come out in the Deseret News. April 22nd I went up to Snowflake and the next day I helped my son John L. who was doing the farming.

On the 24th I worked in the forenoon at surveying the graveyard. I did not finish it but went up to Showlow in the afternoon where the next day I attended the Sunday School and Meeting as a home missionary. I returned to Woodruff on the 26th and took up my labors in the store as usual.

The place was not a very agreeable one as the bookkeeper, Thomas W. Brookbank, was considerable of a crank, hardly ever spoke to me and made things as disagreeable for me as possible. He sometimes wrote on the wood work where I would see it some slurring or disagreeable things all of which made my place in the store very disagreeable

and annoying, but still I said but little and tended to my own business as I knew he was a kind of crank, very good at times, and then very disagreeable. But still this treatment was of such a nature that I never could feel quite the same towards him, although we worked together later on for sometime.

1886
Chapter 69
Differences between the President and Bishop and Other Items

On Sunday, May 2nd, I attended meeting and then spent the rest of the day on the Stake records. They had not been kept up quite to my idea while I was in Mexico so I did some extra work on them. I generally spend my evenings and some of the Sunday afternoons in work on the Stake records and such work. But quite often we are required to stay in the store a part of the Sundays, especially when there are teams waiting to go out. We generally work to help them off as it is quite hard on them to lie over on account of the expenses.

On May 9th, Brothers Shumway and Mark E. Kartchner visited me as home missionaries. My wife, Adelaide, went home with them the next day.

May 11th, Apostle Erastus Snow came in last evening and remained here today to get his carriage repaired which he had broken. He held meeting in the evening, and the following day he went on to Snowflake.

On the 13th my wife, Adelaide, came down and on the 14th Brother John R. Hulet came down and told me that there would be a meeting of the High Council on the 15th and that I was requested to go up and attend, which I did.

May 15th the High Council met at Snowflake at 1 p.m. Apostle Erastus Snow was present and stated that the Council was called together to hear a difference that existed between President Smith and Bishop John Hunt.

This difference commenced soon after Bishop Hunt returned from Mexico. The Bishop thought that the President should not be away from his stake and he commenced to feel around and tried to arrange it to have John Bushman put in as President. He also felt aggravated because President Smith had presided at the meetings and these things led to a rupture between the President and Bishop. Apostle Snow said that we did not expect to hear the case as a trial, but in a friendly spirit as brethren and try and explain things and bring about a better feeling between the brethren. Bishop Hunt was called on to make his statement. At first he refused stating that he was standing on the defense, but finally stated his complaints against President Smith, which were many and some of them ran back for several years. His main charges against President Smith was that he was tyrannical and oppressive and that he had driven good citizens from the place and that he had no right to preside at our Sunday meetings, etc. The meeting continued until about midnight, the Council taking an intermission of an hour during the time. Bishop Hunt seemed a little vindictive and the matter was dropped without a full settlement of the case. This difference between the President and Bishop which had existed for sometime was getting worse and was dividing the people more or less and was causing ill feelings which lingered with some for many years. In this difficulty William J. Flake sustained the Bishop and the ill feeling seemed to exist with the families long after the older members had passed away. But while they apparently were friendly, the Flake and Hunt families, or some of them, often manifested a spirit of jealousy toward the Smiths and their relatives, acting as though the Smiths thought themselves better than other folks. This may have caused a clannish feeling to grow up on both sides.

May 16th, meeting was held as usual at which Apostle Erastus Snow spoke and in the evening a kind of a council meeting was held by some of the brethren at which Apostle Snow made several suggestions about the affairs of the stake. One was that I be sent to Concho or Round Valley to preside, but there was no action taken on these suggestions. At this gathering Apostle Snow stated that in fifty years hence, Mexico would be the brightest star of the northern constellation, and that the sandy beach would mark the place of the custom houses of Washington and New York, and that the Capital of North America would be between the heads of the four great rivers and on the border line between Jew and Gentile.

May 17th, Apostle Brigham Young came in from the north, and in the afternoon Apostles Snow and Young went up to Taylor and held meeting there which I attended. Apostle Snow occupied the most of the time.

May 18th I went down to Woodruff, Apostle Snow went on south and Apostle Young went down to St. Joseph. President Smith came down to Woodruff where he held a meeting to see about moving the grist mill at Sunset up to that place, as Sunset was being abandoned by our people. St. Joseph wanted to get the mill there, but it was thought that Woodruff would be a more central place for the settlements above.

May 21st, a company of about ten wagons came in from Utah yesterday on their way south. Apostle Young came in this morning on his way to Snowflake.

May 23rd I attended Meeting and spoke a short time, and as usual spent a portion of the afternoon at work on the Stake Records, etc. As a rule I took all the minutes of all meetings of the High Council and Conferences on paper and then President Smith would go over them and revise and correct them where necessary and then I would copy them in the book.

May 26th, our trade in the store has not been very good, this being the dull part of the season. A few days ago we had a car of corn come in which we sold at \$2.25 per hundred.

The Stock men have started their annual round-up. Several of the cow boys passed here today, many of them were doubtless exiles from Texas and were hard looking cases.

On the 27th, Lot Smith's wife, Dianthia, came in from Mexico and reported that many of our people there were having the small pox, and that Samuel H. Rogers' wife, Lorana, had died with it.

On May 30th, my wife Julia, who had been down at Woodruff for some time, went home yesterday. I attended Meeting today and spoke a short time.

The next day the people of Woodruff commenced to work on their dam so as to make it a little more secure in case of high water.

I have been out of the store considerable, mostly on church duties, but have worked very hard while I was in the store, generally doing my work as stake clerk and attending to the tithing accounts of evenings, but I work in the store from twelve to fourteen hours a day.

June 1st, John H. Willis Jr. came down. He had taken a sub-contract from David K. Udall to carry the mail from Holbrook to Fort Apache. He made some arrangements with the store to care for his animals at this place.

On June 4th, A. K. Thurber came in from the south, and the next morning he went on his way to Utah.

June 10th, I went up to Snowflake and took my wife Adelaide, and in the afternoon attended a meeting of the High Council. An appealed case from the Bishop's court at Ramah was heard. Brother Gibbons had been disfellowshipped by the Bishop's court. After the council had heard the case, they gave Brother Gibbons a severe reprimand and reinstated him. I afterwards learned that this was not relished very well by the Bishop, Ernest Teitjen, but I thought that the council took the best course under the circumstances. On June 11th, the Y. M. and Y. L. associations had their conference, and on the 12th and 13th, our quarterly conference was held. During the time there were several High Council meetings held to talk over and to try to settle the difficulties between President Smith and Bishop Hunt. One of the Bishop's points was he claimed the right to preside in all ward meetings including Sabbath meetings, etc. and would not submit to any authority in the matter but the First Presidency of the Church. The Bishop was technically right in this, but this was not all the trouble. The custom had grown up from the first settling of the place for President Smith to preside at all meetings and he stated that he always supposed that Bishop Hunt preferred that he would. This however was not the ground work of the trouble. When the brethren went to Mexico, Bishop Hunt soon returned on account of the death of his wife, and the President being absent, he thought that the people would have another President, and worked for the move and suggested Brother Bushman for president. This may have prompted Apostle Snow to recall President Smith to look after the things in his stake. The High Council had a letter written to President John Taylor upon the subject of who had the right to preside at all public gatherings. I returned to Woodruff the next day and had plenty to do with all the minutes of the Stake and High Council to fix up which was generally done of evenings after nine o'clock.

June 15th, President Smith came down from Snowflake last evening and a meeting was held to organize a Mill Company. A board of five directors was elected. They were going to get the mill from Sunset and move it up here, and some arrangements were made to have it brought up. President Smith returned to Snowflake today.

My labors in the store are not very agreeable. Brother Brookbank never speaks to me on any occasion. He at times seems a little deranged. His wife had left him and his troubles over this affair doubtless had something to do with it. He was naturally a crank, although a very bright man in many respects, but he lacked a balance wheel to direct his energies. He might have been a most valuable and useful man, had his energies been turned in the right direction. When these spells passed off, I noticed in after years he at times, was one of the warmest and kindest friends that one could wish to have.

Usually in the evening worked on my records, etc. I had to utilize every moment of time to keep up with my work and I would not allow myself to get behind with my labors of this kind if it were possible.

June 27th was my 46th birthday, and I am still plodding along with my work which is about the same each day, and the labors of one day are an index to that which follows.

One meets with all kinds of people, with a varied lot of experiences to tell you about their troubles and financial difficulties and nearly all wish to get some goods or trust in various ways to help them out. John Terry had taken a contract at Holbrook to make a ditch, he had failed, that is he was not able to pay his men. His hands came up to Woodruff on the 28th with their complaints and said that he was behind about \$700 and could not pay.

July 1st, my son John L. came down last evening and I went back to Snowflake with him today. I made out some applications to the presiding Bishop for the relief of the poor in the stake.

July 2nd, I started with President Smith to visit the settlements in the eastern part of the stake. Our company consisted of President Smith and wife Janet, Bishop J. S. Black (of Deseret, Utah) and wife, Joseph Fish and wife Eliza, and Smith D. Rogers. We arrived at Concho at about 4 p.m. where meeting was held in the evening at which we all spoke except the sisters. There was some talk of putting Jacob Bushman in as Bishop of the place but he said he could not come unless he could sell his place at the Meadows, so the subject was dropped. July 3rd, we drove to Round Valley where we stopped with John T. Eagar. I had taken cold some way so that I was not feeling very well. Vegetation, grain, etc., looked a little backward, things being a little late, but this is rather a high altitude and vegetation does not come on very early. July 4th, meeting was held at Omer, the speakers in the forenoon were Joseph Fish, Smith D. Rogers, and J. S. Black; I took dinner with Brother Skousen. In the afternoon President Smith spoke, said he thought it best to unite the two wards and on noting it was carried that the two wards, Omer and Amity, be united into one, and that the new ward be called Union. Gorge H. Crosby was set apart by President Smith as bishop of the new ward. There was a priesthood meeting in the evening at which Brothers John T. Eagar and Robertson were proposed as counselors to Bishop Crosby. There was some opposition to these brethren and the subject of choosing counselors was laid over for the present. July 5th, we drove to Nutrioso where we took dinner with Charles and Heber Jarvis. Meeting was held at 4 p.m. at which we all spoke. There was a meeting of the sisters in the evening. July 6th, we drove to Bush Valley where we took dinner with Edward A. Noble and then drove on to Heber (later called Luna Valley). I stopped with Brother Hyrum Clark. There was a meeting of the sisters in the evening. July 7th, meeting was held at 9 a.m. President Smith was the main speaker dwelling upon the local differences or difficulties that existed in the place. He thought that it would be for the good of the people of the place for Bishop Watson to step aside, and on motion William Swapp was sustained as Bishop, and he was set apart by President Smith.

The settlement was in a bad condition. Brother Hyrum Clark had just built a very fine house and just as it was about finished it was burned down, and some of the people blamed their Bishop Watson who was working on the building. Watson had some difficulty with Clark which gave rise to the suspicion and talk.

There were quite a number of cow boys in this vicinity which made the place for the few who resided here, rather disagreeable, for stock man's and farmer's interests conflict when close together.

After dinner we drove back to Bush Valley where meeting was held at 4:30 p.m. We all spoke at the meeting, at the close of which the sisters held a meeting.

July 8th, we drove to Round Valley where I stopped with John T. Eagar. July 9th, President Smith and Brother Black drove on to St. Johns while S. D. Rogers and I drove on to Concho where I stopped with Sister Wilhelm. The next day we drove on home. President Smith and Brother Black came in later the same evening. Most of the

settlements were doing fairly well. Concho (then called Erastus) was rather weak handed and needed a bishop very badly. Nutrioso was not very well united, there being some opposition to the bishop. The move at Round Valley of uniting the two wards doubtless helped them some, as it united the people a little more.

July 11th, I attended meeting at Snowflake at which President Smith and I spoke giving an account of our labors, and the next day I went down to Woodruff with John A. Freeman, where I again took up my labors in the store. I generally arranged it with Brother Hulet when I went off on these duties which pertained to the store, and this was practically understood that I would be called from the store occasionally when I started to work.

July 18th, my wife Adelaide, came down from Snowflake and the next day the Board of Directors for the store held their meeting but they did but little. On the 18th I attended meeting at Woodruff and spoke a short time. My wife Julia and son, John L. came down from Snowflake. My wife, Julia came principally to avoid the scarlet fever, it being very bad in Snowflake and she feared that the baby might get it.

The store recently got in a car of threshing machines, etc., that had mostly been ordered by different parties.

July 21st, my wife Adelaide, son Horace N., and infant daughter Eliza have all been taken quite sick, the former quite serious. About this time there was considerable sickness in the different settlements in this vicinity, mostly fevers. July 24th, our baby was some better, but the rest of the sick folks were not improving much, and it taxed my time considerable in helping to care for the sick. July 27th, my wife Eliza came down to help take care of the sick folks, and especially Adelaide who did not improve any, it appeared to be a species of fever, some called it scarlet fever.

August 3rd, the recent rains brought down quite a flood of water in the river which took out the new bridge and dam at Holbrook,¹ the loss was estimated at \$10,000. I worked in the store of days and helped with the sick of nights until I was about worn out.

On the 5th, Sister Cornelia Cardon died at this place, her husband Joseph S. Cardon was in Mexico.

On the 8th meeting was held which I attended and after meeting I had several of the elders come in and administer to my wife and pray for her.

August 10th there has been considerable trouble about settling up the affairs of the Sunset Order as that place has been broken up. The committee that had been appointed to settle up the affairs were David K. Udall, F. G. Nielson, H. R. Burke and John Bushman; Nielson and Burke had been members of the order. The committee met at the store today and besides these, there were Present Apostle Brigham Young, and Bishop John Hunt. Apostle Young went on to Snowflake on the 12th.

Chapter Notes

¹ In the "Journal of Joseph Fish" the entry of August 3, 1886, reads as follows: "August 3, Tuesday, the rain above yesterday brought down quite a flood which took out the new dam and bridge at Holbrook. The loss will be about \$10,000. That is quite heavy for that little place." Since there was no dam at Holbrook he evidently meant the dam at Woodruff and the bridge at Holbrook.

1886

Chapter 70

I Purchase the Mortensen Place and Other Items

There was a very discontented spirit among the people and there were many moving to and fro. The late prosecutions were doubtless one of the main causes for this as many had been broken up and were without houses in a new country. Several teams passed through here going to Utah and there were some teams passed through from Utah going to the Gila Valley, where the other teams had come from.

On August 13th Sister Woods died, she was the wife of James T. Woods, they were neighbors of mine in Parowan. She was an excellent singer and was respected wherever she lived, being a most valuable member in a community, in teaching music and various other ways.

My wife, Julia was taken very sick on the night of the 13th, and continued to grow worse. My wife, Adelaide was improving. There was considerable sickness in all of the settlements.

The political situation was rather quiet, but some few of our outside friends were trying to figure so as to catch the Mormon vote at the coming election, but if the provisions of the Stover bill were enforced, the Mormons would not be able to vote.

August 22nd, My sick folks do not improve very much and Julia seems to be getting worse all the time. I have to devote much of my time to the sick, or all the time when I am out of the store.

August 25, a little girl of N. R. Owens, Jr. died a few days ago. The death toll had been very heavy for this small place with only a few families. My daughter Della came down from Snowflake to help us care for the sick. Brother Thomas Brookbank came in and administered to my wife, Adelaide, and she was healed so that she got up and dressed herself.

August 28th, there has been considerable high water and the river has been so that it was dangerous to cross. A load of goods for the Taylor Coop store was swept down stream the other day. The most of the goods, however, were recovered but they were badly damaged.

My son, John L. came down yesterday, and went back today taking Eliza and Adelaide, the latter having recovered so as to travel. Julia was still very low, but seemed to be improving some. August 29, meeting was held today which I attended and spoke a short time.

There has been a feeble effort to put up the mill that had been brought from Sunset. Brother Warren Tenney was to have charge of putting it up. He was the man that built it in the first place. When it was hauled up here it was piled up on the bank of the river, a little work was done in excavating a place for it, but the work moved on very slowly. Bishop Owens, who has the general oversight of things, did not have the influence or support that he should have and everything seemed to move with a drag and the mill was never put up nor anything more done about it. The irons were taken for various purposes, and the lumber went a little at a time to repair fences, build bridges, etc., so that in a few years there was nothing left but the burrs and they were too heavy to carry off. All had vanished but these, and they lay for years on the bank of the river as silent monuments and witness of this grand failure.

August 30th, we commenced to take stock of the goods in the store for our yearly settlement. We finished our work on September 4th, and I worked a portion of the day in adding up the different accounts of the different books and found that there was stock on hand of about \$23,000.

September 9th, Julia had improved some, but she at one time seemed to be on the verge of the grave. My son, John L. came down last night and I went up with him today. I had quit working for the store so took what things I had and moved up to Snowflake. My position had been anything but agreeable. I would not have stayed as long as I did, but I was in debt when I came from Mexico and was compelled to do something to relieve my situation and support my family, and the sickness that we had in the family had added the weight upon my shoulders and kept me back financially. In the afternoon I attended a meeting of the High Council, there was not much business done, but considerable time was spent in talking over the point of jurisdiction which was still not settled.

On the 19th, the Relief Society and the Young Men and Young Ladies Associations were held, and the regular quarterly conference commenced on the 11th, the Sunday School occupied the forenoon. Conference ended on the afternoon of the 12th. During the sessions there were several reports submitted. The statistical report showed the total of souls to be 2,250, a decrease in the last two years of about 400. The legal prosecutions, that had been going on was doubtless the main cause of this decrease, as many had gone to Mexico and other places in consequence of these prosecutions. The next day I worked at making out the home missionary list and appointments, this work I always did at the close of each conference. Brother Lorenzo H. Hatch always helped me in this, that is he suggested where the missionaries were to be sent, that was his part of the work.

On the 14th, I went up to the forest to a place that John L. West had taken up, which was about 24 miles to the southwest of Snowflake. I took my wives Eliza and Adelaide with me and son John L. We stayed all night at the West Place and the next day we drove to the Snowflake Camp (later called Pinedale), 14 miles, where we stayed all night with George Bryan. There were about twelve families at this place and not much of the spirit of improvement, most of them working on the saw mill that was in this vicinity.

September 16th, I spent the afternoon in looking over the country. My main object I had in taking this trip was to look out a place where I could get a farm as the one I had at Snowflake was only about ten acres that could be cultivated. I took dinner with Brother Mann and in the afternoon I went over to the Mortensen place about a mile and a half. James Mortensen, the principal owner in the place, had decided to go to the Salt River Valley and was offering the place for sale for \$1,000 which might be considered cheap considering the improvements that were on it. I then went on to Juniper where I stayed all night with John Oscar Reidhead. Here I looked over the prospects for farming. There was some very good land, but the main drawback as in other places was the lack of water, there being no living water within several miles. The next day I drove home. On September 18th, I had my thrashing done. My son John had done all the work around home as Joseph C. was working in the store. There was but little to thrash, there being some 34 bushels of wheat besides some other stuff such as corn, etc., which was not very much of a crop for a family as large as mine. But then I had not pretended to farm and had not done anything at it, nor Joseph C. We both were working in the store. The next day I attended meeting and spoke.

On September 20th, I finished the job that I had commenced some time before, that of surveying the graveyard.

I made arrangements with Brother William J. Flake to make a purchase of the Mortensen place, he having purchased it for me. Brother Flake was to take stock. I turned my place at Snowflake to President Smith or \$700 to be turned to Brother Flake and I turned the balance to Brother Flake on the Coop. Stock Herd and some other turns. I went up to the place to look over the ground and returned on the 25th.

September 26th I attended meeting in Snowflake, the speakers were President Smith and William W. Willis, the latter was expecting to start on a mission in the Southern States in a short time.

September 28th, I went up to the Mortensen place that I had purchased, took my wife Julia who had about recovered from the severe spell of sickness that she had, my son, John L. and daughter Jessie were along. I got a few cows from the Coop. stock herd and some from John W. Freeman and took along, nine in all, but expected to get some more in a short time, and to make some butter. The place consisted of two houses, one of rough logs and the other of sawed logs, an excellent barn, stables, and corrals, and about 60 acres of cultivated land.

The next day I worked helping Brother Mortensen gather his crop which was mostly corn. There were about one thousand stalks, this did not go with the place in the purchase. In buying this place, the prospects were very fair for making an excellent ranch for a little farming and the raising of stock. There was an excellent range for cattle in the vicinity, but because of the importing of a large number of cattle from Texas and the way things turned out in later years, I think that it would have been better if I had retained my place at Snowflake.

October 3rd, I went over to Pinedale and attended meeting. The people in this out of the way place were not as a rule very good meeting goers as is often the case in small isolated places where the people were scattered more or less in their locations.

October 10th, I have been helping Brother Mortensen some with his work in preparing to move to the south, I plowed a little during the week.

I attended meeting at Taylor today as a home missionary. President Smith was present and spoke a short time on political points as that subject was not quite prominent with the people. The Democrats in the Territory were trying to get the Mormon Vote, they were promising to get the Stover Bill repealed. (This bill was one got through the legislature by Mr. Stover which disfranchised about every Mormon if it were enforced.) The Democrats were making very fair offers and it looked very favorable for them to get the Mormon vote.

I returned to the farm the next day going by the grist mill (Shumway) for a grist.

On the 16th I helped George Lewis thresh, he like the rest in this place was a dry land farmer, he lived about a mile and a half above my place. He had about 175 bushels of wheat. There is but very little living water in this region, hardly enough for the cattle and horses and many draw water from wells where they can find water by digging, I water my stock from a well.

October 17th I attended meeting at the Mill (Pinedale). Brother Noah Brimhall was the main speaker.

The 24th, I have spent the week in plowing and putting in a little wheat. Brother James Mortensen and I went over to Juniper (Later Linden) and held meeting as home missionaries. We returned in the evening. I took my wives Eliza and Julia with me.

October 25th, I went down to Snowflake by way of the grist mill (this was at Shumway). The next day I worked at digging my potatoes (at Snowflake).

In the evening there was a political meeting, the speakers were John R. Milner, Alfred Ruiz, J. L. Hubble, and J. Crosby, they were candidates on what they had called the "Equal Rights Ticket". They made some very good talks, but I did not think that they stood much of a chance to be elected the way things had shaped. I went back to the ranch on the 27th and went to work at various jobs. On Sunday, the 31st, we had a cold windy day and no meeting was held.

November 2nd, was election day. I was one of the judges at Percheron. (This precinct was first called Percheron from Mortensen bringing in some horses of that breed and starting a ranch for the raising of these animals. It was later called Pinedale). There were but 17 votes polled. All the gentiles scratched all the Mormons that were on the tickets. The most of the contest in this election was strictly the Americans against the Mexicans, the latter had in this county about two fifths of the votes.

November 5th, I have been helping Brother Mortensen, his father and brother and families started for the Salt River Valley. I bought two half blood Percheron colts of him for \$225. I kept one of them for a stallion but he later got drowned in the Little Colorado River.

November 16th was a terribly cold and windy day. I went down to Snowflake and returned the next day.

November 21 was a cold and windy day, snowing some. Mortensen left.

On November 24th, Brother John W. Freeman's boy came up for his cows that we had been milking, as feed was getting dry and scarce on the range, I decided to give them up. We had been giving him two fifths of the butter that we had been making. We had been milking near forty all together. My son John L. went along to help the boy drive them.

On the 25th I started over to Showlow for the purpose of surveying off a town site. I stopped at juniper and took dinner with John O. Reidhead, his father John Reidhead, was there and we talked over the prospects of dry farming in the country, it looked very favorable at this time.

In the afternoon I went on to Showlow and stopped with Bishop Hans Hansen.

The next day I worked hard all day, did not stop for dinner, surveying off the town site which was about a mile from Brother Whipple's place and some distance to the south west of Showlow town. It was laid off in a square of 9

blocks each block being 24 rods square and four lots in a block, the streets being six rods wide. It was a very nice location for a town but there was no water, they were, however, expecting to make a long ditch and bring the water from Showlow Creek for the town. This was never done and this town like many others died with its birth. The next day I returned home.

November 28th, I attended meeting at Pinedale. (This place was first called Snowflake Camp and then the Mill as a sawmill was put in here and later was named Pinedale.) There was a very good attendance at the meeting, better than usual. I occupied a part of the time.

December 1st, I have been at work for Brother Niels Peterson (he was my nearest neighbor) helping him to put a new roof on his house. I went down to Snowflake today and the next day attended a meeting of the High Council. The long standing difficulty between President Smith and Bishop Hunt was again brought up and talked over. The Bishop had made a confession at our last Conference as to the Hatch part of the difficulty but the Council was not satisfied with it and said that it was not a confession.

On the 3rd I leveled a ditch for Brother William J. Flake and in the afternoon attended the conference of the Relief Society and Primary. Our conference commenced the next day. Brothers Christopher I. Kempe and Peter Christopherson who had just returned from the Detroit prison were present and spoke during the conference giving a sketch of their prison life. The next day after Conference I worked as usual fixing up the minutes of the conference and making out the home missionary appointments.

On the 8th, I went back to the farm taking my wife Adelaide with me. I moved all of my effects at this trip. The rest of the family had gone with me when I first went up and Aunt Eliza had worked during the fall extremely hard making butter, etc.

December 10, it snowed considerable and on the 12th, meeting was held at Pinedale. Brother John A. West was present and organized the Sunday School (He was the Stake Superintendent). Brother Theodore Cheney was put in Superintendent with George W. Bryan and Lyman Hancock his assistants.

December 16th, I have been working for the past few days in pulling down a house and putting it up in another place. I found it about as much work as it would be to build a new one. In the evening I went over to Pinedale and gave a lecture on the discovery and settlement of the American Continent by the Spaniards. Meeting was held at Pinedale on the 19th which I attended and took part in.

1886
Chapter 71
A Trip to the Eastern Part of the Stake and Home Labors

On December 20th, I went down to Snowflake and the next day President Jesse N. Smith and I started on a visit to the Settlements in the eastern part of the stake. This visit was mainly for the purpose of fixing up the tithing accounts at the various wards and looking after the people and completing the ward organizations. We drove to Concho where we stayed all night with Charles Riggs. We found so few in the place that meeting was not held, but an appointment was left for meeting on our return.

The 22nd, we drove to Union (Round Valley). The Bishop and many others were away working on a ditch some six miles above, so meeting was not held here, but an appointment was left to hold meeting on our return. We stopped all night with John W. Clark.

December 23rd, we drove to Nutrioso where we left our team and Heber Jarvis took his and took us on. Upon reaching Alpine we stopped all night with Edward A. Noble's folks. He being away, meeting was not held.

The next day we drove to Heber (later called Luna Valley) where we stopped with bishop William Swapp. Meeting was held in the evening at which Albert Minerly, Joseph Fish, Heber Jarvis, and President Smith spoke. The main subjects treated upon at this meeting as well as at the others held later on was the training of our children and the paying promptly and settling our tithing.

The next morning we went and visited John D. Lee's wife (not Lee of the Mountain Meadow fame), who was very sick, and then drove back to Alpine (this place was for years at first called bush Valley, Bush being the first settler) where meeting was held at 2 p.m. The speakers being Joseph Fish, Heber Jarvis, and President Smith. I took supper with Brother Prime T. Coleman.

December 26th, Sunday, we drove over to Nutrioso where I took dinner with Sister Ben Noble. Meeting was held at 2 p.m. President Smith spoke of uniting the ward to that of Alpine and on motion it was carried, but there was some opposition, Lorenzo Brown and his sons voting against it. The remainder of the time was occupied by Joseph Fish and C. I. Kempe, the latter had joined us at Alpine. We took supper with Charles Jarvis, and I spent the evening visiting with my cousins Betsey and Mary Hamblin.

December 27th, we took our team leaving Brother Jarvis who had so kindly helped us in various ways, and drove to Union where we took dinner with George H. Crosby. Meeting was held at 2:00 p.m. C. I. Kempe, Joseph Fish, and President Smith were the speakers. We took supper with Peter J. Christofferson. Meeting was held at 6:00 p.m. President Smith spoke of organizing an Elder's quorum, said that we had two in the stake, but wished another. This one to comprise this ward, Alpine and Heber (Luna). On motion, W. W. Eagar was sustained as president of the 3rd quorum of Elders and was set apart to that office by President Smith. Joseph Fish spoke upon the benefits to be derived from these organizations.

There was considerable excitement during our stay at this place. For sometime the place had been troubled and annoyed by a reckless set of Cow Boys that had located in this vicinity, doubtless many of them had come here to avoid the law in the places where they resided. A day or two before a Cow boy had shot a man and he was arrested today, and was wounded in being taken. The Cow Boys were greatly excited and mad at the Mormons for the arrest of their companion and threatened vengeance. At our evening meeting there was a guard placed around the place to prevent any trouble should any be attempted. There was a meeting in the evening of the citizens to adopt measures for putting down the reckless shooting that had been going on.

December 28th, we drove to St. Johns where we stopped with Bishop David K. Udall. Meeting was held in the evening, the speakers were C. I. Kempe, Joseph Fish, and President Jesse N. Smith. Bishop Udall had just returned from Prescott where he had been to stand his trial for polygamy, his case was dismissed without coming to trial. He had been indicted when Flake, Tenney, and others were and had stood his trial for Forgery (a trumped up charge and was sent to the Detroit prison where he was later pardoned out by the President of the United States.) His case for polygamy had been laid over for want of evidence.

December 29th, we did some business about the tithing affairs, and then drove to Concho where we stopped with Charles Riggs. Meeting was held at which C. I. Kempe, Joseph Fish, and President Smith spoke, the latter spoke mainly upon the organization and building up of the place. We nominated Christopher I. Kempe for the Bishop of the place which was carried and Brother Kempe was ordained a High Priest and set apart as Bishop of the ward by President Jesse N. Smith.

December 30th, President Smith and I started on home where we arrived about dark, leaving Brother Kempe with his new flock to get things in working order. Our trip had been a very pleasant and agreeable one, and I thought that we had done some good, especially in tithing matters and in the organizations that had been made.

The next day I spent in making out some statements for the bishops for their tithing accounts. The year had flown and with it "many a glorious throng of happy dreams". The saints throughout the stake were poor but peace prevailed among them. Quite a number had come to this part of Arizona but some had gone on to the Gila Valley, and some to Mexico, and a few had returned to Utah so that our stake numbered less than it did two years before.

With the end of my above mentioned trip, my journal appears to end for I find no trace of any items from that date until about five months later when it starts again. But during these five months I spent the time about as usual mostly on the ranch or farm doing some improving and I labored as usual as a home missionary, stake clerk, etc., which labor took much of my time, and I was back and forth to Snowflake and other places as my duties called me.

The Railroad had sold a large block of land to a company called the Aztec Land and Cattle Company, and this company had brought a vast number of cattle from Texas, and with them many cowboys from that state. Many of these men were of the worst class to be found and doubtless came to avoid the law in their own country. Some of these men at about this time formed a most systematic organization for stealing horses, and people were losing horses in various places around here. These thieves had apparently made arrangements to run horses from Colorado and all along the route the Phoenix. To make their work successful, they commenced the attempt to keep every one off from the range, claiming that the land belonged to the Aztec Company. (The Company had bought the odd sections, the others still belonged to the Government.) My neighbor, George Lewis, lost a horse stolen on the 29th of May. Brother Niels Peterson, another neighbor of mine, was out a few days before looking for some of his stock or horses (he had lost several, and met Mr. Payne, one of these cowboys, who attacked Peterson for being on the range and whipped him quite hard. Peterson being on an unbroke horse could not help himself any, Payne using the but end of his loaded blank snake. Payne was an employee of the Aztec company. The only reason that Payne gave to Peterson for this assault was that he was a Mormon and on the range. But doubtless the main reason was that Peterson had been to the Salt River Valley and had recovered some of his horses that had been stolen. He had recovered about ten head and William J. Flake who went with him had recovered some 23 head that had been stolen, something like thirty in all. On May 31st, Payne met George Lewis who was out looking for his stolen horse and pounded him with the butt end of his revolver. Payne stated that he was in with the thieves and that they were going to drive the Mormons out of the forest. The cowboys were becoming very annoying to the settlers and especially to the sheep men whom they were driving off the range, and it was not safe for a Mormon to be on the range alone and unarmed. It looked as if the Aztec Company was to blame for much of this work, they had bought the odd sections and their men were driving all sheep off the range that were in this part of the country, and it looked as if they encouraged their men in this work. Payne had passed my place very often and on one occasion he stopped and told me that he was deputized by the officers in St. Johns to arrest me for polygamy, but he would do nothing about it if I would leave the place and go off. I took this as a bluff and paid no attention to it.

June 5th, I attended meeting at Pinedale which was not very well attended. The people in this section were not very good meeting goers, and some of them seemed to have lost all desire to attend their duties as Latter Day Saints. The isolated place that they were in and their surroundings had something to do with it I suppose.

During the last week I had been at work repairing the fence around the place, and in places building a new one.

The weather was extremely dry and the stock were suffering for want of water as well as grass.

On July 8th, Sheriff Commodore P. Owens came over and arrested Payne for his assault on Peterson and Lewis and took him to Showlow before C. E. Cooley, Justice of the Peace at that place. Cooley sent him to St. Johns to await the action of the grand jury, the Aztec Company soon bailed him out and he was again at liberty but not quite as bad as before.

June 11th, I went down to Snowflake, as it was expected that Apostles Francis M. Lyman and John Henry Smith would be at Snowflake, but they had not arrived. The next day I attended meeting at Snowflake and spoke. Our quarterly conference at St. Johns was so near at hand I concluded not to go back home until after conference.

On the 14th, the two Apostles arrived accompanied by Isaac Riddle and Jesse W. Crosby, and the next day there was quite a number started for St. Johns to attend the conference there. I went over with John W. Freeman. We drove to Concho where meeting was held in the evening.

The weather has been quite cold of late, last night it froze quite hard killing the lucern, corn and potatoes at Snowflake.

On the 16th, we drove to St. Johns where a High Council Meeting was held at 2:00 p.m. There were several cases came up before the Council. O. P. Arnold for an attempt to commit adultery, and J. K. P. Pipkin was cut off from the Church for defrauding the Government Postal Department. The next day the Y. M. and Y. Ladies associations held their conference in the forenoon and the Relief Society and the Primary held theirs in the afternoon. The regular sessions of the conference started on the 18th. The St. Johns people had made an addition to their meeting house which added very much to the convenience of the people. Conference was adjourned on the 19th, and during the sessions Peter J. Christofferson was sustained as a member of the High Council in the place of Noah Brimhall who was removed. There were six alternate members of the High Council elected, they were Willard Farr, Andrew Mineer, M. H. Peterson, Edward M. Webb, Littleton L. Perkins, and Jacob A. Bigler.

On Monday, the 20th, the visitors left for their homes, a part going down the river and a part to Concho; I went with the latter company. Meeting was held at Concho in the evening at which Apostle John Henry Smith spoke upon the way a bishop should manage his ward, that he should not hold malice, neither should he whip or scold in public, nor should he preach much in his ward, that he should let the others do the most of the preaching and then when he spoke, the people would be pleased to hear him. The next day we drove to Snowflake.

While we were at St. Johns, the purchasing of the railroad lands that we had occupied, was brought up and a committee consisting of Jesse N. Smith, Joseph Fish, and David K. Udall was appointed to look up the R. R. Lands that we wished to purchase in this county.

On the 22nd, Jesse N. Smith and I went up to Shumway's mill for the purpose of ascertaining what R. R. Lands we wished in this vicinity. I went over the land getting the number of the sections, etc.

The next day President Smith and I started for Holbrook to see the Aztec Land and Cattle Company about purchase of the Rail Road Land that we wanted as they now had a claim on it, and we had been ordered off from these lands by that company.

Apostle Lyman and Smith and Brothers Riddle and Crosby came in on their way to visit the settlements in the southern part of the territory.

June 24th, we went to Holbrook and visited the Aztec Headquarters, the superintendent was away, but the person in charge told us that there would be no trouble about our buying the land but he could not give us the prices as they were not ready to sell yet. He said that the company would deal fair with us, but we had some doubts about this as they were evidently after all the money that they could get.

While I was in Holbrook, I met Mr. Mandell, who offered to furnish me anything that I might want if I wished to go into business for myself. I thanked him very kindly and told him that I did not care to at the present, but I have thought many times that I might have done better if I had taken his offer and started a business of my own.

We returned to Woodruff in the evening and the next day, June 25th, I went on up to Snowflake, and on the 26th, I went on up to the farm where I commenced to work plowing out my corn, etc. My long absence had allowed the weeds to grow to such an extent that it looked impossible to get them out.

July 3rd, I attended meeting at the Mill (Pinedale) and spoke giving a brief account of the late conference at St. Johns. Brother P. T. Coleman and wife were on their way to the Salt River Valley and stopped with me. This was the last visit that I ever had with them.

On the 4th, I went down to Snowflake and the next day attended a meeting of the High Council. This meeting was for the purpose of re-hearing the case between President Smith and Bishop John Hunt which had been dragging along so long. All the members of the council were present. Apostles Brigham Young presided assisted by Apostles Francis M. Lyman and John Henry Smith. The whole day was spent in hearing the case which had many disagreeable features about it. The next day the case was again continued. During the talk, the Bishop manifested some ill feeling and seemed quite jealous of the brethren that came from Parowan. He stated that the seven home missionaries that came from Parowan had acted for six or seven years. This statement was greatly exaggerated as a part of them had not acted only about two years. Finally a decision was reached in the afternoon which was to the effect that there was no cause of action. This reinstated the Bishop who had been suspended from his office during these controversies. The parties were much more pliable at this investigation than they had been on former occasions. This was a great help in bringing about a settlement in a long standing difficulty. This long difficulty between the Bishop and the President was settled and dropped as far as outward appearances indicated. But among some of the younger members of the families this division and clannish spirit seemed to exist for many years and apparently was more noticeable among the friends of the Bishop than those of the President. For the reason probably that the Smiths were thought to be more aristocratic than they really were on account of their connection with the Prophet, they were listed in a class without knowing who they were or the goodness of heart that they possessed.

On the 7th, I attended fast meeting, Apostle Lyman was the main speaker. After meeting I returned home at the farm where I took up the labor of plowing and hoeing weeds out of the corn, etc. My daughter, Della, went up with me.

1887
Chapter 72
I Again Go To Work For The A. C. M. I.

On July 10th, I went over to Juniper and attended meeting as a home missionary.

During the last ten days we have had considerable rain. This was a great help to the country as the fore part of the season had been very dry.

July 11th, my son Joseph C. came up for a short visit from Woodruff where he was working in the store, and returned today. During the warm weather he had been troubled very much with his feet being scalded and so sore from the warm weather that he could hardly get around.

July 28th, I have been busy at work on the farm and the last few days in harvesting my wheat. The part that I put in during the fall turned out fairly well, but that which was put in during the winter and spring did not amount to much.

July 30th, I went down to Snowflake. The Apostles that had come out to fix up things in this part organized St. Johns Stake out of the eastern part of the Eastern Arizona Stake on the 23rd of July, 1887. David K. Udall was put in as President and Elijah N. Freeman and William H. Gibbons were sustained as his counselors. This organization cut off the eastern part of our stake and included the wards of Concho, St. Johns, Ramah, Union, Nutrioso, Alpine, and Heber (Luna). Conference had been appointed to be held in Snowflake today for the purpose of reorganizing the stake but while the Apostles were at St. Johns, they received a telegram which led them to believe that President John Taylor was dead, so they returned to Salt Lake City at once and our Conference was postponed. July 31st, I attended meeting at Snowflake and returned home the next day.

On August 1st, we received the news of the death of President John Taylor. The loss of President Taylor was a sad blow to the church, he had been an exile for some two years avoiding the unjust prosecutions that were being heaped upon the saints. This state of affairs made it more lamentable to loose our leader under such unsettled and trying conditions as existed at this time.

On August 7th, President Jesse N. Smith came up to my place bringing most of his family. Meeting was held at which he spoke, he returned the next day.

I also went down to Snowflake and spent the rest of the day in making out a diagram of Woodruff, and Snowflake, showing the lands that we wished to purchase from the Railroad or Aztec Company.

On the 9th, President Smith and I wrote a letter to Commissioner Sparks in relation to our lands, stating the most of our improvements upon the lands that we occupied.

I returned home in the evening. I had a span of colts that would not follow the road. It was raining a very little and was on of the darkest nights that I was ever out in. I got out of the carriage several times and felt around to find the road and finally I abandoned the vehicle and made my way home horseback.

August 21st, Brother Willis and Freeman came up and held meeting with us today. Conditions had changed some, the work of the thieves had been checked but the great number of stock that the Aztec Company had brought in was a great source of annoyance to the settlers. It was almost impossible to make a fence that would turn them, and I spent much of my time in fixing fences and making new ones.

My son, Joseph C., came up from Woodruff for a few days outing and visit, he went back on the 24th, my wife, Julia and John L. went along with him.

August 27th, I had my wheat threshed, there was but 45 bushels of it. A part of the piece I had in did but very little, it, however, was of the very best quality. George Lewis had fixed up an old machine and we used this to thrash it out. This is not much of a wheat country, at least it had not proved to be so far. Most of the settlers around here depend more on their stock and the raising of a little corn. But it was an excellent place for some kinds of vegetables where the ground was moist enough.

I attended meeting the next day and on Monday, I took a load of wheat to the mill and then went on to Snowflake, returning on the 31st. It rained considerably and I had a muddy trip for much of the soil on this road is extremely sticky when it is wet.

I had raised but little, but our expenses had been light. We had cows and plenty of milk and butter, and I had been at home more than when I was in the store and had enjoyed the society of my family and we had got along fully as well as when I was in the store. Of course my labors in the church capacity such as Stake Clerk, home missionary, etc., took much of my time, and I got but little for it. My son, Joseph C. was still working in the store, his wags as I thought were but \$35.00 a month and he had of course, to board himself.

We were having a quiet time to what we had a short time before. The cowboys and sheep men had started to quarrel over in the Tonto Basin which attracted the attention of the cowboys around in this part and many of them went over that way to take a hand in this quarrel. This war which was called the Tonto Basin War commenced at that place between the Grahams and Tweksburrys, and resulted in killing something over twenty of the worst characters. Among the number killed was Payne who had given the settlers around here so much trouble. He was a desperate and wicket man, and we felt a relief when we heard of his death, he was killed about the 9th. Some of my neighbors had intended to kill him the first chance and one had made trip to Holbrook almost on purpose to get a gun for that purpose. It was a good thing that he was taken off as he was; it saved our people from having his blood upon their hands. This war and the killing off of so many of the thieves and desperate characters caused several others to leave the country so that we enjoyed a season of peace in that direction for some time, in fact this lawless element never go so bad again. This war where they killed each other was a death blow to the bad men in this country which was a great blessing, and civilization was enabled to take another step onward.

September 7th, I went down to Snowflake and the next day on to Woodruff, where I attended a meeting of the Board of Directors of the Arizona C. M. I. in the evening, and on the 9th, a Stockholders meeting was held at which the same board of Directors were elected with the exception of Thomas W. Brookbank who was going away and I was elected secretary and treasurer in his place. I had concluded to work in the store as I thought that the change that had been made would be better and more agreeable than it was when I was here before and I had been urged to go to work here by President Smith. As I again took up my labors it was thought best that Joseph go up to the farm as he was getting a little tired of the work so he quit and went home. September 9th, I remained at woodruff and went to work in the store.

The 11th was Sunday and I attended the meeting there. There was considerable sickness in the place, the measles and whooping cough were both prevalent in the country among the children. Our little daughter, Eliza was sick and had contracted the disease and had been sick for some time.

On the 12th, Brother T. W. Brookbank quit the store and the books were turned over to me. I found everything in good shape. Brother Brookbank was a very good hand and had kept everything in good shape but he was a crank and it was difficult for people to get along with him long at a time, or rather it was impossible for him to get along with the people very long at a time. He was a smart and intelligent man in many respects but was not well balanced. When he left the store he was going into the stock business at Tuba City.

Our little daughter, Eliza continued to grow worse and during her spell of sickness, contracted the whooping cough and measles, these at the same time were too much for her in her weak state and she died on the 21st. During the last week of her sickness she had suffered very much, but she was very patient during her sickness and bore her afflictions with fortitude, seldom witnessed in a child of her years. Her patient and gentle disposition had made her a favorite in the family. I got Adelbert F. Webb to make the coffin and sent word to Della at Snowflake to get someone to dig the grave as I wished to have her buried by the side of her little brother, Franklin. We went to Snowflake with her in the afternoon. John Reidhead and his daughter Katie went along with Julia and myself. On reaching Snowflake, we stopped with my daughter, Della (Joseph W. Smith's) and buried our darling on the 22nd. Brothers Jesse N. Smith, John Reidhead, and William J. Flake spoke at the funeral. After laying her away, we returned to Woodruff feeling quite broken up. She had come to us in Mexico to cheer us in our exiled moments and had been a joy and comfort in the home ever since.

September 28th, I went up to Snowflake. Brother D. K. Udall accompanied me. We went up to look over the tithing accounts of the wards that had been taken to form the St. Johns Stake, which were Ramah, Concho, (then called Erastus) St. Johns, Union, Nutrioso, Alpine, Heber (later called Luna Valley) and three other small places that had

been broken up before this time. Brother Udall had been appointed Bishop's Agent for the St. Johns Stake. We went over the accounts of each ward and made out the statements of each. He however preferred to wait until each ward that had been broken up was fully settled before he signed the receipts. The people of these places had scattered, or many of them, so it was difficult to get these settled up properly.

When we got to Snowflake, we found that Brother Z. B. Decker had lost a child, I attended the funeral. Brother Decker had been very unfortunate with his children having lost some three in a very short space of time.

August 29th, my son John L. came down from the ranch but returned in the evening while I returned to Woodruff.

October 2nd, I attended meeting today and was one of the speakers.

There was a priesthood meeting in the evening at which the subject of building the grist mill was talked over. The Sunset grist mill had been given to the people of Woodruff by the church, they had hauled it up, but they had been very slow in putting it up and a large part of it had already gone to ruin. Some laid the blame on the Bishop as he had been so slow in moving about the matter, but it was discouraging to try to do anything, there were so few in the place and those were more interested in their own affairs and had more of their own work than they could do.

On the 3rd, John R. Hulet started for St. Louis to purchase goods for the store, we were still getting the main part of our merchandise from that part.

My son, Joseph C. came down from the ranch today, he had with him Miss Katie Reidhead, and they were going on to Utah to get married.

My wife, Julia, who had been down here for some time went back home on the 6th.

There has been a little rain and the weather is cool for this time of year.

There had been considerable sickness in the different settlements around and probably the worst in Snowflake. It was mostly diphtheria among the children and there have been several deaths from this terrible disease, one family lost four.

I still find the work in the store much the same, going on in the same old way, the never ending work of billing out goods and making out accounts, etc., has such a sameness that it appears that there is but little to jot down in a journal, for one day's work is an index to the year's work.

On October 20th, Apostle John Henry Smith arrived in Snowflake and I went up there with Brother Joseph C. Kay and during the afternoon I worked at surveying a forty acre piece of land for William D. Kartchner. I finished the job early the next morning and then went up and laid off some work on the reservoir on the east side of the creek and then came down to Snowflake and ran a line around a quarter section for William W. Willis and returned to Woodruff on the 22nd.

November 5th, Apostle John Henry Smith, President Jesse N. Smith, and Lorenzo H. Hatch came down to Woodruff where they held meeting the next day, in the afternoon and evening. They returned to Snowflake on the 7th.

I had always kept up a correspondence with my brother-in-law, Mahonri M. Steele and about the 5th, I received a very interesting letter from him in which he suggested that I ought to go to Utah and get my second anointings. But in the rustle and struggle of business I was not able to attend to this at this time although I had considered the matter before he wrote. We had some new goods come in at about this time which kept us more than busy.

On the 12th, my son Joseph C. and his wife, Katie, returned from Utah where they had been to St. George to get married and visit relatives and friends at our old home town.

The next day I took the team and went up to Snowflake and the next day went up to the ranch to make a short visit, and returned to Snowflake on the 16th and the next day I went and surveyed or leveled the reservoir dam so as to raise it about three feet, and the following day I returned to Woodruff. There were some storms about this time.

November 20th, Apostles Brigham Young and John Henry Smith came down to Woodruff and held meeting in the evening. Apostle Smith spoke of the sins among the young, and warned parents that they should watch and counsel the young before they were ruined. The Apostles went on to Holbrook the next day.

We had our meeting on the 27th, at which I occupied a portion of the time.

December 5th, my wife Eliza came down today, and on the next day President Jesse N. Smith came down and the next day went on to Holbrook and returned bringing Apostle John Henry Smith who had been on a short visit to the Salt River Valley. They went on up to Snowflake on the 8th, my wife Eliza going with them.

We had some snow on the 13th, and on the 16th.

I went up to Snowflake with Brothers Reidhead and Guildbrandsen. I found my wife Adelaide here, she had just moved down from the ranch. She did not like our forest home and wished to move back to Snowflake, so I had bought two city lots in a good location in town, there was a log house on one of them which I had fitted up the best I could and made it as comfortable as possible so that it would answer until I could build. She later sold a part of one of them and the Bank of Northern Arizona stands on the North East Corner of that portion that was sold.

The year was passing away and I have barely made a living. I get \$75 per month and this is the price that I worked for during the long years that I was with the Arizona C. M. I. except the period when I was Superintendent I was allowed more. This salary did not go very far with a family when everything nearly that we sued had to be bought out of the store. This was not the only draw back, living away from my family and having so much work of a public nature that my expenses were considerable, boarding away from home and paying fare on the buck board when I went back and forth mainly on public or church work such as home missionary work and the tithing business, made the battle through life a hard one. It seemed to have fallen to my lot to be poor and to work hard for a living, but it may have been for the best for the battle through life if well fought gives a person strength and energy and a consciousness that he earns what he has and has not defrauded his neighbor out of his hard earnings.

1887

Chapter 73

The Reorganization of the Stake and Labors in the Store

Our Stake Conference was held on the 17th and the 18th of December, Apostle John Henry Smith was present and completed the organization of the stake, as some changes were found necessary on account of cutting off the St. Johns Stake from the Eastern Arizona Stake. The name was changed to that of the Snowflake Stake. The main officers that were presented and sustained were as follows: Jesse N. Smith, President, Lorenzo H. Hatch and Joseph H. Richards as his counselors; Lorenzo H. Hatch, Patriarch; John W. Freeman, Samuel H. Rogers, Albert Minerly, Andrew L. Rogers, Ninian Miller, Charles L. Flake, Sanford A. Anfell, Littleton L. Perkins, Edward M. Webb, Sanford M. Porter, Aloy Larson, and James C. Owens Jr. as members of the High Council; Alma Z. Palmer, Zechariah B. Decker, David W. Savage, William W. Willis, Mark E. Kartchner and Lehi Heward as Alternate Members of the High Council; Joseph Fish, Stake Recorder; Paul Smith, President of the High Priests Quorum, Frederick A. Lundquist, President of the Elders Quorum; John A. West, Superintendent of the Sunday Schools; Smith D. Rogers, President of the Young Mens Mutual Improvement Association. There was one new ward organized, that of Pinedale where I resided, Niels Peterson was sustained as Bishop and Joseph C. Fish as his first counselor. This gave the new stake eight wards and a population of near 1400 souls.

In our organization of the stake, great care was taken in selecting the officers and not having President Smith's relatives put to the front too much or in positions where they were more directly under him, for instance none of them were put in the High Council. He suggested me as one of his counselors but this was objected to as I was his son-in-law. His relatives being in office had been the main cause, or one of them, that had created the difference between him and the Bishop, and there had been considerable talk about this and much ill feeling had grown out of it. This move in leaving them out to a large extent was to remedy this evil, and perhaps it had a good effect but the party spirit still existed to some extent and caused some feelings between the two factions.

On the 19th, I attended a meeting of the High Council and acted as clerk of the council. There was one case brought from the Taylor Ward which was settled and was about all the business done. The next day I returned to Woodruff where I again took up the old labors. I went down with brother Joseph H. Richards. Sometimes in making these trips, I took my own team and sometimes I got chances to go with someone, and when this failed I went on the buckboard but this was quite expensive as fare then was rather high.

December 25th, the people of Woodruff got up a Christmas tree and placed on it a gift for every child in the place while the parents put on many, so it gave the young an enjoyable time. My son, Joseph C. and my wife, Julia, came down on the 23rd and went back on the 27th.

January 1st, 1888, Sunday, the new year came in as the old one went out--cold. (and cold weather was a common expression) I attended the meeting of the commencement of the year and spoke, this I was often called on to do, but I never thought that I was much of a speaker, but I always realized that it was a duty to take my part in any public work or enterprise, so I never shirked in this respect. It is every person's duty to bear his share and do his part in every department in the church, nation, state, county, or city.

On the 7th, the sisters of Woodruff got up a Bow Dance. I attended and drew for my partner Mrs. Lora Duffin. The ladies all took their partners home for supper, the affair passed off very well as most things do when the sisters take hold.

On January 17th, my son, Silas L., was eight years old and he was baptized by Joseph W. Smith and confirmed by Apostle John Henry Smith at Snowflake.

On the 18th, Joseph Lillywhite of this place died. He was first counselor to the bishop and had only been sick for a short time. His lungs were badly affected, this had been caused mainly by being shot through. He had been injured by Indians when he was at Beaver Utah, when the Indians raided the Lee ranch on South Creek. He was an honest and industrious man and a true Latter Day Saint. In him, Woodruff lost one of her best and most honored citizens. His early death might be attributed to the savages of this western land.

On January 25th, Apostle John Henry Smith, President Jesse N. Smith, and Lorenzo H. Hatch came down to Woodruff and held meeting in the evening at which Apostle Smith spoke in strong terms against round dancing. He said that it should be put down among the Latter Day Saints.

February 1st, I went up to Snowflake for the purpose of fixing up the tithing accounts of the stake for the year, and I at once went to work on them.

On the 4th I made a trip to Pinedale at which President Smith organized the Relief Society, the Young Mens Mutual Improvement Association and the Sunday School. The officers that were sustained were as follows: Eliza J. Fish, President of the Relief Society with Sofia Johnson and Anna Hilton as her counselors; John L. Fish President of the Y. M. M. I. A. with Albert Brewer and George Cheney his assistants; George W. Bryan was put in Superintendent of the Sunday School with John L. Fish and Albert Brewer his assistants.

On the 6th, I returned to Snowflake with President Smith. My visit at home had not been very long like most of my visits, but I was pleased to get this opportunity to go up and see the folks. I would not have been able to have made this visit but I was waiting for some of the tithing returns from the bishops that had not come in. The snowflake returns were not in so I got hold of the books and made them out myself fixing up the balance sheet, etc., which should have been the work of the ward clerk or the bishop perhaps. David K. Udall was over from St. Johns to settle up the accounts of that stake. The tithing accounts of the wards in his stake were made out and turned over to him. This was no small item and it kept me extremely busy until the 14th, when I finished up my labors with these accounts and went to Woodruff where I took up my labors there as usual with the books and accounts.

On the 24th, I went up to Snowflake and the next day on up to Taylor by the request of President Smith for the purpose of assisting Bishop John H. Standifird with his tithing accounts. Bishop Standifird had left Arizona when I did in December 1884 and had but recently returned. His business had been left in hands that did not understand it and his accounts were badly mixed up and in a very tangled condition and some of the tithing property had been used as his own and there was no account of much of it. I took his book and made a new ledger and went all over the accounts for a year back and posted them as best I could in the new ledger. I spent three days of excessive hard work on these accounts, in this work I found numerous errors, and placing them as near where they belonged as possible I found the differences in these errors was \$81.29 which was in his favor. The Bishop was in a very cramped condition and the handling of the tithing as private property was the result of a very large deficiency in his accounts, much of this shortage was probably on account of his being away as well as his own and others mismanagement. The accounts had not been entered as they should have been and I was of the opinion that much was taken in and used without any account of that which was used, loaned, or given to poor, etc. He was owing some \$3,000 which was never paid, or at least a great portion of it had to be allowed to him as he had no means to meet this shortage and I suppose that a large share of it was a shortage that he should not have been called on to settle.

On the 28th I returned to Woodruff with President Smith. On arriving here I found that there was considerable excitement in the place caused by the elopement of John Reidhead Jr. and Nellie Deans which had but recently occurred. James Deans, the father of the girl, had refused to let the young man keep company with his daughter, and the young couple still persisted in carrying on their courtship, when the father locked the girl up for sometime in her room. But she finally got out for a few minutes on some pretext one evening, and the two soon mounted some horses that were in readiness, he having arranged the plan and rode to Holbrook where they jumped on the train for Gallup, where they got married. Arrangements were made so as to take a certain train so that no time was lost. They were soon followed to Holbrook but the pursuing party was too late to catch them.

February 29 was a very windy day, President Smith had come down to meet Judge Morrison on land matters, but the Judge did not come as was agreed so President Smith lay over and held meeting in the evening at which he and Brother Hatch spoke.

March 1st, Judge Morrison not appearing, President Smith returned to Snowflake, Bishop Owens had sent a notice to Brother Reidhead and family to appear before the Bishop's court to answer to the charge of assisting John Reidhead Jr. to run away with Nellie Deans. Brother Reidhead was absent at the time and was to be in the place when the trial came off which was this evening, so he was not present, and Sister Reidhead did not care to go without her husband so she did not appear. The result of the trial was that the Bishop cut Sister Reidhead and her son Alanson, off from the church and disfellowshipped brother Reidhead. Later they took the case to the High Council where they were reinstated, but were recommended to be baptized. On the 3rd, John Reidhead Jr. was brought in by

the constable and was tried before James Deans who was the Justice of the Peace, for firing off his pistol in the streets of Woodruff some two weeks before. He was fined \$10 and costs which all amounted to \$20. Nothing was said about his running away with the girl but if he had not done so this charge would have doubtless never have been mentioned.

On the 4th, I attended meeting and spoke on the divine origin of the *Book of Mormon*. On March 10th, our quarterly conference convened at Snowflake. I did not attend. Brother Hulet had some business to attend to in relation to the Seventies which took him there and as both of us could not very well leave the store, I remained, and I got another person to take the minutes at the conference. This was the first conference that I missed attending in Arizona when I was in the stake or country. On the 12th, those who had gone on to Conference commenced to return, my wife, Eliza, came down with Brother Owens.

On March 13th, my wife Julia gave birth to a son at 6:30 p.m. and the next day Eliza returned to Snowflake.

On the 19th we had a snow storm. The ladies of the place gave a Ball and invited their partners. I was invited by Miss Lizzie Owens as her partner. The weather had been quite cold and there was not much trade which made our trade a little dull for a while, and our local trade did not amount to much.

On the 21st I blessed my little son and gave him the name of Roland Woodruff.

Brother John A. Freeman had come down for a load of Wood, and he had a wild horse along. While he was leading them to water on the morning of the 21st, his wild one got frightened and frightened the others and they ran away with him. The rope catching his wrist, they dragged him something over a block and kicked at him every jump, he finally got loose but was badly injured. So I went up to Snowflake and drove his team for him, taking him home. He, however, soon got over his injuries. The next day I did some work about the tithing matters and returned to Woodruff in the afternoon.

April 13th, the same work in the store still goes on, receiving goods and sending them out. The most that we set off were orders for other stores and this made our trade mostly wholesale. Brother Hulet and I have all the work to do, not having had any help since New Years. This, of course, keeps us quite busy but at this season from New Years on, for a couple of months is a slack time in trade.

I went up to Snowflake today and found my wife, Adelaide, in rather poor health, she was rather delicate and much of the time she was not able to do much, her little boys helped her about the house work considerably.

The next day I went on up to the farm and the next day attended meeting there. Things were looking a little more prosperous for the settlers than common. Brother Albert Minerly was fitting up the old Sunset Sawmill which William J. Flake had purchased and brought up from the Sunset Mountains, and he expected to be cutting lumber in a very short time.

The Dan (Red) Holcum place about three miles above mine was burned about a week before. This place was the one that Payne occupied before he was killed, and had been the rendezvous for thieves for sometime. Some thought that it was the work of Indians and some thought that it was some of their own party that burned it, as there had been a falling out in the party not long before this.

April 16th, I went down to Snowflake with Brother Niels Peterson, my wife Adelaide was somewhat better than when I went up. I spent the afternoon in putting up a couple of grave stones for our two little ones that were laid away in the Snowflake Cemetery.

On Saturday, President Smith went over to St. Johns, the County seat, for the purpose of having our wards incorporated so they could hold property as a ward organization. On the 17th I returned to Woodruff going down on the buckboard.

April 18th, Apostle John Henry Smith and President Jesse N. Smith came down to Woodruff and held meeting in the evening. My son, John L., came down from the farm, and the next day the two brother Smith's went down to

Holbrook where Apostle Smith took the train for Utah, and Jesse N. Smith returned to Snowflake the following day, my wife, Julia, going along with him.

The spring had been cold and windy but thus far no frost to kill the fruit of which there was a good prospect.

On the 28th, the U. S. District Court that had been in session at St. Johns adjourned without doing any business to speak of.

May 4th, I went up to Snowflake and the next day I went on up to Pinedale (that is to my place which was in Pinedale ward). President Smith, James Lewis, and Henry Lunt and family were along. Brother Lunt had just arrived from Utah, he having come out to avoid the prosecutions for polygamy and we were going up to get him located for the time being. He was going by the name of Cope.

Meeting was held on the 6th, at which James Lewis, Joseph Fish, Henry Lunt, and President Smith spoke. In the evening a meeting was held at my house. We managed to get Brother Lunt quite comfortably located, I let him have one of my houses to live in, I also let him have six acres of land to cultivate for the season. He also had the use of my plows, corrals, etc. Bishop Peterson let him have some land. He was not able to do much in the line of farming, but he had several boys that were large enough to do considerable. He thought this was a lonesome place, and out of the world, it was certainly in the forest region and probably looked lonesome to one that had never lived in such a place. It was no more than a ranch and one could not expect to have city conveniences in such a place. We however, did the best we could for him.

On the 7th, I returned to Snowflake and wrote some letters to the Bishops concerning our coming conference, and the next day I went on to Woodruff.

May 23rd, the business in the store has been a little more brisk of late, but the weather continues dry and windy.

Brother Peterson came down last evening and brought a letter from home, the family were all well, but it seemed good to get this word and to get letters as there is no regular mail up there and letters are sometimes a long while getting through from Snowflake on.

On the 31st, the store of A. and B. Schuster at Holbrook was robbed by a man named McNeal who went into the store late in the evening and forced Schuster to open the safe, he got about \$200 mostly in checks and most of it was recovered.

I went up to Snowflake with Brother L. H. Hatch and attended a meeting of the High Council. David E. Adams applied for baptism he had been cut off for adultery sometime before, had been rebaptized and cut off the second time for the same offense. After hearing the case and taking into consideration the circumstances, the Council gave permission for him to be rebaptized.

1888
Chapter 74
The A. C. M. I. Moves Its Business to Holbrook

June 1st, the Relief Society and Primary held their conference at Snowflake and on the 2nd, our quarterly conference commenced, which I attended and acted as stake clerk as usual. This with my work in the store kept me busy most of the time and it gave me considerable extra labor.

On the 4th I returned to Woodruff with Brother Joseph C. Hansen where I worked a little harder to make up for lost time.

On the 10th, I attended meeting at Woodruff and gave a short sketch of the main instructions that were given at our late conference.

On the 6th, President Jesse N. Smith, Lorenzo H. Hatch, Joseph H. Richards, Albert Jones (he was known out here as Frank Bradshaw) and Smith D. Rogers started for the Tonto Basin Ward. President Smith went to look after and encourage the people of that district and Brother Jones went to fix up the tithing accounts of the wards. He was not here to avoid the officers on the polygamy charges and was also sent to look after the tithing matters in this district. On the return of the company, he and Brother Richards went across to the Moencopie Ward and fixed up the tithing accounts there. He (Brother Jones) had visited all the wards in the St. Johns Stake and had been over this stake, this being the last ward to visit. President Smith and party returned by way of St. Joseph. At this place, Bishop William B. Preston joined the party, he had just come in from Utah, and they all went on to Snowflake where they arrived on the 18th.

This was a terribly windy day, one of the worst in this country noted for sand storms. The annual round-up was going on and there were about 60 cowboys in this vicinity and some of them were rather hard looking fellows.

On the 19th, I went up to Snowflake with my son, Joseph C. Bishop Preston held meeting at Snowflake and went on his journey the next day.

I went on up to the ranch in the evening, where I spent a couple of days in fixing up about the place.

On the 23rd, I went down to Snowflake, my wife Eliza and son, John L., were along.

The next day they returned and I went on to Woodruff.

There was a most disastrous fire in Holbrook today which destroyed all the business part of the place. It burned all the stores, depot, section house, and some fifteen railroad cars, many of them were loaded with supplies for Fort Apache. It was estimated that the loss was over \$100,000.

Some of our people were down there at the time and assisted in saving what property they could. Some were accused of keeping some of the goods that they recovered. There was perhaps some truth in this charge, James D. Smithson, Jr. was arrested for taking things but was finally released by proving that his wife took them and did not know what to do with them. This little incident gave our people at Woodruff a rather bad name for a while at Holbrook. The Snowflake ward donated some \$50 to help the sufferers which was mostly subscribed by the Relief Society. The origin of the fire was never exactly accounted for, but it started in a house where wood was stored and some thought it was a spontaneous combustion, the wind being high, it soon spread to the other parts of the town.

July 4th, the day was celebrated at Woodruff, but I was too busy to attend the meeting. The business at the store did not allow me to attend anything that I could reasonably dispense with. I occasionally went out as has been noted, to Snowflake, but more of these trips were on church duties, etc., and arrangements were made each time so that Brother Hulet would remain when I was away. Trade was now a little better as the wool was coming in and being shipped off. Wool was now bringing at the depot 11 ½ to 12 ½ cents a pound.

July 13th, I went up to Snowflake and commenced to put up a house for my wife Adelaide. I had got the logs sawed at the mill 4 inches thick and some eight or ten inches wide. The house was 16 X 18 feet. I later weatherboarded it

on the outside. I assisted President Smith in making a plat of some land that we were trying to purchase from the Aztec land and Cattle Company, and in the afternoon of the next day I went to Pinedale. On the 15th I attended meeting there and spoke on the evils of using slang phrases, etc., and the next day returned to Snowflake.

I finished putting up the body of the house for Adelaide on the 17th. Amos and Smith D. Rogers assisted me in this work, in fact I had to hire nearly all the work done as I was able on these trips only to look after the work that was being done. The next day I returned to Woodruff.

I attended meeting on the 22nd where Brother Hatch and I were the speakers. There was a celebration of pioneer day on the 24th, but I was busy as usual and did not attend, as I had to put in all the time I could to keep up with my other duties.

I went up to Snowflake on the evening of the 28th and the next morning on to Pinedale where I attended meeting there.

On the 30th, I surveyed off the graveyard in that place in the forenoon and in the afternoon went over east of my place some two miles to trace up some lines and locate the corners of some land that Brother Henry Lunt was talking of taking up. He was still living in one of my houses and was talking of taking up a place here.

The next day I returned to Woodruff, it rained quite hard in the afternoon and I got quite wet. My trip back and forth, like my labors in the store, have a sameness, and these outs form a large part of my journal as the labor in the store is nothing but a continual pouring over accounts and making out bills and posting up books, etc. But a records of these trips when I get out of the store may show in a small degree the variety of labors that I was called to perform, and may aid in a measure to explain how I have to work and the disadvantages that we had to encounter in a new country, and the variety of duties that called me from one place to another besides the cares of a family, which I was looking after as best I could by rendering what help and counsel that I was able to do. They were, however, equal to the trying times that the early settlers had to go through and seldom complained but did their best to help to keep the wolf from the door, and still I ought not to complain for we were doing as well as our neighbors and better than some of them. I had learned something by my experience at the store, that it was more expensive to live away from home and board out than to be at home, as I had to buy and hire so much that I could have done myself had I been at home, and still I did not know what to do to better my condition. If the store had been in the same town where I lived, things would have been much different and more agreeable for all of us.

August 9th, there was a meeting of the Board of Directors of the store held at Woodruff to consider a proposition that had been made by Mr. W. H. Burbage of the firm of Adamson and Burbage of Holbrook. Mr. Burbage came up and proposed to the board to turn over their goods that they had just received, we to pay freight and pay for the goods the same as if we had bought them, and he would turn over the freight contract to Fort Apache and we collect debts owing his firm to the amount of some \$7,000 and to pay the same amount to parties that they were owing. They were burned out at the late fire and they had no old stock and the goods that they had, had been ordered after the fire and had but recently come and had not been opened. The board considered the proposition and met again the next day and after going over the accounts they threw out about \$500 of the debts and then accepted the proposition and made the trade. This move necessitated our transferring our business to Holbrook.

August 11th, the Frush Circus Company arrived in Holbrook today and put up their tent but the wind blew so hard that they had to take it down again and they did not show but packed up and went on to Snowflake.

On the 13th, Brother Hulet and I went down to Holbrook to complete the details of the trade with Adamson and Burbage and check up some of the goods and accounts. The next day was spent in going over some of the items and in checking up some of the goods, we finished up the business on the 16th with the exception of a few minor points. We assumed about \$6,000 of accounts due them, and we were to pay the same amount to merchants that they were owing. Their new goods that they had not opened came to a little over \$11,000 which we took and paid for when the bills became due, the same as if we had made the purchases ourselves. We took the building that they had rented for three years paying the rent the same as if we had rented it.

In the evening I went up to Woodruff and went to work on the books fixing up for the yearly settlement and in a few days returned to Holbrook, where we had plenty to do as the house that we had rented had not as yet been finished

up, the shelving was not all in and we brought some of ours down from Woodruff and the counters were not yet in but we soon had these fixed up.

September 1st, our quarterly conference commenced at St. Joseph which I attended. Apostle John Henry Smith and Bishop Robert T. Burton were present and occupied considerable of the time giving some very good instructions. As soon as meeting was out in the afternoon of the 2nd, I started for Woodruff stopping about an hour at Holbrook to fix up a few accounts.

The Board of Directors for the store met at Woodruff on the 3rd. They did some business and arranged for our moving our business to Holbrook. They declared a dividend for the past year of 15%, this was below what it had been in the previous years, but the last years business was not as good as common for various causes. In the afternoon there was a meeting of the share holders at which there was a new board elected but it was practically the old one, I was elected as secretary and treasurer. It was decided to consolidate the Snowflake store with the Arizona C. M. I. making it all as one business and to incorporate under the laws of the Territory. This with our move to Holbrook was expected to increase our trade very materially and we were not deceived in our expectations. The next day I went down to Holbrook and worked very hard transferring all of the accounts into a new ledger, the consolidating the two stores and the move to Holbrook had increased my labors for a while nearly double.

September 12th, I went up to Woodruff and back again the next day. We had moved our business to Holbrook and considerable of our goods, but there were many things yet at Woodruff and we were keeping this store going so it required a trip up there quite often.

While in Holbrook, I boarded at F. W. Zuck's Hotel, it cost me \$25 a month which took one third of my wages, and this board bill was cheaper than it often was.

September 21st, I have been quite poorly for about a week, was hardly able to work but still I kept around and did my work.

At our last Board meeting it was decided to hire Farley Richards to keep the books in the store. He has been with us since, but thus far he had not given satisfaction as he had never had any experience in that line.

My son John L. and Melvina Cheney got married about a week ago and they came down today being on their way to St. George to go through the temple. My wife, Eliza, and daughter Jessie May, were along and were going to Utah with them. Oscar Lunt was also along, going on with them. In the afternoon they went on to St. Joseph. I accompanied them thus far and we stopped with Brother Bushman. The next morning the folks started on their journey, Brother John D. Lee from Luna Valley was going to travel with them. I bid them goodbye and returned to Holbrook going up on the train. I little thought as I rode out to the edge of town with them, that Eliza's visit would be lengthened out as long as it was. During the afternoon we had quite a heavy rain.

On arriving at the store, I took my labors as usual, the same old work and there had been more of it getting our goods down from Woodruff and putting them up and getting in some more shelving, etc.

October 1st, President Jesse N. Smith and several others came down to Holbrook last evening and a meeting of the shareholders in the store was held today. The business was incorporated under the laws of the Territory and the company was organized. The Board of Directors were Jesse N. Smith, Joseph H. Richards, John R. Hulet, Joseph Fish, John W. Freeman, John Bushman, and Lorenzo Brown. The other officers remained as they were before. In the afternoon Brother Smith and a few others took the train for Salt Lake City to attend the October Conference.

October 3rd, a cowboy by the name of Kennedy was shot in a saloon near our store, he had been drinking, a coroner's jury cleared the man who shot him. It was a sad ending of one of this reckless class of which there were many who were coming to an untimely end through this part of the country.

October 4th I rode up to Woodruff with Lars Peterson and the next day we went on up to Pinedale stopping in Snowflake but a short time as we passed.

October 6th, I worked helping to get up some corn, etc., and the next day attended meeting, Henry Lunt was the main speaker.

On the 8th, I got a load of lumber at the mill and my son Joseph C. and I went down to Snowflake with it where I made some arrangements about getting my house completed. I had to hire everything that I had done in this line and this ate a large hole in my salary.

The next day I went on to Woodruff with my son and there took the Buckboard for Holbrook where I again took up the labors of wrestling with accounts.

Purdy Richards who had been working at the books found that he was not equal to the task and had quit. He only worked a month, and I had this work to do, in fact I had done much of it while he was there which was only a month.

On the 18th, there was a man here committed suicide by cutting his throat, he was a horrible sight, being covered with blood.

On the 15th, the Democrats held their convention and got out a ticket for the coming election, three Mormons were given places on it. On the 17th, the Republicans held their convention under the name of the Peoples Party and got out their ticket, there was but one Mormon Delegate present and there was no Mormon placed on their ticket. This had the appearance of being a little anti-Mormon and had the effect doubtless, of turning many votes to the Democratic party. These conventions started the political pot boiling, and each party commenced in earnest to talk up their side of the question. On the 27th, there was a political meeting in Holbrook at which General Wilson, the Republican candidate for Delegate to Congress, made quite a talk for his side, but the main efforts were to show how little Mark A. Smith, the present Delegate, had done for Arizona.

November 3rd, my wife Adelaide came down with her father and we went back to Woodruff in the evening. Meeting was held the next day at Woodruff at which President Smith gave an interesting account of his trip to Utah and the main items of the conference news. I returned to Holbrook in the evening.

November 6th, was election day which passed off quietly, there were about 90 votes polled at Holbrook, they were quite evenly divided, but through the Mormon settlements, the Democratic ticket got a large majority, the whole Democratic ticket was elected. This was wormwood to many of the other party, but the Peoples Party started out to abuse the Mormons and their organ, the "Apache Review", published in St. Johns and edited by John T. Hogue started an anti-Mormon crusade of vilifying and slandering the Mormons. This had a tendency to drive that people to the other party regardless of politics. The Peoples Party saw their mistake when it was too late and many of them denounced the stand taken by the paper, but the evil had been done, and it was too late in the day to mend or patch it up.

On the 25th, Brothers Shumway and Hatch, returned missionaries, came in bringing two families of saints that they had converted, and went on up to Woodruff.

About this time we were having more rain than common and the roads were quite muddy, which was retarding the freighting some. We were sending the freight through to Fort Apache on the Adamson and Burbage contract which we had taken over.

December 1st, 1888, I went up to Woodruff with Brother Perkins and then on to Snowflake with F. A. Webb, the water was high and roads muddy and the bridge across the Little Colorado could not be used having been damaged by high water, but we managed to get through.

Our quarterly conference commenced at Taylor on the 2nd, and then after it adjourned, I went on up to Pinedale, returning to Snowflake the next day and on the 5th went on down to Holbrook on the buckboard taking my son Horace N. along, where later I got him in the government telegraph office to learn telegraphy.

When we first moved our store to Holbrook, that place was rather a rough and frontier town as I have stated, and there were many odd things happened but I have mentioned but very few of them, if any.

There was a man living here who had taught the school and one of the noted men of the place named Skaggs, he was always called Professor Skaggs. He had been married but the union proved to be an unhappy one, he and his wife had separated and doubtless that was the cause of his coming west. However, after a few years, he thought that he would try it again and soon got in correspondence with a woman in the east and a match was soon made and he sent money for her to come out, he had never seen her. He went to the train to meet her on her arrival at the station, and soon found out who the lady of his love was, and taking her to his residence they talked the matter over for a short time, when they arranged things and in an hour or two were married. He seemed delighted with his new wife and for several days said that in his first marriage he drew a blank but this time he thought that he had drawn a prize. Things went on nicely for a few days when all at once his wife was found drunk and she continued to use morphine and whisky from that time on, and was beastly drunk most of the time or under the influence of morphine. This went on a few days when Skaggs became so thoroughly disgusted with her that he left unknown to anybody and I doubt if any one ever found out where he went to. He was ashamed and crest fallen and wanted to get where this trouble was not known I suppose.

1888-1889
Chapter 75
General Labors and the Purchase of Railroad Lands

On December 18th, my son John L. and wife, came in from Utah and in the afternoon went on up to Woodruff. My wife, Eliza, and daughter, Jessie May, did not come with them, Eliza staying with her folks in Parowan.

On the 18th, I went up to Snowflake, took Brother Hulet's team and took a load up for the store, the next day I went on to Pinedale where I found my sons, Joseph C. and John L., busy putting in wheat.

I returned to Snowflake on the 20th and the next day I went up above Taylor to lay off a site for a reservoir, the dam was about 26 rods long and twelve feet high in the highest place. I then went on up to a point near the head of Silver Creek and leveled to see about taking out the water to fill the reservoir and found that there would have to be about eight miles of ditch made through a volcanic formation and this being so loose that it was thought that the water would filter through so the project was abandoned.

December 22nd, I went up to Taylor and ran a few lines and established a few corners so as to straighten up their streets, but the wind blew so hard that I had to quit at noon, and I returned to Holbrook on the 23rd.

Our Christmas passed off very dull for me, I stayed in the store all day and worked at the books. Holbrook was a dull place for Mormons as they found but few associates, the people came in and did their trading, but there was very little intimacy outside of this business.

On the 21st, President Smith and John W. Freeman came down and a meeting of the board was held. A statement of the business for the last three months showed that our sales had been a little over \$24,000. Mr. David Harvey, who owned the building that we were occupying, wished to sell it to us. This point was not acted upon at this time, but we purchased it from him later on. There were no Mormons living in Holbrook at this time, only those who were employed in the store. They were John R. Hulet, Theodore Farley, Clark Owens, and myself. (Farley had his wife living down here, and some of the others had their families.) I was now boarding with Brother Farley's folks.

Brother Hulet and Owens got to go home quite often, but my family or the most of them are further away, besides brother Hulet has a team and goes when he wishes to. I am, however, getting along fairly well, but it takes all my wages to keep my family supplied with the necessaries of life. But I probably get along as well as most others and am thankful for the peace that we have enjoyed for the last two years, our enemies having checked up some in their persecutions, the more bitter ones having left the country. One thing, perhaps, that made us feel more lonesome here was the thought that some of those around us might be watching for an opportunity to give us some trouble, so we practically live to ourselves staying in the store day and night with the exception of Brother Farley who had his family here. I often thought that we were ostracized from the rest of the people of the place and still they were very fair in patronizing our store as a rule, but there were a few who never darkened our door. Thus the new year 1889 came in and days passed as other days, but business attracted our attention so we heeded little what was going on in the saloons and other places where there was drinking and sometimes a killing among this class that knew no law or order.

January 20th, I went up to Woodruff and the next day on to Snowflake and on the 21st, I commenced to settle tithing with the bishops. They had all been notified to be at Snowflake on this date to settle up the tithing for the year. There had been a Bishop's Agent acting but this had been dispensed with and a clerk was to do the business and I was chosen to do this business. I worked at this job all the week putting in long hours. There were two bishops who did not come in, but sent their books, accounts, etc. These were David Brinkerhoff of Tuba City and Rial Allen of the Tonto Basin Ward.

On the 27th, I went up to Pinedale and attended meeting there, Heber K. Perkins and Z. B. Decker were there as home missionaries. I returned to Snowflake early the next morning and continued my labors with the tithing accounts, and finished up on Thursday. The people had paid a very fair tithing. There were 222 tithe payers and the average was about \$28.00 each. The Snowflake ward paid the largest tithe, their average was about \$53 each.

As soon as I finished up the tithing business I returned to Holbrook where my work had piled up so that I was very busy for a few days in trying to catch up with the work. When we left Woodruff and brought down our goods to this place, we left a few goods and kept the store open for the accommodation of the people there. Edward M. Webb had charge of this branch of the business, his daughter, however, did the trading.

On the night of February 20th, this store was broken into by a young man by the name of Packer who resided on the Gila, and a young fellow by the name of Charles Tyler who lived in the place. They got a little clothing and \$12 in cash. They were arrested and pleaded guilty and were fined \$100 each.

There had been considerable trouble about getting the land that we wished from the Aztec Land and Cattle Company. The Church had given \$500 to pay the expenses of Brigham Young Jr. and Jesse N. Smith to go to Washington and New York to try and effect the purchase. They were going to try and get the government to allow the people to perfect their titles to the Lands in question and give the Railroad company other lands in place of these. These two brethren left Woodruff in the latter part of February on their mission.

March 1st, I started up to Snowflake with John Bushman going as far as Woodruff and the next day I went on with R. M. Terrill. The Silver Creek was up so high that we could not cross so we went on to Taylor, where I crossed and then walked down to Snowflake.

Our quarterly Conference convened on the 3rd, which I attended. Counselor Lorenzo H. Hatch presided, President Smith being east. I as usual acted as clerk.

Conference adjourned on the 4th and the next day I went up above town and surveyed a ditch for John Hunt and one for W. W. Willis, and the next day started to go to Holbrook with Brother John Bushman.

My wife, Julia, was along going to Woodruff to pay her folks a visit. We had to go up to Taylor to cross the creek which was still high. On the way to Woodruff the mail came along and I took that conveyance so as to get through that night. We had considerable trouble in crossing the Little Colorado, one of the abutments had been taken out by the high water and we had to get the buckboard over by hand, and then lead the horses over the skeleton bridge that still remained.

I had been boarding while in Holbrook with Brother Joseph L. Clawson and wife, but she had gone back to Taylor so I then started to board at the Royer Hotel. I spend all my time in the store day and night, only when I go to my meals or take a trip out of town.

On the 9th, I went up to Woodruff, and on the 11th, attended meeting there and spoke on the subject of idleness and returned to Holbrook in the afternoon, and the next Sunday I again went up and attended meeting there. Brother Hatch spoke on the subject of obedience.

I returned in the afternoon on the buckboard. Trade was a little dull as it generally is at this season just before the shearing commenced.

On the 20th, the Railroad train was held up and robbed near Canyon Diablo, the Wells Fargo money was taken but the passengers were not molested. There were about five of the robbers. Parties left Holbrook the next morning in pursuit of the robbers.

My wife, Julia, being at Woodruff, I tried to go up there on a Sunday as I had nothing here to go out to. I frequently went up there after the store had closed on Saturday evening and returned after meeting on Sunday evening, and generally made these trips on foot; it usually took me about three to three and a half hours to walk it.

On the 29th, my son, John L., came down and loaded freight for Fort Apache and the next day I went up to Woodruff with him. We got stuck in the Puerco as many others had done before and since, and we had to unload and pack the load out on our backs in the quick sand and mud, which was no easy job as anyone who has ever got in that stream can bear me witness, and I fully realized that the life of a freighter was not an easy one. We were now shipping considerable freight to Fort Apache as the roads had been so bad that we had not shipped any for some time, but now we were making an effort to get it through.

At Woodruff I met my wife, Adelaide, who had come down to Woodruff. We attended meeting then she returned to Snowflake and I to Holbrook.

April 7th, Sunday, President Jesse N. Smith arrived at Holbrook from Washington D. C. where he had been to try to get the exchange of Railroad Lands. We could not get the exchange that he wished so he bought on the best terms that he would make. He bought seven sections paying \$4.50 per acre for it, paying one fifth down and the balance was to be paid one fifth each year with 6% interest. This land was for Snowflake and Taylor and a few who resided at Shumway (the grist mill). This was considered a very high price but as we had located and built on it, we could do no better. There was much of this land that was worthless but we had to take it to get the small corners that we wished. While President Smith was east he purchased from the Railroad company one section at Woodruff, this being on the east side of the Little Colorado had not been sold to the Aztec Land and Cattle Company. He paid \$9.00 per acre for it.

On the 14th, I went up to Snowflake and attended meeting. President Smith gave an account of his labors while east to purchase lands, said he was aided very materially by John W. Young. In paying for this land, the people raised what they could at each payment and the balance the Church paid.

The next day I went on up to Pinedale with Joseph W. Smith where I found the folks all well but the boys were a little behind in their work of putting in their crops. Things around the place looked quite dry and the sheep had been driven in around here until there was scarcely any feed left, and it begins to look as if a person would have to keep his cows up and feed them if this letting the sheep run all around the place is permitted.

I returned to Snowflake on the 16th, and the next day I worked at the Snowflake Co-op tracing up some errors in the accounts. I returned to Holbrook on the 18th.

On the 19th, John R. Hulet started for Los Angeles to bid on the freight contract from Holbrook to Fort Apache. This was a government contract and the bids were to be opened on the 22nd.

My son, Horace N., came down with me to study telegraphy and took his first lesson today, I had sent for an instrument for him.

Brother Henry Lunt (known here as John Cope) came in last night from Mexico. He had been down there to look over the country and if it suited him, he was going to move there, which he later did. He went on up home on the buckboard.

May 10th, 1889, I went up to Snowflake and the next day on up to Pinedale and on the 12th, attended meeting and spoke on the subject of honesty is the best policy in all things. Although there had been some snow and rain during the past winter than common, the country was looking quite dry.

I returned to Snowflake on Monday and the next day on to Holbrook.

May 19th, it has been very cold for this time of year, and last night ice formed as thick as a window glass and most of the fruit was killed. These cold snaps with the wind and sand storms all go to help make this region desolate and at these times, it looks as if it were indeed a desert.

I keep as busy as ever while I am in the store where I spend all my time day and night when I am in Holbrook.

June 2nd, I went up to Snowflake to attend our quarterly conference which convened today. I took the minutes as usual, but was feeling quite poorly and the last meeting of the conference I was unable to attend and Joseph W. Smith took the minutes for me. There were quite a number present from Tonto and Tuba City Wards (Tuba City and Moencopie were practically the same, Moencopie was started on the creek and then later on they built on the bench some half a mile to the south and called the place Tuba City in honor of the chief that resided near the place.) One reason that brought out so many from these remote places was that there was a case from each ward to come before the High Council and this brought some that were interested in the case and some as witnesses. On the 3rd, there was a meeting of the High Council which met quarterly when we had our conference.

I was quite sick in the forenoon and the next day not able to sit up very much of the time. On the 9th I was somewhat better and went down to Holbrook where I again took up the old work of posting up books, making out bills, selling goods, etc. I always worked quite steady while I was in the store, sometimes putting in 18 hours a day. I had to do this to make up for the lost time when I was absent.

On Sunday the 9th, I made out the missionary list which I did every conference. They were generally given two visits each, but this time John W. Freeman and Henry M. Tanner were sent to the Tonto Basin Ward. This was the first time that we had sent our home missionaries so far off. Tonto and Tuba City were over a hundred miles from Snowflake.

Our trade is about as much on Sundays as any other day, this I regretted very much, but other stores traded considerable on Sundays and when we were in the store someone was coming in quite often so we traded with them. Often we closed the front door on Sunday but left the side door open so we neither closed up on Sunday nor opened up the same as we did other days. It was frequently the case that those who lived off a few miles came in on Sunday and they expected to do their trading while in town. The section hands do all their trading on Sundays. At this time there was but little regard for the Sabbath Day at this place.

June 15th, I went down to St. Joseph with Brother J. H. Richards, and the next day attended meeting there and occupied a large portion of the time. The people of St. Joseph were a hard working and energetic community. They had labored hard to make homes in this wild wilderness, which it was when they arrived here. They had spent an immense amount of labor on their dams and ditches, which like many others on the Little Colorado, had gone out many times. It seemed almost impossible to construct a dam on this river that would withstand the enormous floods that occasionally came down. The Church had donated \$500 to assist the people of this place in putting in their dam. Improvements were beginning to be built. Brother John Bushman had erected a nice two story brick dwelling house which was now ready for the roof. Here, like the other surrounding settlements, the frost had killed the fruit. Of course there was not much in these places at this date, but what little there was would have been of great benefit had the late spring frost not destroyed it. I returned to Holbrook in the evening with Brother Richards.

On the 28th, I went up to Snowflake with William Morgan. I found my wife, Adelaide, quite poorly, her health is not good and she is sick much of the time, but she is always hopeful that she will soon have better health. My wife, Julia, came down from Pinedale. The next day I attended a meeting of the high priests, these meetings were generally held on the last Saturday of each month.

I had arranged to let Joseph and John have my place at Pinedale and I was fixing to homestead a place about half way between Snowflake and Taylor near the Snowflake Reservoir. I took a load of logs up there to start a place. There was about 60 acres of land that could be brought under cultivation.

On the 30th, I started to go over to St. Johns having to appear before the Grand Jury as a witness. Smith D. Rogers, S. F. Murphy, J. Hatch, and C. Mills were along going over to attend court. We drove a little past Concho and the next day reached St. Johns quite early. I went and visited the District Attorney, gave him what information I had as a witness, left what papers I had with him in relation to the case, and he released me as a witness.

I then went to the Clerk's office and made my filing on the quarter section at the reservoir, had a short talk with Judge Wright who seemed to be a fair man but he had the name of being easily influenced by those who had his confidence. I started home in the evening with Brother Allen Frost. I stopped with J. Brady and the next day reached Snowflake, and the following day went on to Holbrook having had a very dry and dusty trip.

1889-1890
Chapter 76
General Labors at Holbrook

July 4th, 1889, was spent in Holbrook much as other holidays by the cowboys getting drunk, and I spent the day as I did others in the store at work, and thus the days passed on with a sameness. To me it was rather lonesome for Holbrook was a lonesome place for Mormons at that date.

On the 15th, the deputy Sheriff H. A. Larson, went out on the road towards St. Joseph to arrest three men that had just left town. They were supposed to have in their possession some stolen horses that they were driving through from New Mexico. About half way to St. Joseph he overtook the men and in attempting to arrest them, one resisted and was shot. He took the other two prisoners and brought them back to town. These were sent back to New Mexico where they had fled from, but before getting there they were lynched. A coroner's jury was held over the dead man on the ground where he was killed by Larson. The deputy was exonerated as it appeared he killed the man in self defense. A grave was dug on the spot. One of the jurors, F. M. Zuck, remarked that the grave was not dug right, the head being partly to the north. Frank J. Watteron who had charge and was the sheriff, asked why. When Mr. Zuck said that the head should be to the west so that in the morning of the resurrection that he would come up facing the sun, Watteron replied, "The hell, he will not be there," and tumbled the man into the grave boots and all, just as he was.

July 16th, President Jesse N. Smith and Brother Henry Lunt came into Holbrook on their way to Tuba City where they were going to look after the people of that ward and preach to them and look after their spiritual welfare. Brother Lunt was expecting to meet some members of his family who were expected in from Utah.

On the 18th, I went up to Woodruff in the evening where I met my son, Joseph C. and my wife, Julia, who had come down with Brother Lunt and expected to return with Joseph C. We had a very hard wind and rain storm which did some damage flooding houses, breaking down shade trees, etc.

On the 25th, my son, Horace N., who had been at Holbrook with me learning telegraphy under the government operator, Mr. Chadwick, went home. He had made very fair progress in his work.

On the 28th, I went up to Woodruff with Sister Ellen Greer and attended meeting there. There were home missionaries from Snowflake, I returned in the evening. These trips out of Sundays were short and sometimes I had to pay my fare, but I wished to get out of the store as often as I could for there was nothing in the place that had any attraction for me. These outings were a change and left health and vigor to me and renewed energy which it most invariably does to one who has been used to an outdoor life and is penned up in a store pouring over books and accounts.

July 29th, the stormy season seemed to have passed and it has cleared up but the atmosphere seemed like fall of the year, smoky, and when the sun set it looked like a dark red ball.

August 8th, I went up to Snowflake, it rained quite hard and I got thoroughly wet through. I found my son, Silas L., quite sick, he had some fever but he appeared to be improving.

The next day I went on up to Pinedale with my sons, Joseph C. and John L., who happened to be down from the farm. Brother Lunt's family were still at my place, things were looking a little more promising than usual, it had been a very good year in the forest for crops but unfortunately my boys did not have in as much of a crop as they would have liked to have.

On Sunday I attended meeting and spoke on the history of the Church and the persecutions of the saints.

On August 12th, I went down to Snowflake and the next day on to Holbrook. On all these trips I was generally busy, doing more or less business collecting debts, looking up errors, taking orders, and looking after all necessary business with our customers who many of them were very careless in the way that they did their business. This with my own affairs kept me busy when I was out of the store, as well as when I was in it.

August 19th, some of the party who went out to the Moqui Villages to attend the Snake Dance returned today. These Snake Dances of the Moquis are said to be very interesting. These dances are held every year in the latter part of August but not at the same village. A short time before the dance, they go out on the benches and bottoms and catch snakes of all kinds, among them are a great number of rattlesnakes. In catching them, they take a feather and fasten to the end of a stick, with this they tickle the snake until it straightens out and they then pick it up. They bring all the snakes to the village, wash them, and put in a kind of gunney sack and in a dark place. Then the dance comes off, the snake dancers stick their hands in and each gets a handful of the snakes taking some in their mouths and some in their hands, then coming out, they dance in a circle with snakes in their hands and mouths (a good many rattlers among them). After dancing awhile, they throw the snakes in a pile in the center of the circle which soon forms a writhing mass of venomous reptiles. After some ceremonies of sprinkling some meal, the dancers take up a handful of snakes and run off with them in four different directions and turn the snakes loose. After this, they take an antidote to counteract the poison, for many of them have been bitten by the rattlers. This antidote makes them very sick. What this medicine is, no white man has yet been able to find out.

August 30th, the people commenced to pass here on their way to attend the conference which was to be held at St. Joseph. My wife, Adelaide, was along with them and went on, but my boys, Horace N., and Silas L., stopped with me and we went down on Saturday evening on the train. The place where we got off was some distance from the town and we had considerable trouble in getting to town through fences and over ditches and through the mud, they have been irrigating. Our conference convened on September 1st, President Robson and his counselor, Collins R. Hakes, from the Maricopa Stake were present, the latter an old friend of mine in Parowan. We had stood guard together, been on Indian raids, and worked together so we were greatly pleased to meet each other. There was a priesthood meeting in the evening. The people of Woodruff, or a majority of them, had presented a petition to the High Council to have Bishop Owens of that place removed and a new Bishop appointed. There was some talk on the subject after which it was decided to send the petition to President Woodruff for his action in the matter. Conference closed on the afternoon of the 2nd. The visiting brethren were very kindly treated by the people of St. Joseph, who have always been noted for their kind treatment of visitors. The people had raised an abundance of watermelons which were freely distributed among the visitors, and they were enjoyed very much. St. Joseph was noted for raising the best watermelons in the country.

I returned to Holbrook in the evening and the next day we commenced to take stock in the store for our annual settlement, we finished up this job on the 7th. The merchandise on hand was about \$20,000 and the outstanding debts that were considered good were about the same amount. The capital stock of the institution was a little over \$31,000. We always let our stock of goods run down some just before taking stock and then fill up with new goods, besides our goods here we had some in Woodruff and then the Snowflake store was not counted in the estimate.

On the 15th, I went up to Woodruff and returned in the evening. My life here alone is as I have stated, rather a lonesome one. I board at the hotel which takes just one third of my wages. I sleep on the floor in the store.

On the 19th, I went up to Snowflake and the next day I commenced to put up a house on the quarter section that I had homesteaded. There were three rooms 15 X 15 feet each, built in the form of an L. The building was made of lumber, Silas D. Smith assisted me some in this work, of course I had to hire the most of the work done and buy the material and get it hauled.

I returned to Holbrook on the 22nd. September 28th, I went up to Woodruff with Brother Lunt and the next day President Jesse N. Smith who had come down from Snowflake reorganized the ward by releasing Bishop Owens and putting in Edward M. Webb as Bishop, with F. A. Webb and James C. Owens Jr. (we have always called him Clark Owens) as his counselors. This organization appeared to give good satisfaction. Bishop Owens had tendered his resignation the day before, but not until he was about forced to it. He felt quite hurt over the affair, still he acknowledged that he could not unite the people but seemed unwilling for any one else to try to do it. I returned to Holbrook with President Jesse N. Smith.

On September 30th, a Board Meeting for the store was held at which a dividend of 20% was declared for the year. A stockholders meeting was held at which a new Board of Directors were elected, who were as follows: Jesse N. Smith, John R. Hulet, John Bushman, Joseph Fish, John W. Freeman, Joseph H. Frisby, and Lorenzo Brown. The new board organized by putting in Jesse N. Smith as president, John W. Freeman vice president, James E. Shelly, secretary and Joseph Fish, superintendent. Brother Hulet who had been called on a mission resigned. He would have been the superintendent and I the secretary had he not been going away.

The next day President Smith and several others started for Utah to attend the Conference at Salt Lake City.

October 23rd, the recent organization of the forces in the store, and Brother Hulet going away has thrown considerable work upon me. He quit on the 1st and since that time I had all the work of his and mine to do as Brother Shelley has not arrived, and added to this double work, we were shipping out ten loads of barley a day to Fort Apache. All of this had to be billed out and checked up. This gave us all the work that we could possibly do.

I went down to Albuquerque today to make some arrangements for Mr. Mandell to purchase some goods for us in New York. He was going down there for the purpose of purchasing and making this his business, buying for different firms. The next day I did some business with the bank and purchased some goods that we needed, and made the arrangements with Felix Mandell to purchase a few things for us in New York. He was going to live there and make this his business while his brother managed their business in Albuquerque.

October 25th, I took the train at 1 a.m. and arrived in Holbrook at noon. On the way I fell in with James M. Flake, who was just on his return from Europe where he had been on a mission for some two years. We had a very pleasant visit on our way in.

On my arrival at Holbrook I found Brother Shelley who had just arrived to take up his labors in the store keeping the books. I was pleased to meet him for I needed help. He proved a very good and careful hand, but was uncommonly slow, which went against him as a man in a business house.

On October 31st, I went up to Snowflake and made arrangements to have my house finished up that I had started when I was up there the last time. I returned the next day.

November 17th, the time has passed about as usual, I having been very busy in the store, and this is generally the case with a merchant. Our trade was very good, the sales being about \$10,000 a month.

I went up to Woodruff and the next day attended meeting there and occupied a portion of the time.

Things were very quiet in regards to the Mormon question. One reason perhaps for this is that both political parties wanted our vote so we were permitted to live in peace for a while which was a great blessing and one that I very much appreciated.

On the 29th, I again went up to Woodruff and the next day on to Snowflake.

December 1st, 1889, Saturday, our quarterly conference convened at Taylor, I as usual, acted as clerk taking the minutes. The conference adjourned on Monday afternoon. During the sessions there was considerable said about educating our children in the Academy and the paying of our tithing.

On the 3rd, I returned to Holbrook with Brother H. M. Tanner, my wife, Adelaide, and son, Horace N., were along.

On the 7th, I went up to Woodruff and the next day I attended meeting there and spoke a short time after which I returned to Holbrook, where I again took up the old labors of ordering goods, paying off bills, looking after the freighting business and a dozen other things that come up every day in a business of this kind.

On the 19th I went up to Snowflake on the buckboard and the next day went on to Pinedale where I found my boys Joseph C. and John L. busy at work but they were not well fixed for winter, they lacked feed for their animals, and that was a great drawback to be short of provender for the stock, for it was hard to get.

On the 21st, I returned to Snowflake, and the next day went on to Holbrook. I stopped and attended meeting as I came along by Woodruff.

December 23rd, the first Presidency of the Church had requested that a general fast should be held on this day, and petition our Heavenly Father for aid in our present condition when our enemies were taking from us every right and privilege that is guaranteed to American citizens. We were having comparative peace in Arizona to what we had a

few years before, but in Utah the efforts of the anti-Mormons were increasing. A late ruling of the court in Utah was that a Mormon was not a fit subject to be naturalized, even though he was perfectly qualified in all other respects. This fast was well observed by the people of the Snowflake Stake. It seemed the only channel open where we could petition for our rights and have our wrongs redressed, for the Government of the United States was no disposed to hear our petitions or give us our rights as American citizens.

Christmas Day passed off quietly in Holbrook and I worked in the store as usual as I always did on holidays and Sundays when I was in this town, for being a Mormon, I was not at home with the people in their entertainments or amusements, still there were many that were quite friendly and treated us with considerable consideration.

On the evening of the 28th, I went up to Woodruff, and the next day Brother L. W. Hatch came in from Utah and President Jesse N. Smith came down from Snowflake. Meeting was held in the afternoon at which Brothers Hatch and J. H. Frisby spoke. There was an evening meeting held at which President Jesse N. Smith and Joseph Fish spoke. The people of Woodruff seemed to be doing considerably better since their reorganization. Bishop Webb had taken hold with considerable energy and had brought harmony to a great extent with the discontented element. He had made a good beginning, had started new enterprises.

On the 30th, I went down to Holbrook with Brothers Smith and Frisby. A Board Meeting of the A. C. M. I. was held in the afternoon at which the wages of the hands were fixed. My wages were raised considerable now that I had all the management of the business. It was put at \$93.50 per month, that of the secretary was put at what mine had been \$75.00 and the two clerks, Clark Owens and Theodore Farley, was put at \$71.50.

The year had flown with all its joys and sorrows, its cares and troubles. We had been fairly prosperous in our business, but the coming year looked more gloomy and forbidding than the past for the people, as we have our lands to pay for which will be a heavy burden added to our other labors and expenses. But the peace from the prosecutions that we had enjoyed was a bright spot in our horizon and one that we very much appreciated. The crops had been about an average, but the stock industry had not been very good. The sheep business had been a success, this industry had taken a boom, but unfortunately not very many of our people had much invested in this line and did not get the benefits of this raise as others did who owned large flocks of sheep.

As to my own affairs, I had done only moderately well, my wages had been heretofore \$75, per month and I paid \$25 a month for board and then I had to pay my own expenses running back and forth to Snowflake and to other places to look after the Stake affairs, accounts, attending High Council meetings, conferences, etc. When I went home on a short visit with the family, I generally went on the buckboard, but sometimes I got a chance to go with some of the brethren and then it did not cost me anything. All these trips added to my expenses, but then I was allowed something for my work as Stake Recorder which helped me some, But the great trouble was that I had been away from home so much that everything was run down and things scattered and not looked after as it would have been had I been there to see to keeping things up. Also I had no chance to improve my place only as I hired it done. Things of course would have been better if I could have had some of my family with me, but I feared the prosecutions if I brought any of them to Holbrook, and another thing, this was no place for a family of saints. The surroundings and the strong prejudice against the saints and the gambling and shooting and drunkenness would have been a bad thing for children to be raised among. As it was, my family were scattered. My wife, Eliza, and daughter, Jessie May, were on a lengthy visit to Utah, Adelaide was at Snowflake and Julia at Pinedale, but spends a portion of her time at Woodruff with her folks. My sons, Joseph C. and John L., were at Pinedale. I had given them the most of the place. John L. later paid me considerable back on the place. I was making a place at the reservoir above Snowflake for Julia and expected to leave the Pinedale place entirely for the boys.

January 1st, 1890, Wednesday, the New Year came in very pleasantly, and I passed the day the same as I did all other days, in the store at work or reading. While I was in Mexico I tried to study Spanish a little and during these lonely hours in the store when I was away from my family, I tried to read up a little on that language. I am reading the *Book of Mormon* in Spanish, I had read the Testament some little time before, the store however is a very poor place to study in, but in our position, I was compelled almost to brighten up some on my Spanish as we have so many Mexicans to deal with, nearly half of our retail trade is with Mexicans, some of whom do not speak English.

On the 3rd, I attended the funeral of a little child of Brother Thompson's, a young man who happened to be along here with his wife and child and had never been with the saints very much. It was a very windy and disagreeable day, and this country is noted for wind and dust at certain seasons of the year.

On the 4th, I went up to Woodruff and attended Priesthood meeting in the evening, and attended meeting there the next day and returned to Holbrook.

On the 8th, we had a snow storm, as a rule there was never much snow at Holbrook, some times it would fall two or three inches deep and some years there would hardly be enough during the winter to cover the ground.

On the 12th, I went up to Woodruff and returned in the evening.

I try to go out to meetings as often as I can and it is more convenient to go to Woodruff than any other place as the buckboard runs to Woodruff just right, going up in the morning and returning in the evening.

We were having very cold weather for this time of year. The thermometer went down to 2 degrees above zero.

On the 20th, I went up to Woodruff and attended a conjoint meeting of the young men and young ladies associations. I did not think that it was up to the standard. There was so much time in reading minutes, etc. Our associations were becoming too formal as there is so much time spent with the minutes which the secretary ought to do before the meeting. I often thought there could be an improvement in this, and the same fault is to be found with some of our quorum meetings and other gatherings of this kind. I returned to Holbrook the next day.

On the 25th, I went up to woodruff and the next day on to Snowflake with Brother John H. Willis who had just returned from Utah.

On the 27th, I commenced the work of settling up the tithing accounts for the stake and worked at this all the week putting in long hours.

On February 2nd I attended meeting there and spoke a short time, this was the first time that I had spoken at Snowflake for nearly three years. The reason I presume was after the difficulty between the President and Bishop that has been mentioned, the Bishop presided at our Sunday Meetings and he did not call on many of those who sided or was connected with the President, so I had been one that had a rest from speaking at Snowflake.

On February 4th, I finished up the tithing work. There were 233 tithe payers in the stake and 12 non-tithe payers. There was a little over \$7,000 paid in the stake. I fixed up the papers and mailed them to Bishop Preston and in the afternoon returned to Holbrook.

The weather was fine, but little snow, and the Mormon question was still very quiet.

1890
Chapter 77
A Trip to Utah to Conference

February 10th was a most terrible windy day, the wind coming from the northwest. President Smith and L. H. Hatch passed Holbrook on their way to St. Joseph to attend a family gathering of Brother Bushman, they were going to celebrate their silver wedding.

On the 12th, I went up to Woodruff with President Smith and the next day on to Snowflake. It was a terribly windy day, it had been very windy for quite a period which makes it very disagreeable.

February 13th, was my wife, Adelaide's birthday and several of the relatives came in and spent the evening with us, several speeches were made upon the family history, etc., President Smith being the main speaker upon this subject. These gatherings upon a person's birthday had become very common, especially with the Smith family, they generally sing songs, and talk of family incidents. I returned on the 15th on the buckboard to Holbrook, where I found plenty of work.

The 18th was another very windy day, the sand drifts in places in this valley so bad that at the cuts it fills in so bad that the railroad trains are stopped for some time until men are sent and shovel it out.

On the 20th, Apostle Brigham Young arrived here and I went on to Woodruff with him. Meeting was held in the evening at which he spoke at some length warning the people and telling them to be more united for the United States was bent on our destruction and nothing but faith would take this people through, and we would have to rely on the Lord. I spoke a few minutes.

The next day Brother Joseph Robinson who was here from Fillmore and was going under the assumed name of John Lock took Apostle Young up to Taylor, I went along with them. When we reached the creek below Snowflake, we found a raging torrent of water which we could not cross so we went on up to Taylor, where we found the bridge gone so we stopped all night with B. Y. Perkins who lived on the east side of the stream. The next day the stream had fallen some and I managed to get over on a raft which turned over just as we got to shore and I got wet, swimming out. This flood took out all the dams, bridges, etc., along the creek, damaged the ditches, took off considerable fencing and damaged some of the farming land, taking some of it away. Taylor lost both of their dams and the dam at Woodruff went out which was the greatest loss sustained in this part of the country.

I went down to Snowflake where I worked at fixing up some tithing accounts that had to be changed some. Meeting was held on the 23rd at which Apostle Young spoke about our paying for the land that had been bought from the Railroad and the Aztec Land and Cattle Company. This looked to be impossible, the people did not have the money and the damage that they had sustained by the floods had made them feel poorer than ever, it looked rather dark for them.

I went down to Holbrook on the 24th, where I learned that the railroad bridge at Winslow had been taken away by the flood, and that the reservoir at Walnut Creek in the Prescott region had gone out and about fifty persons had lost their lives and several millions of dollars worth of property was destroyed. This season of floods in Northern Arizona was a heavy blow to the northern part of the Territory.

On the 28th, Apostles Francis M. Lyman and John Henry Smith came into Holbrook. President Smith and Bishop Hunt came down to meet them and they all returned to Woodruff in the afternoon. I went along with President Smith. Meeting was held at Woodruff in the evening at which the Apostles spoke upon the duties of a bishop, etc. Edward M. Webb who had been sustained and was acting as bishop, was set apart as Bishop by Apostle Francis M. Lyman.

March 1st, I went on up to Snowflake with the party where the Conference of the Young Men and Young Ladies Associations was held in the afternoon which I attended. Our conference convened on the 2nd, Apostles Brigham Young Jr., Francis M. Lyman, and John Henry Smith were present. Apostle Smith took dinner with me and we had a very pleasant and social visit.

Conference adjourned on the 3rd and the next day I went down to Holbrook taking my wife, Julia, with me as far as Woodruff where she remained with her parents.

I was expecting to go on to Utah but on arriving at Holbrook, I received a letter from my wife, Eliza, who said that she did not wish to return to Arizona yet.

I also received a statement from Eisemann Brothers about the wool which was consigned to them by John R. Hulet last July, this wool belonged to William Amos and was handled by our firm and it appeared that Hulet had consigned it and the arrangements were that Amos would receive so much as an advance and he understood there was no draw back. This statement showed that we were behind on this amount that was advanced \$1,600 which we were expected to pay as the wool did not bring what was expected. In the outcome of this affair, Amos refused to pay it as he was guaranteed a certain amount so we had to pay it, it was a total loss to us, but it resulted in making Amos and some others our fast and lasting friends as it cemented our word so that we were considered good in every respect. Eliza's letter and the necessary delay to get this wool matter fixed up and unraveled caused me to postpone my trip to Utah.

On the 7th, I started up to Snowflake taking a load of freight, I got through the next day. On the 8th my son, John L. came down and took the freight on to Fort Apache and I returned to Holbrook. We were having a cold and windy spring, trade was a little dull, and money scarce and collections hard to make.

On the 16th, I went up to Snowflake making this trip principally for the purpose of raising means to pay for the lands that had been purchased from the Aztec and Railroad companies. The payments had to be made on the first of April. This payment came quite hard on the store as all who had any credit was drawing it out and all who possibly could, were borrowing of the store and other places. The store in this emergency advanced some money to a few to help out, and every string was being pulled that would raise a dollar. I returned to Holbrook on the 18th. The people raised all that they possibly could, and then the Church made up the balance at each of the payments and took on interest in the land for the amounts, but much of this was donated to the stake in the end for school and other purposes. These anxieties kept me busy and worried more than usual.

I went up to Woodruff on the 29th, and the next day attended meeting there. President Smith was down from Snowflake and spoke. I went back to Holbrook on the 31st with him, where a meeting of the Board of Directors for the store was held. Brother Shelley wished to be released as bookkeeper, he was a very careful and accurate accountant but uncommonly slow, and he felt that he was not able to fill the position on that account. The matter of the loss of the \$1,600 was talked over and a letter written to Brother Hulet to ascertain the facts in the case.

Having made the arrangements to go to Utah, I took the train at 9 p.m. for Salt Lake City with the expectation of meeting my wife, Eliza, and with her doing some temple work and also attending the conference. On reaching Navajo station several from St. Johns joined us among whom were E. N. Freeman, the Berry boys and some others.

April 1st, 1890, we arrived in Albuquerque at about 8 a.m. and I spent the day in getting bonds fixed up for a bid on a government contract from Holbrook to Fort Apache, as I wished to get in a bid on this contract. I also purchased a few goods. It was election day here, and that gave me considerable trouble in getting the bonds fixed up as every one was out to the election, or most of them that I wanted to see.

At 4:30 p.m. I took the train and continued my journey, and the next morning we arrived at La Junta quite early where we changed cars and went on to Pueblo, where we were detained for several hours. I improved the time in looking over the city, there were considerable improvements going on, I was told that there were about 600 houses in course of erection. A new depot was being built besides other improvements.

Continuing our journey in the afternoon, we arrived at Salida at about sunset. As we proceeded on, we had a very good view of Marshall's Pass by moonlight. We arrived at Grand Junction at 8 a.m. on the morning of the 3rd. Here I laid off to have a short visit with my Brother Franklin, who resided here or rather about ten miles blow. I found my nephew, Ambrose Thompson here and he took me down to my brothers. I found my brother well but he appeared to be somewhat dejected. He had bought a farm of 160 acres for which he paid \$4500 paying part down and mortgaged the place for the balance. I was fearful that he would not be able to lift the mortgage and that he might loose it all. His wife was very extravagant and expensive. They had rented a house in Grand Junction for his girls to live in so

that they could attend parties, etc. This was very expensive, besides it was a bad thing for the girls, it taught them to be expensive and did not aid to their habits of industry if they had any, but the greater evil was the moral influence that they were surrounded with.

We returned to town in the evening and I took the train at 6 p.m. for the west. On entering the car, I met my old friend, Silas S. Smith, who was going to conference, we had an old fashioned visit on the road and reached Salt Lake City a little before noon on the 4th, the train being a little late. I noticed as we past along the Jordan River that they were making some improvements in the way of canals, etc.

On arriving in the City, I went straight to the Tabernacle, meeting was nearly out, at the close of which I met Apostle John Henry Smith and while talking with him, my wife, Eliza came up. She had come in from Circleville to meet me as I had written her when I expected to arrive in the City. Our meeting was a joyful one as it had been a year and a half since she left Arizona. I would have been pleased to have met my daughters who were in Southern Utah, but they did not come up to conference. I attended the meeting in the afternoon, the speakers were John W. Young, Apostles Cannon, Lund, Merrill, and President Woodruff.

After meeting I went out to my sister Julia's, she was living with her son-in-law Mat Cullen, near the old brewery and I stopped there all night, her husband, Edward W. Thompson, had gone to Beaver on account of his health. My sister was feeling quite sad and lonely on account of the death of her daughter, Emma Cullen, who had died not long before.

April 5th, I had some business at the Juvenile Office and at the Tithing Office so did not go to meeting in the forenoon. I found the accounts at the Tithing Office of the Snowflake Stake in good shape and all complete which was very satisfactory for me as I had so much to do with them. Bishop William R. Preston told me that the 10% that was given to the Bishops should be divided by the High Council between the Stake President, Stake Clerk, and the Ward Bishops as they thought just according to services rendered, etc. I attended the afternoon meeting, also the priesthood meeting in the evening. The main subjects being the Church Schools. It was stated that there were 29 of these schools, 23 in Utah, 4 in Idaho, and 2 in Arizona, and that there were about 4,000 pupils instructed in them. April 6th, I attended meeting, in the forenoon Franklin D. Richards was the main speaker, I was in the gallery and could hear tolerably well, in the afternoon I went in with Silas S. Smith and got a seat back on the stand, he said he would take me in as one of his counselors. George Q. Cannon was the main speaker. In the evening I attended the meeting of the Sunday School, Brother Goddard stated that there were about 60, 000 in the Sunday School Union. Shortly after this conference, it was published in the east that President Woodruff stated that we had all the revelation that was necessary and we did not want any more. This statement was greatly twisted and exaggerated, as all things are that pertain to the Church. During the conference, I met many old friends from Iron and Beaver counties and other places.

April 7th, I did a little business of various kinds and in the afternoon my wife, Eliza, and I took our leave of my sister, Julia, and her daughter, Nellie, and started for Logan. My sister had been very kind to us and treated us very nicely, but she did not have one spark of Mormonism about her and all the family were the same.

We arrived in Logan about midnight and stopped with E. H. Hatch, son of Lorenzo Hatch of the Snowflake Stake. I had a letter of introduction from the latter to his son.

On the 8th, I did some work in the temple in connection with my wife Eliza. We had our second anointing and I had my father adopted to the Prophet Joseph Smith. I would have been sealed to my father or adopted, but my sisters who were in the church were not present so it was thought best to postpone this work. My wife, Eliza, acted for my wife, Mary, in having her second anointings.

I spent the most of the day in visiting with Brother Hatch and Sister Hatch, wife of L. H. Hatch of Arizona who was living here at this time. Logan is pleasantly situated on an elevation where a good view of the greater part of the valley is a most magnificent one and the soil is good but I fancied that the climate was rather cold in winter. The mountains were partly covered with snow, and it had but recently disappeared from the valley. From appearances, this valley would be a most lively and beautiful one in summer, it being well watered and several large towns in it.

On the 9th, we took the train for Salt Lake City at 6 a.m. On getting to Mendon we had another good view of the Valley and of Logan and the magnificent temple standing above the city which can be seen for a great distance from almost any direction. As we passed over the divide we got a view of a large canal which conveys the waters of Bear River to Ogden on the one side, and a similar one that conveyed the waters of the same stream to Corinne on the other side of the river. This was not yet completed but when these canals are completed, it will be one of the heaviest pieces of work that has been done in this line in this country and will add largely to the acreage in this section.

At Ogden we changed cars and arrived in Salt Lake City at about 11 a.m., just thirty minutes too late for me to take the D. and R. G. R. R. for home, so I looked about the city some. I met my old friend, Josiah Rogerson, he was a superintendent of a telegraph line in Montana.

My wife, Eliza, was going to return to Circleville to her brother Ben Lewis. I went with her to the depot where she took the train at 4 p.m. and at 7 p.m. I took the train for home, and on the way to Provo I had a pleasant visit with John R. Milner who had been out in Arizona for a time during our persecutions there.

My stay in the city of the Saints had not been very long, but I had accomplished all that I had expected to, had met many old friends, had attended most all of the meetings of the conference, and had been to the Temple at Logan where I had received my great blessings.

April 10th, we reached Green River at about sunrise and passing over that worthless country, we soon reached Grand Junction at about 11 a.m. being about two hours late. I had but two dollars in my pocket when I left Salt Lake City and so I could not afford to eat at the eating houses but occasionally bought a lunch. As we proceeded on up the canyon, they put on an open car for the passengers to occupy where they could get a good view and take in the picturesque scenery of that romantic canyon.

We arrived at Gunnison City just at sunset. Here we witnessed one of those beautiful sights that is not often witnessed and especially in other lands. This was the sunset in the Rockies. The sight was grand as the last rays of sun fell upon the snow clad peaks which dotted the horizon as far as the eye could reach lighting up those grand old mountains with such a peculiar splendor as to lend enchantment to the whole scene.

We arrived at Pueblo a little after midnight, our train was late and the other train had pulled out only about ten minutes before, so I was compelled to lay over here about 15 hours which I regretted very much as I was anxious to get back to the store.

April 11th, I got a little sleep in my seat in the waiting room and then went out and got my breakfast for which I was charged 25¢. I did not get it at the regular eating house where they charged 75¢ a meal. I spent the day in looking about the city and in reading Dan W. Jones book "Forty Years Among the Indians" which I had purchased from Brother Jones while I was in the City. I again started out taking the train at 8 p.m. and on reaching La Junta, we changed cars and started on south.

April 12th, this morning found us near Ratoon Pass, at Las Vegas I got a lunch and found that I had just 30¢ left to last me home. We reached Albuquerque at about 1 p.m. Here I met Mr. Mandell and through his persuasion and having some business to attend to, I stopped off for the rest of the day. I met Charles Jarvis who was here from St. Johns buying a few things for the store at that place. I bought a few goods that we needed, and among other things, I purchased a safe from a firm that had gone out of business, paying \$200 for it and this was but little over half price. I had it lettered over putting on the name of our firm. The one we were using at Holbrook was too small for our business and that was taken up to Snowflake where this was sent to us. In the evening I attended a Democratic meeting and a little after midnight Brother Jarvis and I took the train for home.

April 13th, when we arrived at the Navajo Station, Brother Jarvis got off going across to St. Johns while I continued on to Holbrook where I arrived about 2 p.m. very tired and about worn out for I had taken very little rest day or night on the whole trip being very busy almost every day far into the night.

April 17th, I went up to Snowflake and returned on the 19th. Brother Shelley left us on the 17th, he did not like the confinement and wanted to get out on his farm, he had asked to be released some time before. His leaving threw extra work upon me, Brother Levi M. Savage had been engaged to take his place, but had not yet arrived.

On the 26th, I went up to Woodruff and attended meeting there the next day and spoke, giving some of the items of the late conference at Salt Lake City, and returned to Holbrook in the evening. April 29th, Brother Levi M. Savage came down from Snowflake to take Brother Shelley's place as bookkeeper. He was an excellent hand, wrote a good hand and attended strictly to his business and never bothered about other folks affairs.

Trade this spring was a little slack, the spring being late the sheep men were later than common in shearing, so the money for wool was not coming in as soon as common. And the wool trade was one of our greatest sources of revenue as this brought in more money than anything else. There were no mines in this vicinity and the sheep and cattle business were the main industries to bring in cash, as the farmers raised but little more than they needed and nothing was sent out in this line for sale, but much that we used in the way of provisions was imported, considerable flour and potatoes were imported as there was not enough raised for home consumption and at various times considerable lucerne was brought in.

1890
Chapter 78
A Freight Contract and a Trip to Fort Apache

During the first day of May, 1890, some fifty Apache Indians came down from Fort Apache under Lieutenant Johnson to get some wagons, etc., that the government was furnishing them. They started back on the 5th, with about 40 wagons loaded with about ten hundred to each wagon, with nails, farming implements and a general assortment of supplies. These Indians had \$2.00 each which they spent in town.

May 11th, our work on Sunday seems about as other days quite often, we try to keep the store closed on these days as much as possible, but our trade is of such a nature that it is almost impossible to observe the Sabbath Day. Quite often there are teams here on Sunday from a distance and they dislike to be kept waiting and we have to accommodate them as much as we can, then some travelers come along and want something out of the store, and then the section hands come in from near by sections and want to do some trading, so we have to break into the Sundays quite often, and there is generally enough of this work to break in so that it keeps someone in the store all the time and it breaks in on anything that we attempt to do, reading or anything else.

My son, Horace N., came down a few days ago and is still practicing telegraphy, he appears to be doing fairly well, he has access to the government office and spends most of his time there at the work.

On the 18th, I went up to Snowflake and attended meeting there, Willis Coplan was the main speaker, I was asked to speak a few minutes.

The next day I worked on my house at the reservoir, Amos Rogers helping me, my son John L. was down and lent a helping hand.

The following day I returned to Holbrook on the buckboard, it was a very dusty and disagreeable trip.

May 30th, we were getting along with the same worry and fret, the continual work with this thing and then that which keeps a merchant on the jump and this seemed worse on account of the trade, much of it coming in from the outside places.

I went up to Snowflake on the buckboard and attended a meeting of the High Council in the afternoon, and the next day the conference of the Relief Society and Primary was held. Our quarterly conference was held on the 1st and 2nd, there were some of the general authorities present. During the sessions it was decided to have ward conference in each ward twice a year. After the meetings, I went to Woodruff with my son, John L., Brother L. H. Hatch went along with us, and the next morning I went on to Holbrook.

June 7th, I have bought me a horse and a one horse cart getting the latter from By. Terrill paying him \$40 for it. This I thought, would enable me to go and come more as I wished and cut down the expenses of paying buckboard fare some, but still it was a little expensive keeping a horse in Holbrook.

I went up to Snowflake this p.m. and the next day on to Pinedale where I attended meeting and occupied a portion of the time. The next day I returned to Holbrook via Woodruff a distance of about 55 miles.

June 10th, Mr. Barmore of Los Angeles who had got the freight contract for the government from Holbrook to Fort Apache came to see me about subbing it from him. This I would not do on my own responsibility, and after talking the matter over with him, I started up to Snowflake to consult with the members of the board about the matter, I started about 5 p.m. taking Lewis Hunt with me, he had just returned from a mission to Europe, we reached Snowflake about midnight. The next morning I saw most of the members of the board and we got together and talked the matter over, and discussed the proposition of Mr. Barmore.

The result of our consultation was that the board authorized me to take the contract for not over \$1,800 this is to give Barmore that for his contract but to do as much better than that as I could.

In the afternoon I returned to Holbrook, saw Mr. Barmore, but it being late, I did but little that evening. June 12th, I met Mr. Barmore and we talked the freighting contract over at some length, he wanted \$2,500 for the contract, but finally I got him down to \$1,000 which he agreed to take and then he would assist in having it so arranged that the freight should come in when it was the most convenient for us to handle which would be early in the fall. The weather is now warm and we were shipping out considerable barley to Fort Apache.

June 22nd, I went down to St. Joseph, and took my son Horace N. with me. We attended meeting there and I occupied a portion of the time, we returned to Holbrook in the evening. I spent the 27th of June, my fiftieth birthday, working in the store as usual.

On the 29th, I went up to Woodruff and attended meeting there, President Smith was down from Snowflake and occupied the most of the time. I returned to Holbrook in the evening where I continued my labors in the store as usual.

June 30th, the Board of Directors for the store met and various points connected with the business were talked over. It was decided to take three more lots from Mr. Zuck and as he was behind, apply the price on his account at the store, this apparently was the best way we had to collect that debt. Our business was fairly good as there was being shipped many cattle to the eastern market and the wool was coming in which was sold quite readily but the price was not very high.

July 4th, the town was rather quiet as most of the cowboys had gone to Winslow to attend the celebration at that place. I spent the day in the store at work for I always found plenty to do when I was in Holbrook.

On the 10th, I went up to Snowflake and the next day on to Pinedale as I was making this trip for the purpose of going over to Fort Apache to look after our freighting business. I took my son Horace N. with me.

On the 12th I went on to Mr. Cooley's ranch, here I met Lt. Finley who was the Quartermaster of Fort Apache. I had a talk with him about the freighting business and the arrangements we entered into seemed to be satisfactory all around.

July 13th, Lt. Finley who had his wife and Mrs. General Jeff C. Davis along with him started for Holbrook quite early. My horse being a little lame, Mr. C. E. Cooley kindly offered to hitch up his team and take me into the post as he wished to go in himself. I accepted the offer and we reached the post at about noon.

I met Mr. J. C. Beveridge who was our agent at this post in looking after our freighting business at this end of the line, and I took dinner with him and Lt. Smith. I spent the remainder of the day in freighting business. I had a lengthy talk with Mr. Beveridge about our business. He was a well educated man and thorough in his business, he was very hard of hearing which made it very inconvenient to converse with him. He was competent to fill a more important position than that of quartermaster's clerk and would no doubt have been in a more prominent place if it had not been for his defective hearing. Some years later he committed suicide, and it was thought that he became dejected on account of his losing his hearing.

This post was pleasantly situated in this mountain region at the confluence of the two branches of the White River. There were four troops of cavalry here at this time. Buildings were being erected to accommodate two more troops. I stayed all night at Sgt. Finley's place as he had kindly offered me his room when I met him at Mr. Cooley's.

July 14th, I met Colonel Hunt who was in command of the post, and Captain Davis, and talked up the project of having a telegraph office at Snowflake. Captain Davis expressed himself very warmly in favor it.

Besides the freight business, one thing I was trying to get through was to have the military department put in a telegraph office at Snowflake.

After dinner I started back to Mr. Cooley's he remained in the post on business. I arrived at his place a little before dark. We had some rain on the road which made the forest region look fresh and green.

Cooley's place is a delightful one in the summer, being situated in the timber and not very far from White River. Many of the officers from the post come out here during the gaming season to fish and hunt. Mr. Cooley had done everything he could to make my trip an agreeable one. He was naturally of a kind and generous disposition and was kind to all who passed that way. He had been chief of scouts under General Crook and was full of stories that he was not slow in relating, which were both tragic and humorous.

On July 15th, we started early and drove to George Adam's place where we took dinner. While here we had a very heavy rain, but it did not last long.

In the afternoon we drove to Pinedale where I found my son John L. cutting rye.

The next day I went to Snowflake and spent the afternoon in attending to some business connected with the store.

July 17th, I went on to Holbrook where, as usual, I found plenty of work to do in the store.

July 19th, President Jesse N. Smith and some others came into Holbrook on their way to St. Joseph to attend the ward conference there, a part of the company went on, but Brothers Smith and Miller remained and went on the next morning.

July 20th, I went down to St. Joseph and took Brother Levi M. Savage with me, we attended the meeting and returned in the evening. The reports given at the meeting indicated that the ward was in a very fair condition.

The weather was dry and hot in this vicinity, but there had been considerable rain in the forest. Stock were not doing very well in this section on account of the drought and there has been a good many shipments of cattle out of the country in consequence of the ranges being in such bad condition. These shipments had brought in considerable money which has helped the business firms if not the owners of the stock.

There is a great sameness in a merchants life and but a few things occur to change the even tenor of the journal, but occasionally I take a trip out to some of the settlements that I generally note. Most of these trips were on business of various characters, and I spent but little time visiting with my family, and when I did visit them, the calls were in such haste that I hardly got to realize how they were getting along, or what they were doing, or what they needed most. And then when I returned from one of these trips I found work piled up so that I was over worked in answering letters, ordering goods, paying off bills, and looking after the freight accounts, and a thousand and one things that are always coming up in a business of this kind, besides my duties to the Church.

August 2nd, 1890, I went up to Snowflake and the next day on to Pinedale where I attended meeting and spoke during the services. I returned to Snowflake on the 4th and the next day on to Holbrook. In this visit I found my family reasonably well except my wife Adelaide, she does not have very good health, being quite poorly the major part of the time.

On August 8th, I received a telegram from President Wilford Woodruff asking if Jesse N. Smith or Joseph H. Richards could meet him in Albuquerque on the 14th. A similar telegram was sent me for President Smith. I started out in the afternoon and went through to Snowflake mainly for the purpose of taking it to him. I arrived there at about 11 p.m. and not feeling very well I remained in Snowflake the next day.

Our store at Snowflake was not doing very well. Brother Joseph R. Frisby, who was tending it, was sick and his wife was trying to look after the business as best she could, but things were not kept up as they should have been, the result of this was that they were losing some trade.

August 10th, I started down to Holbrook, I went as far as Woodruff where I attended the meeting which was not very well attended.

The recent floods or high water had brought down considerable sediment which had tightened up the dam which in the unfinished condition was leaking very badly, this had been quite a help to them for they now had water in their ditches. After the meeting I went on to Holbrook.

August 13th, President Smith came down last evening and left for Albuquerque on this morning's train to meet President Woodruff as required. Brother J. H. Richards came up in the afternoon and took the train for the same purpose.

On August 14th, my wife Julia at Pinedale gave birth to a son at 11 a.m. today.

August 15th, President Smith returned from Albuquerque this morning, I took him up to Woodruff. While in Albuquerque President Smith met President Woodruff and some others of the leading members of the church, who talked to him and the other stake presidents of Arizona, and those who were with them, upon the political subject. President Woodruff thought that it would be better for our people to divide more on political lines, that is to be Republicans and Democrats.

On the 20th I went up to Snowflake and the next day on the Pinedale where I found my wife Julia and her little son doing fairly well. There was some rain during the afternoon. August 22nd, I blessed our little boy and gave him the name of Wilford Preston Fish. I returned to Snowflake and the next day on to Holbrook.

Sunday, August 4th, these days (Sundays) drag heavily with us in the store, and with me especially. I generally stay in the store and try to work or read as I seldom get out. I lock the front door, but when people know that I am in the store, they go around to the back door and so there is something of this kind nearly all day when we pretend to try and keep from doing any business on Sunday. I often thought that I would rather be at home and among the saints than in this place where Sunday was a holiday and spent by a large number of the cowboys and others at the saloons where they drink and gamble all day, but the better class of citizens do not go to the saloons much on Sundays.

On the 27th, I went up to Woodruff and worked there at taking the stock in the store as we had kept up that store for the benefit of the people there. Clark Owens assisted me in the work. The stock there amounted to about \$2,200 besides the fixtures. I returned to Holbrook the next day, and on the 28th we commenced to take an inventory of the goods at Holbrook. This work generally took me about a week when I had but very little help as I had to make out all the accounts and balance sheets, etc. We had some rain on the 31st, which raised the river considerably.

There had been considerable agitation about getting the County Seat moved from St. Johns to Holbrook. There had been a few committee meetings in relation to the matter and many suggestions made about raising means to build a court house. The Republicans held their county convention at St. Johns about a week ago and put in their platform an anti-Mormon plank. They denounced the Mormons and pledged themselves to work for their expulsion. This did not suit the Republicans of Holbrook as they had the county seat in view and were willing to favor the Mormons so as to catch their vote on that point, as it would be for the interest of all the Mormons naturally, in the Snowflake District to vote with the people of Holbrook for the county seat. These divisions were fortunate for our people as it was evident that the Holbrook people would try to befriend them so as to catch their votes.

September 3rd, we finished up the business of taking stock. Jesse N. Smith and Joseph W. Smith assisted me some in the work, and on the 6th, I went up to Snowflake to attend out quarterly conference which was held on the 7th and 8th. During the sessions I was one of the speakers. There was not quite as good attendance as usual. On the 9th, I returned to Holbrook where I, as usual, took up the never ending work in the store, wrestling with the different accounts that are always connected with the work of buying and selling goods.

On the 20th, I again went up to Snowflake and the next day attended meeting where I spoke on the subject of Home and Home influences.

My wife Julia came down from Pinedale last evening and we moved up to our new home at the reservoir a little above Snowflake today. The house was not entirely completed, but we made a start to live in it. On the 22nd I worked fixing up the house, having some help and we got it so that it did fairly well for the present. Brother A. F. Webb had done considerable of the work together with Brother Albert Minnerly in putting in the doors, windows, etc. The next day I returned to Holbrook.

1890-1891
Chapter 79
Politics and Difficulties in Freighting

September 24th, the democrats at Holbrook held their primary. I had but little choice as to parties locally, but as the Republicans had barred out all Mormons, I attended the Democratic primary to see how they would do, and to gain my favor I suppose, they made me chairman of the meeting. E. Simpson (manager of the Aztec Land and Cattle Company), Thomas S. Bunch (a lawyer), and Theodore Farley (one of the clerks) were elected to attend as delegates at the St. Johns Convention.

September 29th, the yearly meeting of the Board of directors for the store, and the Stock Holders meeting was held and the yearly business was settled up and other business transacted. The store had done a fairly good business, the sales for the year had been about \$92, 000. A dividend of 20% was declared and 5% was placed in a reserve fund in addition. The former board was reelected. I was sustained as Superintendent. Levi M. Savage quit the work that he had been doing, that of bookkeeping, and Joseph H. Richards was elected in his place. He could not attend to the work himself, so sent his son Joseph P. Richards, the young man who had before attempted the work and did not give satisfaction. He had never had much experience in such work and this worked another hardship on me as I had to look over all the work and it was about as much work as to do the work myself.

On October 12th I went up to Woodruff and spent the Sunday and the next Sabbath I did the same.

October 24th, by this time the political question was getting warmed up. The changing of the county seat from St. Johns to Holbrook was the main question in the contest. The candidates on the Democratic ticket were as follows (and I believe that they were nearly all elected): For the council, E. J. Simpson; for the House, John T. Lesueur and Frank Hart; for sheriff, St. George Creagh; for supervisors, F. T. LeBrade and Pedro Montano; for probate judge, Art. McDonald; for county recorder, Charles Jarvis; for treasurer, William S. Gibbons; for district attorney, Thomas S. Bunch; for surveyor, Samuel G. Ladd. The Republican ticket had some very good men on it and some of them were in favor of dropping the anti-Mormon plank that had been placed in their platform. This had been put in by Robert E. Morrison and J. L. Hubbell, they were the main ones to support this measure. (They later became more friendly to the Mormons.)

November 2nd, 1890, I went up to Snowflake, and took Rial Allen's daughter along, she had just come in to Holbrook from Tonto Basin and wished to go up to Snowflake to attend the Academy. I went on up to our reservoir home and found Julia and her two little boys fairly well, but she was quite lonesome as it is over a mile to town. But the house was on the road between Snowflake and Taylor, and there was considerable travel along the road, so that made it somewhat better. I returned to Holbrook the next day.

November 4th, was election day. Holbrook voted solid for the county seat, but Winslow was divided on the vote and this gave it to St. Johns by a small majority, so the county seat will remain where it is for some time yet.

The next day I went down to Albuquerque. I took my son Horace N. with me. During the next day I did some business which had called me down there and among other things had my photograph taken with my son, and in the evening started back to Holbrook.

I met Brother Joseph H. Frisby on the train. He had been to Salt Lake City to get medical treatment, he having had poor health for sometime. We arrived in Holbrook early on the morning of the 8th. There had been quite a heavy rain fall and the river was up quite high. My son Horace went on up to Snowflake the next day with Brother Frisby.

The high water that had come down the 8th had taken out the dam at Woodruff. This was another great loss to the people of that place. Their dam had been taken out several times. This one had not been quite completed, and this was the case with the former ones. The Church had given \$3,000 to aid in putting this in, and these continued losses had a very bad effect and discouraged many who had attempted to make homes. Many of the old settlers had given it up and some others had come in their places so the work of making dams was continued from year to year with very much the same results.

November 29th, I went up to Snowflake and the next day on to Taylor where our quarterly conference was held. I stopped a short time at our reservoir home where I found Julia feeling quite lonesome. The children both had sore eyes and Roland's were very bad. He could not see, but when he heard my voice he cried out with joy.

I attended the meetings of the conference and a Priesthood meeting in the evening, after which I went down to the reservoir place where I looked after the sick ones as best I could.

December 1st, I attended the conference today at Taylor and as customary acted as clerk. I had acted in this capacity for every conference that had been held in the stake when I was present, and I had missed but very few, and then I fixed up the minutes that had been taken by someone else.

After the adjournment of the conference there was a water meeting. Sanford A. Angell was elected water master. I applied for the right to work out ten acres of water right for my place at the reservoir, which was granted.

December 2nd, there was a reunion of the Smith family in honor of President Jesse N. Smith's 56th birthday. The entertainment commenced at 10 a.m. and lasted until 11 p.m. having an intermission at the noon hour or a little later. A splendid dinner was served for the whole company, about 100 in all. There were present, besides President Smith's family and relatives, bishops and members of the High Council. The time was occupied in speeches, songs, recitations, etc., which were very interesting. Take it all around, the affair was pronounced a great success, and all felt that they had learned a good lesson as well as being entertained and instructed.

On the 3rd, I went down to Holbrook and again took the never ending labors that are always found by a merchant. Brother Edward M. Webb had been engaged to keep the books. It had been found that Parley Richards could not do the work; he was constantly getting things mixed up. Brother Webb did very well, and it was something of a help to him just at this time, as the going out of the dam at Woodruff had broken him up considerably. The board did the hiring of all the hands, and this sometimes worked badly, for they could not be present to see how the work was done and that often left us with poor help and one of the worst features was, I was sometimes blamed for it.

December 7th, Brother Webb went up to Woodruff last evening so as to spend Sunday there and to look after his flock. I remained at the store as it was necessary for one of us to be at the store all the time.

The last few days it has been quite stormy and we have considerable freight for Fort Apache, and we are having no end of worry and trouble to get the freight taken through. Our regular price for taking the freight through has been \$1.00 per hundred, but we were now offering \$1.50 and could not get teams at that price. I had asked permission to hold the freight until the roads got better, but some of the freight has to go through as they were entirely out of flour at the post. The roads were simply terrible and it was impossible to get through with an empty wagon with a single team. I had taken the precaution beforehand, as I thought, to have the freight come in earlier in the season but through a blunder of some of the officers, it was not ordered when it should have been, and now it came in the worst part of the season and had to be taken through. The brethren turned out as much as possible and helped in the matter. Brother W. J. Flake who was going over to the Gila Valley and taking some of his horses there to winter hitched on and took 2000 lbs. of flour. He had on several span of horses, some 20 head, and in places the wagon box dragged in the mud, so one can judge of the hardships we had in getting the freight through. On the 13th I went up to Snowflake to do what I could about getting the freight through. There were a few who had been regular freighters that seemed to be trying to take advantage of our condition and were trying to pinch us all that they could, and notwithstanding Brother Flake helping us out, his son Osmer D., was the main one in trying to block our progress and take advantage of our circumstances.

I attended the meeting on the 14th and spoke a short time.

On the 15th, I attended the funeral of William P. Burton, an old neighbor of mine in Parowan. He was a brother of Sidney R. Burton. William was never married; he was a quiet inoffensive person and was considered a little foolish or simple, which was attributed to medicine that was given him when quite a boy when having his foot, or part of it taken off that had been badly frozen, as before this he was considered quite a bright boy.

I returned to Holbrook on the 16th, my son Horace down to practice some more on his telegraph work.

It has been one of the worst winters for rain and snow that we have had for many years and getting our freight through to Fort Apache has been a constant worry as well as a great loss to the store. I have got permission to store some of it until roads get better.

January 1st, 1891, another year has fled with all the joys hopes and sorrows as well as with many disappointments, and I start on another in the midst of worry and fret of business under the most discouraging circumstances. The freighting and all manner of worries seemed to be heaped upon me at this particular time. The freighting being the greatest, but this, I was in hopes, would soon be relieved when the roads got better.

Clark Owens left our employ today. He had been with me a long time and our associations together were of the most agreeable nature. I will miss him very much. He had been an excellent hand and although not brought up in the business of salesman, he was always ready and willing and obliging and ever good natured which with his honest and fair dealing, made up for his lack of training as a salesman. The world has not furnished many better men than Clark Owens, although he is but a humble and assuming, common, every day man. He has my good wishes to attend his footsteps wherever he may go. He had invested in sheep and this business demanded his attention. This was the cause of his leaving the store.

On the 8th my daughter Jessie May came in from Utah, she had been gone over two years. She came alone, my wife Eliza remaining in Utah. She was unacquainted with traveling on the railroad and in her haste, allowed the Agent at Provo to sell her a ticket to Grand Junction. He claimed that he was in too big a hurry to make out one through to Holbrook. Then she bought one to Pueblo, not having money enough now to get a through ticket, and then got one in Holbrook. This made it cost her about \$20.00 more than the regular fare if the agent at Provo had done as he ought to have done, besides it forced me to telegraph money to her at Pueblo which was another expense. So it seemed that there was no end to worry and expense during this winter of ill luck. I was greatly pleased to have her back again, she had been in school part of the time while gone and had made very good progress for the chance that she had.

The weather continued to be stormy, and trade was a little dull which was the case as a rule at this season of the year.

On the 10th I went up to Woodruff and the next day I attended the ward conference at that place. President Jesse N. Smith and his counselors were present and one of the main points in their talk was the loss of the dam, how to construct another--that is to get the means, etc. The people of Woodruff were greatly divided. The loss of the dam had a discouraging effect upon them and gave them the spirit of fault finding. The ex-bishop, James C. Owens, and a few others, were not working in harmony with the present bishop, Edward M. Webb. A committee had been appointed to get up a plan for the reconstruction of their dam and to receive bids to build it on any plan that might be thought best. This committee had met and made a partial report but it was finally settled that Albert Minnerly should take charge of the work and they would put in the dam on the original plan. This patched things up so that it was thought that the two parties would work more in unison.

I returned to Holbrook in the evening with Brother J. H. Richards. The weather had been quite cold of late.

On the 25th I went up to Snowflake to settle the tithing accounts with the various bishops of the stake and to make out the returns for the Presiding Bishop's office.

February 1st, 1881, Sunday, I finished up the tithing business this morning. All the bishops came in to settle except David Brinkerhoff of Tuba City and he sent in his books. I attended meeting and spoke a short time.

February 2nd, I leveled a water ditch on the west side of town across the wash and down into the field in the forenoon, and in the afternoon I went down to Woodruff and the next morning on to Holbrook, where as usual I found plenty of work which had accumulated during my absence.

February 13th was my wife, Adelaide's birthday and I went up to Snowflake and several of the relatives and friends came in and we spent a very pleasant evening in talking over family history, etc.

February 15th I went down to Woodruff and attended meeting there and then went on to Holbrook.

February 18th, we have had a good deal of wind yesterday and today and it turned off with a rain which continued all night. Our store leaked badly and we were up much of the night trying to keep the goods from getting wet. This rain raised the river considerable.

February 26th, we have had the highest water during the last week that was ever known. The river has washed in so that it looks as if it might take a part of the town if it keeps up very long. It has taken out some of the railroad track just above town. There was a large force of men set to work to protect the railroad as well as the town. The cutting in of the river was a great source of annoyance, besides it gradually cut in until it took several good houses and washed them down stream. The citizens and the railroad spent considerable money in checking this and fixing it so that it would not encroach on the town.

I went up to Woodruff in the afternoon, and the next day on to Snowflake where I attended a meeting of the High Council in the afternoon. The subject of betting on horse races was brought up and the council thought that the Flake Brothers were implicated in this betting, their horse being one that ran when the betting was made. Charles L. Flake, a member of the council, did not think that he did wrong as he did not bet but it was in such a shape that the council thought that he should make an acknowledgement, which he said he would do. James M. Flake, who was not a member of the council, asked to be heard in the matter. He did not think that he did anything wrong and would not agree to make an acknowledgment. The Council talked over this betting subject until about midnight, and came to the conclusion that this betting should be checked. This little affair of horse racing and betting on the same by Osmer M. Flake and the Willis boys created some ill feelings between the parties in Snowflake, and this led the Council to take a strong stand against betting. Some thought that the Council went too far in this matter, but this opinion was only held by those who had a strong dislike for President Smith.

On February 28th, the Sunday School and Young Men and Young Ladies Associations held their conference. Our quarterly conference convened the next day, March 1st, and adjourned on the 2nd. The subject that had been up before the High Council, that of betting, was talked on considerably during the conference. The speakers stating that it was a bad example to set before the younger class and it should not be practiced.

I went down to Holbrook on the 3rd. The river still keeps up quite high and being very difficult to cross, it stops, in a measure, much of the travel.

On March 6th there was a heavy snow storm, it fell about six inches deep in Holbrook. This was the deepest snow that I had ever seen at this place, and this with the high water practically stopped all travel and in consequence stopped a larger portion of our trade and our freight to Fort Apache.

1891
Chapter 80
A Trip to California and Other Items

On March 14th I went up to Snowflake and the next day attended meeting there and spoke during the services.

On the 20th I again returned to Holbrook to go through the same routine of business, ordering goods, unpacking and marking goods, answering correspondence, looking up accounts, remitting money to the bank, paying bills, making out duns, etc.

On the 27th I again went up to Snowflake and tried to help the folks a little in the garden work but it was so windy I could do but little.

The next day I went up to Taylor and attended the High Priests Meeting which was held at 2 p.m. There was considerable sickness at Snowflake and Taylor, mostly colds or lagrippe.

I returned to Holbrook the next day, stopping at Woodruff and attending their meeting as I went through.

On March 30th the Board of Directors for the store met at Holbrook. Several things were talked over, but not very much business was done. Allen Frost wrote the board a long letter about the business of the store and telling them to call off their man at Round Valley. (Frost was the most meddlesome man in the country). The man he referred to was John Reidhead who had got a few goods from the store and was selling them on his own account, starting a business of his own.

April 11th, trade was revived some as the sheep men are getting their supplies for shearing.

The same spring winds which prevail during the spring months are here, which makes things very disagreeable, they generally continue until warm weather starts in. I went up to Snowflake today.

John Walter Smith, son of Jesse N. Smith, met with a serious accident this afternoon. While unloading some large logs which he had hauled to construct a flume across the wash west of town, he had one of his legs broken and the other very badly strained and injured.

On the next day the Snowflake ward conference was held which I attended and spoke a short time. Patriarch Lorenzo H. Hatch gave six of my family patriarchal blessings today, viz: Adelaide S., Julia R., Jessie May, Horace N., Silas L., and Joseph S. I returned to Holbrook the next day.

On the 14th I took the evening train and went down to Albuquerque, arriving at about 3 a.m. the next morning. The main business that took me to Albuquerque at this time was to get a bond fixed up so as to bid on the government freight contract from Holbrook to Fort Apache. Notwithstanding the great trouble we had in getting the freight through last winter, we were anxious to get the freight contract thinking that the weather would be more favorable and that we could get in the freight earlier in the season, besides it was the most convenient and about the only way we had in collecting bad debts and it also accommodated those who had no money as they could get their merchandise by freighting. I got these bonds fixed up and made a few purchases of goods and returned to Holbrook on the evening of the 15th.

On the 17th President Smith came down to Holbrook to see about locating a site for a bridge across the river, he and William C. Barnes had been appointed to locate the site. He returned the next day. I lent him my horse and buggy to go up with.

I started for Los Angeles at 11:30, my main business on this trip was to try and secure the freight contract from Holbrook to Fort Apache.

The train stopped at Winslow for dinner after which we soon passed over the noted bridge at Canyon Diablo and were soon up among the pines.

At Flagstaff we found about four inches of snow on the ground which had recently fallen. Flagstaff is situated in the pine forest and has a good saw mill near by which is a great help to the place. There was a good rock quarry here where rock for building purposes is obtained and sent to various places along the line. The place is a center for stock and sheep men for all this section of country. Going on through this magnificent and lovely forest we soon arrived at Williams where we took supper. I took a tourist sleeper for 50¢. It was better than I expected, but I did not sleep very much. I got a slight glimpse of the Colorado River as we passed over it at the Needles.

April 19th, I got up early and found that we were passing over the desert which is rightly named for it is indeed a dry and lonely looking country, no trees, no grass, nor water.

At 9:00 a.m. we took breakfast at Barstow, and here the country commences to change in appearance. The giant cactus is a noted feature along the Mohave River.

As we passed the divide at Cajon Pass and descended down the canyon, the sight was grand. The circling around and the cuts through many hills, and the bridges which took us over as many canyons often gave a good view of the broken country. Here we passed by the old California Road where the early Spaniards came through to Santa Fe, and where Fremont passed in 1845 and where the travel both of settlers and freighters passed from Utah to California in an early day. It is a most historic place in the west.

We soon passed through the canyon coming out at San Bernardino; this place was not very compactly built. Things changed here to what they were a few miles back. Here was seen grass, flowers, etc. in abundance, and the whole country looked green and fresh, and from here to Los Angeles the whole country seemed to be almost one continuous garden. Fruit trees on all sides and broad fields of grain almost ready for the harvester.

We arrived at Los Angeles a little after 3 p.m. where I put up at the Ramona House. I looked about the place a little. It was a beautiful city, its pleasant shade trees and beautiful gardens rich with flowers added very much to the beauty of the place. The city covered 36 square miles and contained 115 hotels so I was told.

April 20th I went about and visited a few of the firms that we were doing business with. In the afternoon I went down to Santa Monica and spent a few hours on the beach of the grand old ocean picking up shells and contemplating the vastness of this body of water that spread out before me. There was a little wind which brought in the waves which dashed against the beach making a grand sight to one who had never witnessed this before.

I soon returned to the city, and the next day I went up to Mr. Barmore's office (the man from whom we took the contract last year) and we talked over the matter about the freight, and found out that he could not assist me in getting the freight contract very much. So about ten minutes before the bids were to be put in, I filled out mine at \$1.03 a hundred from Holbrook to Fort Apache. I then went up to Major Kimball's office and put it in and remained until they were opened which was but a few minutes. Mine was the lowest bid, A. and B. Schuster of Holbrook had one put in for \$1.05, I getting it by two cents.

I spent the afternoon in purchasing a few items, mostly groceries and in looking about the city. On April 22nd I purchased a few goods.

The stores were not doing much business as all were preparing for the reception of President Benjamin Harrison who was expected to arrive in the city during the afternoon. The streets were filled with people all having on their holiday attire. President Harrison and party arrived at 3 p.m. I got a very good position so that they passed within six feet of me. The procession was grand, the bands, guards, carriages and all were decorated with flags and flowers. To say that it was grand was not enough. The streets were full of people, the windows, etc. were full and there were probably 50,000. Flowers were thrown from the windows, which made the air look almost like a snow storm, and the streets were covered with these flowers for miles. The horses and streetcars were all decorated with flags and flowers, also the houses, which made the whole city look beautiful in its holiday attire. Southern California is a land of flowers and the people were not niggardly or slow in using them on this occasion.

The President and party were driven to the City Hall where a platform in front of the building had been erected. Short speeches were then made by California's Governor (Markam), President Harrison, Post Master General, Wannamaker, and Secretary Rusk. This was the first President of the United States that I had ever seen. President

Harrison was a very pleasant and kind looking man, in size a little below the medium, his hair was quite gray and he had a sallow look that would indicate that he was not a very strong man. He spoke well, but his voice was not strong enough for a public speaker as he could not be heard to a very great distance.

Secretary Rusk was a large powerful, farmer like looking man, rather common in appearance. He spoke well and had a powerful voice for public speaking. He was quite gray.

Post Master General Wannamaker looked like a good pleasant merchant and was not nearly so old as the others.

Governor Markham (Governor of California was from Pasadena and was a bright looking man, tall and powerful and a good type of a western man of energy.

The people of Los Angeles and vicinity turned out and spared no pains to make the reception a success. It was the greatest day that ever Southern California witnessed.

April 23rd, I went up to Army Headquarters and had a talk with Mr. Payne, one of the employees. He wished to arrange it for us to handle a contract for him and he would help us while we would help him, but in this matter I could not see my way clear to take his contract.

As noon I took the train and started for home. I was very kindly treated while in Los Angeles by Mr. Montgomery, Mr. Harvey and several others. These were connected with houses with which we were doing business. We took supper at Barstow. I obtained a slight view of the bridge at the Needles as we passed over, it was 1000 feet long and 60 feet high.

April 24th, we took breakfast at Williams and dinner at Winslow and arrived at Holbrook at about 5 p.m. I had a very pleasant trip and from what I saw of the people of California, I thought more of them than I did before I went there. They seemed to be a straight forward and sensible lot of people, take them as a while, and were not so much given to fashions as the people of east were; this was more especially the case with the men.

The next day found me at the same old business of marking and putting up goods, looking up accounts, etc.

On the 26th I went up to Snowflake in the forenoon and in the afternoon attended meeting and gave a short sketch of my labors and trip to California, and returned to Holbrook on the 28th.

May 7th, I made a trip up to Snowflake, returning the next day. Most of these trips were on business and to consult with President Smith on matters pertaining to the store, etc. Trade was now very fair, the wool trade was on. The best quality of wool was bringing from 16 ½ to 18 ½ cents a pond. This was about the best price that wool had ever brought at this place. May 30th, the wool has been coming in quite fast which has kept me very busy as we attend to the shipping of considerable of it for our customers, and we consigned some to houses in the east.

I went up to Snowflake today and the next day our conference commenced. The weather was a little cool and windy and there was not a very good turnout at the meetings. June 1st, conference adjourned this p.m. The reports showed that the people were in very fair condition, but some of the wards had suffered from high water, having lost their dams, and their ditches having been greatly damaged. I returned to Woodruff in the evening and the next morning on to Holbrook where the same old work was resumed.

1891
Chapter 81
A Birthday Party and the Old Grind

June 26th the wool trade has been very good this season and that has increased our business considerably, and we have been extremely busy in looking after the different things and rustling for our share of the trade.

I went up to Snowflake today, and took my daughter Jessie May who was at Woodruff.

June 27th, this being my birthday, my wife Adelaide had arranged to have a dinner for the invited guests who had been summoned to attend the occasion. All my family that were in Arizona were present except my wife Julia and son Joseph C. and his wife. President Jesse N. Smith and family, Brother L. H. Hatch, Bishop John Hunt and several with their wives were present. Brother George C. Lambert and son who had arrived from Utah were present. A splendid dinner was given, after which there were some speeches by the principal guests. Brothers Lambert, Smith, and others. After dinner, a few of us went up to Taylor and attended the High Priests meeting after which we returned and had an entertainment. Members of the family and some others gave speeches, recitations, songs, etc. Some of the speakers paid me very high compliments, President Smith being the main one on this occasion. I was very much pleased at the efforts of my wife, Adelaide, and those who assisted her to make the day an enjoyable one and make my 51st birthday one long to be remembered.

I stopped at the reservoir place as I went up to Taylor and found that Brother Boggs, who was digging a well for me, had struck water in abundance after going through about ten feet of rock. This was very encouraging to me for many had told me that I would not be able to get water there.

My wife Julia was down to Woodruff, and the next day I went down there where I attended meeting, and the next morning I went on to Holbrook.

June 29th, Jesse N. Smith, John W. Freeman, and Joseph H. Frisby came down last evening and the Board of Directors met today and talked over the business of the store. \$75.00 was appropriated for the Woodruff dam out of the per cent on a Territorial warrant they had paid on. Some arrangements were made to raise the wags of the clerks a little.

In looking over my notes I find that there were few entries made during the month of July, but the month passed about as other months had gone by, with its share of the worry and fretting and the constant cares that a person has that has to look after a business of this kind.

On July 13th, the United States Court met at Prescott, and it dragged along for some time. They empaneled three Grand Juries, they found several indictments under the Edmonds law, but I have not heard that they had found any against Mormons, but they have made several efforts to indict some in this county. Witnesses have been hunted up to try to indict David K. Udall, Andrew V. Gibbons and myself, and perhaps some others. Most people say that the court is a farce and a great many of the gentiles are getting tired of the Edmonds law as it hurts them as bad as it does the Mormons, and some of them say worse, for the Mormons practice polygamy because of their religion while the gentiles do not. Quite a number of our people in the eastern part of the county feel hard towards us in the west part because we did not vote straight for the Democratic Ticket at the last election, but I thought that the move that we made to split a little on politics was the best.

July 20th, Brother Edward M. Webb, who had been our bookkeeper, quit and Brother Levi M. Savage took his place. Brother Savage had worked with us before, so the work was not altogether new to him.

During the fore part of August, I made a trip to Snowflake, and again went up on the 29th and the next day our conference convened at Taylor. Brother John Morgan, one of the Seven Presidents of Seventies was present and spoke several times during the different sessions. During the time, several persons were selected and ordained seventies. After the adjournment I as usual was busy in fixing up reports, the missionary list, etc., and returned to Holbrook the next day.

September 2nd, 1891, I went up to Woodruff and commenced to take stock of our goods that we had at that place. I worked late and finished up the next morning and then returned to Holbrook, where we commenced to invoice the goods there. This was as usual done for our yearly settlement.

September 6th, we finished our work of taking stock and the figures showed that we had on hand \$30,000 of merchandise.

The next day I received word that my little son, Wilford, who was at Woodruff with his mother was very sick so I went up there, and was pleased to find him better, and the next day I returned to Holbrook, but went up there again on the 12th and returned the next day.

Our trade has not been very brisk of late, but is improving some as the sheep men are buying their supplies for the fall shearing. Many of them shear twice a year, or rather the most of them shear twice one year and then once the next, but this practice was not continued for any great length of time.

September 14th, I started down to Albuquerque. My sons John L. (he had been working in the store for sometime), Horace N., and Silas L. went along. I had a little business down there and it was fair time and the rates on the railroad were about \$15 but on this occasion they were cut to \$5 for the round trip, so I thought I could take the boys along. We arrived in Albuquerque early on the morning of the 15th. We attended the fair which I suppose was a very good showing for New Mexico. The attendance was the largest that it had ever been in the city. Many that came could not get a place to sleep so they sat around all night as all the hotels were full and no chance at those places.

September 16th, there was some horse racing on the fair grounds but I did not think that it went off very well. Governor Prince's address at the opening of the fair was a rather dry affair, it was too long and formal.

I returned to Holbrook on the 17th where I went to work fixing up our accounts for our yearly settlement. Our sales had been good, \$111,000 the largest that we had ever made for one year. But the money proposition seemed to be getting tighter and it came in very slow and collections were getting hard to make. We were carrying a large number of accounts on our books which were difficult to collect and we had to borrow several thousand dollars at the bank to help us along.

September 28th, the Board of Directors met in Holbrook and the accounts of the store were gone over after which a dividend of 15% was declared. It would have been much more but there were so many accounts due us that could not be turned to cash very soon, or collected at once, so the rate was cut down. The old board was reelected with the exception of three, Joseph W. Smith, Joseph C. Hansen, and Joseph I. Clawson were elected in their places. I was reelected Superintendent, Jesse N. Smith was present and was intending to start to Salt Lake City to attend the October Conference, but just before he was to start he received a telegram stating that Apostle John Henry Smith would be here soon so he gave up his intended journey.

On October 16th I went up to Woodruff and the next day I started early so as to attend a High Council Meeting which was appointed to be held in Snowflake at 10 a.m. I was there on time, but the meeting was adjourned until 2 p.m. when Apostle John Henry Smith met with the council. Two new members were put in to fill up vacancies. The new members were Smith D. Rogers and Norman Brinkerhoff. Some older persons had been proposed but Apostle Smith disliked to put in a man that was over fifty years of age. This had been the policy of Apostle Lyman at a previous time. President Smith did not take to this very readily, but this policy was carried out for sometime.

Apostle Smith spoke to the Council at some length upon the political question. He advocated the Republican course, and showed that we might make friends by voting that ticket, or at least a portion of us should do so, and that we ought to divide on politics.

There were two meetings held on the 18th, Apostle Smith spoke on the political situation about the same as had been spoken at the High Council meeting.

Bishop Hunt, who had been absent at Phoenix as a member of the Convention to get up a Constitution for the State, gave a sketch of his labors there.

After the meetings I drove down to Woodruff and the next morning on to Holbrook where I was soon in the middle of business and worry as usual.

October 20th, Apostle John Henry Smith and President Jesse N. Smith came down to Holbrook, where Apostle John Henry Smith called upon some of the leading Republicans and had a talk with them on politics, the principal one being John H. Bowman. In the evening Apostle Smith left for Colorado and the next morning President Smith went back to Snowflake.

November 11th, my son Joseph C. has been sick for sometime past with the rheumatism. He has been connected with Brother John Reidhead in his mercantile business up at Round Valley or Springerville. They got their goods from the A. C. M. I. and had gone up there to start a business. My son had taken down with rheumatism and had been quite poorly for some time. I went up to Snowflake today and stopped at Woodruff for some little time to visit with him. He was in bed and having something of a serious time with his afflictions. Soon after this they took him up to Springerville where he got some better.

I went on up to the reservoir and the next day did a little work about the place and returned to Holbrook on the 13th.

November 16th I went down to Albuquerque on business and spent the next day in transacting some business and making a few purchases. I arranged with the bank to borrow some money for our store. I purchased a Remington Typewriter for my son Horace, it cost me \$102.50.

I was intending to return on the evening train. I went to the depot at about 10 p.m. when they told me that the train was an hour late so I waited around and at the end of the hour they said that it was still an hour late, and this same report was repeated for several times so I waited from one hour to another until just sunrise when we got off, and it was about sunset when we reached Holbrook.

The season had been extremely dry and stock men were loosing heavily. And the condition of the sheep men was not much better. This was a setback to business and the stock and sheep men were both drawing on us for many thousands of dollars, and we were about compelled to carry them through this crisis. The collections were very difficult to make. This made the prospects for our business look a little dark and the consequences were that it gave me any amount of worry and anxiety. The bills and accounts were becoming due and we were in a very poor position to meet them. This appears to be the lot of all at times who do a credit business. This however, seemed unavoidable at this period as the parties expected the stores to carry them until they sold their stock or sheared their sheep. On account of the dry season, many of the sheep men took their sheep to the Salt River Valley to winter and this cut off considerable of our trade.

On November 30th, our conference commenced and adjourned on December 1st. I attended as usual as clerk and returned to Holbrook as soon as it was over.

1891-1892
Chapter 82
I Resign as Superintendant and Take the Books Again

On December 8th, the Board of Directors for the store met and some very disagreeable things came up in relation to the business. Our by-laws were lame in one particular, the share holders were allowed to draw out their capital stock by giving three months notice. It was a bad clause as a few large holders in the enterprise could swamp the institution when ever they chose to draw out. This weak spot was brought to our notice about this time and was later remedied.

George C. Williams had put in about \$7,000 in the business, and he had due him some \$2,000 in dividends. He had moved to Mexico and in his purchasing there he wished to draw out \$3,000 of what he had in the store. He was very anxious and pressed his demand quite urgently. Our business from various causes as had been mentioned was in a cramped position and was not able to let so large an amount out at this time. The Board could not be called together readily and I consulted President Smith who was the President of the company, in regards to the matter. After talking the matter over, he advised me to pay it. We were hard pressed for means yet I felt it my duty to meet this requirement and so the amount was paid.

At the Board Meeting this was brought up and I was censured very much for paying it by John W. Freeman and Joseph Frisby. Other things were also brought up. One of the clerks, a friend of Frisby's had posted him on every little transaction that he thought would go against me, and Freeman and Frisby brought all of these items in to the best advantage to work against me.

One of the charges was my putting in my son Horace N. in the store to clerk. Horace had been here much of the time learning telegraphy and having considerable leisure time he was around the store and I had allowed him to deliver packages, and give other help around the store, and occasionally he waited on a customer when it was only a trifle that was wanted, but this was not very frequent that he was around for this labor. Brother Freeman brought this up and he had some very warm words over the matter.

Horace had asked me if he was not entitled to any pay for what he had done. I would not say anything on this point but told him to present his case to the Board himself which he did and they allowed him \$10.00 a month. He did not expect to remain here very long and this was only for a short period.

Brother Freeman had stated, so I was informed, that he intended to have Brother Hulet back as Superintendent as soon as he returned. Brother Freeman did not relish the idea of paying Horace anything and he again brought this up at a later meeting, but Horace was not at the store then. A telegraph office had been established at Snowflake mainly through my efforts, and he was stationed there as operator. Some would not hear the idea of a man's son working where he did as it savored too much of nepotism.

I felt greatly hurt over these accusations and especially over this charge. Warm words were used and I tendered my resignation. The board would not accept it, but a kind of compromise was made so as to be as satisfactory as possible all around. I decided, and told the board so, that I would not throw my children away for any business, and I would quit my job. This all came up over Horace working a little while he was here studying telegraphy, but he was now in the office at Snowflake.

December 30th, I went up to Snowflake and the next evening we had a meeting of the Board where we fixed up things some. The result was, as designed by Freeman, that John R. Hulet (who had returned from his mission) was named Superintendent.

I was urged to act as Secretary and Bookkeeper which I agreed to do a while at least. This was what Freeman and Frisby wanted and had been working for and as I was but a small shareholder in the business I did not feel to oppose the plan. But my wife, Adelaide, did not like this and wanted me to fight it through, and I have often thought that my failing to do so was one cause of her dislike for me in after years as she thought that I did not stand up enough for my rights.

I thought that Brother Freeman wronged me in many of his statements. But we finally agreed to drop the matter, and I went on with the work of Secretary and Bookkeeper but determined to take no more part in the business but to do my work and remain with the institution long enough to have everything straightened up and until a new man could be got and trained in the business, and that I would assist Brother Hulet all that I could in his labors. This I did, and he afterwards acknowledged that I had been of great help to him. I told the board that I would remain at least nine months and perhaps longer.

Thus closed the year 1891 and also settled my hopes, if I ever had any, of being anything in the business but a hired man or having any of my sons connected with me in the business. This was the turning point with me on this business and although I worked in the institution for many years after this, I never did so only as a hired man and never expected to have any say in the affairs of the business. I was of that disposition, I would not be crowded.

January 1st, 1892, I went down to Holbrook and went to work as usual. Brother Hulet came down on the 3rd when he took charge of the business and has had it ever since then (1919). Brother Levi M. Savage who had been our bookkeeper was released and the books turned over to me.

Being thoroughly posted as to the business and conditions of the store, I helped Brother Hulet all I could, and he acknowledged this later on, but as years passed on he grew out of this considerably and I felt that I was cast aside as a person whose days of usefulness had passed.

January 20th, things move on at the store very well, I find less responsibility and much less worry and fret, but my salary was put back at the old price, \$75.00 per month.

I went up to Snowflake today to settle up the tithing business, and worked at this until the 28th when I finished up. All the bishops came in except David Brinkerhoff of Tuba City and he sent his books in for me to fix up. The tithing was not very heavy as no one had done very well, for it had been a bad year for nearly all classes. Bishop Brinkerhoff's ward was in a bad location for him to dispose of any tithing except cash as there was no market near by, and he was getting behind on this account partly. Bishop Merrill Willis of Taylor was badly behind and will be sorely cramped some day when he is called upon to settle up and turn over his accounts, he, like his predecessor Bishop Standifird, had not managed very well. The other bishops appeared to be solvent with their accounts. The average of the tithes paid in the stake was near \$29.00 to each tithing payer. President Smith rendered me some assistance in the work but I worked extremely hard, as I always did, as I wished to keep up with the work at the store.

I returned to Holbrook on the 29th where I took up the labors as usual and with less worry than I had before the change.

February 3rd, 1892, Mr. George Christ from the southern part of the Territory arrived in Holbrook. He was the chairman of the Republican Committee for Arizona and he was around arranging for the organization of Republican clubs throughout the Territory. A few Republicans met him at Zuck's hotel and on invitation I attended. I had not as yet decided which party I would join since the counsel to divide on politics, and we had been voting with the side that favored us the most regardless of party, we did this for self protection. But my feelings and sympathies had been leading towards the Republican side. I made up my mind now to join the Republican party. Mr. Christ did not organize a club here, but talked the matter over and left it so that a person could go through the county and organize clubs; he went on the next day.

February 6th, some tramps had been about town for several days stealing chickens and various little articles, this was so annoying that W. R. Clark and F. J. Watron proposed to me to run them out of town. There were two who were camping in an old abandoned camp house. We got our guns and went down to where they were and marched them out to the railroad track and then escorted them down a short distance and then told them if they ever were found in this place again they would be hung, and they gave them a few kicks to start them off and as they ran we fired a few shots just over their heads. They left on the run as we threatened to kill them if they were seen in town again. I think that this had a good effect as we had been bothered considerably with tramps; this is generally the case in all of these railroad towns. The Sheriff of the county and the editor of the Albuquerque Journal happened to be in town and witnessed the expulsion of these tramps.

On February 12th, the Republicans met to organize or to adopt a constitution, there were 22 present. A temporary organization was affected. On the 15th they again met and completed their organization. John H. Bowman was elected President, and R. C. Kinder Secretary. A finance committee of five were elected, I being one of the number. John H. Bowman was elected to organize the clubs through the county.

At this season of the year our trade was always slack and my work did not crowd me.

February 21st, my son John L. who had been working in the store for sometime quit and went home. He left a little sooner than he had intended to, and one reason perhaps was the objections that had been made to my sons working in the store. John was a good hand and they later on got him again.

Joseph H. Frisby was one of the class that I always thought was against me, he was always talking in a strain to injure me when I was not present but he was now no longer a member of the Board so his talk was of little effect. He was always kind and friendly to my face, but he had to have someone to pick at, it was his nature. He got to picking at Ninian Miller and this became so tiresome to Miller that he went to President Smith with the matter and wanted the President to call him off. The president simply said, "You know he has to be picking at someone all the time and it might as well be you as anyone else, you ought to stand your share of it." Freeman was a very different man, and although I felt that he had wronged me in some respects he was a man that I always respected for his honest intentions. John L. felt a little hurt over the trouble that had occurred and he always felt that they crowded him out. But this wore off and he was rehired later on.

February 27th, I went up to Snowflake on the buckboard and attended the conference of the young folks. On the next day our quarterly conference commenced. There was a very good attendance from the near by places but the remote settlements were not very well represented, this was doubtless on account of the bad conditions in traveling at this season of the year.

Conference was adjourned on the 29th and in the evening there was a Republican Club organized in Snowflake, about 28 names were on the roll. John R. Bowman had come up from Holbrook to organize the club. There were a few short speeches made on the occasion. President Jesse N. Smith and L. H. Hatch were among the prominent members that joined the club. As these were prominent members in the Church, this move on their part created some talk with some as politics was a new thing and some were making fools of themselves over it saying that Church members should not take any part in politics.

March 1st, I went down to Holbrook with my son John L. and the next day we commenced to take stock. We had been taking an inventory of our goods once a year but the board had decided recently to take stock of the goods twice a year.

We were having some rain but later on we had a very cold windy time.

President Smith came down on the 28th on his way to Salt Lake City to attend the Conference.

There was a meeting of the Board but not much business was done. Our stock of merchandise on hand was a little over \$30,000.

On March 29th I went up to Snowflake with Joseph I. Clawson and the next day I spent in putting up a windmill that I had purchased. I put it up at the reservoir place and Amos and Smith D. Rogers assisted me in the work.

I returned to Holbrook on April 1st, where I found plenty to do as we were shipping some freight to Fort Apache. The spring started out as very changeable, one day spring and the next day winter.

Some little time before this the prisoners at St. Johns broke jail and got away. Ed Wright came in on the 10th with two that he had recaptured at Bluff City in Utah. One was Bell who helped to kill the two Mexicans Lopez and Chaves, in a saloon last fall.

1892
Chapter 83
A Trip to St. Johns and a Visit from the Church Leaders

On April 15th, President Smith returned from Salt Lake City and the next day we went up to Snowflake with J. I. Clawson. Starting early we arrived there at about noon, but it was a terribly windy day. I attended meeting in the afternoon. President Smith spoke giving a sketch of the conference news. He said that education was the main subject and the laying of the capstone of the Temple was a grand affair.

I returned to Holbrook on the 19th, where the same old work was resumed.

On the 24th, a company of soldiers came in from Fort Apache n their way to Montana and the next day a company came in from Montana on their way to Fort Apache. It was the rule at this time to change the troops of these posts about every two years. Both companies left here on the 26th. During their stay in the place, the saloons were well patronized, they seemed crazed for whisky and some of them seemed more like brutes than human beings in regards to the fire water.

Sometime since, Frank Ketchersides shot and killed Mr. Boyle. They were both residents of the Tonto Basin country, but were both in this place at this time, the shooting was near the store where I was and on looking out I saw the most of the affair. In fact as I looked out through the door a ball struck the top of the door frame, this was fired at Ketchersides as he passed the store.

When the trial came off, I was subpoenaed as a witness in the case. I started for St. Johns on May 1st, going with J. L.I. Clawson who ran a livery stable at Holbrook. We went as far as Concho where we stayed all night with C. I. Kempe, and the nest day we reached St. Johns about 9 a.m. I attended court and tried to get released as a witness as I had much to attend to at the store, but could not get off.

The people of St. Johns were starting to build an academy and they laid the corner stones today with considerable ceremony. The south east corner was laid by the Presidency of the Stake, the south west corner was laid by the Bishopric of the stake, the north west corner was laid by the seventies and elders, the north east corner was laid by the High Council and High Priests. After these ceremonies were over the people repaired to the meeting house where several speeches were made on educational matters.

In the evening there was a Democratic Rally at the Court House. Col. Wilson and Thomas G. Norris were the speakers.

May 3rd I attended court, was subpoenaed as a juryman but did not serve today.

In the evening there was a Republican Rally at the court house. Mr. Stuart, R. E. Morrison and I were the speakers.

May 4th I attended court and was on the jury in the case of C. L. Smith charged with breaking into a saloon, he was found guilty. The court business moved a little slow. The District Attorney, Thomas S. Bunch, was sick and not able to attend the court and T. G. Norris attended in the business for him. Judge E. W. Wells was on the bench and gave fairly good satisfaction to the majority.

May 5th I attended court, but there was not much done.

May 6th, I attended court in the forenoon, I was called as a juror on two or three cases where cowboys were defendants but was challenged off. The cowboys will not let a Mormon sit on their case if they can help it.

While in St. Johns I stopped with Charles Jarvis.

The Ketcherside case was laid over so I got released in the afternoon and started back to Holbrook with J. I. Clawson going as far as Concho, and the next day we drove on through to Holbrook where I settled down to hard work again as there was plenty accumulated while I was gone.

May 9th, Monday, court adjourned last Saturday evening, there were five criminal cases tried and four of them convicted. The Grand Jury found 22 indictments.

The Judge arrived in Holbrook this morning and as the train was late he was compelled to lie over until 9 p.m. During the day I had quite a talk with the judge upon politics, religion, and county affairs. He seemed to be a very fair man and I think always remained so, as far as our people were concerned.

On the 10th a company of troops came in from New York on their way to Fort Apache.

May 13th, I went up to Snowflake on the Buckboard. (I had previously disposed of my buggy or cart) and spent the next day with my family which was rather a rare thing as I almost always had something to take me off when I did go up to see them.

On May 15th I returned to Holbrook with my son John L. who was going down to Holbrook to work in the store again, but simply to take the place of Clark Owens who had again been working with us and now wanted to quit for a couple of weeks. Trade was dull and this was a general complaint throughout the country.

June 6th, our trade was improving some as shearing had commenced and the wool began coming in.

I went up to Snowflake the next day and there was a meeting of the Republican Club, but owing to a mistake in giving out the notice of the meeting, it was very poorly attended. I spoke a short time on the advantages of a protective tariff.

On the 8th I returned to Holbrook where I found plenty of work as the wool was now coming in and trade was rushing.

The spring had been rather cool but now it had turned quite warm. On the 21st, the thermometer stood at 102 in the shade. This was about as warm as it ever got at this place during the summer.

On the 23rd I went up to Snowflake with the government ambulance and returned on the 25th.

There were considerable preparations being made at Snowflake for the conference of the four stakes of Arizona which was to be held at Pinetop on July 3rd. There are quite a number of outsiders preparing to attend the conference. This conference was to be held for the four stakes in Arizona and some of the leading men and authorities of the Church were to be present. This idea of all meeting at a central point was suggested by the authorities and in this forest region in the summer it was thought to be a pleasant outing for all parties. We were in the midst of our wool trade and so I do not expect to be able to attend.

Our first rain came on the 25th. My birthday came on the 27th, but was passed as other days amidst the hurry, and hustle of a business life.

Our Board met as was usual for them to do at the stated periods but little business was done.

July 2nd, 1892, President Jesse N. Smith and John A. Hunt came down on June 30th to meet the Church Authorities that were coming in from Salt Lake City to attend the conference at Pinetop, but owing to an accident they did not get in until about 3 a.m. today. The party consisted of President Joseph F. Smith, George Q. Cannon, and Brother George Reynolds and Arthur Winters. They remained around in the store for about an hour before things were ready for a start, when they left for Pinetop. I assisted them what I could while they were here by sending some telegrams, etc.

The party returned during the afternoon of the 7th and reported having a very pleasant time and a heavy rain on the 5th. I went over and had dinner prepared for them at the hotel which I settled for.

I was pleased that my folks were able to attend the conference but under the circumstances I could not get away.

The party left for Utah at 4 p.m. going by way of California. President Jesse N. Smith and Brother John A. Hunt brought them down.

The 4th was celebrated here but the amusements were principally of the cowboy style and of course were of little interest to me.

I went up to Snowflake on the 12th and returned on the 14th.

The wool season had about passed and the rush in that line for the season was over.

On the 25th there was a heavy rain south and east of Holbrook which raised the river considerably causing it to cut in towards the town and to do some damage. There had been considerable means expended in riprapping the banks of the stream which helped to prevent its damaging the town and railroad to a great extent.

On the 27th I made another trip to Snowflake returning the 29th.

August 2nd, the first day or two of the month is a busy time for me as I have all the accounts to balance up and make out for the month and mail them to our customers also check up our bank account, etc.

The weather has been rather warm and we have not had but one good rain in this place this year, but it had rained in the mountains considerable.

Bishop John Hunt left here today on his way to Utah going with a team via Lee's Ferry.

On the 11th I went up to Snowflake and during the night I was taken very sick with vomiting and cramping and the next day I was not able to sit up very much of the time, but on the 13th I was better and on the 14th I went down to Holbrook with Brother Reidhead. He had some hay in the wagon and a cover on it so I spread down a blanket on the hay and lay down during most of the trip. The next day, feeling somewhat better, I was able to resume my work at the books again.

August 21st, Sunday, these are my lonesome days as I stay in the store about all the time and we try to keep from trading but people come around to the back door which is often kept open on account of getting fresh air at this season of the year, and so it is neither rest nor trade, and that makes it worse for it keeps me hunting for something that I do not know just where it is as the clerks generally go off and I do the trading when I am here. But they are generally around in the fore part of the day at least. Our trade is a little dull at present and we are not doing more than two-thirds of the business that we did last year.

The Governor of the Territory, Oakes Murphy, passed through here today. The train stopped here a few minutes and hearing that I was a Mormon, he sent for me and I had a brief interview with him. He stated to me that since the manifesto was issued, he had dropped the fight against the Mormons and wished me to tell my people this much for him. He wished us to put up our best men for the legislature as he thought that the next session would be a very important one. He handed me a clipping from a newspaper which stated that the Republicans of Idaho had ceased their fight against the Mormons and would work to have the franchise restored to them at the next term of the legislature, and he stated that I could tell my people that these were his sentiments.

August 22nd, we have had a very windy and dry summer, the worst that I have seen in this section.

By invitation I took dinner today with Mr. John H. Bowman and wife. In the evening the Republicans held their primary to elect delegates to the county convention which was to elect eight delegates to the territorial convention. I acted as chairman of the meeting and George E. Sullivan was the secretary of the meeting.

Our quarterly conference was held at Snowflake on August 28th and 29th. I was not able to attend on account of the absence of Brother Hulet whose wife, Sadie, was very sick and he had been absent for some time being in attendance on her. We both could not leave the business at once very well.

September 5th, President Smith and several others came down from Snowflake on their way to Tuba City to visit that place, as a kind of missionary trip. In consequence or rather discouraging news from Snowflake (by wire) about his daughter Sadie Hulet, President Smith decided to turn back and not go any further, the balance of the company went on.

On September 6th my wife Adelaide came down from Snowflake with Mark E. Kartchner, in the afternoon she went on to St. Joseph on the train and returned the next day with Brother John McLaws and on the 9th went on up home on the buckboard.

The next day I took a severe cold which last me several days so that I was not really fit to do much but I never stopped work for a cold or anything else if I could keep around.

We had been taking stock and finished up this job on the 9th. In this work I was greatly rushed, as Brother Hulet was away with his sick wife. My son Joseph C. however helped us for a few days.

On the 15th a little after noon I received a telegram stating that Sadie Hulet had died. The next day Silas D. Smith, one of our clerks, and his wife went up to Snowflake starting quite early so as to attend the funeral which was to be held in the afternoon. I was not able to get away on account of the business as Brother Hulet was away. He had been gone most of the month on account of his wife's sickness, besides I had a bad cold as has been mentioned and was hardly able to get around and look after the business.

September 18th, two men by the name of J. R. Mitchell and Tom Nance got into a drunken row and fight in which Mitchell knocked Nance down and jumped onto him with the heels of his boots and pounded Nance until he was insensible. The bystanders dragged Nance out of the Saloon onto the side walk thinking him dead drunk, but in a short time someone discovered that he was dead. The next morning an inquest was held, I was on the jury and Mitchell was to await the action of the Grand Jury.

1892
Chapter 84
Political Items and a Trip to Prescott as a Juror

September 20th, my cold still hangs on and I have been rather poorly for two or three weeks, hardly able to keep around.

I went up to Snowflake today returning on the 22nd. About this time the political pot commenced to boil. One great cause of this was the taking sides with the political parties by the Mormons which aroused some to cater so as to win support from us.

On the 18th the Democrats held their convention at Winslow, and on the 24th I went down to Winslow to attend the Republican Convention that was to be held there. John H. Bowman, George E. Sullivan, and I were the delegates from Holbrook. The Agent got special rates for the delegates, \$1.95 for the round trip.

The convention met at 2 p.m., there being 45 delegates present or represented. John T. Houge was elected chairman, the committees were appointed and we then took a recess. I was on the committee on Platform.

We met again at 4 p.m. when the following ticket was put up,. For Councilman, J. L. Hubbell; For the house, John Bushman and E. N. Freeman ; for Sheriff, William R. Campbell; for Probate Judge, John H. Willis; for Treasurer, N. P. Johnson; for Recorder, Fred M. Nelson; for Supervisors, Joseph Udall and Landro Ortega.

The anti-Mormon cry had been dropped and this was really the first Republican convention held in the county where the Mormons were taken in and given a fair show. I was elected as one of the central committee. I nominated J. L. Hubbell. He had been a strong anti-Mormon man and he was afraid that he could not get the Mormon vote. I talked a few minutes with him on the side and told him that the Mormons had dropped this fight as well as the Gentiles and they would as a general thing vote the party ticket, and that I did not think that he would be turned down by them on account of the past. After this talk he stated that he would accept the nomination, he later held several offices and became quite a noted politician in the Territory. He later wrote me that he owed more to me than to any other man for his start in politics.

The citizens of Winslow did all they could to entertain the Delegates. A ball was given in the evening. The ladies were dressed for the occasion, the Star Spangled Banner being prominent with many of them.

I left for Holbrook a little after midnight going up on a freight train.

September 26th, the Board for the store met and transacted the usual business for the store. The year had been rather a poor one but a dividend of 6% was declared. Brother Hulet opposed this, he was not in favor of declaring any dividend at all. The old board was re-elected with the exception of Joseph W. Smith and Joseph I. Clawson who went out and Ninian Miller and Smith D. Rogers were elected in their places. I was elected secretary but I gave notice that I would not agree to stay longer than to the first of the year, but might stay a little longer.

President Smith was down and went down to St. Joseph where he remained one day and then returned. He was waiting to meet Apostle A. H. Lund who was expected to be here from Salt Lake City. He arrived on the evening of the 29th, and he and President Smith went on up to Woodruff. Apostle Lund was expecting to visit Snowflake and Taylor and then go over to the St. Johns Stake.

October 13th, we have been very busy in the store of late as the sheep men have commenced to come in with their fall clip.

I went up to Snowflake today and tried to fix up some for winter. I am away so much that it is hard to keep things anything like decent about the place.

While Apostle Lund was here he spoke some on the political subject and said that he wished those who had not declared for either party to vote the Republican ticket if they could. Some of the people took exceptions to these remarks, saying that the Apostles had no business to meddle in politics.

I went up to Taylor and attended a political meeting in the evening. President Smith had received a letter from Brother John Morgan which treated upon the political situation showing the necessity of our people electing a Republican legislature. He read this letter at the meeting. There was not a very good turn out at the meeting.

I returned to Holbrook on the 15th where the same old job was taken up again.

The season seemed unusually dry and hot, there was no grass to speak of and the stock and sheep men were becoming greatly discouraged with the outlook.

On October 30th, Brother Karl G. Maeser arrived from Salt Lake City. President Smith took him up to Snowflake where he remained a couple of days then he returned. He came out here in the interest of the Church Schools which were at this time attracting considerable attention among our people, and the Church was giving very valuable aid to them in all parts of the country.

We had ten cars of hay come in today for the post which we were busy in shipping, and in getting the teams and loading and billing it out kept us busy for a few days.

November 8th was election day and I started for Snowflake before day light going up on the buckboard. Both Republicans and Democrats were working hard for their tickets. I voted at Snowflake, that being my home. The vote here was very evenly divided. The Republicans had 26 votes and the Democrats 25. This was a real surprise to the Democrats who had figured on getting two-thirds of the votes at least, and some very hard and unbecoming remarks were made about the voting.

I returned to Holbrook with my son John L. on the 10th.

On the 9th there was a man by the name of Lee killed in Holbrook. He was a son of John D. Lee and was shot in his own house by a man named Wagner, the seducer of his wife. There was considerable talk in the town of lynching Wagner. The women of the place said that if the men would hang Wagner that they would hang Lee's wife. To prevent the lynching, Wagner was hurriedly taken out of town and taken to St. Johns. Wagner was later convicted and sentenced to the penitentiary for 20 years, but he was only there for a short time before he was pardoned out, as is too often the case where the term of imprisonment is for a long period, or for life.

The election returns were about all in for this county. The count was very close between some of the candidates. There were five Mormons on each ticket and all were defeated but one, and he had a Mormon running against him. It had been so arranged that all the others had Gentiles running against them. This vote showed that there were some who were strongly prejudiced against the Mormons, and also showed that when the Mormons divided, neither of the political parties supported their tickets as they should have done. A few of the Mormons were quite sore over this and a few of the Gentiles were ashamed of the defeat of all the Mormons, but the majority of them were not to blame. The defeat was brought about probably by about 25 or 30 who would not vote for Mormons and these voting the opposite ticket turned the election their way.

Our quarterly conference commenced at Snowflake on November 28th and adjourned on the 29th. I went up the day before the conference and attended the meetings acting as usual as clerk and returned the next day after adjournment of the meetings, coming down with Brother John Bushman. Leaving soon after the meetings were over, I took the minutes with me and fixed them up and recorded them more at odd times in the store and I also made out the missionary appointments. I generally had to write about 25 letters or notices telling each missionary when and where he was to go to fill his appointments. I generally did this work the next Sunday after the conference, as I generally had more time then than on any other day, as I always stayed in the store on a Sunday when I did not go to any of our settlements to attend meetings.

December 8th, there was a telegram here today from Snowflake that Charles I. Flake was killed and his brother James M. Flake wounded in an attempt to arrest a desperado who was also killed. It was claimed that this desperado had robbed a bank somewhere east and had been traced to this place and from here to Woodruff and then on to Snowflake, and the Flakes were telegraphed to arrest him. This they attempted to do but did not as it appeared, use sufficient caution and the results were as stated, a very sad affair for Charles L. Flake was a prominent and valued citizen. He left a wife and children and his loss was greatly mourned by the citizens of the place.

On December 10th I started to Prescott today to attend the U. S. Court as a grand Juror. We arrived at Prescott Junction at about 3 p.m. where we lay over for about three hours. When we took the Prescott Branch Road (this road was abandoned when the one was built through from Ash Fort) for that place. There were from Holbrook, R. C. Kinder, William H. Clark, Adolph Schuster and myself, besides quite a number from Flagstaff and other places. There were some fifty in all, jurors and witnesses. Some of the party got a few bottles of whisky and beer and they had a high old time on the way to Prescott where we arrived at about midnight. Mr. Kinder and I got a bed for a dollar and we both turned in, but some of the party sat up for sometime to finish their spree.

December 11th was a very stormy day. I looked about the town some, but spent the most of the time around the stoves at hotels and saloons as that was about the only place where I could keep warm.

Prescott is situated quite high up in the mountains or hills among the pines.

There were a few good houses, the Court House and School House were as good as could be expected for a place of this size and that had not been settled any longer than this had, as it had until just recently, been without any railroad advantages. There were a few private buildings that showed up very well and gave evidence of thrift and enterprise.

December 12th, Court met at 10 a.m. and the U. S. Grand Jury were empanelled, their names were as follows: Charles Schultz, ---Bray, ---Gray, Hockworth, ---Painter, G. Babbitt, who were from Flagstaff; and from Holbrook there were W. H. Clark, R. C. Kinder, A. Schuster and myself; and Fred Nellis from Williams, and Colin Campbell, C. P. Owens, --Collins, ---Johnson ---Woodruff, ---Adams, ---Moore, and ---Hickey were from various other places. Mr. Bray was appointed foreman. There were several cases before us during the day and two indictments were found.

The 13th we worked all day but did but very little. The U. S. Attorney, General Wilson, did not appear to have very much business and did not appear to be anxious to hunt up any.

December 14th, we worked a little in the forenoon, and adjourned during the afternoon. We met again on the 15th but as we were waiting for some witnesses that had not arrived, we adjourned.

December 16th, we worked hard and got through with all the business before us and were discharged and drew our pay which was not quite enough to pay our expenses, which with some were very high. I found that through the investigations that there were a few persons who were as tired of the Edmunds law as the Mormons were.

It was whispered around during our sessions that there was a Mormon on the jury. Some spoke to me about it and when I told them that I was the one they seemed greatly astonished, but we got along fairly well.

The question of indicting the Mormons was never raised, but the question of indicting the Prosecuting Attorney, General Wilson, was brought up and he was locked out and the subject discussed for a time but it was finally dropped. There was a man from Fort Apache whom Wilson was prosecuting for killing an Indian. After the case had been discussed some little time it was shown to Schultz that it was an Apache Indian when he immediately jumped to his feet and in an earnest and excited manner said, "What do you mean, gentlemen, indict a man for killing an Apache, preposterous, you must be crazy," etc. This showed the strong bias that existed against the Apaches.

We started home on the 17th and when we got with about ten miles of the junction, going up a grade, the train got stuck and could not pull us, so the engine took a few of the head cars and went on leaving us here to contemplate the beauties of the partly desert country for an hour or so at which time they came back and picked us up and went on in, but we were a little late, as the east bound train passed not many minutes before we arrived. Some thought that this was done on purpose to compel us to stay at the Junction all night, the idea was not relished and we determined that we would not stay and patronize their hotel, so about dark a freight train came along and we boarded it, going on to Williams where we got a lunch and then on to Flagstaff where most of the party stopped.

At Winslow we were detained some and the rest of the party remained here except Mr. Kinder and myself, we went on and arrived in Holbrook at about 8 a.m. the next morning. In our all night ride and in changing cars and in stopping at the different places, I took a very bad cold which lasted a few days.

There were some of the most jovial and jolly persons on the jury that I ever met and they with some of the like character of traveling men, made a most jovial party. Some of them must have spent as much as \$100 while we were in Prescott. Mr. Kinder was like myself, had no money to spend in midnight suppers and drinking wine, etc., so we roomed together and did not join the social party in their frequent banquets, as it might be termed.

Our board met on the 27th, there was but little business done, I consented to remain with the store a little longer. However, all the tangles and the debts that we had on hand had by this time been fixed up and when I resigned I agreed to stay until all these were arranged and everything on good condition. I was quite busy for the rest of the year fixing up accounts, etc. I went up to Snowflake on the 27th with President Smith and S. D. Rogers and returned on the 29th.

January 1st, 1893, this was Sunday and these days are always lonesome ones for me and I spend the day the same as I did Christmas, in the store at work, reading and trading as there is always someone that wants something on Sunday. As was usual at this period, trade was rather dull and generally remained so for two or three months.

The railroad had commenced to build a new depot. They were building it of red sand stone from Flagstaff, it was about 100 feet long.

On the 12th, President Smith, George C. Williams and Peter Dillman came down from Snowflake. Brother Williams had invested in a place in Mexico and he had come up to see about drawing out his capital. Some moves were made to distribute some of the shares around among those who wished to take stock in the store. Brother Hulet went down to Albuquerque to see about getting the money from the bank so as to pay Williams off. Brother Smith and Williams and Gilman returned the next day.

Brother Williams told me while he was here that he and some others were going into business in Mexico and he wanted me to go down and join them, he offered me every inducement that he could do so. He said however that they were not ready to start business at present but he would write me later on about it. I did not make him any promises, but told him that I would consider the matter and see how things worked out by the time I heard from him.

January 14th, I received a letter from my son Joseph C., who was at my place at the reservoir, stating that my wife Julia had given birth to a daughter at 20 minutes past one this morning and that both were doing well.

On the 20th I went up to Snowflake, and the next day I looked up books, papers, etc., and got things together so as to commence the work of settling the tithing.

January 22nd, I attended meeting and spoke upon the great mission of Joseph Smith and the work that he had done and that his labors were not appreciated.

I blessed our little daughter giving her the name of Florence.

On the 23rd I commenced the labors of settling the tithing accounts and worked at it all the week finishing up the work on the 30th. I had seven wards to settle with and I then made out the stake balance sheet. There was about \$7,700 paid in tithing and the average of each tithing payer was \$32.50.

I returned to Holbrook on the 31st where I found that work had accumulated so that there was no rest even for a moment. It seemed that business was dull but it was surprising how work accumulated when a person was away for a few days. There were letters to answer, accounts to enter and post up, and a thousand things it seemed to look after. Thus passed the days and the store had now got on its feet again so to speak, and I began to feel that I would not remain with it for many months longer as I had decided to leave a year ago. I had done all in my power to build it up and I was greatly desirous that there should be no flaw in it when I left it that I could remedy. A man's labors are never appreciated in this life, but that was of little consequence to me, as I realized that there would be a day of reckoning hereafter when we all appear before the Judgment Bar.

1893
Chapter 85
I Arrange to go to Mexico

February 24th, there had been no snow or rain to speak of during the winter so far and the outlook for stock and sheep men looked rather gloomy. In some sections stock were already suffering for water, and there is no grass to speak of and there will doubtless be a heavy loss in both stock and sheep.

I went up to Snowflake today with Brother H. M. Tanner, and the next day I spent in fixing up some tithing accounts that had been sent back for some explanations, mainly in regard to the deficiency in the Taylor Ward Office. The Bishop, Merrill E. Willis, is badly behind and will never be able to pay out. His account has gradually fallen behind ever since he was put in as Bishop, until he now owes over \$3,000 that he cannot account for; he has no means of his own to meet this deficiency. He is a fine man in many respects and it is to be regretted that he has managed the business so carelessly.

February 26th, our quarterly conference convened at Snowflake (a very windy and disagreeable day). Brothers Cluff and Dalton were here with us in the interest of the Y. M. M. I. A. President Udall of the St. Johns stake was over. There was a priesthood meeting in the evening. The 27th was a little better day.

The conference adjourned in the afternoon and I returned to Holbrook the next day, my son John L. went down with me. He was going to work in the store for about a month as Silas D. Smith was quitting the store.

March 2nd, the government telegraph operator, H. W. Chadwick, from what I had learned had been very abusive to my son Horace N. who was the operator at Snowflake. I attributed much of this to the fact that we were Mormons. This went on for sometime when Horace reported him to headquarters. He was terribly mad at this and as Horace was not in Holbrook he did the next thing, that was to come in and abuse me over the affair. He wanted to fight and acted like a mad man. He not only gave me considerable abuse, but berated the Mormons in general. I paid but little attention to him and he went of. I attended to my own affairs and never bothered or spoke to him for some time, when one day he came to me and asked my forgiveness for the way he had acted and as an excuse said that one of the other operators was the cause of the whole trouble.

March 9th, the winter had been extremely dry, only 44/100 of an inch of rain fall in the last three months, and it has been very windy the most of the time.

Brother B. H. Roberts, who had been visiting the St. Johns Stake, came in from Snowflake. He was visiting the settlements in the interest of the Seventies. He went off on the evening train.

I went up to Snowflake on the 14th taking a load of goods with the store team, that is the team that was kept to do the drayage and that Brother Hulet used to go back and forth to Snowflake. I returned to Holbrook on the 16th taking a load of oats down.

On March 20th Theodore Farley came in. He had been on a mission to England, and the next day he went on up to Snowflake. He had worked with us before he went on his mission.

At about this time there was considerable trouble at Winslow where there had been a strike, and yesterday the road shipped in to the place about 100 armed men to protect their works. They discharged several of their old hands who it appeared were trying to run the road.

April 1st, there were several of our people going to Salt Lake City to attend the dedication of the Salt Lake Temple. Quite a number of them came down last evening and went off today at noon on the train. I would have been pleased to go but I did not think that I could afford the time or money. My daughter, Jessie May, kindly sent me the means to go with but I disliked to take it from her and thought that I had not better go.

I went up to Snowflake and worked for a few days moving and fixing up fence at the reservoir place so as to take in a little more land than was enclosed. I got Wesley L. Jones to help me in this work.

On the 9th I attended meeting at Snowflake and occupied a portion of the time, and returned to Holbrook on the 11th.

There had been more wind than usual, it had been dry so long and so much wind and the whole country was covered with drifting sand. This state of affairs was noticeable as I passed up and down the road, the cattle were so very poor. I noticed one poor steer lying beside the road that was unable to get up, and in one of my trips nine days later it was still lying there and still had a little life but not able to raise its head, life had nearly left it. Thus the poor animals were dying in many parts from starvation.

Being gone a few days, the work in the store always kept me extremely busy for a few days to catch up.

About this time I had received some very encouraging letters from brother Williams about the business that he expected to start in Mexico, he made me some very liberal offers if I would go down there and join in the enterprise. I talked the matter over with my wife Adelaide, also with my wife Julia, and other members of the family; and after a consultation with my wife Adelaide we decided that I should go down and that she would follow later on. The move was satisfactory all around and I now decided to go so I gave up doing any more on my place at the reservoir and offered it for sale, but of course I did not attempt to sell the place where Adelaide lived, as I expected to take Julia with me and Adelaide would remain until I got established down there.

On April 12th I started for St. Johns to attend the court there as a grand juror. David Roper, W. Jackson, W. H. Clark and I went together. We drove to R. D. Greer's old place where we got into an old shanty which broke the wind a little. It had been one of those terrible windy days, a regular sand storm, and it lasted till about midnight. The sand and dust had been very hard on me and affected my eyes so bad that I never slept a bit all night nor could I rest any.

The next day we drove to St. Johns where I stopped with my old friend and co-laborer, Charles Jarvis.

April 20th, the Judge did not arrive so there was no court today.

I attended the funeral of Thomas Perez which was conducted, I suppose, according to the Catholic custom among the Mexicans. Perez was a leading Mexican in St. Johns and was well thought of by most of the American portion of the community. He had been both Supervisor and Sheriff in the county.

April 22nd, the Judge, J. J. Hawkins, came in last evening and court was held today. A jury of twenty members was empaneled I being one of them, and we got to work in the afternoon.

April 23rd, Sunday, I attended meeting at St. Johns and spoke during the services.

April 24th, the Grand Jury was called into court this morning and Henry Huning of the jury was excused. It was understood that this was on account of his being under the indictment for perjury.

April 28th, the jury got through with their labors today. William Morgan was foreman and S. M. Creig was the clerk. We found 14 indictments, ignored 12 bills and examined 52 witnesses. There were one or two bills found that I did not exactly approve of and one or two thrown out that I thought should not have been. We drew our pay \$2.00 per day and 15¢ a mile each way.

In the afternoon we started for Holbrook and drove as far as Thomas L. Greer's old place. There was no one living here at the time. St. Johns never looked so dull to me as it did on this trip. There were no improvements going on to speak of and quite a number of the people had moved away.

Court had not done very much, the judge seemed to be a fair minded man and crowded business all that he could, but the District Attorney, Thomas S. Bunch, a right good fellow and competent but was too slow or lazy as some put it to push as he should.

On the 29th we drove through to Holbrook, the day was windy and the whole country looked like a desert. There were but few cattle seen on the range along the river, there was no grass, nothing but a barren waste. Later it was stated that 90% of the stock on the river in this vicinity died this year on account of the drought.

May 8th, after returning from St. Johns I was extremely busy for a few days in trying to catch up for lost time. I went up to Snowflake today and took a load of goods with the store team, and the next day I had a very pleasant visit with President Smith who had been to the dedication of the Temple. He gave me many items of interest as to the different meetings and the meeting with old and familiar friends.

As before mentioned, I had made up my mind to go to Mexico, so I commenced to look around to see about selling my place at the reservoir.

The year had been a hard one and there was but little money in the country so the selling for cash was rather a hard proposition. I offered the place to William J. Flake (he being a great trading man) for \$800 and I would take a team and wagon and the rest in mares as there was no duty on mares in going into Mexico. The next morning he told me that he would take it at my figures. The next day I returned to Holbrook taking down a load of corn.

May 13th, we have just had one of the nicest rains that was ever known in this county, it rained for about 48 hours and has just cleared up. This came in a most opportune time for the country was completely dried up, and it was now thought that the few remaining cattle and sheep might survive. This was a great blessing to the country but such things generally have some little drawbacks. In this case the rain raised the river so that it washed in at Holbrook taking off considerable of the bank and several buildings, among the number was the house belonging to W. R. Burbage which was said to have cost him \$2200. This rise in the river was considerable of a loss to him as well as some others. The citizens as well as the railroad spent considerable means in rip rapping the banks of the river and it was sometime before it was made so that it would not wash in towards the town.

Those who worked in the store at this time were John R. Hulet, Superintendent, Joseph Fish, bookkeeper, Theodore Farley, and W. W. Daines salesman and John McLaws who looked after the stable and grain department and other things outside, doing the drayage, etc. There had been many changes in clerks and this had rather a bad effect as we were always breaking in new men and when he got thoroughly acquainted with the business, he would leave, often because he thought that the wages were not enough.

On May 27th I went up to Snowflake on the buckboard, started at 7 p.m. The mail was running between these two places in the night. This change had been brought about by those at Fort Apache who wished the mails to get there in one day. We reached Snowflake at 1 a.m.

Our quarterly conference was held on the 28th which I attended as clerk. At this conference I wished to resign as I was intending to move away, but President Smith wished me to act as long as I remained in the place. Conference adjourned on the 29th. Most of the speakers at the different meetings had attended the dedication of the Temple and this furnished most of the items for their remarks. I returned to Holbrook in the evening with Brother Bushman where the old job was awaiting me and as usual it furnished plenty to do.

June 7th, I got word this evening that Miss Roxey Rogers, daughter of Smith D. and Eliza S. Rogers, was drowned in Silver Creek while bathing in that stream.

Brother Hulet returned from Los Angeles today where he had been to try to secure the freight contract to Fort Apache, but he failed in getting it, the contract being award to A. and B. Schuster for 93 3/4¢ per 100 lbs. This being the lowest bid.

The weather had turned off quite warm, it being during the day about 85 in the shade. The rains that had come had enabled the cattle men to ship some cattle which was being done and some wool was coming in but prices were very low, some wool sold as low as 5¢ per pound. Money was very scarce; the many failures in the east had caused things to be in a very unsettled state.

June 18th, was Sunday and I worked all day in the store. I always stayed in the store to read or fix up some work that I had for the stake, but I always objected to opening our front door and trading the same as on any other day. Brother

Hulet went to the extreme in keeping the store open on Sundays. We used to keep open only in the forenoon on a Sunday, but he at about this time kept open all day. This got to be so objectionable to the Stake authorities that they sent Bishop Bushman from St. Joseph up to Holbrook to close the store. Brother Bushman came up on Sunday and demanded the keys to the store, he then locked the doors. This Brother Hulet did not like. It however had a very good effect, for after this the store was not kept open only a portion of the day on Sundays.

President Smith came down in the evening from Woodruff where he had been attending the ward conference, and I went up to Snowflake with him on the 19th and the next day I worked at Snowflake fixing up different books and papers as I expected to start for Mexico in the near future. I returned to Holbrook on the buckboard, going down in the night.

July 2nd, 1893, I quit the job in the store that I had worked so hard at for several years, so as to fix up for my intended trip to Mexico. I took a load of freight up to Snowflake with the store team, then working for the store until the last moment.

July 9th, I attended meeting and spoke a short time. After I arrived at Snowflake I commenced to arrange for the journey to Sonora, that being the state I was going to. I had made the arrangements for the trade of my place to Brother Flake and we now commenced to fix matters up. He turned over to me a wagon, a span of mules, a span of mares, and two sets of harness, which left a balance owing me of \$328 which he was to pay me in the fall.

I went to several to collect some accounts that I might leave some means for Adelaide while I was gone. I arranged with some of these for payment at once, but several small accounts, were to be paid later on. These accounts were not all paid which resulted in my wife's not getting much out of them and the consequence was that she had but little to sustain her while I was gone.

It was also arranged for her oldest son, Horace N., to go with me. His health was not very good and we thought that the trip might be beneficial to him. He had been tending the telegraph office and Silas, the next boy, and his mother had learned so they took charge of it and Silas looked after it for sometime after this.

The most of my pay from Flake, or all that he let me have, was teams and a wagon and these, of course, I took with me and this left but very little means that I could collect together to leave with the folks that were to remain behind, but I soon got things, as I thought, very well arranged and to the satisfaction of all parties.

Jessie May was to remain, I not thinking it advisable to take her at this time, as we did not know just how things would turn out, and they turned out much worse than I had anticipated.

1893
Chapter 86
The Journey to Sonora

July 11th, 1893, I left our home at the reservoir and started on my trip to Sonora to join Brother Williams in his enterprise that he was starting in northern Sonora, Mexico. It was afternoon before we got off, I had two wagons and took along my wife Julia, and her three little children and as had been stated, my son Horace N.

We drove up to Showlow a short distance where we camped. My son Joseph C. was along, he was taking a load of freight to Fort Apache.

July 12th, starting out we traveled to the Ellsworth Hill where we were overtaken by my son John L. who had decided to go along with me and had come across from Pinedale.

The 13th, we proceeded on, and at Cooley's place we stopped a short time and Horace telegraphed back to the folks at home, and they replied that they were all well. We then went on to the forks of the road where we found Sister Warner and son who lived on the Gila and had been up visiting her brother John T. Lesuer and was returning. They were waiting for company to go on with.

The next day we drove to the Bend about six miles above the post.

On the 15th we drove into the Post at about 10 a.m. Horace went to the office and had a talk with the folks at home.

I had a short talk with Mr. Beverage who had been our agent. He told me that when I left the store that he lost all interest in his work as agent, and trade that he could have turned to the A. C. M. I. went to A. and B. Schuster.

Here we parted with my son Joseph C., he unloaded and returned while we bid him goodbye and continued our journey.

Driving up Seven Mile Hill, we reached Turkey Creek where we camped but failed to find any water although we followed up the bed of the stream for some two miles in search of it. As we were coming down the hill, just before camping, Horace was thrown out of the wagon. He fell just in front of the fore wheel which had just struck him when the team was stopped just before it would have passed over him. We were all tired and after our vain search for water we lost one of our animals so we went to bed without our supper, it now being quite late.

July 16th, John L. started out early this morning in search of the missing animal and soon succeeded in finding it. We then moved on to Black River, 9 miles, where we took dinner in the midst of a rain storm. After this we pulled up the Black River Hill and camped at Dead Man's Hollow where we found good grass and some water that the rain had furnished in the hollow rocks.

July 17th, we drove nearly to the divide. It rained nearly all day and we found the roads very muddy. I got thoroughly wet through, and we camped early. There was plenty of wood and we made a big fire and I tried to get dry but made very poor progress as it rained all the evening.

On the 18th we drove down Black Canyon to Ash Creek, we found the creek high from the recent rains. The road had been terribly rocky as well as muddy, and we found but very little grass.

On the 19th we drove to the Gila River which we found so high that we could not cross so we camped but found no grass for our animals.

The next day we spent the forenoon looking for a ford where we could cross. The water had fallen some and we found a place where we thought that we could cross, and soon made the passage over in safety, and then drove on to Fort Thomas where we camped, but Sister Warner went on being anxious to get home.

July 21st, we drove on to the little settlement of Matthews where we stopped the remainder of the day with Lehi Larson whose wife was a relative of my wife Julia.

July 22nd, we drove to Layton where we stopped with Nancy M. Rollins who was an old neighbor of mine when I lived in Parowan.

July 23rd, we lay over and I attended meeting and spoke a short time. While here I met several old friends and acquaintances who had come down here from Snowflake and other places to make a home. Some of the people were doing quite well financially, but they were doing but little in their spiritual work. From what I was able to observe some of the young people were quite wild, some went to Sunday School but none of them attended meetings. I did not think that the Presidency and Bishop kept things up as well as they did in the Snowflake Stake.

July 24th, we lay over in the forenoon and attended the celebration, P. C. Merrill was the orator and he gave an account of the travels of the Mormon Battalion of which he was a member.

We got some hay at 35¢ a hundred and barley at \$1.00 per hundred. We were kindly treated by Brother and Sister Warner and Sister Nancy Rollins. In the afternoon we drove out some eight miles to King's Ranch.

On the 25th we drove some 25 miles to what was called the Big Hollow.

On the 26th we drove to the Divide about 8 miles from Wilcox where we found a little water in holes but not much grass. The day had been one of the warmest that I ever experienced and we suffered some from the heat but at evening it turned cooler.

On the 27th we drove to Wilcox where Horace telegraphed to the folks at home, they reported that they were well. We then went on some 14 miles and camped.

The Sulphur Spring Valley, which we were in, is a large and open valley and covered with grass, especially in a wet season, but there is not much water in it.

July 28th, a drive of some six or seven miles brought us to the Sulphur Springs where we got our breakfast. This was a noted place in this section during the early days of Arizona's history. It was at this place that Rogers and Spence were murdered by the Apaches. They kept a small trading establishment and among other things whiskey which was probably the cause of their being murdered.

From here we drove to Soldier's Hole where we arrived about dark. There was little here to indicate that it had ever been a mining camp, but here was an old mill that was not running on account of the depreciation of silver. There were a few houses, one a ranch house, not far from where we were camped.

We went to bed all serene, having put our horses out a short distance on an opening among the mesquite trees. We had not been asleep but a very short time when we were aroused by the sound of our horses being stampeded or run off. John L. and I got up and attempted to follow them through the brush but we soon gave it up. We thought that it was thieves that had started them off and we knew that to follow on foot would be of little use in the night. So we concluded to wait until morning and see what would develop. It was not long before we heard a bell, we then started out and went to it which was off about a mile and found all our animals quietly feeding, they had doubtless been run off by dogs from the ranch. We had felt as though we were left, our animals being gone, but now we were all right and went back to camp and in the morning they came up, all but one mule, and John L. followed his tracks back a few miles and found it.

We then drove on to within about ten miles of Bisbee. The roads were very bad, in fact there was hardly any road. They had never been traveled very much and the recent rains had cut gullies through so they were almost impassable in many places, but not having very heavy loads we got through.

July 30th, we drove into Bisbee which is about 65 miles from Wilcox. We went up into town and watched them for awhile run out copper from the furnace. The town is located in a canyon and there is hardly room anywhere to turn around with a wagon. We then drove on about 8 miles to the international boundary.

Next morning we drove into La Moreta where the custom house was on the Mexican side of the line. But we were unable to pass as the head man was away. He came at noon and during the afternoon the matter of getting through was talked over. Mr. Garcia, who was agent for the colony at Oaxaca, assisted me but we were unable to pass. They said that the papers would have to be made up and went to the city of Mexico to be signed and this would take at least 20 days and perhaps 30 days. I was told that I could camp here during the time or go back into the U. S. which was rather discouraging information.

My son John L. thought that he had better go in on horseback to the colony and see Brother George C. Williams about getting through the custom house, as he could get permission to go in that way. There were some miners who were going in the morning and were going to travel about 40 miles in the direction of the colony before traveling off.

August 1st, 1893, my son John L. started for Oaxaca early this morning and expected to be back in about seven days. He was going to see Brother Williams and to find out if something could be done so we could get through the custom house.

August 2nd, I moved out about a hundred yards from the place and prepared to look after the animals and get wood and water and fix to wait patiently until John L. should return.

La Morita is built on a gentle slope bordering a wash that leads into the Sulphur Spring Valley wash. There is no living water here and they get their water from wells which were about forty feet deep. The place at this time consisted of the custom house, a long wooden structure and a dozen or fifteen Mexican huts. (The custom house was later moved from this place) There was one American living in the place, he had a Mexican wife. There was no farming or gardening of any kind in this vicinity there being no water on the surface.

The next day we had considerable rain, it also rained on the 4th and 5th. This was quite heavy and I, constantly running and looking after my animals, kept my feet and legs wet all the time. This last rain washed down two Mexican houses that were built of adobes and flooded the ground where I was camped so that I had to move to higher ground. During this heavy rain many of our things in the wagon got wet and some of us had taken colds, our little infant being the worst.

About dark my son John L. came in, a little sooner than I expected. He was tired and wet through having just swum a stream to get through. He brought a letter from Brother Williams advising me to telegraph to Col. Kosterliskey to see if I could not get him to help me get through the custom house.

August 6th, I saw Mr. Garcia about the matter and he told me that it would be of no use to telegraph the Col. about it. He however got it arranged with the custom house officials for me to leave one team and wagon in security and I could take the other team and wagon and go in for thirty days. This appeared to be the best that I could do under the circumstances so I accepted the terms.

We had more rain today and our babe appeared to be worse with her cold and I was anxious to get through as soon as I could, so took one wagon over to Garcia's and unloaded it and left it and the load and three animals as security to come back in 30 days.

We got arranged and started out with one wagon on the 7th at about 11 a.m. I would have remained a little longer but there was no one here but Mexicans and we could do nothing any more for our babe than we could on the road. We drove to Sulphur Springs Wash about 15 miles; here the water was so high that we could not cross and it rained some during the night and the wash rose still higher. It spread out on the bottom so that the stream was about two hundred yards wide.

August 8th, as we could not cross we were compelled to lie over. Our little one was quite sick, did not appear to get any better, and we spent the time in caring and doctoring it as best we could out here on the prairie.

August 9th, I watched the wash every hour for the 1st 24 hours to see how fast the water was falling, and at about 10 a.m. it had fallen so I thought that I could cross. We made the attempt and by good fortune we succeeded in getting over. We then drove to the Mescal Ranch, here we found a few Mexicans engaged in making Mescal Whiskey. It

was a dirty and filthy place, and I thought that there would not be very many persons that would care to drink the beverage after seeing how it was made. This place was near the base of a high butte called the Nigger Head and a noted land mark. The Mormon Battalion passed this point on their march to California, and later it became a noted place in the recent Mexican border troubles and was called Piedras Negras.

In the afternoon we traveled through immense fields of ocates, a tall willowy looking stalk covered with thorns, and 12 miles brought us to the San Bernardino Ranch, a most noted place in the early days of the Spaniards.

The road did not go up to the ranch, that is the direct one, and I went on a short distance while John L. went up to the old place where there were a few cowboys to get some milk, and by taking another road he did not get to the point where we expected to camp and John L. had to walk about six miles in the dark. I fired off my pistol several times to let him know where we were and he finally found us.

The milk that he got was sweet, being from cows that had eaten freely of the prickly pears, and it was quite thick. It was different from any milk that I had ever tasted before.

Our baby was quite sick and we were up with her nearly all night.

August 10th, our animals ran back last night and I started at day light after them and had a walk of about eight miles before I over took them.

We then traveled down the San Bernardino wash for about 22 miles to the Cohen Bonito, at this time a most delightful and beautiful little place with good grass and water and pleasant grove of trees. It was in the canyon only a short distance from this place that Geronimo surrendered to General Crook.

August 11th our little baby was much worse last night and we were up with her all night trying to do something for her and our great anxieties to get through to the colony only added to the gloomy vigils of the night. The hindrances had been great and we were alone in the wilderness and had not seen any white family since we left Bisbee and that was before our child took sick. We had met occasionally a half civilized cowboy and several Mexicans, but we could get but little assistance from them.

We started early and traveled over a piece of bench land for about ten miles and stopped and prepared some tea or medicine for the baby who was gradually getting worse.

During this drive we saw some Mexicans which we later supposed were going to a mescal ranch in the mountains to the east. At first we took them for hostile Indians and got our arms in readiness for use, but we soon learned by the direction that they went that we were not the object of their search.

Going on to the Batipeto we stopped and I spread a quilt over a dwarf mesquite for a shade and I set down and held our babe for about an hour and a half when she breathed her last. This was about 2 p.m. To us at this particular time it was a sad time. We were in a wilderness and did not even know the road, John L. had been over it but he did not follow any road and in fact in many places there was none that could be found as there had been but few wagons over this route and the rain had obliterated their tracks. We were about 40 miles from the colony and the road was a very difficult one, if we should happen to find it.

My wife washed our little one and prepared it as best she could for its final rest. I managed to find a few pieces of boards, a box that we had along and nailed them together using a kind of box to carry our little one in and then made preparations to press forward.

There was a cowboy camped not far distant and I found him and got him to pilot us across the bottom to the crossing of the stream. The crossing was terrible but we got through the sand and mud and proceeded on to the American ranch some six miles. One of us went ahead all the way so as to find the road. We reached this ranch at about dark but there was no one here, and we could not follow the road after dark so we were compelled to lie over until day light.

August 12th, we got up at about 3 a.m. and after eating a few mouthfuls prepared to start as soon as the first dawn of day would give us light enough to find our way, as the rains had completely obliterated the marks of the few wagons that had formerly passed over these wilds. In fact when we found the trail in many places the rains had washed such gullies that a new route had to be hunted up.

Thus we pushed on our solemn and lonely march for some four miles when we arrived at Chapo's place. Here I got two Mexicans to go ahead and cut out a road, as the place where wagons had gone through, they had just fenced up, and the place was impassible in other respects.

We soon got to the crossing of the river where we were bothered some in getting across on account of high water and mud. At this point Chapo came up and we got him to go ahead for some three or four miles to find the road for us.

At this point there were two routes, a few wagons had been over both ways but we were unable to find their tracks in many places. Here Chapo gave us a few directions as to the route putting us on the worst route of the two as I afterwards learned. Here one of us went ahead to find the road; in some places we had to stop, throw in brush and dirt before we could get over. We were working every minute, the day was very hot and our animals were getting very tired and were covered with foam, but our stopping to fix the road gave them a little rest, still we pushed on as fast as possible over the worst road that a wagon ever went, in one place in going through a narrow canyon the rocks were so close together that the hubs of the wagon rolled on the rocks.

At about 3 p.m. we reached the Bavispa River where we stopped to rest and water our animals for about 30 minutes. Going on we reached the crossing of the river about sunset. Here we were blocked again, the water being so high that we could not cross.

John L. took one of the animals and started up a trail to go around to the first place on the river to obtain assistance, he had gone but a short distance when he met the help. In the forenoon I had sent a note by a passing Mexican who was going through on a trail back of the river stating our condition, etc., and by a mere accident Brother Williams had got it and had come down with two or three others to assist us.

We now left the wagon and taking our animals and mounting them started up the trail. Brother Neglie's son carried the remains of our little babe and I looked after the little boys, Roland and Wilford.

About a mile and a half over the mountain brought us to Brother Mortensen's cabin, the night was dark and we made but slow progress, at this point Bro. Mortensen hitched up a team and took us on up to Brother Neglie's place, not a great distance.

Here Brother Scott and some others started to make a coffin which they finished at about 2 p.m. The weather had been very warm and the babe had changed very fast in the last few hours so that we were unable to dress it properly, it was in such a bad condition but we did the best we could and got her in the coffin. I was greatly exhausted having been up nearly all the time for five or six nights and working every minute during the day trying to get through and after her death we were still anxious to bury her at the colony.

August 13th, we laid our little one away on a site selected by the brethren for a burying ground, a little west from Brother Neglie's place on a bench overlooking the river. To me it was a lonely and desolate spot.

After the funeral I went back to the wagon. It had not been disturbed by Mexicans as they generally passed on a trail which was some distance back from the river and they had not seen the wagon if any had passed.

I got out a few things and took up on the horse and went on up to Brother Williams' place which was about 3 miles from the wagon.

August 14th, Brother Mortensen and son and a son of Brother Williams and I went back with three span of animals to try to get the wagon up over the trail. With all our teams we had to unload it in one place and pack the loading up on our backs, and after working all day we got through at about sunset, a hard days work to get over three miles of mountain gorges.

August 15th, John L. and I went up to Brother Maxwell's place some half mile or more and crossed over the river in a little kind of boat that he had fixed up. We looked over the land on that side of the river, the west side, and found but little that would do to cultivate, we took dinner with Brother Maxwell and returned in the afternoon. We estimated that there were some 1700 acres on the river both sides, that could possibly be cultivated but it would be a most difficult and expensive job to get the water out as it would have to be taken out in four different places on account of perpendicular bluffs, the land being in 13 different pieces. The widest place across the bottom from cliff to cliff was about half a mile. These pieces of land extended up from Brother Neglie's place for about ten miles which was as far as the William's purchase reached. There appeared to be plenty of water but I was told that the river sometimes went dry at some seasons of the year at this point. It was about twenty or twenty five feet wide at this point.

1893
Chapter 87
Some of My Labors and Trials in Sonora

I remained at the camp of Brother Williams for some time after getting to the colony. I call it a camp, it was but little more than a kind of bowery, the sides, however, were tolerably well protected.

While here on the 16th of August we had a heavy shock of earthquake, on in the forenoon, and one in the afternoon. It shook the dishes off the shelf and rattled the stove so it looked as if it were coming to pieces, rocks came down the sides of the mountain raising a heavy dust. It felt as it passed like a great wave under the ground. These, I was told, had been quite frequent in this section, and some four years before there had been a very heavy one that nearly destroyed the town of Bavispa a short distance above here. The earth opened in many places and fire came out, some of the people flocked to the church for protection, that building was thrown down and many perished in the ruins. There was a crack or break along the base of the mountains north of here which I crossed in coming in that was about ten or twelve feet high. I noticed this for some fifty miles. It looked at some distance like a stone wall along the base of the mountains. Some of the scientific men stated that the mountains were thrown up while some said that the valley sank. These shaking ups gave evidence that a rock or brick house would not be very safe to live in.

On August 17th, John L. Horace N., and I went up the stream called the Pulpit about three miles above Brother Neglie's place to look at a big tree that stood on that creek. It was a very scrubby and ill looking tree for its size, it was nearly square near the ground and thicker one way than the other. It measured 52 feet around it a foot from the ground. It looked like a cross between a cottonwood and a quaking asp.

The Pulpit Creek is a small stream that comes in from the east making its way through some high bluffs and there are perpendicular ledges along its sides under which were some very thrifty young ash trees. We were told that higher up wild peaches were to be found and that wild hogs were often seen and sometimes killed. There were indications of copper as I thought in several places along the stream.

On the 18th, John L. went up above to look at the Nelson place but there was but little land there.

August 20th, I attended meeting which was held at Brother Neglie's house, Brother Heaton was over from Cave Valley and spoke. I also spoke a short time.

There were but few people here and they were scattered. They had not been here very long and had not made very much improvements. No town site had been laid off but a little work had been done on a ditch but it was along the base of the mountain and numerous washes coming in would give them no end of trouble in the rainy season, there were a few stockade houses.

August 21st, I fixed up and started back to the custom house at La Morita, my sons John L. and Horace N. going with me. I left Julia and her two little ones at Brother Williams. I took our wagon over the trail which was not as difficult to go down as it was to come up, as the river was yet too high to cross, we went about 15 miles.

August 22nd, as the route that we came in on was the worst road, I wished to take the other and we had some difficulty in finding the right way through.

It rained some in the afternoon and I got thoroughly wet through walking through the weeds, grass, and brush looking for the road through the bottoms. Some of the weeds were as tall as the top of our wagon cover and so thick that it was almost impossible to get through them in some places.

August 23rd, we drove on to the San Bernardino Ranch. We noted all along what a wonderful growth that vegetation had made in the two weeks that had passed since we came in. Some things appeared to have grown about three feet.

August 24th, as we passed up from the San Bernardino Ranch, we met a party of surveyors who were putting up the monuments on the line between the United States and Mexico. These monuments were made of a light colored stone and were about six feet high and could be seen for several miles along the level country.

We drove within about 8 miles of La Morita where we camped near some Mexicans that were going to the Mescal Ranch for Mescal.

August 25th, we drove to the custom house where we got the horses and wagon that we left there as security. They charge me \$4.00 for looking after them while I was gone.

We then went on to Bisbee where I telegraphed to the folks at home telling that John L., Horace N. and I had returned all well and that Florence had died when we were going in. I afterwards learned that this telegram, especially the later part of it, made Adelaide quite angry and she told me herself that it was not intended for her, that it was meant for the Reidheads.

August 26th, I did some trading for parties that had sent in for some things, and ordered a molasses mill for Brother Williams, wrote some letters and arranged for John L. to start back home in the morning, as he intended to return when he had looked at the country. I got a telegram from home stating that they were all well.

August 27th, we had an early breakfast and John L. started for home. He took one of my horses and a couple of quilts for a saddle, etc., a piece of rope was fitted across for stirrups, some cakes etc. in a sack. This was not a very good outfit for a journey of 300 miles, but we figured on him getting some supplies at the Gila Valley and probably he would get a chance to get in with someone who might be going from there over to the Snowflake district. I went out with him to the top of the hill a short distance and bade him goodbye.

We then drove to the windmill on the road where we camped four weeks ago. This was a very hard and good road, one of the best natural roads that I ever saw. The rains had made things grow wonderfully fast, the flowers were so thick in places that they gave the mountains and hills a different color, grass was green and fresh and everything looked lovely in this dry and desert country where but a few short weeks ago it was as dry and parched as the sands of Sahara.

August 28th, Horace and I drove up to the custom house the same as we had four weeks ago and with the same results, our papers to allow us to pass had not come and we were compelled to wait.

August 29th, I got a few things that I had left with Garcia and fixed our loads in a different shape and prepared to wait a little longer or until the mail came in.

While at Bisbee I got a few newspapers which gave me a little reading matter, but the care of my team took the most of my time as I was always fearful of their being stolen. I almost always tied them to the wagons of a night and then I was often up several times during the night to see if all was right.

August 31st, the mail came in but there were no papers to allow me to pass the custom house. This was another disappointment added to the long list that we had and still others followed.

I hitched up and drove on the U. S. side of the line to the old windmill. Here I heard of a man by the name of Johnson who was putting up hay about six miles west of us, so I drove over to see if I could get work for a few days. I arrived at the place at about dark and found that he did not want to hire anyone.

September 1st, we drove up to Bisbee and on the road Horace had his foot run over by the wagon. The injury was quite painful but there were no bones broken that we could find and he soon got over it. We stayed around Bisbee for some little time watching them run out the copper, wrote some letters and then drove out about two miles.

The next day we drove to the windmill where we had camped so often and remained there the rest of the day.

September 3rd we drove over east some two miles and camped and I then rode over to the custom house to see if the papers had come from Mexico City and was again disappointed. I then drove on up toward Bisbee some two or three miles to a milk ranch.

September 4th, here I got a job from Mr. Franks of putting in a dam of dirt and brush in a wash to turn the flood waters when it rained, away from his place. I took it very low as I did not expect to make anything only pay expenses and I thought that I may as well work at a low price as not to work at all while I was waiting the slow move of the Mexicans. The work was mostly plowing and scraping. I worked at this on the 5th and 6th. The weather was warm and it was dusty work.

September 7th, Horace N. rode over to the custom house to see if the papers had come allowing us to go in. They had not but finally the custom house officer gave me permission to go in and get my family as I had waited so long.

I finished working on the ditch and got \$5 for what I had done (not a very big fee). I then drove over to the windmill and on the 8th drove over to the custom house where after some talk I got permission to go down to the Colony for 30 days. We then drove over to the Sulphur Spring Wash about 15 miles.

The work and worry had told on me considerable and I had quite a fever and I feared that I was coming down with a bad spell of the fever so prevalent in the southern countries.

There were a couple of Mexicans camped near us and I got a little coffee from them, that being about all the medicine that I could get and I did not have any of that myself. This seemed to help me some, and I commenced to get better.

September 9th, we drove on some six miles below the San Bernardino Ranch, the two Mexicans noted above still with us. We were not sorry for this for at this place there had been many deeds of bloodshed and massacres by the Indians and it was reported that there were still hostile Indians in this vicinity, and some of the whites who had gathered along the border here were outlaws and to be feared about as much as the savages.

On the 10th we drove to the Batapeto where our baby died, and on the 11th we drove down to the American ranch as it was called but there was seldom anyone here.

Here we loaded on 13 sacks of dried fruit for Brother Neglie which he had left there sometime before not being able to haul it any further. We then traveled on to near the Earthquake Creek as we called it, and took another road from the one that we went in on which was somewhat better.

September 12th, we drove to one of those terribly rocky canyons that are so common in this country, about seven miles the dugway was very steep and narrow and in going down one of my animals became unmanageable and threw herself over the cliff and took the wagon nearly off with her, but I got the rest of the team stopped just as the wagon was about to go over the cliff and if it had gone a foot further it would have taken me with it down over the cliffs. I got off from the wagon as soon as I could and cut the harness and let the animal go, almost wishing that the fall would kill her for the way she wilfully threw herself over the cliff. She rolled down over the rocks to the bottom. As I was trying to lead one of the other animals that was not well broken, she hang back and stumbling went over the cliff and rolled to the bottom as the first one did, and they both escaped with a few bruises but no serious injury, for a wonder. The wagon was in such a place that I could not get it out for a few inches more would land it fifty feet below in the rocks. Blocking the wheels well so it would not move, I left it and went on to Brother Mortensen's place and got him to come back and help me get the wagon out. The next morning we unloaded the wagon and after some work succeeded in getting it out, and we got back to Brother William's place at about dark.

September 14th, I moved over the river (the stream had now fallen so that we could cross) to an old log hut that some one had erected, it was a miserable looking place, very low, no floor of course, and some poles and brush with some dirt thrown on it served for a roof. This was about half a mile west of the river, but we thought it would serve us for a little while. But we did not sleep in it for fear of rattlesnakes. We always slept in the wagon and it seemed at some places a little dangerous getting out of nights for fear of snakes, but they generally gave us warning so that we could avoid them in the night.

September 15th, one of my animals had strayed off and I started at daybreak in search of the trail. I followed the trail for about seven miles when I lost it and it was headed down the river. I was satisfied that it had taken the back track so I got one of Brother Mortensen's boys to go down, as I was near his place, and he soon got her.

September 16th, I had a long talk with Brother Williams, in fact the first that I had to enter into details. He said that he was owing considerable on the place and he would not sign a note for this amount unless those who had come in would sign with him and that they had refused (they would sign for what they got). He said he would see them again and if they still refused he would turn the place back to Kosterliskey and get a smaller place for what he had paid. He had expected me to bring about \$3,000 to turn in on the place but I did not have the money that he anticipated and never had that much to invest in such a barren place. He had failed to sell the land that he had expected to and there was no prospects of his starting any business as contemplated. This to me looked very discouraging. I had moved down here at a great sacrifice and to be disappointed thus was indeed something that I had not expected and the move had about broken me up. I talked the matter over with Julia and Horace N. and we came to the conclusion that we had better go back as far as the Gila anyway.

September 17th, I attended Sunday School, only a few came and there was no meeting.

I had another talk with Brother Williams and he said I had better go back to the Gila for the present any how, that I might get some work there and as things were here I could do nothing at the present. The fact was that he had been disappointed in getting the money to pay for the place, some \$12,000 and he blamed Apostle Teasdale, and said that he promised to assist in buying the place and would get means from the Church and then he had gone back on this agreement and the Church would not come to his rescue. He was thinking that everyone was taking the advantage of him and living off him. He was the bluest man that I ever saw. He would lie down and groan like a horse with the belly ache. He was feeling so poor that he would not allow his wives to wear shoes, said that he could not afford it. He was apostatizing as fast as he could and as is generally the case, he blamed everyone else for his troubles. In fact I think now that he commenced to apostatize when he found out at Ascencion that Brother Horton was the real Isaac C. Haight. When he found this out he was going to take his gun and go and kill him. Williams had a relative or two who were killed in the Mountain Meadow Massacre.

Not long after this, he kicked out and left the Church and also left his second wife taking his other wife and went back to New Mexico. His daughter that married Peter Dillman died about this time and Dillman later on married the woman that Williams had left (she was Lettie Mortensen). Later on William's first wife died and he then went back to Mexico to get the wife that he had turned off and found that she had married Dillman, his former son-in-law. This angered Williams very much and he attempted to break the match up but he did not accomplish anything so he returned to New Mexico a most miserable, grumbling and fault finding man. It is terrible how a man goes down when he lets the evil spirit take possession of him and he leaves the Church under such an influence.

1893
Chapter 88
I Go To the Gila and Settle There

Williams, being determined to throw up the place if he could make the arrangements with Col. Kosterliskey, left me no alternative but to return as I was situated, and on September 18th I commenced to make preparations to leave the place. I had to go back to the custom house as I had not passed, having just got a permit for 30 days.

September 18th, I packed up and reloaded the wagon. There were many rattlesnakes about here, and as I picked up the dinner box which sat on a couple of sticks to keep it off the ground, there was an extra large rattlesnake under it, this was in our log hut and I had found them several times in this vicinity.

We sold everything that we had and could spare in the shape of dishes, furniture, etc., as we could get them again when we reached the Gila Valley, and it would not pay to haul them back. I settled up with Brother Williams and paid him for what provisions that had been gotten from him. Also for the time that Julia had boarded there while I was gone to Bisbee, as I did not want to leave owing him a cent. He had become a changed man and was finding fault with everyone.

September 20th, we started on our return journey to the U. S. Brother Terry was going to Bisbee so we had him for company a portion of the way. We traveled about 15 miles. September 21st, we drove to the point to where our baby died as we went in. This sad camp ground brought fresh to our minds the sad scenes of the last two months and particularly at this place where we had watched with our little one with mingled feelings of hope and fear, and the bitter disappointments that we had met on arriving at the colony.

The Parson, as we called him, (Brother Williams went by this title before he joined the church) was a changed man, he had apostatized and was the most miserable man that I ever saw. He thought that everybody was wrong and dishonest. He had succeeded in leading me on a wild goose chase which was one of the worst moves that I ever made as to financial affairs.

September 22nd, we drove to an old mescal ranch that was located about three miles below the San Bernardino Ranch. This was the place where Mescal was made and sold to the Indians at the time Geronimo broke away, when they made the treaty with General Crook.

September 23rd, Brother Terry drove on ahead as he was in a hurry to get to Bisbee. We drove to within about 12 miles of La Morito, the grass and flowers along the road surpassed anything that I had ever seen.

It was at the Sulphur Valley wash along here that the town of Douglas was later built near the Mexican Border.

On the 24th we drove up to the custom house and found that my papers had not come, this was 55 days that I had waited for them, and I could not get into Mexico without them and I was now glad that they had not come for I had decided to go back to the U. S.

We then drove to the windmill just over the line and when we got on American soil we felt somewhat relieved on getting out of such a tangle as the "Parson" was in, let along the bad spirit that he possessed.

September 25th, we drove to Bisbee where we stopped a short time, wrote letters home and bought a few things that we needed on our journey, and then drove on some eight miles taking a different road from the one we went in on, going on the east side of the Sulphur Spring Valley. On the 20th we drove nearly opposite to the Soldier's Hole.

September 27th, we drove to the Chiricahua Ranch where we found about 40 cowboys at work rounding up stock. They kindly sent over to us a piece of fresh meat. This is a fine ranch and from the looks there is a vast number of cattle in this vicinity. The grass was good, there being considerable rain this summer. The groves of live oak scattered over the valley gave it a picturesque appearance. It rained some during the afternoon and turned quite cold.

September 28th, we followed along the base of the Chiricahua Mountains and drove about four miles past the Riggs place where we camped in the midst of a cold rain storm. It came from the north and here we were not able to find

any wood so we went to bed wet and cold. I had become thoroughly wet through before we camped and was quite chilled.

On the 29th we drove to Fort Bowie where we stopped a short time. This spot is located in what was called Apache Pass and in early days the scene of many Apache murders and robberies. Near by the post was their cemetery, the headstones at the head of the graves were all of a beautiful white marble obtained from the hill near by and on nearly every one of them was "Killed by Apaches". We went on some six miles and camped.

September 30th, we drove on to Bowie Station where we took dinner near the station. While here I was nearly bitten by a rattlesnake. The next day we drove to the Big Hollow where we camped near two months before as we went out.

October 1st, we drove to King's Ranch, our teams were getting tired and we did not travel very fast.

The next day we drove to Layton where we stopped with Brother Warner.

October 3rd, I had concluded to stop in this valley if I could get a place. I was so broken up now that I had but little to go back home for. Adelaide had a city lot and house but had expected to join me when I got located.

I rode down to Thatcher to look about and see what I could do. I saw President Layton but did not find anything that I wanted or rather that I could reach.

October 4th, we drove down to Central and stopped with Brother Coomb's folks, he was away. They used to live in Woodruff and we were acquainted with them there. In fact Brother Coombs was a mason, and the one that built the Coop Store at Woodruff. I got my horses in a pasture for fifty cents.

October 5th, I went up to Thatcher and looked around some. Brother R. A. Allred had a place to sell for cash down, that I did not have, besides the place did not suit me exactly.

On the 6th I drove back to Layton and stopped with Nancy M. Rollins, and I talked some with Nelson P. Beebe for a two acre lot, he wanted \$250, for it, would give me time on it but wanted interest. I drove out to the place and camped and looked around some to see if I could do better.

Sunday I attended the meeting at Layton and spoke a short time.

On October 9th, Morgan Merrill, son of P. C. Merrill, came along and offered me a piece of land just across the street from his father's of 3 acres for \$275. I thought this a little better trade than the Beebe trade so I took the lot and turned him my best wagon and an animal for \$175 and was to pay him the other \$100 by the first of May. The next day I moved into the place and fixed up a kind of tent out of a couple of wagon covers, and the next two days I hauled rock for a foundation of a house, and the next day did some work on the foundation.

October 15th I attended meeting and as I had not started a place and had expected to become a resident, I handed in our recommends, and we were received as members of the Layton Ward.

There was a horse race today which was attended by both Mormons and Gentiles, refreshments were taken to the grounds where they were soon disposed of, this I did not think looked very well for Mormons on the Sabbath day.

The next day I went over to Graham and got some of my animals that were in a pasture there.

I let Brother James Freestone have my mules to freight with, he was to pay me one half of what the team made. I also made arrangements with George W. Williams of Pima for 7000 brick.

My son Horace N. started to attend the Academy today so I have no help in the labors of building.

The next four days I hauled brick and as there were a few very bad places in the road I was not able to haul very heavy loads but I did not have far to haul them, a little over a half mile.

The weather was rainy and cold and we were camping out in a wagon box with a make shift of a tent and our cooking was done out of doors over a fire of mesquite roots but during all these moves and reverses, Julia never complained but was always patient under all trials and hardships of such a life in a new country.

October 22nd, I attended meeting. Brother P. C. Merrill spoke on the subject of the resurrection. There was not a very good attendance at the meeting and as far as I could see, the people were not very good meeting goers, being a little indifferent as to religious duties.

Horace N. and Wilford were both sick with a very bad attack of dysentery and the climate or diet seemed to have affected the most of us for we all were more or less afflicted in some way or other.

On the 23rd, I hauled some clay and sand and the next day I worked digging a trench for a foundation of my house, this was dug quite deep as the way they ut in foundations was to dig some two feet deep and fill the trench full of cobble rock and then turn in water and sand and pound the rocks down. This was done partly to keep the gophers from digging under the house.

October 28th, I went down to Thatcher and attended the Priesthood meeting at 10 a.m. The main subject was to raise means for the completing the Academy. The building had been so far completed that it was in use but in an unfinished condition.

The next day I attended meeting at Layton. President Layton and his counselor, W. D. Johnson, were present and were the speakers.

On the 30th I worked at making some door and window frames, and the next day I went down to Pima to get some lime.

November 1st, I commenced to lay up my house, just one room. I made my own mortar, laid the brick and tended myself which was rather slow work, as I was not much of a mason. I now worked every minute on the house only stopping to gather a few mesquite roots to cook with occasionally and made a camp fire. I got the house so far along that we moved into in on the 28th. It is true that there were no doors or windows or roof but I had the rafters up and covered them with wagon covers and had some white cloth tacked on for windows and a quilt was hung up for a door.

On November 30th we were invited up to Mrs. Nancy M. Rollins for dinner which we greatly enjoyed. If our house was unfinished it was much better than where we had been in a kind of a tent, for the flies in there were simply awful and of a night the tent seemed to be full of them and in the bed and everywhere else.

December 3rd, I attended meeting as usual, the weather was quite cold with some wind which made it quite disagreeable.

I spent the time on the place cleaning up, grubbing brush, and leveling the ground off.

The Stake Conference was held at Pima on the 10th. I went down and attended it and stayed all night with G. W. Williams. Conference was adjourned on the 11th, President Layton was not present on account of sickness. There was not a very good attendance at the meetings.

On the 16th I went up to Solomonville and took Horace along for the purpose of trying to get a job for him in the store and telegraph office. Mr. Fitzgerald who was running a store and the office partly promised him a job later on. I spend most of the time at work about the place.

On the 17th I attended meeting and spoke on the law that blessed or cursed the children for the acts of their parents.

The Christmas holidays passed off about as usual with the customary drinking of whiskey. The weather is pleasant with cold nights.

December 31st, the year of 1893 had passed into history and with it some joys and many disappointments which I had met. We had laid our little one away in a foreign land, we had worked hard and lived poor and the many hardships had begun to show by the wrinkles on my face and the scant flesh upon my bones. The disappointments that I had met in the "Parson" and starting the business that took me to Mexico and his backing out of everything including the Church was a great set back to me for I was not able to sell out and make such a trip for pleasure. I felt that I was broken up as to means and considerably so in health. But still I had hopes of yet making a home in this, the garden spot of Arizona, and I worked with a will and lost no time in trying to make a house, but these trials were only a few of what I have encountered since.

1894
Chapter 89
I Go Into Business with I. E. D. Zundel

January 7th, 1894, at our meeting today, Henry G. Boyle gave us a very interesting sermon.

The weather is quite cold, a little snow fell a few days ago but it did not last long.

It is the custom for the young folks to have a dance every Friday night. There is considerable rudeness at these parties, nearly all the men use tobacco and some use whiskey, and profanity is not uncommon with most of this class. I seldom go out only to meetings.

My team that was freighting soon stopped as the freighting was cut off for a time, and I was very much cramped to get feed for them and provisions for ourselves as I had not been able to get any work that would bring me anything.

January 21st, the freighting business has revived and there is now about 300 teams on the road between Wilcox and Globe, most of them from Apache County.

At our meeting today Brother E. A. Noble from Bush Valley spoke.

January 28th, our ward conference was held today. President Layton and his counselors were present, but the attendance was rather poor as there had not been any notice of it given out. There were no ward officers present except the Bishop and no reports given in. I thought that there was something lacking and it was not to be wondered at that the people were indifferent. I made the remark at the time that it looked as if the authorities were trying to hold the conference so that no one would know it.

I have been binding up corn fodder for William Beebe and got a little of it to feed my team. The work had been pretty hard on my hands and my fingers were worn through.

February 1st, fast meeting was held with a fair attendance but it was not very spirited. There were four children blessed.

On the 4th I attended meeting and acted as clerk. February 18th, meeting was held as usual.

The last few days I have been busy in setting out fruit trees, grape vines, and a variety of plants and shrubbery, and I have succeeded in getting a shingle roof on my house, in place of the wagon cover that we started with.

March 1st, 1894, our fast meeting was held as usual but there was not a very good attendance. Things began to look lovely, peach trees were in full bloom.

On the 11th our stake conference was held at Thatcher, but only for one day as it was expected that Apostles Young, Smith, and Teasdale would be here in about a week to hold meetings with us.

The work of cleaning out the ditches was in full progress, I put in about a week at this work which was a rather hard and disagreeable job. The clay and sediment was very sticky and a very little water was left in the ditch and then we got in and shoveled out the mud, the water making it easier for the mud to slip from the shovel but it was a disagreeable job standing in the mud and water all day.

During the week I received a letter from President Jesse N. Smith which breathed a spirit of kindness and appreciation which is rarely met with in this unappreciative world, following is a short extract from it: "Snowflake, March 8, 1894. Brother Joseph Fish. . . . I cannot say how much I miss your assistance and support. I hope that you may have abundant prosperity in all respects. The remembrances of your unselfish labors will remain with me 'while life and thought and being lasts'. Please write of your circumstances and surroundings and whether there is any hope that you will come back, or for me to come on, Jesse N. Smith."

On the 19th I went down to Pima to attend the meeting that had been appointed there for today and tomorrow as the Apostles were expected to be there. They, however, did not arrive so the time was occupied by the home talent. I spoke some in the afternoon. I remained all night staying with Brother Gorge W. Williams as the Apostles did not come, meeting was not held the second day.

On the 21st we had a little snow, this was a little unusual at this time of year but it does not lie on the ground very long when it does come.

For a few days past I have been engaged in fixing up the ward records. They were in bad shape having been written with pencil on odd slips of paper and fly leaves of memoranda and it was a difficult job to get them together and in any kind of shape as they should be. I had to get some of the old settlers to help me out with their memory on some points as the items that I gathered up were lacking in many things in giving a clear understanding of conditions.

During the time I was not employed in these various labors, I hauled some mesquite wood for the brick kiln, I got three dollars a cord for cutting and hauling it, which I considered very low for that kind of wood was hard to cut and difficult to obtain near by.

I had been told that a man by the name of I. E. D. Zundel at Thatcher was wanting to start up a mercantile business and on the 24th I went down to see him about it. We had quite a lengthy talk about the matter and he seemed very much inclined to start up the business.

On the 31st, I attended the Priesthood meeting at Thatcher, after which I had another talk with Brother Zundel about the business venture and we made some arrangements to start up soon. He had some means, I did not have any, but had some little experience in the mercantile line. I commenced and wrote to several firms that I was acquainted with about our getting a bill of goods, that we were intending to start up a business and I wanted their best terms and time given on them, etc.

April 1st, Brother P. C. Merrill was our speaker at the meeting. He nearly always speaks when he is present but as he often goes to other places to speak, he is not home so very often.

April 8th, I have just plastered my house and as will be noted I did all the work myself. It was done a little at a time, doing a variety of other work, working on the ditch, etc.

I went down to Central today with Brother P. C. Merrill where he delivered a very good sermon, after which I spoke a short time. On the 15th I attended meeting at Layton, Brother William J. Packer was the speaker and did very well, but the meetings, or rather the speaking, had fallen into a groove. Brother Merrill and Packer generally did it all when they were present unless some strange elder happened to be present. They did very well but it seemed a little odd to me to see this, as others were never called on. But it seemed to be the policy of the Bishop to keep them in the harness as they did good work, but it did not add to the variety that is necessary to satisfy the people as all like a change in this as well as in food.

April 17th, I went down to Thatcher and assisted Brother Zundel in making out a bill of lumber, etc., for a store building. We decided to make the building of brick, 30 X 30 feet. We were not moving very fast in the matter as we wished to lay the case of our business venture before the Apostles who were expected to visit us in a short time and to see if they approved of our business venture, or if they had any suggestions to make. I had received several letters from the firms that I had written to, some of them were quite favorable and they gave us very good terms. April 22nd, Henry G. Boyle was the speaker at our meeting today.

I again went down to Thatcher on the 26th and had another talk with Brother Zundel about our business. The next day, Mr. Laney, who was traveling for C. C. Houghton and Co., came along and I selected a bill of shoes amounting to about \$400 to be shipped when we would order them as we did not want them until we were ready to commence our business.

Our stake Sunday School Conference commenced on the 29th. It was held at Pima and Brothers George Goddard and George Reynolds from Salt Lake City were in attendance.

On April 30th Brother Andrew Jensen, Assistant Historian for the Church, held meeting in our ward in the evening and spoke on Church history. May 1st, 1894, I spent the day in assisting Brother Jensen who was writing up the history of the ward. We got about twenty of the oldest settlers together and by the aid of their memory and hat items we could gather other ways, we got most of the points that he wanted.

The crops in the valley were looking fairly well but there had been a few cold snaps, still the first cutting of the lucern was about through with.

May 6th, Brothers Stocks, Birdno and Elmer met with us as home missionaries.

The next day I went down to Thatcher and settled up with President Layton for the place I had bought of Morgan Merrill, as it was arranged when I bought the place for me to pay the balance to President Layton. I paid all but \$21.50 and gave my note for that payable in 30 days. President Jesse N. Smith had sent me the money from Snowflake for my capital stock that I had in the store. President Layton was very kind to me and wished me to settle in Thatcher. He told me that Brother Andrew Jensen had told him that I had the best Stake Record in the Church and that they ought to get me here if possible to keep their records. This was doubtless the cause of his being so friendly.

I had another talk with Brother Zundel, he said that he would commence to haul the rock for the foundation of our store building in a few days.

May 10th, my wife Julia gave birth to a daughter this morning at half past nine o'clock. The little girl seemed to be rather a delicate child, a little more so than common.

May 11th, Apostle John Henry Smith came in this evening on the stage. Priesthood meeting was held the next day at Thatcher at which Apostle Smith gave the brethren some straight talk about men who took advantage of the law and deserted their plural wives. He condemned such actions in very strong terms.

May 13th, I went down to Pima with Brother Bennett where a special meeting was held, Apostle John Henry Smith spoke both in the forenoon and in the afternoon, treating on the law of adoption, tithing, the word of wisdom, etc.

He met me with the most cordial feeling giving me a kiss in a most friendly way. I talked some with him. He told me that the people were not any too safe in Mexico and that I would be better off here than to go down and join my fortunes with Brother Williams. He said that this was a better country than Apache County and he thought it perfectly safe to have all my family here, and thought that I would do well to remain here, and sanctioned my going into business with Brother Zundel, he said that he was a very fine man but for us to avoid the credit system. Apostle Smith will go on to Mexico in the morning. He stated that one object of his visit to that country was to give the people there the deeds to their lands which the church had hitherto held. In the evening he sealed some 32 couples who had not been to the temple. He also got President Layton and Brother Merrill to settle their differences that existed between them. This last work was probably one of the main things that brought him to this valley at this time.

May 18th, I blessed our little daughter and gave her the name of Zelma, my son Horace N. suggested the name getting it from a *Book of Mormon* story.

At our meeting on the 20th the speakers were John Morris and P. C. Merrill.

May 26th, I have been at work this week hauling rock for the foundation of our store building. I hauled 17 loads. I have not been able to do anything or get any work that would bring in any cash but I work a little on the door and window frames for our store.

I attended the priesthood meeting today at Thatcher. There were a few doctrinal points brought up but they were not explained clearly to my mind.

The weather is getting dry and hot and the water in the river is failing so it looks as if there would be a shortage in some of the crops.

Our quarterly conference was held on June 10th and 11th at Pima. I did not go down, I have been very busy working on our store building. I made the frames, hauled the rock and brick, and tended the mason, etc. Reuben W. Fuller was the mason and layed the building up. During a part of the time that we worked on the building the thermometer stood at 105 in the shade.

July 1st, I attended the Priesthood meeting at Thatcher, the subject of raising means for the Academy was again up.

The 4th was celebrated in the usual manner but I did not attend. I was hauling wood. The brass band went up to Solomonville, my son Horace was a member and went along.

On the 8th our meeting was held as usual, we had the same old sermon, Bishop Walker was a good man but he was hard of hearing and got things in a kind of groove. He had passed his usefulness as a public leader.

The next Sunday the 15th, Brother P. C. Merrill who is a stake missionary spoke. He visits some of the wards nearly every Sunday.

July 22nd, I have been at work on the store, got the roof on and the floor down.

The 24th was celebrated at Pima, the band with many others went down but I did not go.

On the 25th I selected a bill of dry goods from Mr. Wallace who was representing Murphy Grant and Company. The next day Brother R. W. Fuller plastered our store. I tended him.

I had another talk with Brother Zundel about our business. As has been stated, I did not have any means to put into the business as I told him at the start. He made this proposition that he pay me for my work on the store and he own it. He would then put in \$400 to help start the business, He was to loan me half of this amount with interest until I could pay it back, thus making us equal partners in the business. He would loan the store some means to help along with the business. I accepted the proposition.

On July 27th, I wrote some letters about the business and sent off some means in payment of goods that we had ordered.

On August 9th I finished up the work in the store of putting in the shelving and counters and made a very fair job of it being that I did not profess to be a carpenter.

On the 15th I started to Bowie Station for a load of goods. The railroad that was being built through the valley had just reached Solomonville but as the goods were shipped to Bowie, they were not forwarded. I went as far as Bailey's Wells.

There had been some very heavy rains in this vicinity which had filled all the washes with water and overflowed in places so that there were some very bad mud holes along the road.

On the 16th I started out before daylight and reached Bowie, 18 miles, by 10 a.m., where I found that by some misunderstanding the goods had been forwarded on to Solomonville. I however got a part of the load and returned to Bailey's Wells.

The next morning I started at 8 a.m. drove to Solomonville and unloaded my freight and loaded our goods and drove home.

On the 18th I attended the Republican Primary held at Safford for the purpose of selecting 8 delegates to attend the Republican Convention to be held at Solomonville on September 1st. I was elected one of the delegates.

On August 19th I attended meeting as usual. It was not very well attended and as usual very few if any of the young folks were present.

On the next Sunday, the 26th, we had missionaries and Brother W. D. Rencher from Apache County was present and also spoke.

President Christopher Layton had been in business for several years in Thatcher and was for sometime in partnership with a man by the name of Alexander Hunt who did not belong to the Church. Hunt was a young man and had first worked for Layton and then the latter took him in as a partner. They recently had a settlement and Layton was not satisfied with it and claimed that Hunt had defrauded him out of about \$1400. Brother Layton got me to go over the books to see if I could find where the leak was. I took the books and went over them but found that it was a very difficult job as the books had not been kept in any shape so that things of this kind could be detected, and in fact they had been very poorly kept. But I went at it to try and find out how the parties stood.

September 1st, I attended the Republican Convention at Solomonville. There were 60 delegates present. We got out the following ticket, for the Council, Burt Dunlap; for the House, Joseph Fish and T. E. Williams; for Sheriff, ---Wight; for Treasurer, Frank Dyshart; for Prosecuting Attorney, Judge Morrman; for Supervisors, ---Hill and ---Hayes.

The Republican party was greatly in the minority in this county and without some unlooked for change we could not hope to elect many of the candidates. But there was a feeling of disunion or division among the Democratic party which was giving us some hope of success.

On September 22nd I attended meeting at Thatcher and spoke on the duties of the Latter Day Saints and had more freedom in my talk than usual.

September 3rd, our stock of dry goods came in on Saturday and we opened them up today. Our hardware came in several days ago but we did not open up the goods for sale until today. Our stock was small and we sold very close so as to make quick returns and to compete with the other merchants.

Our quarterly conference was held on the 9th and 10th in Thatcher at which I was sustained as Clerk of the High Priests Quorum.

1894-1895
Chapter 90
A Trip to Snowflake and Political Items

September 11th, I have been spending considerable time during the last two weeks on the Layton and Hunt Books. I have done about all that I could do and failed to find that Brother Layton had been defrauded very much, but of course he could have been and the books not show it. Hunt kept the books himself and if there was any crooked work done, he would not let it appear on the books. I thought that much of Brother Layton's imagination was not well founded, but he may have had grounds to suspect that something was wrong.

I had been arranging to make a trip to Snowflake to see how things were there, and arrange for Adelaide to join me sometime in the near future. I started out just after dinner and drove down to Thatcher where I expected to do a little business with Brother Layton, fixing up some accounts, etc., but I found him sick so could do nothing, and I went on to Pima where I stayed all night with Will and Guy Rollins. I had my son Horace along, Julia remained at home.

September 12th, we drove down to Mathews where we took dinner with Sister Larson, she sent by us about 120 pounds of honey to her daughters at Snowflake. We then drove on to Curtis, now called Eden, where we expected that Nephi Smithson would join us. Here we found that Elijah Hancock was expecting to start for Apache County the next morning so we waited to go with him.

September 13th, we drove over to Fort Thomas and waited for Hancock and Smithson to come up. They came in about Sunset, and the next morning we drove to the crossing of the river and in the afternoon Brother Hancock and I drove up on the mountain about five miles, Smithson did not come on and we did not see him again on the trip.

September 15th, we drove to the mouth of Black Canyon where we found a little water in holes but not half enough for our animals.

About midnight some persons passed us with about 10 or 12 head of animals which gave us the suspicion that they might be rustlers as there were some of this class in the country.

September 16th, we drove to Black River going down that terrible dugway after dark. It was a bad and dangerous place even in daylight but we were needing water badly so went down to the river after it was dark.

September 17th, continuing our journey, we passed Fort Apache some six miles where we camped. There were some Indians camped near where we were and during the night they did considerable shooting, what it was all about I did not learn, but it frightened Sister Hancock very much as she was not well, it was quite a shock for her.

September 12th, we drove a little past Pinetop, and the next morning drove on to the Hollow where we took dinner with Heber Jarvis who was here keeping the station, after which we drove on to Snowflake where I found my family reasonably well excepting Adelaide, who for sometime had very poor health, she was around but her little boys, Silas and Joseph S. did most of the work.

I was greatly disappointed in not meeting my old friend Jesse N. Smith, he had gone to Utah to attend the October Conference. He had started very early doubtless having other business to attend to.

Adelaide and I talked over the situation about her going down to the Gila and she was willing to go if we could sell the place to any advantage. I looked around some, but did not succeed in finding a purchaser. I got up a load of wood.

On the 23rd I attended the meeting and spoke a short time, and the next day I went up to Pinedale where I met my son John L. and daughter Jessie May, they were well, but John L. was a little discouraged. The season had been unusually dry and as his farm was all dry farming he had raised but very little. He talked a little as if he might go down on the Gila and try his fortune there with me.

The next day I returned to Snowflake, getting a load of wood on the way down.

September 25th, I had not been able to sell the place to any advantage so we decided that Adelaide had not better go down at this time, so I arranged to get some wheat and the next day Silas and Joseph S. took it to the mill.

September 28th, I went down to Woodruff to pay my son Joseph C. a visit, he had recovered some from his rheumatism, but he never got entirely well. The next day he started for St. Johns where he went as a juror and also as a delegate to the Republican Convention.

I returned to Snowflake on the 30th, and got a load of wood as I went back.

The 31st was one of those terribly windy days that are so common at certain seasons of the year in this country, and I did not go out.

October 1st, Brother William J. Flake settled up with me for the place that he purchased from me before I moved away. I now fixed up for my return to the Gila River and the next day started out on my return going to Pinedale. I did not take any of my folks with me, leaving Horace to go to school. I stopped all night with my son John L. He intimated that he might go down where I was before long. Jessie May had engaged to teach school at Pinedale and of course she was not expected to go at this time.

October 3rd, I drove to Showlow where I was overtaken by Culver Kartchner and his wife and mother, they were on their way to the Gila Valley and I expected to travel with them at least a good portion of the way.

The next morning I started at day light and drove on about seven miles where I took breakfast alone and felt a little lonesome in not having any of my folks along. I made a short stop at Cooley's where I telegraphed back to the folks and they stated that they were all well although Adelaide was never very well.

Kartchner came up with me and we drove on past Fort Apache some three miles where we camped. He may travel a little faster than I wish to but I intend to keep up if I can.

On the 5th a man by the name of Lee came up with us and we drove nearly to the divide.

October 6th, this morning while hunting our horses, we came on to an old well about 300 yards from the road, the water in it was not very good being impregnated with the pine logs that it was walled up with and was not fit for use. This well, I believe, was dug by some of the Government expeditions some years ago when they were campaigning against the Indians.

We drove to the Cottonwood Tanks today on the Green Hill where we found a very little water.

On the 7th we drove to the Gila River for dinner and then on to Fort Thomas and the next day I reached home where I found all well and pleased to see me back safe from the trip.

October 14th, I have been going down to Thatcher every day since I returned to work in the store. Sister Zundel tended the store while I was at Snowflake and it has been quite a task for her as she has quite a large family to look after.

I have done some work on the Layton and Hunt accounts trying to get them to settle up their business affairs.

I went down to Thatcher early today and bought a bill of shoes from Mr. Laney. I then went on to Pima with Brothers Benjamin Cluff, Mart Mortensen, and Hyrum Brinkerhoff. We went down in the interest of the High Priests Quorum.

Ward conference was held at Pima and after the meeting, the High Priests met and all spoke who were present and expressed themselves as feeling well in the work of the gospel.

I returned home in the evening, it was quite late and I was very tired, not having any dinner or supper.

On the 15th, I went down to the store as usual when I was here and took up the old labors. It is about three miles from my place to the store or it may be a little less and I go down tolerably early and stay until dark and if there are any customers come before I get thee or after I leave in the evening, Sister Zundel waits on them. This I fully realize is something of a tax on her so I try to get off as soon as I can in the morning.

We had taken in considerable of barley in our trading and on the 17th we sold it and I shipped it off, there was 33000 pounds of it. We got 90¢ a hundred for it, considerably cheaper than it was when the Apache troubles were raging, it then went at about \$25.00 per hundred.

On the 20th I helped to survey a piece of land that I was getting from Brother Layton here in town, there was about six acres of it, including the streets.

In the evening there was a Democratic meeting at Thatcher which I attended. John C. Herndon and Col. Wilson were the speakers. Herndon jocularly remarked that if he was elected Delegate to congress, he would have that body turn out the Grand Colorado River a way north of here so that it would water the whole territory. He was running for Congress but was defeated.

October 21st, I went down to Central with Brothers Cluff and Brinkerhoff where we attended meeting and spoke a short time and after the meeting the High Priests met and held their meeting. I acted as clerk for the meeting of the High Priests. I returned home in the evening.

On the 22nd I started down to the store very early and took a load of rock as I went for a foundation of a house which I expected to build there for Adelaide on the lot that I had secured from Brother Layton. I took my team down quite often and got the rock as I went. I tried to start early and thus get the material on the ground without much loss of time.

In the evening I went over to Graham with George Cluff where we held a Republican meeting. We both spoke presenting our side of the political campaign. The next day after my labors in the store I went to Central, where a Republican meeting was held, the speakers were Thomas L. Williams, George Cluff and myself.

On the 4th I took a load of cane that I had raised in my garden down to Pima to get it worked up into molasses as there was no molasses mill in Thatcher, and the following day I took another load and as I returned, I hauled a load of rock.

October 26th, Brother Cluff and I went to Fort Thomas where we held a Republican meeting, we both spoke. We expected to meet Ex-Governor Murphy but he did not arrive. I returned home the next morning but Brother Cluff remained; he was going to await the arrival of M. C. Murphy.

On my arrival at Thatcher I met ex-Governor Zulick, he was stumping the county in the interest of the Democratic ticket. I had a short talk with him; he seemed to be bitterly opposed to ex-Governor Murphy. On the next day I attended meeting at Layton and spoke a short time.

October 29th, the first frost of the season came last night. I got a load of our goods at the depot at Safford. (They had got along with the road so that they were shipping into the valley here but they did not at this time establish a depot at Thatcher) and took them down to Thatcher. In the evening a Republican meeting was held at Thatcher. The speakers were ex-Governor Murphy, Gen. Sampson and A. J. Doran. They made a very clean talk, that is they did not abuse the opposite parties. This, I think, had a very good effect as the Democratic speakers had built up their cause by abusing the Republicans, as well as the Populists.

October 30th, I was at the store and with all my outside work I was there the most of the time every day, opening and marking goods, answering letters, etc. The next day I got a load of goods from the Depot, took them down and opened them up, and in the evening I attended a Democratic meeting at Layton, the speakers were Mark A. Smith and Judge W. H. Barnam.

November 1st, 1894, some of us Republicans made an effort to go down to Pima to hold a meeting but finding that we could not get the house, the trip was given up.

On the 3rd we had a meeting at Layton, George Cluff and I were the speakers.

On the 4th I attended the Sabbath meeting at Layton. I had not been feeling very well since I returned from Snowflake and I fancied that this southern climate did not agree with me very well. However I had been extremely busy, I worked in the garden and around home before breakfast, then went to Thatcher to the store and put in all the time I could there, and then I had to attend to my campaign work, taking several of those short trips in the evening where we held meetings in the near by settlements.

On the 5th it was expected that there would be a meeting in the Allred Hall at Thatcher, but from some cause or another it was turned into a dance. W. O. O'Neil was in town, he was on the Populist ticket for Delegate to congress. He spoke to quite a large audience and was a very good talker and reasoner.

November 6th, our election came off today which passed off very quietly. I took my wife Julia down to Thatcher, this was the first time that she had been down to see our store.

November 8th, the returns from the election were coming in quite slowly but so far it is shown that there has been a very heavy Republican gain and that I was elected by a large majority.

On the 10th I went to the depot and got some goods, a bill of hardware, and took down to the store. Our trade was increasing some but was not very heavy. Our stock of merchandise was increasing some as well, so that it was much more than when we started business.

I go down to the store every day and generally start very early and take a load of rock down as I go, as before stated I was starting in a rather slow way to build a house on the lot that I had purchased from Brother Layton.

I had not been feeling well for sometime but I put in every minute that I could as I was extremely anxious to get fixed so that I could get the rest of my family with me.

November 11th, I attended meeting at Layton, Brother Chlarsen and Jenkens were the speakers, there were around in the interest of the Elders' Quorum.

The next day I went down to Pima and got my molasses that had been made from the little cane that I had taken down there.

November 15th, the election returns were about all in and they showed that the entire Republican ticket was elected with the exception of T. E. Williams who was running for the House. George W. Skinner, Democrat, was elected in his place. The Democrats could hardly account for their failure and are taking their medicine rather hard. W. W. Dameran who was running on the Democratic ticket for treasurer and was defeated by Frank Dysart took his defeat unusually hard and felt quite bad over his defeat.

On the 18th I attended meeting at Layton, Brother P. C. Merrill spoke on the subject of the Word of Wisdom.

On the next day the official count of the votes was made which gave it as I have stated to the Republicans with the exception of Williams.

On the 24th there was a priesthood meeting held at Thatcher which I attended and was set apart as clerk of the High Priests Quorum.

December 10th, I get to the store regularly and often get up at 5 a.m. and haul a load of rock down as I go.

I went down to Pima today to attend the quarterly conference of the stake. President Layton was not present being away on business.

December 15th, I went up to Solomonville, the District Court was in session, Judge Rouse was on the bench. The Grand Jury had ground out a few indictments. My main business in going up at this time was to see some of the

legal lights of the county and consult them how our laws could be amended on certain points. I met Judge Egan of Clifton, our prosecuting Attorney, Wiley . Jones, Judge Moorman, and some others, and talked with them about changing our law in relation to classifying the counties. We talked the matter and we finally decided that a bill should be gotten up to classify the counties according to property valuation. I made this move as there had been some ballot box stuffing to make the county a first class county. The parties however had been indicted for this, but as a bar I thought it best to see if the law could not be changed, and this plan of property valuation was thought best when we talked the matter over and Wiley E. Jones drew up two bills as we agreed on, one making the counties divided into six grades and the other into three grades. I was to take the first bill and Brother Skinner was to be handed the other bill so if mine failed he could then put in his. We made the whole arrangements and blocked the bills out and left it for Jones to copy and fix up on the typewriter. That is he put in the fees of the different officers etc. I took this precaution so as to have the best counsel in the matter that there was in the county. Dysart and Merrill, both county officials, were consulted on this proposition.

On December 16th, I attended meeting at Thatcher, the speakers were Brothers Farr and Fife, and the next Sunday I attended meeting at the same place, Brother Galbrith from Mexico was the speaker.

On the 24th I went down to Mathewsville and took my wife Julia, stopping with Lehi Larson where we spent Christmas Day with them and the people of Mathewsville. There was a fine arrangement for the children, many presents being distributed from the Christmas tree by Santa Claus. I returned home on the 26th.

December 28th, there was a Priesthood meeting at Thatcher. Brother Zundel went down and as both of us could not leave the store at this time, I remained with the business.

On the 30th I attended meeting at Thatcher.

December 31st came on Monday and this winds up the year of 1894, and prospects looked a little brighter than they did at the close of the previous year, and still we cannot tell what is ahead of us, bitter disappointment may turn up at any time.

The weather was fair and the wheat and lucern looked green and fresh. I had labored very hard putting in all the time that I could. I hauled a load of wood at times when I could get out, and hauled the rock to build my foundation when I went back and forth. I was always busy and worked about the garden and the house. There was none of my work that brought in any money but it all was for making a home where I could get the rest of my family together. Our business at the store was increasing some but we were cramped for lack of means. We took everything, wheat, barley, chickens, etc. We sold as close as possible and in this way there was an immense sight of labor for the amount of cash realized from our sales of goods and I worked at this way close considering the odd jobs that took me away. Brother and Sister Zundel were equally busy, they tended the store when I was away and Brother Zundel favored my going to the Legislature as that would bring in a little cash that we could help our business with. I did all the work of ordering goods, marking them, and settling for them, and kept all the accounts with our customers, etc.

January 1st, 1895, the year came in about as the old one went out with its work and worry as I generally worked in the store on a holiday or the most of it and today all I saw of the new year was the band playing as they passed around the town.

On the 2nd I took some corn, barley, chickens, eggs, etc., to the Bishop and settled my tithing and then went and got a load of wood.

Our trade at the store was not very rushing and when I was there some days I had some spare time and I spent this in working for Brother Zundel, having my bench at the side of the building. I got out some door and window frames, etc., as he was preparing to build another room to his house. The weather was mild for this time of year so that out door work was not hindered on that account.

On the 6th I attended meeting at Layton. President Layton and his counselors were present, Brother Galbreth from Mexico was present and occupied the most of the time.

On the 12th I got a load of goods from the depot and took them down to the store and worked until a late hour at opening them and marking and putting them up.

On the 13th I attended meeting at Thatcher where the Ward Teachers gave in their reports.

On the 15th I worked at the store until a late hour fixing up all the accounts preparing to leave for awhile and then walked home as I always did when I did not take my team down, and on this trip it was very hard, as it had rained, and the traveling was very heavy on account of the mud and I was quite tired out when I reached home.

1895
Chapter 91
Legislative Labors

January 15th, 1895, I started for Phoenix at 3 p.m. for the purpose of attending the legislature. We arrived at Bowie Station at about dark where we got supper, we then took the S. P. Railroad and going on west, we passed through the old city of Tucson in the night so that I did not get much of a view of the Old Pueblo. Going on to Maricopa Station, about 203 miles from Bowie, we changed cars for Phoenix, 33 miles. On the road I fell in with Mr. Merrick, a member from Cochine County.

We arrived at Phoenix at daylight where I put up at the Capital and spent the most of the day in looking around to see where I could get good, as well as cheap, lodgings during the term of the Legislature. After going to some five or six places I took a room at the Capital for the present with a double bed as I expected George H. Crosby from Apache County to room with me. It rained considerable today and the streets were quite muddy.

January 18th, Brother Crosby came in today and we spent most of the day with some of the prominent men of the Territory and discussing with the members whom we should have for speaker of the House.

January 19th, the contest for the Speakership of the House became very warm and was about the only thing spoken of by the members. The candidates were A. C. Wright, Perry Wildman and J. H. Carpenter. Caucus Meetings were held at one of these meetings, Carpenter withdrew in favor of Wildman. Sunday the 20th, the contest and wire pulling for the Speakership between Wright and Wildman continued with unabated zeal and interest and was kept up all day. I supported Wildman, the main objection brought against him was that he was from Maricopa County and that county had enough. The objections against Wright (though not openly asserted, were that he was a reckless and dishonest character, there being a stain upon his honesty.) The day's work did not bring the parties together. This wire pulling and contest was amongst the Republicans, as the Democrats had but few members in the house and they took no part in this squabble.

January 21st, the Republicans were to have had a caucus in the forenoon to settle the question but there were several that refused to attend.

12 o'clock noon, the house was called to order by Mr. Herrick who was the oldest member, when a short adjournment was had to admit of some more wire pulling. Finally a vote was taken for Speaker which resulted in the election of J. H. Carpenter, Wildman having withdrawn from the race. I was well satisfied with the result, as from what I had leaned, Wright was anything but an honest man. Wright was greatly chagrined at the turn that things had taken and when the vote was taken which gave Carpenter one majority, he turned almost black in the face.

January 22nd, the House was organized by appointing some clerks, etc. They then proposed to go into joint session with the Council to received the Governor's message. To this the Council would not agree, probably fearing that there would be some trick played upon them as the House was largely Republican and they feared this majority.

The Governor read his message to the Council at 7 p.m. January 23rd, the Governor gave his message to the House at 2 p.m. January 25th, the House had done but little but to organize and get ready for business.

The hotel where Brother Crosby and I were stopping raised the price of our room so we looked around and finally rented a rom from Mrs. Baxter who had been the widow of King S. Woolsey, and we moved our quarters. I attended a theater in the evening. The play was "Through the Lines".

January 26th, the House did not hold a session, having adjourned until Monday. I had taken a very bad cold and did not go out.

January 28th, the House met at 10 a.m. The Speaker announced the committees, I was on four, the Judiciary, Ways and Means, Public Grounds and Buildings, and Irrigation. I was the chairman of the latter.

January 31st, the House meets every day but have done but little business as yet. I introduced the bill that I had talked up with some of the leading men of the county before I left home, that was "The Classification of Counties

and to fix the compensation of County Officers." In the evening there was a meeting for the purpose of forming a Historical Society. I was the fourth to sign the roll.

February 1st, the House adjourned at noon until Monday. Brother Crosby went over to Mesa but I remained to attend a committee meeting.

February 2nd, the Judiciary Committee met in the forenoon and in the afternoon I went over to Mesa and attended a meeting in the evening. Brothers Goddard and Maeser were the speakers. They were around in the interest of the Sunday School. I stayed all night with my old friend Collins R. Hakes.

February 3rd, there were three meetings held today. Brothers Goddard and Maeser were the principal speakers. I took dinner with my cousin Lyman Leavitt who resided here. Brother Reidhead, who happened to be down here on some business, took dinner with us.

February 4th, I returned to Phoenix with Brother Hunsacker who was running the mail and arrived in time for the session at 10 a.m., distance, 18 miles.

February 5th, the work as usual moved slowly at first. I got my Classification Bill before the committee of the whole, where a few minor amendments were made to it. The next day we passed two bills. We had several doctors address the House on a bill that was up in which the doctors were very much interested. On the 7th the House adjourned until Monday. I thought that law making was a slow business, but it is better to work slow than too fast at this kind of work.

February 8th, Brother Crosby and I went over to Tempe and stayed with Mr. Niels Peterson who was a member of the House from Maricopa County. He had a fine place, a nice two story brick residence, and about 700 acres of land mostly into lucern. He pastures the most of it, buying cattle and fattening them for the California market.

February 9th, Mrs. Peterson and her nephew took us up to Mesa. The fields along the road were green and presented a most beautiful appearance for this time of the year. I took supper with Noah Brimhall who had moved down here from Taylor, and stayed all night with C. R. Hakes.

February 10th, we went over to Lehi with Brother Hakes and his counselor Brother Johnson and attended meeting at that place where we spoke for a short time. The ward was some 3 miles north of Mesa, and is not very much of a place.

The next day we went back to Phoenix on the mail. The Woman's Suffrage bill was up and in the afternoon the House was crowded with spectators and several speeches were made on the Bill which passed the House by a vote of 16 to 7 but the Bill was later killed in the Council.

February 13, I attended a committee meeting and have a standing appointment for one each morning at 8 a.m. The Bill to decide Apache County was up. It was called the Navajo County Bill and it occupied about as much time and attention as any bill yet introduced. I tried to get my Classification Bill brought forward, but it moves very slow in the hands of the committee that had it.

February 21st, the House adjourned until the 26th, as tomorrow was Washington's Birthday and the legislature has an invitation to attend a grand carnival at Nogales. I did not care to attend this so I started home in the evening as I preferred to spend my vacation there.

February 23rd, I arrived at home at noon where I found all as well as usual. I went down to Thatcher to help fix up things at the store and to see how they were getting along with the business. I put in the remainder of the day at straightening up accounts, etc. The next day I worked in the store most of the day, attending Priesthood meeting. I went down again on the 24th but returned in the afternoon and attended meeting at Layton and spoke a short time.

There was considerable sickness among the people and some thought that much of it was diphtheria; this was creating considerable excitement and anxiety. On the 25th I started back to Phoenix.

On reaching Bowie Station I was detained some three hours in consequence of the train that I was going on being held up at Stain's Pass by train robbers. After the robbers had got the boodle they let it come on and I got aboard and finally reached Phoenix on the morning of the 26th.

The law making I thought moved rather slow, but it was a good thing that they did for as a general rule the legislature makes too many laws.

March 2nd, Brother Crosby and I started down to Yuma where we arrived at about 9 a.m. on the morning of the 3rd. We spent most of the day in looking through the prison and about the place. Thomas Gates, the superintendent of the prison, took great pains in showing us through, and how the books were kept, and gave us all the information he could about the prison. He told us that he went to Utah when but a boy, his mother died and his father went on to California and he followed his father west and that he had a sister living in Oregon.

We crossed the bridge over into California, a few steamers lay at the wharf but it looked as if they did not have much transportation to do. The people of Yuma were very much excited, or were working with considerable enthusiasm, over a project of bringing a considerable tract of land under cultivation on a bench by pumping the water up from the river. I could not see so much in this as some seemed to think that there was, and I thought that they were trying to boom the place a little faster than the facilities would really justify. We returned to Phoenix during the night.

March 4th, I had taken cold on my trip to Yuma and was not feeling very well.

March 16th, I have been sick ever since I went to Yuma but I have managed to attend nearly all the sessions of the legislature, only missing one or two sessions. I had gone to the drug store to get something for my cold and cough, but I still grew worse, so one night I got Brother Crosby to go for Mr. Woodruff. He gave me an emetic and it broke up the fever, and I was around again in a short time but still a little weak.

I went over to Mesa and my cousin Lyman Leavitt took Brother Crosby and me up to the head of the ditch. On our way up we saw the big dredger at work. It was a very large machine and floated along in the ditch cleaning it as it went. The boat was 80 feet long and 40 feet wide and carries the engine and an arm or crane 85 feet long which lifts 7000 pounds of dirt at each scraper full. After viewing the head gate and works at the head of the ditch, which appeared to me to be a most magnificent piece of work, we returned to Mesa.

On the 17th the quarterly conference of the stake was held at Mesa. I attended the meetings and spoke on one occasion.

On the 18th I returned to Phoenix and arrived there in time for the morning session.

The business before the house was now being crowded, as we were nearing the close of the session. I was always very busy looking over bills, etc., which I did of an evening, instead of going out to the entertainments as many did. I only went out to one party and that was at ex-Governor Murphy's.

March 21st, was the last day of the session and things were very lively and great interest was taken in regards to some of the bills. I had introduced some five or six bills, all of which I got through, one in regards to schools, one in relation to highways, but my main work was in the Council Classification Bill which I introduced at the beginning of the session. The bill created many changes in the county officers as to their salary, etc., and consequently it went very slowly, and was the subject of considerable discussion. It however went through, and was returned from the Council to the House today and I got the Governor to sign it. But when it was signed, it was discovered that it went into effect at once. This change in the bill no one knew where or how it was done, but some laid it to the Governor. The change made it a little hard on some of the incumbents as it reduced their salaries, Later on the legality of the bill was tested in the courts, but after an appeal it was again tested and stood the test in the Supreme Court and was sustained by the court. Those whose salaries were affected were the ones to test the law in the case but they lost out.

The Navajo County Bill came up today for its final passage. George H. Crosby was the main cone to oppose the bill. He got the floor at 2 p.m. and spoke against the bill, but the main object with some of the members was to hold the floor until midnight or long enough so that they could kill the prison bill which was just behind it.

Excitement ran high all the afternoon both by the members of the house and by the spectators, the house being crowded on the occasion. Many efforts were made by the friends of the bill to get Crosby to stop but still when the chair was appealed to or an attempt to stop him the Speaker would say "The Gentleman from Apache County has the floor". (Crosby by the aid of some of his friends held the floor from 2 p.m. to 9 p.m. when he gave way and allowed the Navajo bill to come to a vote when it passed and I voted for it.

The house then went into a committee of the whole on the Appropriation Bill. This bill had been held back by Wright who was trying to use it as a club. The excitement during the whole evening ran high and the house was crowded, as everyone wished to see how the prison bill was going to fare. Work went very deliberately until a little after midnight when the committee rose (not having half finished the work on the bill) and the speaker then adjourned the House. This was applauded by those who opposed the Prison Bill but from the other members shouts of anger and rage came forth. Mr. Hull went to the speakers chair and made an attempt to reorganize the House but he failed to get a quorum. The failure to pass the Appropriation Bill was condemned by many. Mr. Wright was the one that had held it back in attempt to force the House to pass the Prison Bill. It was stated that this was the most exciting day that had ever occurred in any legislature in the Territory.

March 22nd I settled up my accounts and at 8 p.m. took the train for home. Attorney Wiley E. Jones was on the train and we had a lengthy talk over the labors of the Legislature, he had been down for the last few days looking on to see how things went. Take it all around, the labors were pronounced very good.

I arrived home at about noon on the 23rd feeling quite poorly, not having as yet recovered from the sick spell that I had after my return from Yuma.

The next day I went down to Thatcher and attended meeting there and spoke giving a brief account of the labors of the Legislature. The people gave the representatives from this county considerable credit for what we had done in the way of reducing salaries and expenses. The next Sunday I attended meeting at Layton and spoke a short time.

I had been at the store every day since I returned. The business was doing reasonably well. I devoted all my time to the business. I would never have attempted to have gone to the legislature but Brother Zundel thought that they could care for it while I was gone and it would help out to get a little ready cash which it did, as I sent a part of my salary back to the store, making personal remittances.

April 12th, 1895, while I was in Phoenix I was appointed Notary Public by Governor Hughes and I went up to Solomonville today and got my bond fixed up.

Some of the county officers were feeling quite sore over the County Classification Bill, which was to go into effect 30 days after its passage. As had been stated, this was not the original intention of the bill, as it was intended to let the present incumbents serve out their time under the old law. Some were talking of contesting the law.

On the 14th I attended meeting at Layton, some missionaries were present, and the next Sunday Brother P. C. Merrill occupied the time at our meeting.

I have been putting all my time at the store and while not busy trading I worked helping Brother Zundel on his house, I doing the carpenter work. I often get up before day light and go down so as to be there early.

The spring has been a little windy with some cold snaps, but still lucern has grown very well and some commenced to cut it the fore part of the month.

Our High Priests Meeting was held at Thatcher on the 27th of the month. I acted as clerk. President Layton had recently returned from Salt Lake City but he did not give us very much of the Conference news. The next day I attended meeting at Graham and spoke on the duties of parents to their children.

1895
Chapter92
Labors in the Store and on a House

May day, 1895 was celebrated in all the wards in the valley. At Thatcher there was some trouble with a few of the boys that got drunk on wine, they had a few fights, etc. John Bailey's son, a boy of some 16 years old, was drunk and attempted to run his horse over a cart when the horse fell and the boy was hurt so that he died a few days after.

On the 8th I attended meeting at Layton and spoke a short time from the 15th Chapter of Matthew.

May 12th, my son Horace came in from Snowflake today. He had come over with Brother Hancock.

I work every day at the store but am preparing to build a house for Adelaide. I had purchased a fine lot from Brother Layton which was not far from the store, and hauled 52 loads of rock for a foundation and had hauled 10,000 brick from Safford. I had got up very early and took a load down each morning as I went to the store to work.

The water in the river was getting rather low and the crops in many places were suffering some for want of water.

On May 19th our ward conference was held at Layton, President Layton and his first counselor were in attendance.

My labors are much the same in the store, all my leisure time I put in at work for Brother Zundel as his work is near the store. I work there when not engaged in the selling of goods, etc.

On the 26th Brother P. C. Merrill was our speaker.

I have said but very little about my correspondence, but I get letters from Snowflake quite regularly. My wife Adelaide has very poor health and I have not the means to provide for her as I would wish to do, but I am bending every energy to build a place for her at Thatcher and I was in hopes that I could be able to move her over next year.

I receive letters from J. L. Hubbell occasionally, he used to be a bitter anti-Mormon but since the dividing of our people of politics he has become a warm friend of mine. He recently wrote me that he owed his election at the last term of the Legislature more to me than to any other man.

May 31st, Judge Rouse held court at Solomonville to hear the County Classification case, some of the county officers were contesting the law and it seemed to be mixed up a little as the district Attorney, Wiley E. Jones was opposed to the law and it became his duty to support it or represent the county in the case. This made the case drag along for sometime or until about the term of the officers had expired, but the law was finally sustained and stood the test. Some of the people about Solomonville blamed me for getting the bill through in its present form, they said that it looked as if Governor Hughes and Fish were going to run the Territory. In fact as I have before stated that I had nothing to do with the changing of the bill, and I never found out how it was changed so as to make it go into effect in 30 days, but I always thought that the Governor knew how it was done.

June 2nd, I attended meeting at Layton, Brother W. J. Packer was the speaker. The next Sunday, Brothers R. A. Allred and R. Peel Jr. occupied the time.

Our little daughter Zelma who was never very strong, took sick a few days ago and continued to grow worse. The people were very kind to us during her illness. I had the elders several times and I got Dr. Reed to come in and see her. He did what he could for her but she continued to grow worse and on the 12th at ten minutes to three in the morning she breathed her last. This was the fourth heavy blow that had fallen upon us and we felt it keenly, especially Julia, for this child had been rather weakly from her birth and her mother had been greatly attached to her in caring for her and she had been a source of comfort as well as anxiety. Brother P. C. Merrill, our nearest neighbor, was very kind to us during the child's sickness. We took her to Thatcher and buried her at 5 p.m. Bishop Samuel Claridge officiated at the grave.

Our quarterly conference was held at Pima on the 16th which I attended. The reports of the bishops were a little more favorable than common. The clerk being absent, I took his place in taking the minutes of the meetings.

I was putting all my time at the store that I could and at odd times when there was no customer around, I worked making door and window frames.

On the 23rd I was sick and kept my bed during the day.

Frank Bennett, a neighbor of ours and a young man of prominence, had started out to be a first class musician. He had started out with a musician to tour the Territory, taking the trip to aid him in his work and to learn more of the work. While upon this trip he took the small pox and died at Nogales. His body was brought home and he was buried today. This was a most sad blow upon his parents who had looked upon him as a son that would make his mark in the world.

The 27th marked the 55th year of my life and I finished the foundation of my house at Thatcher, I had put into it 52 loads of rock.

On the 29th I attended the priesthood meeting at Thatcher, the main subject was the care of the young people, which was greatly needed. At our meeting the next day at Layton, W. J. Packer was the speaker. July 7th, I attended the meeting at Layton. Brothers Burdno and Elmer were home missionaries and occupied the time.

I go down to the store each day taking a team some of the time and some times I walk.

The water in the river has been very low and gardens were suffering for lack of water, but the harvest of small grain has been good and we took considerable grain in the store which we sold wheat for \$1.25 per 100# but there was but little or no sale for barley.

On the 8th and 9th I hauled brick for my house at Thatcher, Horace helped me. He had not been able to help me very much, he was not a strong boy and I did not have much work that he could do, but he helped about the house considerable.

July 10th we had some rain which raised the river so that the irrigation ditches were full, this was a great relief as the gardens were suffering for want of water.

Things in the stake spiritually were not in a very good condition. The President has but little influence and things were drifting along in a kind of haphazard kind of way. It was a common saying that if you wanted an enterprise to succeed, get the President to oppose it and if you wanted a measure killed get the President to favor it. This showed very nicely the lack of union among the brethren.

On the 24th we had a theater at Layton gotten up by John J. Burdno. My son Horace had a part in the play.

At Thatcher there were a few fights among the young men which had a tendency to mar the festivities of the day.

July 25th, I made a start to lay up my house at Thatcher. I got R. W. Fuller to lay it up and tended him. I was building just two rooms, the back part, and arranged to build the front rooms later on. I had put down the foundation for the whole building and a very little of the brick work to the front rooms, leaving it so as to add to later on.

August 4th, I have been at work on my house what time I could get at odd times when I could get away from the store. The business of our store was doing fairly well. Brother Zundel had an object in view which he was feeling around to see if it would work, and that was to make a Cooperative business of the store. He thought that it would bring in more shareholders and thus increase the trade with an increase of capital and we could rapidly forge to the front as a business concern. He was trying to get others interested in it and we talked the matter up some but failed to accomplish very much in that line.

The Cooperative Milling Company at Safford had got me to take their books and straighten them up and keep them for the firm. I commenced this work on the 1st and do the work at odd times. As there was but little to do, it did not take much of my time. Mr. W. R. Fonda had been keeping them and they were simply in a terrible shape as he had paid but little attention to them apparently.

I attended the meeting at Thatcher, President Layton was the main speaker, I spoke a short time.

August 8th, there has been some rain which raised the water in the river some.

A Mexican was killed by lightning at Solomonville yesterday.

On the 9th I got some goods from the depot and took down to the store (the depot was at Safford then). I quite often went to the depot and got something and took down as I often went down with a team.

As has been noted, the Classification Bill was contested in the courts and decided to be constitutional, this now cut down the salaries of the officials of this county over \$6,000 a year and some of the officers were feeling very sore over the matter.

On the 11th I attended meeting at Layton. Brothers Taylor and Claridge were the speakers. They were around as home missionaries.

On the 18th I attended meeting at Thatcher. Brothers T. E. Williams and George Cluff spoke on the subject of education.

I have done some little work at odd times on the house. Brother R. W. Fuller had done most of the mason work. I had finished the two back rooms.

On the 24th we had a very heavy rain which broke the ditches as well as filling them up, the streets were filled with water and my place was completely surrounded with water so we could not get out without wading.

On August 31st I attended High Priest Meeting at Thatcher, Bishop John Welker presented a charge against George Cluff for preaching things which weakened the influence of the Bishops. President Layton referred the matter to the High Council.

September 1st, I attended meeting at Layton, Brothers Benjamin Pel occupied the time.

The next day I started to take stock in our store, it being a year since I started our business. We thought that we would balance up our accounts and see how we stood. I finished up the work on the 4th, the results being about as follows: Merchandise on hand \$2,375. Outstanding accounts \$1,152.80; cash on hand, \$122.45; we were owing for merchandise \$909.17; we had cleared as a profit \$850. We did not count anything for the time that we had spent at the store looking after the business in selling goods etc.

On the 7th the High Council met at Thatcher. The case of Bishop Welker against George Cluff came up. Some witnesses were called and examined, Cluff acknowledged to preaching what had been stated by the witnesses. Some of the Bishops, and others wished to speak upon the subject, but President Layton would not grant them the privilege, he decided that the charge had not been sustained and that there was no cause of action. This did not give very good satisfaction to the Bishops, most of them siding with Brother Welker in the matter. On the following Sunday, W. D. Johnson stated in his remarks that Brother Cluff was more than exonerated and that Bishop Welker was lower than ever. This affair became the main topic among some for a short time, both at Thatcher and at Layton, and was the cause of considerable division and ill feeling among the people.

On the 8th, Brothers Chlarson and Robinson were missionaries at Layton in the interest of the Academy. On the 15th our quarterly conference was held at Pima. I went down and took my wife Julia and son Horace, he belonged to the Thatcher choir which did the singing for the conference.

The next day, Monday, I went to the depot and got some goods for our store so did not attend the last day of the conference. We had expected some of the Apostles to meet with us at this conference, but they did not come.

The weather was quite warm and the water in the river was low.

September 21st, the irrigation Congress that had met at Albuquerque had divided and a portion of them were going to Phoenix to visit that place and President Jesse N. Smith and some others of my acquaintances were with them and were going to Phoenix. I decided to go down to get them as I had a free pass on the rail road. I took the train at Safford at 11 a.m. and arrived at Bowie Station at 1 p.m. We reached Tucson at a little after dark where I took supper and we arrived at Maricopa Station at a little after 10 p.m. I reached Phoenix on the 22nd at about 4 a.m. where I got my breakfast and then went down to the Commercial Hotel where I found Brother Jesse N. Smith, Joseph W. Smith and some others of my old acquaintances.

The meeting with Brother Smith and Joseph N. was a cordial one. It had been over two years since I had met Brother Smith.

At 7 a.m. the members of the Irrigation Congress and some others took the train, I going along with them and went to Tempe. Here there were some carriages waiting to take the company to Mesa. Brother Johnson took Brothers Jesse N. and Joseph W. Smith and myself.

Arriving at Mesa we visited and looked at the town, some then went to the Coop. store where we took dinner in an upper room, a very large one. Some speeches were made by some of the members of the Congress and some others. After dinner we rode back to Tempe where we took the train and went about half way to Phoenix where we stopped and took carriages that were waiting for us and then went around to the orange grove visiting some old ruins on the way. We went over to the canal where a speech was made and got back to Phoenix about dark, and got our supper at the Commercial Hotel.

I had met several acquaintances during the day and best of all I had put in the most of the day conversing with Brother Smith as we rode along through the beautiful and delightful fields.

After supper I took the train at 8 p.m. for home. The visiting party were to leave sometime during the night.

September 23rd, I arrived at Bowie station at about 8 a.m. Here I had to lie over until 4 p.m., when I went on in to Safford.

Mr. Garland was on the train and I had a talk with him, he was the builder of the Gila Valley Globe and Northern Railroad. I tried to induce him to put in a depot at Thatcher. He said that he was willing that we should have a depot there if we would put it up and tend it ourselves so that it would not be of any expense to him.

On arriving at home at about dark I found all well except my wife Julia, who was suffering with a terrible toothache and she had a very hard time in getting it pulled.

September 28th, I have been in the store since I returned, but have managed to spend a little time nights and mornings about home working in the garden, etc. I had raised a little cane in the garden and took it to Pima to get it made up and had about 12 gallons of molasses after the toll was taken out.

September 30th, I went down to the store as usual and found Brother Reuben E. Fuller in it instead of Brother Zundel. He told me that he had bought the store and expected to run it himself.

I knew that Brother Zundel was trying to sell to him and I had told him not to hold back on my account as I did not wish to be in his way, but I expected that he would sell so that I would remain in the business just as I had been. But Zundel had sold him the whole thing at its face except the accounts which he had discounted at a tremendous rate. (These accounts were let out on Zundel's orders as I did not trust any myself.)

Fuller told me that he had allowed me for what I had done during the year \$130 and Zundel the same. I had drawn \$115 from the store during the year so as they had fixed it up I had \$15 coming to me. Zundel had thrown in to make the outside debts good, \$587.

I was a little surprised at this and believed that it was in such a shape that Zundel would not loose it, but I would have to lose it if the trade was made in this shape as I got nothing for the profits that the store had made during the year, besides \$130 was a very small amount for my year's work.

I went and talked the matter over with Zundel who appeared to avoid me and I could not get much satisfaction out of him. He claimed that he was loosing more than I was. But there was a bad feature about the whole affair and that was, he was still retained as a silent partner with Fuller, and was held up to the merchants as a partner of Fuller's. Zundel claimed to me that he was not a partner so that they were playing it two ways.

I took my \$15 and left and do not know how they settled in the outcome. But Zundel was a man that was always trading and he seldom lost anything in his trading, and I do not believe that he lost anything in this trade with Fuller as he stated. He later became disgruntled and moved to Oregon.

Of course, he did not treat me fair, but his wife was a noble woman and always treated me with the greatest respect, and accommodated me many times in letting me have things that we needed in the way of our living, for far less than I would get them else where.

1895
Chapter 93
Work on the Mill at Safford

They were putting up a cooperative Gristmill at Safford a little over a half mile from my place, and they were badly hampered in various ways, the main trouble was no one seemed to take the lead in the matter and it went on very slowly. The machinery had just arrived and they were starting to arrange to put it in. I got some work in this mill and spent the fore part of the week on this work and work of various kinds, but the company did not have any cash to speak of, so they got anyone they could to help in the work.

October 4th, we had the hardest rain that I had seen in the valley.

October 8th, I went down to Thatcher and took my wife Julia along. We took dinner with Brother Andrew Woods and attended meeting, Brothers Elmer and Birdno were the speakers, they were stake missionaries.

October 13th, I went over the river to Graham with Philemon C. Merrill where we attended meeting there. Brother Merrill was the patriarch and went nearly every Sunday to some settlements and held meeting. After the services we went over to Brother Kempton's and administered to a little sick girl.

October 20th, I have been working on the cooperative mill most of the time, the work does not progress very fast as we find it slow work making things and putting in the machinery. There are but three of us, sometimes four.

This work will not be very long for me and things are in such a shape that I cannot hope to make much out of it so I have worried much about what I could go at or what turn I could make to make a living. The way Zundel sold out upset all my plans, I had worked hard to start the business and worked building the store when the thermometer stood at 105o, and put in every minute that I could on the building so that we could get the business started and in shape so that it would pay us something. It is true that Zundel paid me for the work on the house, but it did not pay me to work in this way and at the wages that I worked for, and the way I was thrown out had left me quite destitute as I had spent what little I could get hold of in building a house, and this being a time of a great panic, it was about impossible to get money or anything without money. I had got a fine location at Thatcher and was fixing for a fine home for Adelaide at that place.

I attended meeting today at Layton.

October 26th, I went down to Thatcher and attended the High Priests meeting in the forenoon and worked on my house there in the afternoon. The next day I attended meeting at Layton. Brother P. C. Merrill preached a funeral sermon on the death of a little boy of Brother Jacobson who had just come in from Utah.

October 30th, have been at work on the mill quite steady and we have it about completed. A Mr. Lash had come out with the machinery to assist in putting it up and starting the mill. There now being nothing more that I could do to advantage, I quit the work but still look after the business in a certain way, that is I kept the books and accounts.

I go down to Thatcher occasionally and put in a little work on the house there when ever an opportunity presents itself.

November 3rd, I attended meeting at Layton, Brother Elmer and Birdno were the speakers.

I am still feeling very much discouraged over the way things have turned out and cannot see how I am going to make a living, let alone building, but I keep at work about the place and put in all my time at something. Some of the brethren have advised me to take the case with Zundel to the courts, but I very much dislike litigation and have not acted on these suggestions. I have always said that the theory of law was fine but the practice was most contemptible and villainous, so to speak.

So I am getting along, hardly making enough to keep us going and in hopes all the time that things will open up so that there would be more of an opportunity to do something and make a little money, but times were very dull.

November 9th, the stockholders of the mill met and had an all day session. There was quite a division among the members in relation to the business, and there was no chance apparently of coming to any agreement, the old board was discharged and a new board elected. I was elected one of the board, and was chosen to take charge of the mill. After the meeting, the new board met and organized. I was chosen superintendent and secretary of the company. This was no desirable position, for there was no union among the company. This was probably the reason that I was chosen as I was the new man and not pledged to either party. The company were largely in debt and many of the shareholders were discouraged and disgusted with the enterprise and were in favor of selling out on almost any terms so as to get rid of the business. They were not accustomed to cooperative work and this probably was one great cause of the trouble. They were so in debt that I felt to work for a very little. My main object was to keep the thing together and preserve union, so I concluded to do what I could realizing that my work would be of but short duration as a change would soon come in some direction.

November 11th, I went into the mill to work taking charge of the business. The mill was started up for the first time, making the first flour and did very fair work. Mr. M. M. Lash who came out to put it up, ran the mill. Brother James Jacobson was the engineer and J. R. Stevens worked about the mill learning how to run it so as to run it when Mr. Lash quit. I take in the grain, weigh it, and keep all the accounts. The mill made about 300# of flour per hour and doing very good work for just starting up as it took some time to get all the machinery running properly, as belts stretched and had to be adjusted and we had to stop every little while to shorten a belt or arrange something else which needed fixing.

November 14th, I sold 3000 pounds of flour, this all went to pay debts, so the flour went as fast as we made it and very little cash came in but we were trying to get out of debt.

On the 16th, the Board met and to meet the expenses that had accrued in putting up the mill and getting it started they levied an assessment on the capital stock of 15%. This was not very agreeable to some of those who were so greatly discouraged, but then, now that the mill was going and turning out good flour and doing well, it had something of a tendency to smooth the troubled waters for a time.

November 15th, we had our first killing frost in the valley.

At our meeting at Layton, Abraham Perkins made a most pitiable and fault-finding statement about the mill affairs. He stated that he had taken a leading part in getting the mill and did the best he could in establishing this enterprise, and how he had been dropped without a word of warning and had been found fault with, had been charged with being dishonest, etc., which he strongly denied, and he felt very bad about the affair.

I have been at work getting out a statement of the assessment for each shareholder, there were about 80 in all, and about \$4000 paid up stock in the mill.

I have said but little about my affairs at Snowflake, I get letters from there quite regularly. Adelaide continues to have poor health which appeared to be a chronic complaint. She was short of means to live upon and I was not making anything to assist her as I had been bending every effort to build a house for her at Thatcher and I was making but very little.

My work at the mill amounted to but very little as I was doing it more to help the institution than to rob it in the crippled condition that it was in and I knew that it would be only for a short time when the thing would be settled more definitely. And then, I had not enough to do there to charge very much for, it did not take all the time, and the rest I worked on my place at Thatcher. Under the circumstances, I only charged the company \$40 a month for what I did. So under the circumstances I was not able to provide for the family as I would have done under more favorable circumstances.

Perhaps I might have done more if I had not attempted to build and had given the means to the family, but I felt at the time I should get a house for them as soon as possible and then we would do better.

December 25th, I have been at work in the mill the greater part of the month, some days there was but little to do and other days the work was quite hard. When we had a quantity of corn to chop there was much handling and

weighing, besides it was a very dirty job. The most disagreeable feature about the work was that Mr. Lash, while a good workman, was a chronic crank.

I spent the most of the holiday in trimming up the trees in the lot.

As we had but little grinding and on this account would shut down for awhile, the board decided to dispense with the labors of Mr. Lash as we could not afford to pay him wages when the mill was not running.

December 30th, I paid Mr. Lash off today and we closed down the work for want of grain, but I had to go into the mill occasionally as we had some flour there and occasionally a few bushels of wheat would come in and I would make the exchange or credit the parties with it.

We had no fire in the mill and it was rather cold working there without it.

As to our affairs at the house, we had got a fair start as to our garden, but we were sadly in need of things in the house. We had not had a cook stove since we left Snowflake, all the cooking had been done on the camp fire or on a fireplace since we got into our house. I sold one of my animals to Dell Merrill and took a part of the means and bought a cheap cook stove, and it proved to be a cheap thing, for it cracked the first time that we built a fire in it.

Last Sunday I went down to Thatcher and attended meeting there. Brother Edward Stevenson was the speaker, he was traveling through Arizona and our settlements in Mexico in the interest of the Seventies.

I have not been able to realize in full all my expectations when I settled here, but had a fair beginning considering that it was a time when money was scarce and business was dull.

It is a delightful, rich agricultural country but rather warm I thought, to be healthy for much out door work.

The land and water was all secured, that is the best places had been taken up so that it was difficult to get a start without money to buy with. I had, however, bought three acres of land at Layton and had built a small brick house and had got a good start of shrubbery, started in the lot. I had secured some four or five acres of land in Thatcher in a fine location and had started to build a brick house there for Adelaide. I had spent all the means that I could raise on this enterprise, and now at the close of the year I found myself in very poor circumstances and the outlook appeared gloomy indeed as I was out of employment, and what land I had I could not cultivate as it was without water and the places were more for building purposes than for farming.

My work at the mill had been of little help and now there was but very little to do there.

My family were scattered, Eliza in Utah, Adelaide in Snowflake, Julia and I were here on the Gila struggling to make a place where we could all be together again and the job seemed to be a bigger load than I could carry.

As Adelaide was having such poor health, that gave me more anxiety than the rest and then after all, my toil and hardships in getting a start, and I really had got a good start if I could have got something to do to carry it out, but the greatest set back of all came a little later when Adelaide refused to go to the Gila Valley, so this was the blow that blasted my ambition as I had partly built a house and spent every dollar that I could get in doing this work and now it was of no use to me. This blow however came a little later, and I will have occasion to mention these troubles as I come to them, but at this period things would have looked a little better had I been able to obtain work or means to carry me through this pinch, a time that often occurs in a person's life. But as it was, the old year went out with a gloom that was not very comforting to me.

1896
Chapter 94
Odd Jobs and Incidents

January 1, 1896, Brother Edward Stevenson held meeting at Layton today which I attended. I worked around home whenever I could find something to do, but I got work outside whenever I could.

It was rather dull time and there was but little going on that would pay me. I was looking after the mill business however. What we had done was more for a start than any regular business as at this time of year there was but little wheat coming in.

I got out as balance sheet of the business of the mill, which showed that we had made about \$125 per month which was considered a very good showing for a start considering the circumstances as we were working to a great disadvantage. The Board expressed themselves as well satisfied with the results.

January 5th, I was not feeling very well so I did not go to meeting. It was rather windy and while one of my neighbors, J. P. Biglow and wife, were at meeting, their little daughter got her clothes on fire, she ran to one of the neighbors but the wind only made the flames worse, and she was burned so badly that she only lived a day or so.

We were having very pleasant days but quite cold nights, freezing quite hard, a little colder than common for this season of the year which, of course is the coldest.

At our meeting today Brothers Williams and Wild were the speakers. They were around as missionaries in the interest of the academy urging the necessity of supporting that institution, as they were financially needing help.

I still go to the mill quite regularly but we grind but little and do not run it very much for lack of grain. We are to have a Stockholders meeting on next Saturday to see what is to be done with it. It appears that the Company have a white elephant on their hands. Those who built the mill are badly in debt and they do not seem to have a very good idea of cooperation, so there is not the union that there should be. Meetings are called quite often and changes made as often. Mr. Lash stayed around and again ran the mill a little but we had but little to do. But I had to be there much of the time to take in grain and deal out a little flour occasionally. As this work was but little in comparison to the time spent, I got Brother Jacobson, who had a store near by, to do this work when required, so that I could do something for myself.

On the 19th I went over to Graham with Brother P. C. Merrill where I spoke a short time on the necessity of our keeping our covenants. Brother Merrill followed speaking at length on the same subject.

On the 21st I went down to Thatcher and put down a floor in one of the rooms that I had erected. These rooms were two which were designed to be at the back, and the front to be added later.

January 23rd, we started up the mill again for a short time, we got J. R. Stevens to run it. He was a new hand at the business but did very well considering the regular work of making flour.

The weather is very fine and it looks as if spring had come.

On the 26th I attended meeting at Layton. There was generally a fair attendance of the older people but there was a very noticeable feature about all these meetings, the young people attended the Sunday School in the forenoon very well but they scarcely ever came to the Sacrament Meeting in the Afternoon.

We ran the mill on the 27th and ground out nearly all that was in the mill.

On the 31st, the Relief Society had a kind of picnic on the occasion in honor of Zina D. Young's birthday.

February 2nd, I attended meeting today at Thatcher, Brother William Fife and his son were the speakers. Their main subject was the early settling of Arizona. Brother Fife was one of the first settlers in Sulphur Spring Valley. His wife

was killed there at his ranch by a Mexican while he was away. He related several incidents of the troubles with the Indians in the early days.

February 4th, we have had very fine weather but today is a little stormy and may be a help to keep the fruit back some so that the frost will not injure it as late frost often injures the fruit in various parts of the territory.

I get letters regularly from Snowflake, that is, as regular as one generally gets letters under such circumstances.

My wife, Adelaide was taken sick in November and she still remains quite poorly. The last letter that I received stated that she was some better but these improvements do not appear to be permanent as they are only for a short time and then a relapse comes on.

On February 9th I went down to Central with Brother P. C. Merrill where we attended meeting and spoke a very short time, then we returned and Brother Merrill gave Brother George Shirts a patriarchal blessing and I wrote it for him. Brothers Elmer and Birdno, who were stake missionaries, continued the meeting.

On the 11th I worked on my house at Thatcher, I was fixing it up so as to do a little work at repairing harness and shoe mending, etc., thinking that I might make a little at odd times at this work, also to have my office here as Notary Public, there was but very little in this however. I had the two rooms partly finished so that I could use them, of course they were not plastered. The floor was in. I made doors and got the windows in, this made it so they could get used of course.

On the 14th there was a masquerade ball at the Robinson Hall in Thatcher. There was a large number in attendance, so reported, and one fine dancer was a particular favorite with the ladies and of course was on very often, but when the masks were taken off it was discovered that this fine dancer and favorite was a Negro. There were several who did not favor this kind of parties.

On the 15th the Board of Directors for the Safford Milling Company met and arrangements were made so that I could quit the mill as there was so little to do, no wheat hardly. It did not pay me to remain there and do nothing, and the company could not afford to pay a man for nothing. I had previously given the notice that I could not afford to stay there for nothing, I had stayed around considerable and tried to do a little, made a few bee stands and frames etc. It was arranged for J. R. Stevens to look after the business when he ran the mill which was only occasionally, and when it did not run Brother P. J. Jacobson would look after what was necessary in taking in grain if any came, and such work. I still kept the books and fixed up the accounts.

I attended meeting at Layton on the 16th the speakers were Brothers Elmer, Birdno, and Merrill. These three have been acting as what was called stake missionaries while the others who were laboring in the stake were called home missionaries. What the difference was in their duties, I never learned, but the stake missionaries seemed to be going to some of the towns in the valley every Sunday.

Mr. Garland, who has the freight contract from Fort Thomas to Globe has got in about five hundred teams on the promise of freight at 69¢ per hundred # to Globe and 25¢ a hundred for returned freight from Globe to Fort Thomas. Now that the teams have come in, he had dropped the price of the freight about one third and then there is not half enough freight for the teams to keep them going. This move has placed many of the freighters in debt and no prospects of their paying out very soon, some of these freighters had come several hundred miles on the promise of freight and they had none and what little they could chance to get was at a reduced rate. This move raised a storm of abuse about Garland who was blamed very much but this added nothing to the poor freighters, nor did it pay their debts.

I have just settled my taxes, and I can say that some of the officials are very unreasonable about this business, they raised the taxes of nearly everyone. One man went to the Board to have his taxes reduced saying that his property was for sale at less than they had assessed it at, and wished them to take it or reduce the taxes but they would do neither. They had also had a system of advertising the delinquent taxes after they had been paid which gave the new paper man a rake off from the public crib.

February 22nd, an entertainment was given for the old folks of the valley at the Layton meeting house. Brother W. J. Packer had charge of the proceedings. All who were over 55 years were invited. I being a little over that age went. A splendid dinner was provided after which there were songs and recitations, etc., and all was done to give the old folks an enjoyable time. Brother J. J. Quinn, aged 79, was the oldest person present.

The past week had been spent in grubbing off my place at Thatcher which was covered with mesquite and it was considerable of a job to dig these out as they had very large roots. It was like digging up the oaks or worse.

I got some leather from Brother J. G. Allred and have spent a little of my time working it up making lead harnesses out of it.

On the 23rd a meeting at Layton was held. Brother W. J. Packer was the speaker.

February 29th was rather windy.

As but little else was in sight I go down to Thatcher early every day and work a little at the harness work and grubbing off the lot, this of course brought in but a very little means.

I spent about one day in a week posting up and fixing up the mill books.

I attended High Priests meeting today in Thatcher. One of the subjects spoken upon was that of voting against the authorities. President Layton stated that if any one had anything against any of the authorities, he should go and have it made right, if not, he had no right to go and vote against the authorities. Brother Benjamin Cluff said if a person voted against an authority he had no right to go and partake of the sacrament, he had a right to vote against an authority but it cut him off from partaking of the Lord's supper.

March 1st, I attended meeting at Layton, Brother P. C. Merrill was the speaker.

The next day I put in a few potatoes in the garden. As a rule, they claim the potatoes do not do very well here, it is so difficult to get them to come up.

My peach trees are in full bloom. Little ones that came up from the seeds that we dropped when we first came here are now in blossom.

On the 8th I attended meeting at Layton and spoke a short time on the subject of the young falling away who had not witnessed the manifestations that their fathers had.

On the 10th, Mrs. Johns who was from Kansas gave a lecture in Layton on the subject of women's rights. She did very well, but appeared to have but the one speech which had been carefully prepared. After the close of the meeting, a club was formed for the promotion of women's rights. I with several others, joined this organization as I always had been in favor of the women having the right to vote and had taken this ground when I was in the legislature.

March 13th, I baptized my son Roland W. and he was confirmed by Brother P. C. Merrill the same day.

I have worked a little in fixing up some harness for Brother Layton and did some work on the lot.

March 15th, our quarterly conference convened today at Pima, I rode down with Brother Jacobson. There was a fair attendance. The settlements in this valley are so close that all can attend the forenoon sessions and return home after the afternoon meeting, especially when the conference is held at Pima, this being a central point for the Mormon settlements. The Bishop's reports at this conference were not quite up to the average.

I attended conference the next day, going down with Brother P. C. Merrill. The attendance was not so good, it never is on a weekday as it is on a Sunday. The instructions were mainly on being united in our political moves so as to get the best men in office and to sustain the authorities. Brother Benjamin Cluff in his remarks said that is a person

voted against his President or Bishop, that he forfeited his right to partake of the sacrament, and virtually cut himself off from the church. President Johnson scolded the people and the Bishops for the disunion in their midst and then told them to go home and do as they pleased for they would do that anyway. I thought at the close of the conference, that the authorities had lost much of their influence with the people, at least President Johnson's remarks sounded considerable like it.

In the evening I attended a meeting of the Equal Rights society that was organized a week ago in the interest of Woman Suffrage, the organization was completed and some arrangements made to carry on the meetings.

March 21st, I have been at work at Thatcher fixing up harness and shoes and doing some grubbing on the lot which was covered with mesquite. I have not attempted to put in the lot this year as it is above the Union Ditch and I have no water right.

There is a ditch started above that will water the land where the lot is but I do not know when it will be completed. I expect to get an interest in this ditch, enough to irrigate my lot.

On the 22nd I attended meeting at Layton and spoke a short time on the subject of tithing. There were over 350 in the ward and there were but 35 at meeting, just a tenth which I thought was a poor showing, and this is better than some wards in the stake.

March 28th, I have worked about home and on the place at Thatcher and have been at the mill a short time as it only runs occasionally.

I attended the Priesthood meeting at Thatcher. At this meeting there was considerable said about sustaining the authorities, and the right that a person had to vote for or against them.

There was considerable feeling in Thatcher over the School election. There were two tickets up and the opposition, as it was called, won by about 32 votes. Each side had done the best they could for their ticket.

It looked to me that the president was somewhat to blame to let things go in this way and the opposition were still more, for their opposition to the presiding authorities. There was considerable ill feeling over this and it seemed that everything that the President attempted in this line of voting, he was defeated in, as the opposition seemed to be in the majority and still they were all Latter Day Saints with but two or three exceptions.

March 29th, President Layton and his counselor, W. D. Johnson, attended the meeting at Layton and occupied the time. President Johnson spoke as he often did, on the Word of Wisdom. He did not keep it and he often spoke about making a hobby of this and expected to go through on this thought that we should keep all the commandments and not make a hobby of one of them and ignore the others.

On the 31st I worked posting up the mill books, etc., and as usual had got in my time in the garden and at Thatcher, but there was but little work repairing harness, shoes, etc. Perhaps there would have been more later on as few knew that I was doing such work, and then I was not prepared to much on account of material.

April 2nd, J. T. Owens made arrangements yesterday to buy out the main stockholders in the mill. Getting the majority of the stock, he took charge of the mill and thus it was changed from a Cooperative institution to private ownership. He took possession of the mill today and asked me to go in and look after the business for him. I accepted his offer and went into the mill. It was not running much of the time on account of not having grain, so I put in my spare time making some bee hives and frames, etc.

On the 5th at Layton, Brothers Peel and Layton were the speakers.

April 13th, I have been in the mill all of last week, Brother Owens was doing all that he could to obtain grain and as to keep the mill going at least the majority of the time, and he got in considerable, but there will not be a very great amount until after harvest as there is not much on hand at the present time.

1896
Chapter 95
Some Incidents and a Trip to Snowflake

April 6th, I attended a meeting of the Club that was got up in the interest of women's suffrage and took part in a debate "Who had the greatest moral influence the women of 50 years ago or those of today." I took the affirmative claiming that those of 50 years ago had a greater influence and I succeeded in pulling that side through to victory.

April 18th, some two weeks ago one Dr. O. D. Weeks (whom I believed to be a fraud) came into the place and commenced lecturing, selling medicine and treating people for all manner of diseases. A large number of people were very much taken up with him, but the local doctors did not like his trespassing upon their ground and so had him arrested claiming that his diploma was not good. The case came up today when he was finally cleared by a jury.

Politics are beginning to warm up a little on account of the bad rule that has been going on for sometime. The people were being robbed and the present officials seemed to be all scoundrels and a better system and rule is being sought after by the people. A public meeting was held some two weeks ago at Pima to arouse the people to take some action in the matter. A similar meeting was held at Thatcher a night or two ago and one is to be held at Layton on Next Wednesday.

On the 15th the Republicans held a convention at Solomonville and elected 9 delegates to attend the Territorial convention at Phoenix. The Valley, or the Mormon people, were almost ignored, only one Mormon being elected of the nine.

On the 19th I attended meeting at Layton, there were but eighteen men present, the most of the people having gone below to hear the quack doctor, O. D. Weeks lecture. I spoke a short time on the subject of the New Manifesto that came out at the late general conference.

April 25th, I have been at work in the mill the most of the week. We made a test run today to see exactly what we were making. After deducting the wheat, 2% for dirt, etc., we made 55 ½# of first grade flour, 12 ½# second grade flour, 31# bran to the 100# of wheat. We thought that the test was very good considering that Mr. Stevens was not an experienced hand at this business.

We have had some hard frost which has killed much of the fruit in the valley, and has damaged the wheat crop considerably. This will be a great set back and loss to the valley.

May 3rd, our Sunday School Conference began yesterday at Thatcher, it was held in Robinson's Hall. Brother Karl G. Maeser from Utah was in attendance. There was quite a large audience, something over a thousand people in attendance by actual count. There were some very good instructions given by Brother Maeser. He held meeting at Layton on the 4th and spoke on the subject of our children, who they were, etc. The next day he went on to Mexico.

The weather is rather cold and windy for this time of year, and vegetables grow but slowly.

May 10th, Brother P. C. Merrill spoke on the subject of the New Manifesto at our meeting. The meetings at Layton appear to be running down some, the Bishop, John Welker, is quite old and does not appear to stir around very much and most of the people are quite indifferent to their duties and meetings, especially the young people. Much of the time there is no one to take charge of the singing which is a very disagreeable feature in the meeting.

There is some talk on local politics and so far none of the ones who are talked up give very good satisfaction and there is some talk of forming another party. It is, however, the general idea to wait until the different parties make their nominations and then to work for the best men regardless of the party.

While I was working at the mill at odd times, as I have stated, I made some bee hives and I now have seven stands of bees which makes a fair prospect of having some honey in the future, as this is a fine place for bees, and the honey made from the mesquite and catclaw is the finest made in any section.

May 24th, the scarcity of wheat has caused the mill to be idle most of the time for the last two weeks and during that time I have been doing a little work about home, made a wagon box, etc.

The weather has been very dry and hot, water scarce and crops are suffering for want of water. The wheat crop will not be very good, the frost in the spring and the drought has affected it materially.

I went over to Graham today with Brother P. C. Merrill, I spoke a short time upon the testimony that the scientific world was adding to the truth of the *Book of Mormon* and they do not realize that they are doing it. Brother Merrill spoke on the coming forth of the *Book of Mormon* and the New Manifesto.

May 29th, I received a letter yesterday from Brother Jesse N. Smith in which he stated that there was a possibility of my wife Adelaide passing away. She had been sick since the forepart of November but recently she had not been so well and I was not aware that she had been on the decline, but it appeared that she had been loosing strength instead of gaining. He also wrote me his views on the late Manifesto. He appeared to think that it was more of a political move. He also stated how Utah got to be a state.

I decided at once to go over to Snowflake to see Adelaide, so I spent the day in fixing up and arranging for the trip. I arranged to go horseback and Horace would go with me. I had some difficulty in getting a horse but finally got one from Orvil M. Allen, I had one for Horace.

May 30th, we got up at 1 a.m. and fixed the bee hives so they would be all right and started at 2 a.m. so as to have the cool part of the day to travel to the mountains in. We went almost due north from Safford some 15 miles where we found a spring of water. There had been some troughs fixed so cattle could drink, but even with this saving there appeared to be a scarcity and stock could not get what they wanted. There had been a few wagons up this far.

We ate our lunch and rode on over the summit of the range about a mile distant; we then turned to the Northwest making for the mouth of Rock Canyon. A ride of about 13 miles brought us to the Slaughter Pens where we found a very little water. Here we rested a short time and ate a lunch and then rode on some 20 miles across the flat to rock Canyon where we arrived at about 8 p.m. We lay down among the rocks and prickly pears but got but little rest.

May 31st, we got up at 3 a.m. and started on, it being quite dark we had some trouble in getting over the rocks and washes for about a mile when we struck the wagon road in Rock Canyon. At the head of the Canyon we found a little water, here we watered our horses and went on a few miles when we stopped and ate a little breakfast, after which we went on past Black River and nearly to Turkey Creek where we made another stop and ate our dinner.

Going on, we arrived at Fort Apache at about 4 p.m. I went to the telegraph office and telegraphed to Snowflake and found that Adelaide was much better and had been up and around some during the day, so we concluded to remain here all night.

June 1st, we got up and started at 3 a.m. and rode out about eight miles where we ate a lunch and then went on to Brother Murphy's place where we took dinner and I got him to put a couple of shoes on one of our animals. He was keeping a mail station here. The mail coming up I got on it and went on leaving Horace to follow with the horses. I got supper at the mail station at Fool Holler which was kept by Jenny J. Brady.

Coming on, we arrived at Snowflake at about 10 p.m. I found my wife Adelaide quite poorly but she was some better than I expected to find her from the reports that I had received. I was greatly pleased to see her better and improving some apparently. But her long spell of sickness had told on her to a great extent. The next day I had the elders come in and we administered to her, she always had great faith in the elders and this seemed to help her some.

Brother Karl G. Maeser was in Snowflake, he had just attended the Sunday School Conference which closed last evening.

June 3rd, the family all fasted this morning and we prayed for Adelaide's health and she seemed to be improving some.

I spent the evening with Brothers Smith and Maeser at Aunt Janet Smith's home where we had a pleasant time, visiting, etc.

June 4th, Brother Maeser left this morning for St. Johns. I attended fast meeting and spoke a short time. President Smith spoke upon the evils of evil speaking.

June 5th, I did some work about the place fixing up things some and made a chicken coop.

June 6th was Joseph S.'s 14th birthday. Some of the girls came in bringing in some picnic and they had a very nice time.

June 7th, I attended meeting and spoke on the evidence of the truth of the *Book of Mormon*.

On the 8th I worked at fixing up the corral.

June 9th, I received a letter from my wife Julia stating that she had given birth to a daughter born on Thursday the 4th, at ten minutes past 10 p.m., and that she and babe were going along very well.

Horace went to the mill yesterday for lumber and got back with a load this evening.

June 10th, I started to make a kind of stable or shed, it was mainly for putting hay in.

On the 12th, I spent a portion of the time in ruling a record book for Brother Smith, and the next day I worked on my hay shed or barn.

The 14th, my son John L. came up from Holbrook last evening and brought his son, Mahonri with him, he returned to Holbrook today where he was working in the A. C. M. I. He attended the meeting before going, and he and John H. Willis and James M. Flake were the speakers. Brother Willis had attended the conference at St. Johns and gave us some of the items of the meetings there, and Brother Flake had attended the Democratic convention at Phoenix and he spoke on that subject or work there.

June 17th, I have spent the week in working on the corral, stable, or barn, and in fixing up around the home.

Brother Smith talked to me at some length, as well as some others, about coming back to Snowflake. The Gila did not agree with me, it was too hot, I had lost 25 pounds since I went down there. But the main thing that turned me was my wife Adelaide, she now said that she would not move to the Gila. I had built her a fine brick house, that is a part of it, two rooms, and spent every dollar that I could raise in doing this, and now it looked as if my work had been in vain. I was now placed in an awkward position, I did not think that it was possible to keep up the two separate homes so far apart and the money that I had spent in building had been put out to no advantage whatever. These and some other reasons decided me to sell out on the Gila and return, a move that I have often thought was not for the best, as it would be made with a considerable sacrifice.

I did not get to go down to Woodruff to see my son Joseph C. but he was going to Fort Apache with a load of freight and I saw him as he came by on his way.

June 18th, I left Snowflake with my son Horace on our return to the Gila feeling a little down cast that my efforts on the Gila had come to naught. Brother Smith was very kind to me in assisting me on the journey.

Adelaide was somewhat improved, which gave me some encouragement. She has a set back quite often, but on the whole we thought that she was gaining some.

We left at 8 a.m. and went as far as Cooley's where we stayed all night. We were treated very kindly by Mr. Cooley as he always was a kind friend of mine.

June 19th, we started shortly after 6 a.m. and got within a mile or so of Fort Apache when my coat came untied on one side and flopped over which frightened my animal which jumped quick and viciously and so sudden that I was thrown off, striking on some rocks, which knocked me senseless for some fifteen minutes or more, so Horace stated. We then got down to the river where we rested a short time before I was able to go on.

We then went on into the post where we remained the most of the afternoon. I bought a case of tomatoes and sent them back to the family at Snowflake. I got these much cheaper than they could have been purchased elsewhere, the quart cans were 10¢ and the gallon cans were 25¢ each.

In the evening we rode on to the seven mile hill where we camped near an Indian encampment and we were kept awake the most of the night as the Indians kept up a terrible noise and pow wow all night.

June 20th, we started at 4 a.m. and rode to Black River for breakfast. The river was much lower than common, at about 3 p.m. we reached the summit near the head of Rock Canyon where we made a short halt, then going on we traveled until about 11 p.m. going about half way across Ash Creek Flat. My animal was quite jaded and I walked about half of the time.

June 21st, we started before daylight and came on to the Slaughter Pens where we stopped to get a little breakfast, and going on we arrived at the Spring about 1 p.m. where we found three young men who were looking after Mr. Brice's stock that were ranging in this vicinity. Going on we arrived home a little after 9 p.m. I was very tired for my animal was entirely give out, it was sick I think, and I walked much of the time.

I found the folks getting along fairly well and our new girl baby seemed quite healthy and strong. It had been very warm during the month, the thermometer going up to 118. Gardens, etc. wee suffering for want of water and things looked a little discouraging.

June 25th, Patriarch Philemon C. Merrill blessed our little girl and we named her Hannah for my mother.

I have been working a little on the mill books since I returned posting them up.

June 27th, my 56th birthday I spent in a variety of work. I attended the High Priest's meeting at Thatcher, the attendance was very light and there was but little said or done.

I looked around some to see how or where I could sell my property here. I had decided to move back to Snowflake as Adelaide would not come to the Gila, and now Julia made some strong objections to leaving the Gila Valley so I was placed in a delicate place trying to get my family together. Julia said that I could go back and she would remain here, she liked the country. I objected to this as I did not want to have my family separated so far apart. It seemed like deserting one or the other. We talked the matter over and she finally consented to go back.

On the 29th I attended meeting at Layton and spoke on the evils of speaking evil that the adversary always tried to thwart this work by lies.

1896
Chapter 96
I Move to Snowflake

July 1, 1896, there was some rain in the mountains and today the water came down the river so as to fill the ditches, this was greatly needed for the ditches were dry and the crops were burning up.

I went down to Thatcher today and sold the place where I had built for Adelaide to George Cluff. I did not realize more than one half what I should have got for it. This place a few years later was considered worth \$3,000 and I only realized about \$175 for it, but then I lacked a little of paying for it and that was deducted.

July 4th, it rained some last night and today which was welcomed indeed for it was needed very much.

I was not feeling well and did not go to the celebration. General Sampson was at the one at Safford and spoke and Governor Franklin attended the one at Solomonville, but like the celebration at Safford, it was broken into by the rain in the fore part of the day.

July 5th, I went down to Thatcher with Brother Merrill and attended meeting there, Brother Merrill spoke a short time when the meeting was dismissed and Governor Franklin, and General Sampson made short speeches to the people. The governor spoke of the pleasant valley and its surroundings and of the warm reception by the people. He made a few remarks in justification and praise of President Grover Cleveland. To me the Governor looked like a man who had been addicted to the use of liquor and by the excess of drink had passed the meridian of life at an early day in his sojourn upon this planet.

After the meeting several of the elders called in to see Brother Henry M. Merrill who was very sick and had been for sometime, there were six of us who administered to him.

I then returned home and took Brother P. C. Merrill's horse and buggy and went up to Solomonville and got Dr. Lacy and took him down to Thatcher to see Brother Henry M. Merrill. On the way down the Dr. told me that some little time before he was the doctor for the Mining Company at Clifton and received \$500 a month. He went to drinking and then gambling and at the end of the month he was in debt. He lost his position as doctor for the Company. He then resolved to quit drinking and if he could not do that he would kill himself. He quit the drinking and commenced to build up again. After taking him down to Thatcher I returned home reaching there about midnight.

July 9th, I have been busy fixing up for my return to Snowflake. I sold my place in Layton to Cicero Morris through a trade between Morris and Benjamin Peal, the latter paid me \$265. I took a span of horses, harness, and wagon, not a new one, and one hundred dollars in cash and store pay. I got everything fixed up that I could except to collect a few debts that were due me and this was hard to do. Cicero Morris still owed me \$80 on the place and I never got but a small portion of that as he never paid it all and this was another loss, besides letting the place go at a far less price than it was worth.

We got packed up and started at 11 a.m. I had two wagons, one span on each. Horace drove one of the teams. We went to Thatcher where we took dinner with Andrew Woods. We then drove on to Mathews where we stopped with Lehi Larson, his wife was a relative of Julia's.

July 10th, we got off at about 9 a.m. and drove nearly to Fort Thomas where, in crossing a little ravine, our little baby only about five weeks old, was thrown out of the wagon, she fell in between the wagon box and the hind wheel. I stopped as soon as possible, jumped out and went back expecting nothing else than to find her crushed to death. I got some oil and anointed her and administered to her asking the Lord to spare her life and in a short time she revived, and showed no signs of her terrible fall, except the skin on one place on her face was rough as if rubbed on something hard and rough. Her preservation was a miracle. It would appear that the fall would have killed her, being from the top of a high double bedded wagon box and striking on a hard and rocky road. She must have fallen in between the spokes and was carried down with the wheel which ran over her sleeve of her dress. She was lying on the bed when the wagon went into the wash, and her mother reached forward to support Roland fearing that he would fall out and as she loosened her hold on the infant, she was thrown out. We stopped a short time attending to

the little one, but in a short time she seemed to be all right and so we drove on to the crossing of the Gila where we camped. The Babe showed no bad signs from her miraculous escape from death.

The next morning we started very early so as to travel as much as possible in the cool part of the day as the weather was very warm and oppressive. We drove to Cedar Tanks on Green's Hill where we found a very little water about a half mile from the road. The climb up the mountain had been very difficult and in places we had to double teams.

In the afternoon we drove to Ash Creek to a spring about half a mile below the road, it was after dark when we got here. It had been an extra hard day on the team but we were compelled to do this on account of reaching water.

Our little girl seemed all right and showed no signs of her hard fall.

July 12th, we drove over to Rock Canyon where we stopped for noon but found no water. In the afternoon we found a little water on the divide, this was another hard day on the teams for we had to double teams up the long dugway.

The next day we drove to Black River where I broke the draw bolt of my wagon, this detained us a short time. In the afternoon we drove up the long hill and out about two miles where we camped.

We had a rain storm during the afternoon. The Black River is not fordable in times of high water but we had no trouble in getting over as the rainy season had not yet set in so as to raise the stream.

July 14th, we all felt the effects of the rain yesterday as we got wet more or less during the storm, besides it made the roads quite muddy.

We reached the foot of the Seven Mile Hill where we took dinner after which we drove to Fort Apache, where we stayed all night with Brother John Tenney.

I made an attempt to communicate with the folks at Snowflake by telegraph, but was unable to get them.

Julia was feeling quite poorly having taken cold during the rain storm on Black River.

We continued our journey the next day but Julia was quite sick and Horace had an attack of the Cholera Morbus so I had to drive both teams the most of the day, as well as trying to doctor the sick as much as I could with hot teas, etc.

We stayed all night at Brother Murphy's at the forks of the road. He was very kind in rendering any assistance that he could.

July 16th, Horace was some better but Julia did not improve very much.

We drove to Brother Edson Whipple's place where we stopped all night. The country looked quite desolate, I never saw so little grass as there is this year, feed is extremely scarce all along here.

July 17th, we moved on and reached Snowflake in the afternoon, we had a shower of rain on us at the crossing of Showlow.

I found my wife Adelaide quite poorly, it appeared that she had not improved since I left her a month before. However she seemed very hopeful and thought that she was improving some.

The next day I went on to Woodruff taking Julia down to stop with her mother for awhile.

July 19th, I attended meeting at Woodruff and spoke on the evils of evil speaking and circulating falsehoods.

I looked around some to see if I could purchase a place for Julia as she wished to live here on account of her folks who reside here, but I felt that I would rather have her in Snowflake as that seemed more my home and the family

would be nearer together and I thought that I could look after them better than to have them so far apart. However I made some inquiries about some places, Brother L. H. Hatch had a place to sell for \$350 which suited tolerable well as to location, but the improvements were not worth much. I understood that he had offered the place the week before for \$300. I looked at some other places but made no arrangements about buying at this time.

July 20th, I returned to Snowflake and the next day I looked around some to see if I could get a place there.

July 22nd, I made arrangements for a place with John Lundquist that belonged to his brother, August, who had moved to Utah. I was to pay \$50 down and \$50 in three months. I had concluded to locate Julia here as I rather preferred this to Woodruff. There was a log house on the lot, that was about all. The next day I tore down the old kitchen and got some lumber from Brother John Hunt to build another and to repair the house.

July 24th, was celebrated here and at Taylor. President Smith went up to Taylor as he had been invited there sometime before. At this place there was a procession in which Indians and Pioneers were represented. At the meeting Brother Ralph Ramsey was the orator. In the afternoon a rain spoiled the outdoor sports and amusements.

July 26th, I attended the meeting, Brother P. J. Christofferson and Udall, a Brother of David K. Udall, who had just come out from Utah, were the speakers.

On the 27th I started to dig a well for Adelaide which was greatly needed as their water in the ditches was often not fit to use, it being very muddy after a rain storm. I had started as well to fix up the house that I had bargained for and on the 29th when I told Adelaide that I had got a place she put in a strong objection to my moving Julia to Snowflake, saying that no man should have his wives more than twenty miles of each other or at least not in the same town, and said that if I moved Julia to Snowflake she would leave me or she would not live with me. Julia wished very much to remain at Woodruff where her folks resided but would go to Snowflake if I said so. Under these circumstances I decided to let Julia remain at Woodruff. This I have thought since, was not a good move, for the breaking of the St. Johns reservoir practically ruined the place and broke me up in that locality, and Adelaide left me anyhow.

I turned the place over to Joseph W. Smith that I had bargained for, he taking the trade off my hands, and later built on it for his wife Della (my daughter).

July 31st, I had got a man to help me on the well, he claimed to be a well digger and I worked as steady on it as it was possible to do with such a trifling man. His name was John Steele and lives on the Gila and had lived at St. Joseph and was up here doing but little.

August 2nd, I attended meeting and spoke on the subject of Moses leading the Children of Israel out of the land of Egypt.

On the 7th we got down to water in the well, about forty feet, we had got along very slow with it as the digging had been very hard.

The next day I went down to Woodruff. Horace went with me to take the team back as I expected to go to work in the store before I returned. I sold one span of my horses to James D. Houck for \$125 as I did not have any use for two span. Horace went back to Snowflake the next day and I attended the meeting at Woodruff, John A. West and Smith D. Rogers were the speakers.

August 10th, I made a trade with Brother L. H. Hatch for the west half of the block on which the old Coop. store stood. There were two lots on which was an old house, a lumber one which was of little value, but there was considerable lumber in the building and some fruit trees on the lot. I paid Brother Hatch \$35 for the place and he turned \$100 of water right with it which was worth at that time about 25¢ on the dollar.

I spent the rest of the day in fixing up the place as the place had not been occupied for about a year. Having fixed up things as well as I could, I moved Julia into the place on August 12th, and the next day I went down to Holbrook to work in the A. C. M. I. and spent the day in looking over the books so as to get the run of the business. Brother Charles Jarvis had been keeping the books and he and Brother Hulet did not agree very well was one reason why

they had urged me so much to come back I imagined and when I agreed to come back, Jarvis was notified that he could quit on the 15th.

1896-1897
Chapter 97
Bookkeeper and Assistant Postmaster at A. C. M. I.

On August 15th, 1896, I took my old place in the A. C. M. I. and commenced my labors that were about the same as in years past. There did not appear to be quite as much work with the books and accounts as when I left, but Brother Hulet was postmaster and had the office in the store and I acted as deputy postmaster. This added some to the work as it was a Money Order Office. There were five mails in and five out each day, this made considerable work, but Brother Brookbank did the largest part of it, but we all helped some. Our force in the store was now John R. Hulet, Superintendent; Joseph Fish, T. W. Brookbank, and my son, John L. Fish.

Our quarterly conference was held at St. Joseph on the 30th. Quite a number from up the country came down to attend the conference, my son, Silas L. Fish, was among the number. Being at the close of the month I had all the accounts to fix up so was unable to attend. My son John L. has his family here and I board with them. The regular price of board at this time was about \$20 per month but he only charged me \$15 per month.

September 11th, the work goes on in the store in the same old groove as well as in the Post office.

I went up to Woodruff this evening with my son Joseph C.'s team and returned the next morning with Brother B. F. Duffin.

On the 12th my sons Horace N. and Silas L. came down from Snowflake. I was sending Horace off to go to school at the L. D. S. College at Salt Lake City.

The next morning he went down to St. Joseph with Brother Hulet. I had arranged for him to go on to Salt Lake City from there with Brother Wesley Palmer, there were several of the young folks going from Snowflake and other parts by wagon to Utah to get married.

President Jesse N. Smith came in today from Moencopie where he had been to visit that ward, he went on up to Snowflake.

The District Court opened today and this brought in quite a number from the outside settlements such as jurors, witnesses, etc.

On the 15th the Democrats held their convention to get out their ticket for the County officers, and on the 17th the Republicans held their convention for the same purpose. I was asked by some to run for Probate Judge and by some to run for County Recorder, but for various reasons I declined to enter the race for either office.

On September 18th Judge Hawkins was sick and adjourned court without finishing up the business. The Grand Jury however got through, they employed me to go through the books and accounts of the County Officers and check them up and see if there were any mistakes or frauds, etc. I was allowed \$3.00 per day for the work. On the 26th I finished going through the Recorders books which were the last, I found a few minor errors but as a rule they were all in very fair shape, which could not have been otherwise as the county had just been organized and there had not been a great amount of business as yet.

I was not feeling very well so in the afternoon I rode up to Woodruff with Brother Bushman who was going up there to spend Sunday as a kind of missionary. I did not attend meeting, for I was hardly able to sit up.

I returned to Holbrook with him the next evening although I was hardly able to sit up, having a high fever but this gradually wore off. I kept around the most of the time and attended to my work as best I could, attending to accounts and the post office.

October 2nd, I have improved considerably from the sick spell I had some three weeks ago and am feeling much better.

I was kept fairly busy with the post office and the accounts, etc., and I improved every minute of time I had to spare, for at about the time that I came into the store this time I started to gather up historical items thinking that I might be able to put them together in some kind of shape at least so that they could be used for historical purposes.

I first commenced the work when I was in the mill at Safford or at least the idea first came to me then and it might have originated when I was in the Legislature as we had something said and done on historical work. But I did but very little until I returned from the Gila. I manage now to put in about two hours work each evening and sometimes I do a little on Sunday when I am here as I never go out much. I had gathered at this time about 300 pages which I had noted down on Arizona history. Later, however, I extended the field to cover the Rocky Mountain Region.

Politics was beginning to boil as the boys termed it, and speakers were around giving their views on the different questions, especially on the silver question. Mark A. Smith was here and spoke, he was running on the Democrat ticket for Congress. And E. E. Ellinwood, a Democrat, was here not long since and made his little talk and then went on up the country to convert those there to his way of thinking. This evening General Sampson spoke on the Republican side of the question and he goes on up in the country tomorrow to lecture at the different places.

October 24th, the District Court has been in session during the week, Judge Owen T. Rouse on the bench in place of Judge Hawkins who was sick. I was a little acquainted with Judge Rouse as he was Judge on the Gila while I was there. There were three convictions, one for burglary and sentenced to one year in the penitentiary, one for seduction and sentenced for two years, and one for murder and sentenced for 40 years.

I went up to Woodruff this evening and returned the next morning. The nights wee getting quite cool and no frost as yet, however, we were having an excellent fall.

On the 26th, I was appointed Deputy Clerk of the District Court. I, however, did but little at this if anything, Osmer D. Flake was the Clerk and did all the business until the change in officials.

November 3rd, this was election day and it was a little quiet, only 65 votes were polled at Holbrook. The whole Republican ticket was elected with the exception of Anderson and Zuck who were running for District Attorney and Probate Judge. Burbage and Jackson were elected against them.

November 14th, I went up to Snowflake this evening on the buckboard and arrived there a little after midnight. I found Adelaide improved some. She seemed to be gaining a little in health and strength.

I attended meeting and had quite a talk with Brother Smith on Sunday, and in the evening I returned to Holbrook getting back to the store at about 4 a.m. on Monday morning. Of course I felt quite tired after my two nights ride and the last night I did not get any sleep whatever.

I soon settled down to the same old routine of work, and still I took considerable interest in it and my work of gathering historical items.

The 26th was a very windy day and it snowed a little during the night. The 29th was the coldest night of the season thus far, the thermometer stood 10 degrees above zero.

December 1st, after an all days work and a hard one, I fixed up the accounts for the past month and went up to Snowflake on the buckboard. It was a cold and disagreeable ride.

The next day, December 2nd, I attended the birthday gathering of Brother Smith's family, relatives, and friends. All of his family that were in reach, and many friends, were present, Adelaide was able to go too and attend the gathering, which took place at 2 p.m. and lasted until about midnight. Most of Brother Smith's grandchildren had recitations and songs, etc., many of the pieces had been composed for the occasion. The older persons gave some speeches of incidents and characteristics of Brother Smith's life and labors. It went of very pleasantly and had a tendency to impress upon all present the great benefit of love and union in a family. Before I left, Brother Smith took occasion to pay a very high tribute to me for my unselfish labors, etc.

As I had to go back to Holbrook in the night, I left at 10 p.m., a little before it was out and taking an all night ride, you might say, arrived in Holbrook in the early morning. I was so cold that there was no use of attempting to get any rest so I made a fire and thawed out some before going to work.

December 12th, I went up to Woodruff with my son Joseph C. and returned early the next morning on the buckboard which generally got into Holbrook at about sun rise. These trips out from the store were hard when taken in the night, as they were so often, and they were about all I have to note outside of the regular labors in the store as to myself. However during my odd hours I wrote many letters to old settlers who were in different parts of the Territory, gleaned from them what I could in relation to the early incidents of Arizona history. And now as I look back over my work, I find that there were many little incidents that I might have noted that might have been of some historical value.

December 13th, President Jesse N. Smith came down from Snowflake on his way to Phoenix to attend the Irrigation congress which was to meet there. It was an agreeable change to have some of my old time friends pass occasionally as I was enabled to keep in touch with the progress of affairs in the different places.

On the 23rd Brother Smith returned from Phoenix, Bishop John Hunt and John H. Willis were along. Apostle Brigham Young was also in company with Brother Smith. They all went on up to Snowflake.

On December 26th Apostle Brigham Young returned from Snowflake, Brother H. Hatch brought him down and I returned to Woodruff with Brother Hatch.

December 27th, I attended meeting at Woodruff and occupied a portion of the time. Brother Clark Owens who had been back to Kansas City gave an account of his visit in Independence and the Temple Block in Jackson County.

Julia's children were all down with the measles. Roland was keeping around tolerably well but Wilford was quite sick. Hannah was not quite as bad but the three of them gave their mother all that she could do to care for them.

The next morning I went back to Holbrook with O. D. Flake and took up the old labors of posting up books and fixing up accounts, etc, and devoting my odd moments to my historical labors. Many items that I have jotted down may be of little interest and there are many important events that I probably have slipped over, but I often thought that if a persons life was worth living, his acts were worth recording.

The year of 1896 had passed and with it many a glorious throng of happy dreams, but with the many disappointments and trials was mingled some joys and sometimes sorrows, but we always look forward to brighter days when the sun of prosperity will shine with greater splendor.

The winter thus far had been remarkably fine and pleasant, or rather fine, for there had been considerable moisture, snow and rain, which make the conditions for sheep and cattle good and the prospects for the farmers, like that of the stock and sheep men, look bright.

My labors in the store were not hard but were quite confining for me to stay in the office so much. I seldom went out only when I went to Snowflake or Woodruff, and I often regretted that I was placed in such a position, which was not so bad if I could have been more with my family that needed my care and advice.

My health was better than it was the last year on the Gila and that was one thing that I had to be thankful for which was a blessing to be greatly appreciated.

January 1st, 1897, our new year came in about as other days go and come with us in the store. Our situation was some different from other places or people, we never had a holiday or a Sunday. I was away from my family and practically isolated, much of this was brought about by the people of the place not being of our faith and we did not associate very much together only in our business transactions. This holiday found us very busy taking stock and settling up for the end of the year, which is generally the case with us as each of the holiday seasons. This was no trial to me personally, it was that I could not be with my family as they missed me and I felt for their lonely condition, as for myself I cared but very little for the dances, etc., and went out more to please them than myself.

By the 9th, I had got through the rush so that I had a breathing spell, and I went up to Woodruff this evening with Brother Joseph H. Richards.

There have been some storms of late and a shower this afternoon.

January 16th, President Jesse N. Smith came down this afternoon on his way to Phoenix to attend the Legislature, he having been elected to the House at the last election.

Some storms but not heavy, since New Years our trade has been rather light it always falls off during the months of January and February, and still with the slack trade I have but very little time to devote to my historical work except of evenings.

On February 3rd I went up to Snowflake on the Buckboard and arrived there at about 2 a.m. the next morning, very cold and disagreeable ride in the night.

I spent two days working about home and went down to Snowflake Coop. and traced up some accounts that had got in a tangle. Brother Smith had been keeping the books and when he went to Phoenix the person taking hold of the business had got things a little mixed and I spent some time in getting it straightened out.

I disliked very much traveling on the buckboard in the night so I hunted around to get a chance to go down with someone. I tried Brother Frisby's folks but she told me that they were loaded and could not take me. I found out that their load consisted of two small boys who were going down for their father and 256# of hay in the carriage for the horses and this was under the seat. I waited until night and took another night ride getting into Holbrook the next morning about breakfast time. As soon as I got a little breakfast I went to work and stuck to it until 9 p.m., that was our usual time to quit and close up the store, but sometimes we kept open a little longer.

February 17th, I went up to Woodruff with Charles Lillywhite. The people there were at work in their dam strengthening it some. They have done an immense site of work on dams.

I returned to Holbrook the next day on the buckboard.

There has been more snow and rain than was common, for as a rule there is very little snow falls at this place. Along the Little Colorado and north over the Painted Desert it may be termed a rainless country.

March 6th, I have often said that the work here had a sameness that did not furnish much to record in a journal. It is the same routine of goods coming in at the back door in boxes, and going out at the front door in bundles and packages and the never ending accounts to be posted up and statements to be made out and duns sent to tardy customers. Paying bills for goods and ordering and unpacking new goods, marking them, and putting them up, and then the looking after our customers who come in from the outside and stay all night. We had a corral for their animals and a camp house and kept hay and grain for them, and this work often ran late in the evening when they came in late. Nearly every Sunday we had some of this to attend to, all these things are the common routine of a merchant who has to be kind, obliging, and good natured to please his customers, for that is a part of his business. Some parts of it, like all other occupations, are agreeable and some parts very irksome and tiresome.

1897-1898
Chapter 98
The Same Old Grind

March 6th I received a letter from my son Horace who was in Salt Lake City attending school there. He reported that he was getting on every fair, was taking a commercial course and was then working in the banking department.

My son Joseph C came down today and I went up to Woodruff with him in the evening and returned the next morning on the buckboard.

We were having some of the wind and dust that is so common in this country during the fall and spring seasons, and especially along the valley of the Little Colorado.

March 14th, I went down to St. Joseph on the railroad, my son John L. and Dr. Woolford were along. After arriving at the station (which is about a mile from town) we remained here about three quarters of an hour when the train from the west came in and Apostle John Henry Smith and Heber J. Grant got off and we all went up to town together. Several from St. Joseph had come down to meet the apostles. I took dinner with Brother Joseph C. Hansen.

At the meeting in the afternoon, Apostle John Henry Smith showed how the Pagan Romans changed Christianity when they accept it. Apostle Heber J. Grant spoke on the subject of our duties to our children.

After meeting we all started for Holbrook and after arriving there at about 6:30 p.m. the Apostles and several others went on to Woodruff. I remained to continue the labors at the store.

March 20th, this was one of the windy days of this windy country, the dust was thick and flying fast notwithstanding that there had been a rain quite recently. At night it turned very cold, the wind coming from the north brought the thermometer down to 15 degrees above Zero which was pretty cold for the later part of March.

March 22nd, it is 38 years ago today since I was married and when I thought that my oldest daughter is 37 years old, I began to think that I am getting along over the meridian of life's journey and that I would begin now to be where the journey of life was inclining or leading down to the path of infirmities and old age.

I went up to Woodruff this afternoon, Apostles John Henry Smith and Heber J. Grant came into Woodruff from St. Johns where they had been holding meetings as well as in the Snowflake Stake. There was a meeting in the evening at which D. K. Udall, Jesse N. Smith, Apostles Smith and Grant were the speakers. President Jesse N. Smith had just returned from attending the Legislature at Phoenix and he gave a short account of his labors there.

The next morning I rode down to Holbrook with Brother E. N. Freeman who was taking the Apostles down. They took the train for Utah while the other brethren returned home and I soon settled down again to the old job with the books and accounts.

These outs, especially when we had visiting brethren, were a great help to me, it was a change. They were short, for when I took them I often left the store in the evening at from 5 to 7 p.m. and was back the next morning at breakfast time unless it was Sunday. I generally got out this way twice a month, but it was generally on Sundays when the stay was longer.

March 30th was a cold windy day and it froze quite hard at night, this did some damage to the fruit crop in some sections. But our trees at Woodruff and some other points were not far enough along to be damaged very much, but they often are damaged a little later in the season.

April 17th, I have been in the store for some time and seldom go out of the building only to get my meals, as I sleep in the building. I have a cot that I put down when we close the store and then I am up about the first thing in the morning.

I went up to Woodruff in the afternoon, and found the fruit trees in full bloom, the place looked like a flower garden, I made a trade for ten acres of land here in the field and went over to look at it. I got it from the Coop Store, they had taken some in Springerville and changed it for this piece and as they had no use for it, they let me have it for \$250 with the same amount of water right. That is, 4250 of water right which is not worth half that amount at the time. The next morning I returned to Holbrook.

May 8th, I went up to Snowflake this evening with Mr. Young, the Government Operator at Holbrook. I found Adelaide still in poor health although she thought she was a little on the improve. The next day I went up to Taylor with Brother Smith and attended meeting there and spoke a short time. President Smith spoke at some length on how the *Book of Mormon* was rejected by the world. I returned to Holbrook during the night on the buckboard arriving there at about 6 a.m. in the morning.

I felt the effects of these rides (up one night and down the next) during the day, but after a good nights rest, I was myself again. To be at my post I could hardly get away in the day time so my trips were often up on Saturday night and back on Sunday night. I would have been glad to have gone oftener if I could have arranged it.

On the evening of the 22nd, I went up to Woodruff with Joseph Lillywhite, and the next day attended Meeting and was asked as usual to occupy a portion of the time. Brother E. M. Webb spoke on the subject of education. I returned to Holbrook in the evening, going down on foot as I sometimes did so as to be at my post the next morning.

June 12th, we have been extremely busy in the store for over two weeks. The stock men from Tonto Basin country have been shipping quite a large number of their cattle to market and buying their supplies, this besides our regular trade made quite a rush, as almost everyone took back a load of supplies for his ranch. Prospects were a little brighter, stock was selling at a fair price and sheep were in good demand and the ranges were better this year than common.

I went up to Woodruff this evening and attended meeting there the next day and after meeting returned to Holbrook with H. H. Gardner.

July 8th, we had a very nice rain which is very uncommon at this season of the year, rains frequently start as early as this in the forest region but we seldom have rains here as early as this. This rain however was greatly needed and very much appreciated.

I went up to Woodruff on the 10th, and the next day got Charles Jarvis to fill one of my teeth. After he left the store he went east and learned the dentist trade and was now practicing the work some, but he never did a great deal at it as he, like many others, had too many irons in the fire and when he learned one thing he wanted to learn some other, so he switched about and soon after went and learned the photography business. I then returned to Holbrook.

On the 16th President Jesse N. Smith, Bishop John Hunt, and Joseph C. Hansen and some others started to Salt Lake City to attend the Jubilee, the 50th anniversary of the Pioneers entering the Salt Lake Valley.

On August 6th, I took another night ride going up to Snowflake. These rides were not so bad at this time of the year as in winter but there was one very disagreeable feature about them, for the roads were frequently very dusty. I found Adelaide a little better and she was always hopeful.

The next day I attended meeting where President Smith, who had returned from Salt Lake City a few days before, gave a very interesting account of the celebration. At night I took another nights ride and returned to Holbrook, arriving there in time the next morning to go to work.

The work at the store had but very little change. I put in all my time, and then what odd hours I had of Sundays when I was here, and of evenings after business hours I used in my historical work.

On August 28th I went up to Woodruff and attended the Quarterly conference which was to be held at that place this time and I believe that this was the only time that this conference was held at this place. A bowery had been constructed in which to hold the meetings. President Smith spoke very interestingly on various points and after the

Monday's meeting I returned to Holbrook as there was a rush to make out the monthly accounts, which always come at the end of each month, and with the other work always made me very busy at this time.

September 5th, we have been having a little more rain this fall than common, for several days past we have had a rain nearly every day.

On the 18th I went up to Woodruff. One might ask why I went up there more than to Snowflake, Adelaide was not able to wash or do anything for me so Julia did my washing and mending, etc. I tried to go up there to take a bath and get a change of under clothes.

The next day I attended meeting and returned to Holbrook going down on foot. The distance was a little over 12 miles and I was tired enough especially when the roads were muddy. This evening it was quite muddy as it rained some and I was late in the evening in getting through.

October 5th, I went up to Woodruff to attend the wedding of my daughter, Jessie May. She married a man by the name of James Y. Lee, he was a widower and had five children. They were intending to go to the temple to get married but he failed to get a recommend on account of his using tobacco, etc. He had been through the Temple with his first wife however. For various reasons I did not favor the match very much. However he was quite an energetic man and a pusher, but he had a violent temper and was not what might be called a cultivated person, but with all he was generally kind and considerate in his family, that is in the way of providing for them, but he was not really an affectionate man. Brother Quince R. Gardner, J. P. performed the ceremony. It was rather a solemn occasion, most of the relatives had opposed the match or did not favor it at least. Joseph C. was the only one of her family that was present. The girl said she had made it a matter of prayer and felt satisfied that it was right to have him and to take care of his children.

I returned to Holbrook the next morning, going down on the buckboard, and we had a rough time of it in crossing the Puerco which was high and with a very bad quicksand bottom. We got stuck in this stream and had to unhitch the horses and then get them out and then we worked to get the mail sacks out and carry them ashore and then came the hardest job to get the buckboard out of the quicksand. In this work I got quite wet and muddy. Besides my health had not been very good and I was about sick, but managed to keep around and do my work.

On the 30th I again made another trip to Woodruff and returned the next day but managed to get through with less trouble than I had on the last trip.

November 5th, we were having quite cold weather of nights, but the days were clear and pleasant.

Except the few trips that I have been taking to Snowflake and Woodruff, I spent all my time both day and night in the store with very few exceptions.

On the 20th, after I got the last mail off, which was at 7 p.m. I started up to Woodruff going on foot. It was dark and started to rain, and it was impossible to follow the road as I went on the south side of the river. I had a very difficult job in crossing a deep wash in the lower valley. I struck it considerably below the road and when I got to the river it was up and I went down to where I knew there was a rocky place and shallow, so pulling off my shoes and socks and rolling up my pants I managed to get across but it was not a pleasant job in the night at this time of year. I got to town about midnight.

I attended meeting the next day, Homer F. Bushman and E. M. Webb were the speakers. Brother Webb had just returned from a trip to Mexico and gave a sketch of things at the Mormon Colonies, after meeting I returned to Holbrook with Homer F. Bushman.

December 2nd, I went up to Snowflake on the buckboard, as usual we started at 7 p.m. and we got through t about 1 a.m. the next morning. I found Adelaide very much the same, she does not improve very much, stays in bed much of her time. The boys, Silas and Joseph S., do the most of the work about the house and they have for the last two years. I was too late to attend Brother Smith's birthday gathering but had a visit with him during the day.

I went back to Holbrook during the night getting through after a very cold ride at about sun rise.

On December 11th, I went up to Woodruff with my son Joseph C. I attended meeting there the next day, the speakers were Albert Minerly and Ninian Miller who were home missionaries. After meeting I returned to Holbrook going on foot. When I went down this way, I generally crossed the river close to the dam and took a direct line through and did not strike any road until I got below the lower valley.

On the 25th I went up and ate my Christmas dinner with Brother Reidhead's folks, but did not go out to any of the sports.

I returned to the store the next morning. The main thing that they had at Holbrook was a Masquerade Ball. The weather keeps clear and beautiful but a little cool.

January 1st, 1898, This like all the new years days was spent in the store taking stock. This work we generally arrange for a week ahead, if new goods happen to come in, we seldom open them until after we take stock, and then in going through when we find any old stock that has been on hand for any great length we take it out and sell at a reduced price and do not invoice that at the cost, but put it down very low and sometimes not at any price.

On the 5th we had got things pretty well up and I went up to Woodruff and came back on foot the next evening.

On the 10th we had a snow which fell about 3 inches deep but in the mountains towards Apache we were told that it was about two feet of snow, and we were now having some cold weather.

Our trade as usual was less since the holidays as it always is until about March when the rush comes for the supplies for sheep and cattle men, the latter, however, came a little later.

On the 15th I went up to Woodruff and the next day attended the ward conference. There were three sessions and in the evening President Smith spoke mainly on the taking of the Deseret News and having the Church Works in our homes.

The next morning I rode down with Brother J. H. Richards, it was a very cold ride for the winter weather, it seemed to be a little colder than common, and on the 19th they claimed at Snowflake that the thermometer went down to 14 degrees below zero, but the morning of the 25th broke the record when it went down to 15 ½ degrees below zero being the coldest day that we had.

February 4th, I went up to Woodruff yesterday and returned this morning. The weather is still cold and foggy, and has been cloudy for a week so that the sun has not been seen, this is the longest spell of such weather that I have seen in Arizona, to go a week without seeing the sun is something that has never been known before in this part of the country. This evening the fog commenced to break away and the weather commenced to moderate a little.

While our trade is a little dull it was \$1000 more last month than it was the same month last year.

A difficulty has arisen which is drawing in several parties in Snowflake and vicinity. A. M. Willis at Snowflake had sold considerable of his homestead to different parties, some of whom did not get their deeds recorded. In a suit sometime back judgment was taken against Willis by default and now it is attempted to sell the land under a writ of execution because the deeds were not recorded. Mr. E. F. Ellenwood has taken the case of the defendants and is here looking up the matter, and I believe later beat the case.

1898
Chapter 99
Some Religious and Political Items

February 18th, Apostles John Henry Smith and John W. Taylor arrived at St. Joseph yesterday and held meeting there. They went up to Woodruff today where they had meeting in the evening.

February 19th, I went up to Snowflake and the next day attended the stake conference there. Apostles Smith and Taylor were the main speakers. Conference adjourned on the 21st. There was a High Council meeting in the forenoon and in the afternoon the Apostles held meeting at Taylor and from there they went over to St. John Stake.

March 5th, I went up to Woodruff and the next day I attended fast meeting there. The people were busy with their farming interest, the weather was fine and things looked prosperous, and the next morning I returned to Holbrook.

While in the store I was very busy and never wasted a moment's time and have but little time to attend to my historical work.

Being away so much from home, I was hardly able to assist the boys any or arrange their work in the farming line so things were not carried on as systematically as they should have been, their results were not what they would have been had they had a little more help and advice about their work. This was one great drawback to my prosperity, for boys could not be expected to be as good as older hands in their work, but under the circumstances they did extremely well.

April 2nd, I went up to Snowflake on the buckboard, this now leaves at 3 p.m. instead of 7 p.m., the change has recently been made. I found my wife Adelaide in very poor health as she had been for a long time.

I attended fast meeting the next day and blessed a child of Louis Freeman's and after meeting I went over to my daughter Della's and blessed her infant that was 8 days old, they named him Henry Akins Smith. I started back to Holbrook at 10 p.m. and arrived there a little before daylight.

On April 9th I got word that my wife Adelaide was worse so I went up to Snowflake. I found her quite weak but was somewhat better and apparently was improving a little. I remained at home the next day with the folks and went down on the 11th with Brother C. R. Ballard.

Trade now is improving some, the sheep men are beginning to bring in their wool which always makes things lively while the wool sales are going on for this is a center of trade in that line as well as some others. The weather is a little dry and windy.

April 23rd, I went up to Woodruff and the next day attended meeting there, Peter J. Christofferson and I were the speakers.

The trees were in blossom and things were looking lovely and we were having very pleasant weather.

The next day I returned to Holbrook and again settled down to the old job.

About this time we were having considerable war news which was the main topic of conversation with all parties.

May 7th, I went up to Snowflake, and found Adelaide much the same although she was able to be around some of the time.

At the meeting the next day the subject of locating the site or of selecting one for the Academy that we were preparing to build was talked over. One party wanted it in the lower part of town, but it was finally agreed upon to build it just on the edge of the little bench in the southern part of town. I was in favor of this from the start.

I took another night ride and returned to Holbrook.

On May 26th, my son Horace N. came in from Salt Lake City where he had been going to school for a year and a half. He went on up to Snowflake with my son Joseph C. who was driving the mail for a short time. Keeping Horace in school, and paying his expenses had been quite a tax on me as I had but very little income outside of my wages.

May 28th, I went up to Woodruff and attended meeting there the next day, after which I returned to Holbrook tired out as walking is hard after night over bad roads.

June 11th, we had quite a general rain, which filled the washes and large streams came down. This is a little uncommon at this time of year, and it did considerable good as the country is always dry and in need of rain during the month of June.

I went up to Snowflake and attended the ward conference at that place. There was not a very good attendance. President Smith and Hatch were the main speakers. There was a meeting in the evening at which President Richards and I spoke. I returned to Holbrook the next morning with Brother Richards, starting quite early so as to get through before noon.

June 28th, yesterday was my birthday and it was spent as all other days were spent in the store, busy adding up accounts, making out bills, posting up books, and various other odds and ends that no one knows of but those who have worked in a store where we sold everything from a needle to a thrashing machine.

The weather is very warm, we generally have our warmest or hottest spell the latter part of the month just before the rainy season starts in. Today the thermometer went up to 101o in the shade which was the hottest day of the season and we seldom see the thermometer go above this in this place.

July 4th, there was a celebration of the day here consisting of some horse racing, etc. While that was going on there was a telegram came announcing the destruction of the Spanish Fleet at Santiago, which added to the good feeling and joy of the people, to learn that our fleet had been victorious upon the water.

There had been prepared and arrangements made for the laying of the corner stone of the New Court House which was being erected here. Jesse N. and Joseph W. Smith came down from Snowflake to attend the ceremonies. The corner stone had been prepared and a square chamber had been cut in the rock and in it was placed a tin box containing copies of the first receipts for taxes, licenses, etc., that were issued by the new county, and also copies of newspapers, etc., with some coins. I offered the prayer at the dedication of the cornerstone and President Jesse N. Smith made a very nice and appropriate speech on the occasion. A shower of rain coming up cut the proceedings a little short.

President Jesse N. and Joseph W. Smith returned to Snowflake the next morning and I to the old job with the books and accounts.

On July 7th I went up to Woodruff where I found all the family reasonably well except Jessie May who does not have very good health and is not very strong.

The next day I returned to Holbrook on the buckboard. Brother John Wimmer was the driver and when we arrived at the Puerco we found the water so high that we feared to attempt to cross without some investigation and exploring for a crossing. Brother Wimmer being considerable older than I was, I took off my clothes and went into the muddy and turbulent stream and soon found a place where we could cross and we reached the opposite shore in safety.

Our business in the store goes on about the same, but had been on the increase some. We had the contract of the government freight from Holbrook to Fort Apache, we also had the stage line to look after, all of which added materially to the business and we found but little idle time during the seven days of the week.

July 18th, I went up to Snowflake. I found Adelaide had improved considerably in health and was better than she had been for a long time. The poor woman had suffered very much and I had felt for her greatly in her afflictions for the past three years, and was much pleased to see her improving.

The next day I attended meeting. President Smith spoke upon the destiny of the United States. He quoted several passages from the *Book of Mormon* to show that this was the land of liberty and freedom.

After meeting I called on Bishop Hunt, Adelaide went with me; it was the first time that she had walked so far for about three years.

I returned to Holbrook on the 19th, found the river very high and the day before it was the highest that it was ever known to be. It had washed in at the upper end of town and the citizens were all out hauling rock and brush so as to protect the town. These floods occur to a greater or less extent every season and many dollars have been spent both by the citizens and the railroad in protecting the town from these floods, and still several houses were washed away by the high water.

On the 30th I went up to Woodruff. I found things in the place looking as if they had been sadly neglected; most of the men had gone out west of Winslow to work on a reservoir and had left the place rather deserted. The farms were not half taken care of. And things were running down to some extent on this account. The people had been so unfortunate so many times in losing their dam and being compelled to go off to work that improvements never had been made as they would other wise have been.

I attended meeting there the next day. Mary Jane West and Nettie Hunt were missionaries in behalf of the Academy and they occupied the most of the time. I returned to Holbrook in the evening with Lewis Hunt.

About this time we were having considerable rain along the mountain range, this raised the river considerably, and when there is high water in the Little Colorado it is extremely muddy. Some government men testing the water at these times stated that it went as high as 52% silt.

The work on the new court house is moving on very well. Mr. Kennedy and Grim, who took the contract as I understood at about \$13,000 were pushing the work as fast as possible, but delays of various kinds have hindered them considerable. The brick work for the first story is about completed.

August 10th, I have been quite sick for the last few days, but I am better today but I still have considerable fever. By an effort I have been able to keep around and do my work, for I never quit work as long as I can work, and I never go to bed on account of sickness if I can help it.

My son John L. moved his family up to his place at Pinedale on the 21st of last month and since that time I have been boarding at Mrs. McCarty's, a family boarding place. Brother John Murray, one of our hands in the store, boards here too. There are no other boarders here at present.

The weather is quite warm but we are having considerable rain in different places around, but at this place and to the north of us there never is much.

On August 18th, I went up to Snowflake with Parley Richards. I found my wife Adelaide considerably improved in health to what she had been for several months. I spent the next day at home, and had some talks with several of the neighbors mainly on politics as this subject was beginning to warm up some and the people were beginning to look around to see whom to select for our next county officials.

I returned to Holbrook on the 20th with President Jesse N. Smith who was going down to St. Joseph to attend their ward conference. Trade at this period was a little dull compared with some other months.

The work on the Court House was being pushed as fast as possible and the joists for the second floor were in place. I understood that the contractors lost some in building this Court House, as it cost them more for various reasons than they agreed to build it for.

September 3rd, I went up to Woodruff with E. E. Bradshaw, my little daughter Hannah had been quite delicate during the summer and she was quite poorly when I arrived.

On the 4th I attended fast meeting and got up at 3 a.m. the next morning and went back on the mail which leaves Woodruff at about this time and gets into Holbrook at about sun rise. There had been some heavy rains about a week previous and since that the weather has been fairly good. The crops in the different settlements have been up to the average and the people have had but little cause to complain.

September 5th, my son Horace N. received a call from the Church Authorities to go on a mission to the Samoan Islands, the letter stated he was to sail from San Francisco on October 5th.

September 8th, the Republicans held their primary today in Holbrook and elected L. E. Divelbess, E. O. Anderson, F. M. Zuck, R. C. Kinder and John Hamilton as delegates to attend the county convention. The Democrats hold their convention on the 10th. Politics were not receiving their share of attention by the people.

September 11th, I went up to Snowflake and the next day attended meeting there and spoke during the services.

I have been trying to arrange to get the means necessary for Horace to go on his mission. I met with many obstacles as money was very hard to get. I was short myself and had but little that I could turn into ready cash, and to raise the means I would have to borrow, and that is a poor way for a poor man to get along. It always keeps a man's nose on the grindstone.

In the evening I started back to Holbrook on the mail. The post office inspector was in and he had the driver go around by way of Woodruff so he could visit that office, and we got into Holbrook on Monday morning at about 8 a.m. It was a very cold night and I suffered considerable from these cold rides in the night.

September 22nd, my sons Horace N. and Silas came down this evening. Horace was on his way to fill his mission, and Silas returned the next morning.

September 23rd, I gathered up what money I could, and some clothing, etc. for Horace. I had \$220 it took \$27.50 for his ticket to Salt Lake City and from there the fare would be \$90.75. He expected to stop in Salt Lake City and get his endowments. He took the train for Utah at 1 p.m. when I kissed him and bade him goodbye, asking God to bless him upon his long journey to a strange land in the Pacific Ocean.

September 24th, President Jesse N. Smith and C. H. Ballard came down and we had a meeting of the candidates on the Republican ticket to arrange for the coming election or campaign.

The next day I went up to Woodruff with Brother Smith, we started early and got there at 9 a.m. Meeting was held at which Brother Smith was the main speaker after which he went on to Snowflake, and I returned to Holbrook the next morning going down with Clark Owens.

For the last ten days I had been in rather poor health. The latter part of the summer and early fall seldom passes without my having an attack of the Cholera Morbus or a fever of some kind. The weather was fine and everything seemed to be prospering in our settlements.

I seemed to have a rather hard time to keep up with the calls that were made upon me. I felt considerable worried about my family being scattered so much. Eliza was still in Utah, Adelaide at Snowflake was sick much of the time, and Julia at Woodruff. They however were not extravagant which was much in my favor and I appreciated it very much. I had no income to speak of but my labor and \$75 a month seemed to go very quick when I had to buy everything. Fitting Horace out for his mission had taken everything that I could raise.

September 26th, my wife Julia gave birth to a daughter at 20 minutes to 12 p.m. Joseph C. notified me of the incident the next morning. October 2nd, I went up to Woodruff and found Julia and her baby doing very well.

Next morning I got up at 3 a.m. and went back with the mail.

October 8th I went down to Winslow on the early morning train, Messrs. Anderson and Hill were along, the latter and I were on the electioneering trip, we were on the Republican ticket, Hill for Probate Judge and I for Recorder.

We spent the day in Winslow greeting old friends and making new ones. We took dinner at the Harvey House and supper with F. W. Nelson. I took a freight train and got back to Holbrook about 2 a.m. the next morning. I was tired and a little disgusted with the idea of a candidate running around trying to get votes, the principal always looked as if something was wrong with it, but this was the rule and if a person ran for office, he was expected to make a campaign around through the country. The candidates however arranged to make this all together as much as possible and hold meetings at the different places.

1898-1899
Chapter 100
Some Political Items

October 9th, we were having very fine weather but rather cold of nights. This being Sunday a person was supposed to rest, but under our conditions we frequently worked in the store much of the day, the same as any other day. I very much disliked this Sunday work but other stores were open on Sunday and Brother Hulet thought that we would have to keep our store open so as to accommodate our customers or they would leave and go to other places. Most of the section up and down the road for some distance came into town Sunday to do their trading.

October 13th, Governor N. O. Murphy and a few others came in from the west. They all stopped off except the Governor who went on to Gallup, but he returned the next morning with Colonel Brodie whom they had come out to meet. They spent the day in Holbrook. Jesse N. Smith came in from Snowflake and a political meeting was held at 2:30 p.m. at which Colonel Brodie, Governor Murphy and Judge Wright spoke on the Republican ticket and platform. Colonel Brodie was running for delegate to Congress on the Republican Ticket. He is a plain unassuming man, he was not what might be termed an orator, but a man of practical sense. At one time however in his early army life in Arizona he was a heavy drinker. It was arranged for the party to go to Winslow and Brother Jesse N. Smith and I arranged to go with them. An engine and caboose were obtained and we got in the car when at the last moment, orders came from the railroad manager countermanding the order so we were disappointed, and of course those that went had to wait for the regular train.

October 16th, I went up to Woodruff with Will Frost and spent the day with the family, returning on the mail in the night and reaching Holbrook at about day break the next morning after a very cold ride.

October 25th, the labors in the store continued the same as ever and to one who works in a store of this kind where we were in at all hours it might be said, can fully realize that there is but little to record in a journal, as the time and thoughts are turned mainly to the customers and the business of the institution.

Jesse N. Smith, John W. Freeman and John A. Freeman came down today to attend our regular board meeting of the store. These meetings were held quarterly and all questions pertaining to the business of the store were talked over, and a policy for conducting the business was marked out.

Judge Kibby and Attorney General Frazier of Phoenix and W. S. Clark of Flagstaff came in today and went on up to Woodruff, they were around speaking in the interest of the Republican ticket, they expected to visit and speak in all the principal places in this and Apache County.

October 31st, I went up to Snowflake on the Government Ambulance that was going up. I was starting out with others on our political campaign. These rounds of the candidates were made by both parties and had become a custom so that if a person did not go it was about equivalent to withdrawing from the ticket, they were also a little expensive as we were supposed to give dances, and be liberal at each place where we stopped. At the meeting held at Snowflake, Judge Kibby Attorney General Frazier and Attorney E. S. Clark were the main speakers and talked on the Republican side of the question and mainly for Colonel A. C. Brodie. Frank J. Watteron, F. W. Nelson, and I each spoke a few minutes on behalf of the local ticket.

November 1st, we started to Pinetop, our party consisted of Jesse N. Smith, (for the Council) Charles H. Ballard (for Supervisor), Joseph Fish (for Recorder), Allen Hill (for Probate Judge), Frank J. Watteron (for Sheriff), Fed W. Nelson (for Prosecuting Attorney), and James Scott (for Treasurer). Meeting was held at Pinetop at which each one of the party made his little speech in the usual way of praise for the party and for each member on the ticket.

November 2nd, Smith, Ballard, Hill, and I drove over to Mr. Cooley's where we took dinner and had a political chat with the old gentleman. We then returned to Showlow where we met the others of the party and meeting was held in the evening where most of the candidates spoke for a short time. Mr. Watteron furnished some music and generally favored the company with a song or two.

November 3rd, we drove to Juniper where we took dinner and then went on to Pinedale where we held our political meeting and made our little talk all except Mr. Hill who is very different about speaking, but a very fine and intelligent man. The usual music and songs were rendered by Mr. Watteron.

November 4th, we drove to Shumway where we took dinner, and then drove on to Taylor where we had our political meeting and spoke our little pieces, after which some of us went on to Snowflake. Dances were given at about all, if not all the places where we held meetings.

November 5th, the party went on to Woodruff except Brother Smith, he remained at Snowflake. Brother Ballard and I remained at Woodruff and held meeting, the rest of the party going on to Holbrook. I took the mail at 3 a.m. the next morning and we got into Holbrook at about sun rise.

November 6th, this was Sunday. I had been away a week and this was the longest time that I had been away since I came back from the Gila so I worked all day hard trying to catch up and straighten things out.

November 7th, a few of us arranged to go down to Winslow to hold meeting there, but we were informed that it was to possible to get the hall so our trip was abandoned.

November 8th, was election day, and I went down to Winslow in the morning. The voting was going on quite lively and it appeared to be solid for Winslow men, especially where there was a Mormon on the opposite side, they voted regardless of party for Winslow and against the Mormons. I returned to Holbrook in the evening and during the forepart of the night several returns of the voting came in, all south of here gave me a very large majority.

November 9th, most of the returns of the election came in and outside of Winslow I had a majority of 185 votes. In Winslow my opponent, A. F. McAllister, got a majority of 205, this settled the case against me. He got nearly all the votes in Winslow, one reason for this was a sympathy vote, he had lost one hand and he was also a resident of the place and the people wished to do something for him, and another cause was the anti-Mormon feeling. A Mormon had no business to run against a non Mormon in that town at that time. The anti-Mormon element amounted to but very little in the other portions of the county. Brother Smith was also defeated.

November 11th, Apostle Wilford Woodruff came in this morning and went on up to Snowflake to attend the quarterly conference which was to be held on Sunday and Monday.

November 14th, President Smith sent me word a day or two ago to come up to Snowflake before the close of the conference if possible, but as Brother Hulet was away I could not leave until he came back, he however came back this evening so I went up to Snowflake this evening on the stage. I found my wife Adelaide improving some which I was pleased to see.

November 15th, The Young Men's Association held their conference this forenoon and after meeting, N. A. Brimhall and I were requested to go over to Brother Smith's residence, I was then set apart by President Smith as a member of the High Council and Brother Brimhall was set apart as a missionary to labor in the interest of the Young Men's Mutual Improvement Association in the Maricopa Stake. After dinner I returned to Holbrook with Brother J. H. Richards.

A few days ago I received a letter from my son Horace, he was at Honolulu on his way as a missionary to the Samoan Islands. The steamers call there on their voyage both going and coming, he expected to sail again that evening. He was a little sea sick during the fore part of the voyage. On the 16th I received another letter from him. He had arrived at the Samoan Islands, and stated that he liked the country and the surroundings very much and was making a start in studying the language, his companion was Brother Spillsbury from Toquerville.

November 23rd, I went up to Woodruff this p.m. and attended meeting there in the evening. Apostle Wilford Woodruff, Elder S. B. Young and some others were present. They had just returned from St. Johns Stake and stopped here to hold meeting. The speakers were S. B. Young, Collins R. Hakes, David K. Udall, Apostle Wilford Woodruff and Jesse N. Smith. The next morning I returned to Holbrook with Jesse N. Smith, where I again took up and continued the labors in the store.

It seems in looking over my journal that it contains but little outside of my occasional trips out to Woodruff and Snowflake, but a bookkeeper's life is so tame that there is not much to record as he spends all his time pouring over accounts.

December 1st, I went up to Snowflake on the stage, Hannah Dalton was along, she was just in from Colorado and going up to visit her father and mother, Brother Jesse N. Smith and Mrs. Emma W. Smith. We had a pleasant visit on the way up.

December 2nd, there was a gathering of the Smith family and relatives as it was President Smith's birthday. The meeting commenced at 1 p.m. and the most of the time was given to the children who spoke pieces and sang songs, most of them had been composed for the occasion. Supper for the company was served in a nice as well as grand way. The meeting again was resumed at 7 p.m. when again songs and speeches were in order. I had to leave at 10 p.m. before it was out, as I took the stage for Holbrook which leaves at that hour.

After a cold ride facing a north wind, we arrived at Holbrook at about 4 a.m. in the morning. I was chilled through and only got fairly thawed out in time to go to work, when I was soon in the old groove working at the books. And I might say that I was always on the alert to gather up what historical data I could so that I was never idle while in the store. I occasionally sent off for some history that I thought would be valuable in my work and then I would have plenty to do during my odd moments in looking that over and jotting down notes.

December 5th, the District Court convened at Holbrook with Judge R. E. Sloan on the bench. There were quite a number of criminal cases on the calendar, most of them were for branding stock that did not belong to them.

December 8th, it was a cold and disagreeable day with some snow and wind.

December 10th, was another cold and windy day with snow and wind. About a foot of snow had fallen and it was badly drifted.

In the evening I went down to St. Joseph with Brother Joseph C. Hansen, he comes up very often to Holbrook and as he travels with his farm team and wagon, he does not travel very fast for he generally brings something to sell. We had a very cold ride facing a cold wind from the north west. And the next day I attended meeting at St. Joseph as a home missionary. Brother Palmer was to have been my companion but he did not appear. Probably it was too cold for him and probably the storm was too much for him to face. So I occupied the most of the time and in the evening I gave a historical lecture speaking about an hour and a half.

December 12, I stayed all night while in St. Joseph with Brother Hansen and this morning I started back to Holbrook. I expected to get a train to go back on so went down to the place where they generally take the cars which was nearly two miles. I got there just ahead of a train but they would not stop, so I walked around there for awhile in hopes of another coming along. But soon I concluded that I would keep warmer traveling so I walked on to Penzance, about six miles, where I caught a freight train and went to Holbrook. The storm had been quite severe, as I came along up to Penzance I noticed several birds frozen to death. It had now cleared away but remained quite cold. David Roper, who kept a record of the weather said that on the night of the 13th that the thermometer went down to 21o below zero.

December 17th, I received a letter from my son Horace. He stated that he was getting along learning the language fairly well.

I went up to Woodruff with my son Joseph C. and I attended meeting there the next day and spoke a short time and returned to Holbrook with James Y. Lee.

December 19th, the weather continues to be cold and stormy. It has been the coldest winter thus far that I had seen in Arizona.

December 25th, it still continues to keep cold, freezing quite hard every night and thawing but very little during the day. Last year the average temperature was 30 above, while this month it has been 18o.

We are preparing to take stock and we go to more work in this than I often thought was necessary. We appear to have taken the hardest way measuring every piece of cloth where the bolt had been cut, and the same with the ribbon, etc., going through the hardware and groceries the same way. We have been trying to cut out the Sunday trade some, but as we stay in the store all the time people, knowing that we are in, come to the back door or window for some little thing and thus something is going on much of the time.

January 1st, 1898, Sunday, we have been taking stock and have been very busy, so on these occasions we always work on Sundays the same as other days. In fact as I have often stated, Sundays here with us are about the same as any other day as there are no meetings or anything of this kind in this place. I have often thought that this place was sadly neglected in this respect.

The weather keeps quite cold, the thermometer goes down to about 7o above zero each night.

January 4th, I went up to Woodruff this evening on the mail. Brother Hatch was having a birthday gathering but it was so late by the time I got thawed out and got my supper that I did not go. I went back to Holbrook at 3 a.m. on the mail, my visit of a few hours was rather short for such a cold ride.

January 8th, it snowed some the most of the day. This is the month when trade is dull and our labors in the store are not so pressing, but I always try to keep busy, when I have a few moments to spare I spend them in working on my history instead of idle gossip at the saloon, a place where I never go unless on some business.

January 16th, I went up to Woodruff with John C. Reidhead, Sister Emma Smith and her daughter Hannah came down from Snowflake and made me a pleasant visit the next day, they went on to Holbrook where Hannah took the train for home in Colorado.

Julia's sister, Hannah Brearton, and her husband had come in from Provo to make the folks a visit and they took supper with us. They remained some time at Woodruff and vicinity visiting with the folks. The next morning I returned to Holbrook.

January 19th, It still continues to be winter weather and yesterday and today there was a cold frost settled all over every bush and tree giving the whole country a beautiful appearance, looking like a northern region. This is very uncommon for this country.

January 28th, I went up to Woodruff and in the evening I gave a historical lecture on the early history of Arizona. I returned to Holbrook on Monday with Peter J. Christopherson.

February 1st, there has been continuous winter from December 8th up to the present time but at about this date the weather changed with a south wind which took off nearly all the snow.

February 11th, I went up to Snowflake. I found my wife Adelaide as usual, quite poorly. She sits up but very little, but she always seems quite hopeful and has a great deal of faith. I have felt for her very much.

February 12th, I attended meeting at Snowflake as a home missionary and spoke on the necessity of revelation.

President Jesse N. Smith who had been over to St. Johns and Springerville, came in during the afternoon. His son Jesse N. Jr., who had not been here for 14 years, came in with him. The next day I started on my return to Holbrook.

I got a chance to go down to Woodruff with E. E. Bradshaw. He traveled extremely slow and we were nearly all day getting to Woodruff where I stayed all night and went on the next morning at 3 a.m. on the mail. I had a cold ride as usual but after getting warm, I went to work at the old job as usual.

February 17th, Brothers Karl G. Maeser and L. John Nuttall came in this morning on their way to St. Johns to attend the conference there. There was no team here or arrangements for them to go on. Brother Hulet would not let the store team go, so I hired one at the livery stable for \$3.00 to take them to Woodruff. Brother Richards proffered to pay a part of the expense. I frequently had to look after getting a team for the visiting brethren when they came in

and no arrangements had been made for them to go on, and of course I had to pay the expense when a team was hired.

February 23rd, I went up to Snowflake on the mail. I found my wife Adelaide in poor health as usual, she was not able to get around very much.

The next day the High council had a meeting which I attended. This was the first meeting that they had since I was put in after I had returned from the Gila, my number was 5. There was no business to speak of before the Council. President Smith spoke on the subject of tithing, stating that there were twelve missionaries wanted from this state. Brother L. J. Nuttall spoke a short time.

Sunday School conference was held on the 25th, the main speakers were Brothers Maeser and Nuttall. In the evening there was a meeting of the Religion Class.

I took supper with my daughter Della. Jesse N. Smith Jr. was present and about 10 a.m. I took the mail for Holbrook and arrived there just a little before sun rise.

February 28th, Elders Maeser and Nuttall came down this p.m, Bishop John Hunt bringing them down. Elders George Lewis and LeBaron, missionaries from Maricopa Stake, also came down and held meeting in the evening at the house of my son's John L.

March 1st, Jesse N. Smith Jr. came down from Snowflake and took the afternoon train for El Paso on his return to his home in Mexico.

March 3rd, this was one of those very windy and disagreeable days that are so common in this country at this season of the year. Trade was a little quiet.

March 4th, I went up to Woodruff with my son Joseph C. and the next day I attended fast meeting there after which I returned to Holbrook on foot which I sometimes did. This was not so easy, especially after a rain and the roads were muddy.

March 9th, my son John and family went up to Pinedale, it was a very bad windy day, returned on the 13th. Thus far the spring had been a little discouraging regarding the prospects for water.

March 18th, I had an appointment as home missionary at Snowflake for the 19th, but as the stage was loaded I could not go that way and no other chance offering so I gave that up and went up to Woodruff with Brother David K. Udall who had just returned from attending the legislature at Phoenix, and the next day I attended meeting there. John McLaws was a home missionary and spoke, I also helped him out as he did not have a partner.

1899
Chapter 101
At the Old Stand and a Trip to Prescott as a Juror

April 2nd, I had intended to go to Snowflake yesterday but the stage was loaded so I went up there today. I found my wife Adelaide quite poorly as usual. She does not seem to improve, but she rallies once in a while for a spell but is soon back in the old groove again.

I took dinner with President Smith and the next day I went down to Holbrook with Ellis Stratton who was going on a mission to the Southern States.

My labors in the store continued about the same and with me there was but little change.

I had become quite interested in my labor in gathering up historical items and spent my odd moments at that, but not having much spare time my progress was very slow and I was greatly hampered for books of reference. But I however made it a point to try to get some historical works bearing on Arizona once a month if possible. The process was slow but in a few years I found that I had quite a collection of books treating on the lines that I was working on, and besides I started to correspond with all the old timers that I could get in touch with and through this I gleaned many items of interest.

April 15th, I went up to Woodruff and the next day I attended meeting there and then returned to Holbrook on the mail during the night.

April 29th, I went up to Snowflake this afternoon, it was a very windy day and had been so for a week.

I am brought to a point where I realize that my notes occupy more space on my trips to Woodruff and Snowflake and the wind than is doubtless necessary but one who lived on the Little Colorado in an early day would pardon me for mentioning the wind for it was certainly a terrible thing at this period, and often after one of these wind storms, there was employment given to the people of St. Joseph to come up and with teams and scrapers scrape off the hills of sand from in front of some of the dwellings, where it had accumulated to the depth of several feet.

The next day I attended meeting at Snowflake and spoke upon the subject of tithing, and returned to Holbrook in the night with the mail, and notwithstanding the time of year, I was quite chilled when I arrived. I soon got thawed out and was again at work at the old post, and was always willing to go to bed as soon as I could the night after one of these cold rides, but that was never before 9 p.m. and often later than that, when the store closed.

May 1st, a regular blizzard of wind, sand, and dust, and during the night it snowed a little which it often did after one of these wind storms.

May 6th, I went up to Woodruff with Brother J. P. Wimmer. I found my children were all sick with the mumps and whooping cough and we had a sleepless night caring for them. I felt pained to see how Julia had toiled and worked for the children and caring for them so much without any of my aid to ease the burden and cares of life, but I did the best I could and went out to visit my family as often as it was possible under my circumstances. Adelaide was also sick but she had no little ones to care for and her dutiful boys were very attentive to her and helped much about the house.

The next day after my arrival at Woodruff was fast day and I attended the meeting. After meeting, Sister Adeline Savage, Maria Gardner and a son of Sister Lucy Eagar were baptized for their health, the latter being baptized several times. He was very low having been sick for a long time. The water was very cold and they were baptized in the river. He was in the water so long that it chilled the poor invalid through and he died a day or two after. There was considerable talk about this and Dr. Reed of Holbrook spoke in strong terms against such a thing and said it was the cause of the boy's death which was probably the case in his weak condition.

I returned to Holbrook during the night. But the next Saturday evening I again went up to Woodruff and found the children still afflicted with the whooping cough. The baby seemed to take it very hard. I returned to Holbrook Sunday night.

Spring was quite backward and about all the fruit had been killed by the frost which had a gloomy aspect to the future.

May 25th, my son Joseph C. came down and reported that our baby Julia was very bad and had grown worse, so I immediately went up to Woodruff where I found our little one in a very bad condition, a complication of the mumps and whooping cough had told on her and she was failing very fast. We were caring for and doing all in our power and she seemed to improve a very little on the 27th in the forenoon, but in the afternoon she seemed to grow worse and was taken with convulsions. We soon saw that all our hopes were in vain and growing still weaker she died at 3 p.m. on the 29th.

The next morning, May 30th, we had the funeral services and at 11 a.m. Joseph C. and I started to Snowflake. The mother did not go as her health and the care of the other children would not permit of her leaving. We had thought best to lay her beside her brother and sister that were buried at Snowflake. We laid her away in the afternoon and then returned to Woodruff where we arrived at about 11 p.m. Here I rested two or three hours conversing and comforting Julia on our loss as best I could and then took the stage for Holbrook.

The Buckboard had a passenger on and I had to sit on a box at the back and where I had a most miserable place and was completely tired out after being up so much without sleep and the worry had told on me, but my presence was badly needed at the store as it was the last of the month. I was extremely busy for sometime working to catch up on odd threads of the business.

June 2nd, it rained a little last night and it was reported that on the mountain at Cooley's there were four inches of snow.

June 4th, I had been subpoenaed as a U. S. Grand Juror so I took the morning train for Prescott where the court was held. Arriving at Ash Fork we changed cars for Prescott where we arrived at 4 p.m.

I secured a room at the Brookmyre Hotel and then went down near the depot to see one of Prescotts early settlers and a most prominent man of his day, John G. Campbell. He had been a delegate to congress and was wealthy in early times but had gradually gone down the financial ladder. I found him keeping a little saloon near the depot, and spent a short time with him in gathering some historical items. He gave me many, especially about getting Governor Fremont removed from office. He was a Democrat and Fremont being a Republican there was naturally a little friction between them, but his main fight was against the judge who was Fremont's silent partner. Fremont had been buying up mining claims that were in litigation and these cases came before the judge that was his partner and the consequence was that Fremont generally won his case.

After supper I went up to see Judge Brooks, an old time resident of Prescott and a most conscientious man and one who always stood high in the opinion of all the Prescott people. I gathered several items from the judge and was treated very kindly. He promised to aid me in the work all he could.

I met judge J. F. Wilson who was our Delegate in Congress and had a short talk with him about getting the appointment as Cadet at West Point for my son Joseph S.

June 12th, I attended Court, the U. S. Grand Jury were empaneled, I being one of the number. There was but little business done in the forenoon but we managed to get to work in the afternoon.

After the jury adjourned for the day I spent the rest of the time in gathering up some historical items.

June 13th, I attended the Grand Jury and when that was not in session I spent every moment of the time visiting old settlers for historical incidents. I called on Judge John Howard who came to Arizona with Governor Goodwin's party. He was quite feeble and I did not stay very long or tax him very much, but he gave me some information of value.

The next day I attended the session of the grand Jury, we were getting along with the work fairly well but when they adjourned I was at my historical work. I called at the different newspaper's offices where I gleaned a few items of interest.

June 15th, Thursday, the Grand Jury finished their work and were discharged at noon. We had found 12 indictments.

In the afternoon I went over to see Samuel C. Miller who lived about a mile from town. He was one of the Walker party that first came to Prescott. He gave me many items of interest of the first settling of the place and promised me more when he had time to write them out, the same as others had done.

June 18th, I started for Holbrook at 4 a.m. and arrived at Holbrook at 2 p.m. I had gathered many historical items from the first settlers of Arizona considering the time I had; but I put in every minute that I had to spare while there. I afterwards appreciated this opportunity that I had for very soon after, many of these pioneers passed away and such another opportunity never came to any one.

June 24th, we have had some very warm weather and a little rain in some places which had raised the water in the river some. This is a little unusual to have rains this early in the summer.

In the afternoon I went up to Snowflake where I found my wife Adelaide in very much the same condition that she had been for several years, and I spent the most of the day with her. It was not often that I had a chance to be with her very much. But I greatly empathized with her in her sad condition and earnestly prayed for her restoration to health. She at this time seemed to be improving slightly, but it was very slow. She still had great faith and did not seem to be discouraged.

I attended the meeting. Homer F. Bushman, a Home missionary, occupied the most of the time and I spoke for a few minutes.

June 26th, the stage was loaded last night so that I could not go down, so I lay over and went down today with Homer F. Bushman. He was loaded and we traveled very slow, being 12 hours on the road. I walked for a large portion of the way.

June 27th, my son John L. took his family up to Pinedale today. I had been boarding with him for sometime and I now had to change and look out for another place so I went to the Chinese Restaurant.

The day marked the 59 mile post in my life's journey and it seemed a lonesome one as none of my family were present. One might ask why I did not have some of them with me. I believe I have often stated that the polygamy prosecutions were always threatening, and I feared to flaunt my case before the outside community, for some unfriendly person might take advantage of it and cause me trouble.

July 2nd, the first of this month was the half yearly settlement of the accounts of the store, and to gather up all the accounts has kept me quite busy for the past week. For the keeping of everything in shape required a vast deal more time and bother in a store of this kind with over two hundred share holders than it does where the firm consisted of one or two individuals. The account of each share holder had to be figured out and his share of the profits placed to his credit, etc.

I made a flying trip as usual up to Woodruff in the evening, but back early the next morning. I probably went up there more than I would have done but Julia did all my washing, etc., and I went up there so as to take a bath and get a change of underclothes.

There had been a few slight showers in some spots around the country, but no general rains as yet.

July 4th, the people of Holbrook got up a celebration for the nation's birthday. A few came in from the near by places, but the celebration was not much of a success as no one took much interest in it.

July 8th, President Jesse N. Smith came in from Salt Lake City and went on up to Woodruff. I went along with him. The next day ward conference was held at that place. The speakers were President Jesse N. Smith, Bishop Levi M. Savage, President Joseph H. Richards, President David K. Udall, Bishop George H. Crosby, and Jacob Hamblin. They had just returned from Salt Lake City and their talk was upon the subject of tithing on which instructions had been given at the meeting in Salt Lake City. The pitch of the whole matter was the people must pay their tithing. I returned to Holbrook in the evening, going down with Brother Richards.

July 16th, having a missionary appointment at Woodruff today, I went to the livery stable and hired a team and taking my son John L. and Brother John Murray, we went up there and all spoke during the meeting and returned in the evening.

July 22nd, I went up to Snowflake on the mail and I found my wife Adelaide in rather poor health as usual. The next day I went up to Taylor with President Jesse N. Smith. My wife Adelaide was able to go along with us. At the meeting President Smith was the main speaker. His remarks were mainly upon the instructions that they had received in the Temple on the 2nd, which was mainly on tithing. I returned to Holbrook on the mail and arrived there the next morning at about sun rise.

August 5th, I went up to Woodruff on the mail and the next day attended the fast meeting there. I returned with Brigham Duffin Jr., and during the trip I managed to take a severe cold which nearly laid me up, a peculiar thing about these colds, I seemed to take them more and worse in the summer than in the winter.

August 27th, Sunday, I hired a horse and went up to Woodruff to see about my building. I attended meeting and spoke during the services.

I had been preparing to build and had engaged George A. Gardner of Snowflake to lay up my house. I had got William A. Frost to burn the brick and also made them. He had made a wretched poor job of it, the brick were really not fit to be used in the building. But as I had started and got the brick layer and no other way to do but go ahead or wait another year, I concluded to have the building put up. After consulting with Gardner and telling him what to do I went back to Holbrook in the evening.

September 1st, our stake quarterly conference was held at Woodruff this fall so I went up there this morning with Brother John McLaws. The High Council met at 2 p.m. which I attended.

The case of George M. Adams was brought up. He had made indecent proposals to different women as stated by the witnesses. The case had been handled by Bishop Hansen and after some talk on the subject, the Council by vote cut him off the church.

The subject of our dances was then brought up and several spoke on the subject. The Council voted to sustain our present regulations, that was not to allow outsiders or gentiles to mingle in our dances with the provision that the Bishops have a discretionary power to invite good and respectable persons when he saw fit to do so.

The subject of raising means to assist in keeping up the expenses of the telegraph office and to pay the janitor for taking care of the Stake House was talked over and a committee was appointed to arrange for the payments of these parties. Our meeting lasted about six hours.

September 2nd, the Young Mens Associations session of the conference was held. President Smith took dinner with me today, and several others of old time acquaintances were present on different occasions during the meetings.

September 3rd, meeting was held under a beautiful bowery that had been erected by the citizens for the occasion.

My son John L. came up today and after the meetings of the conference we returned to Holbrook.

Brother Gardner had started on my house and had the foundation nearly completed.

September 4th, Monday, I again took the usual routine of labors in the store and they were prosecuted with vigor, as things soon get behind when a person is away.

A few days ago I received a letter from my son Horace N., he writes once a month. He was well and progressing with his work fairly well.

September 16th, we have had considerable wind during the last few days, I went up to Snowflake today and the next day on to Taylor where I attended meeting as a home missionary, and spoke on the duties of those who were permitted to stay at home and did not go on missions. I returned to Holbrook in the night on the mail.

Things at the different places seemed to be at a standstill, there was but little improvement going on in any of the settlements and the different settlements seem to have got their growth unless there is a way to obtain more water for irrigation purposes. Holbrook seems to be going down. There is nothing apparently to keep it up, a little freighting from here to Apache is about all with the exception of being something of a distributing point for this section of the county. But few realized that it would be the town that it got to be at a period later on.

October 7th, I went up to Woodruff with Brother Duffin and looked after the building of my house. The next day I attended meeting there. Brother A. A. DeWitt was the main speaker and he dwelt at some length on the subject of improving our homes and surroundings.

I returned to Holbrook in the evening with Brother Duffin.

October 28th, I went up to Woodruff with Brother S. U. Porter, I looked around to get more material for my house. It was now just up to the square.

Brothers Duffin and Porter were home missionaries and they were the speakers at the meeting. The meeting was extra noisy, there being so many small children running about the house. I thought that there was too much noise and confusion and this was not a credit to our meeting goes.

I returned to Holbrook with the mail.

November 11th, I went up to Snowflake on the mail and found my wife Adelaide as usual in poor health. She does not improve very much but at times she seems considerably better.

The next day I attended meeting as a home missionary, but only spoke a few minutes giving the time to Samuel F. Smith who had just returned from a mission to the Southern States.

In the evening I started back to Holbrook on the mail. These rides were very disagreeable going up one night and back the next night; it was generally dusty and sometimes very cold; it was generally about 4 a.m. when we got into Holbrook. These rides in the night saved me some time as I went up Saturday night and back the next night so I was at my post Monday morning. It was a change for me and seemed about the only chance of visiting the folks, and it seemed harder to get away from the store than it had previously been. But no difference what a man's labor is, he will find some very disagreeable features about it, if he cares to look on that side of life; but I have tried to look on the bright side and not complain, and I only mention the hardships and trials that beset my path to portray what life was at this time and under the conditions that existed then. Notwithstanding the fact that we had such cold snaps as I have recorded, I never had a stove in the office during all my labors in the A. C. M. I.

1900
Chapter 102
Everyday Life of a Bookkeeper and Birth of a Daughter

January 1st, 1900, Monday, we have been quite busy in the store for more than a week taking stock and fixing up for the settlement of accounts. We that work in the store pay no attention to the holidays, that is we do not have any nor do we pay any attention to Sundays unless we go off. Most of the male population of the place spend their Sundays at the saloons.

Christmas, my son Joseph C. came down and took dinner with my son John L.

January 2, President Jesse N. Smith came down from Snowflake to attend a meeting of the Finance Committee for Statehood, their business being to raise means to defray the expenses in the labors to obtain Statehood. He returned the next day.

We had a very remarkable fine fall and as yet no winter to speak of, clear pleasant days but cold of nights.

January 6th, I went up to Woodruff with the mail, and found Julia in our new house. Of course it was not finished and but little done on the inside. The floor and windows were in one room, and some of the doors from the old house were used for the present to help out. It was however better than the old house. I had hired Charles Testaman to do some on the house, I gave him \$100 to put the roof on, etc., but he did very little else.

The next day my son John L. came up and we all took dinner with my daughter Jessie May Lee, Joseph C. and family included.

I attended the fast meeting at 2 p.m. after which I returned to Holbrook with John L.

January 14th, my son John L. and family and I went down to St. Joseph, I having a missionary appointment there. We attended meeting and I spoke upon the labors and duties of those who were at home and did not go upon missions. After meeting we returned to Holbrook.

The people of St. Joseph are an industrious and prosperous people. They have lost many of their dams from floods in the Colorado and they are now at work putting in another some distance below their other dam. This is to catch the water that springs up between the two which is considerable and will add much to their water supply.

Our labors in the store are a never ending job, the worry and tussel with accounts; the difficulty dealing with a class who were never satisfied is only one of the many annoying things that a merchant has to meet. A man to be successful in the mercantile business must always be pleasant. He should never be a radical politician, for some of his best customers may belong to the other party. He should also be a good judge of human character, so as to easily know whom he could trust, and how to refuse without giving offense. It is often the case that a man is perfectly honest but if he is allowed to got trust beyond his ability to pay it is an injury to him as well as the merchant.

January 29th, I went up to Woodruff in the evening with my son Joseph C. and we found it very uncomfortable riding in the night at this time of year. The next day I attended meeting, Brother S. W. Porter spoke, he was a home missionary. I occupied a few minutes, and after meeting we returned. Porter was horse back and he proffered to let me ride a part of the time, so we took turns in riding and walking.

January 28th, Apostle Heber J. Grant and his wife, and Apostle Rudgar Clawson and Elder Golden Kimball came in this morning and I arranged for them to go on up to St. Johns to attend the conference there. They were one day late owing to a wash out on the railroad. While they were waiting in the store for the carriage to come around, mention was made of Woodruff and Concho in the conversation, when Apostle Clawson said he wondered how the saints ever found all these nooks and corners. When Apostle Grant replied, "When you see them you will wonder how they live there."

February 3rd, Saturday, Smith D. Rogers came in this morning. He had been on a mission to the Southern States and was just returning home.

The weather continues to be very fine, no storms, and it is almost like spring.

Trade in the store is not so good as it generally is at other seasons of the year. We have more leisure moments during February perhaps, than any other month of the year. January and February are our dull months, if we may call them dull, but even then we have enough to do as a rule.

February 7th, Apostle Grant and party came in from Woodruff and all went on to St. Joseph to hold meeting there, except Brother Maeser and Sister Grant who remained until the return of the others. The party returned in the evening and all took the train for Utah the next morning.

February 8th, it snowed about all day. This was the first storm of the season and it was greatly needed as it had been very dry on the ranges.

February 17th, I went up to Snowflake and the next day went on to Shumway where I attended meeting as a home missionary. Brother Smith D. Rogers accompanied me. He went along in the interest of the Sunday School.

After the meetings I returned to Snowflake and gave a lecture at Snowflake on the history of Arizona.

February 19th, I remained at home and fixed up some bee hives for Adelaide who was somewhat better. I returned to Holbrook in the night having another cold ride that nearly used me up for a day or two.

March 1st, I went up to Snowflake on the mail and the next day I attended a meeting of the High Council. There was but little business done, the main item was arranging for a record day at the Ward Conferences for inspection by the Stake Authorities of all records of the wards.

March 5th, Tuesday, Apostle Brigham Young came in today from Mesa and went down to St. Joseph with Brother J. H. Richards. The next day he returned and went on up to Woodruff. I went along with Brother Richards and attended meeting there in the evening. Apostle Young spoke mainly on the subject of tithing.

The next morning I returned to Holbrook with Brother J. C. Hansen. We were having very fine weather and it looked as if spring were upon us.

March 12th, Apostle Brigham Young came in from Snowflake; Bishop John Hunt brought him down. He stopped all night with my son John L. and the next day he took the 2 p.m. train for Utah going east.

March 27th, Andrew A. Gibbons and Frank Lesueur, while following some desperados some twenty miles northeast of St. Johns, were ambushed by the outlaws and killed. Apparently it was a most brutal murder. Appearances showed when they were found, that they had both been shot after they were killed. Their hats, boots, etc., had been taken. The sheriff was blamed considerable for letting them go on as they did, they were expecting the sheriff to join them, but from some cause he did not go.

April 7th, I went up to Snowflake today; found my wife Adelaide a little better than she had been for some time.

The next day I remained at home the most of the day. I attended meeting, however, and returned to Holbrook during the night.

The next few days it turned very cold and froze hard enough to kill the most of the fruit that was out in blossom.

April 28th, Saturday, I went up to Woodruff. It rained a little last night and during the day, this made things look a little more favorable for the farmers and stock men, as there had been more rain this spring than common. The last cold spell had killed almost all the peaches but there was a prospect of having some apples. I returned to Holbrook the next day often walking down after meeting.

The sheep men were bringing in their wool, and we always helped to load it on the cars and assisted in weighing all consignments that we handled. Besides there was now being shipped a considerable amount of grain to Fort Apache.

I generally made out the bills and lading and we were busy as we could be. We were always busy at this time when we were handling wool and shipping to Fort Apache.

May 12th, Saturday, I went up to Snowflake on the mail and the next day I got a horse from Smith D. Rogers and went on to Pinedale horseback where I attended meeting as a home missionary. There were but very few people in the place and the attendance at the meeting was very light.

After meeting I returned to Snowflake, and as I had not ridden horseback for so long I found myself quite tired.

My wife seemed very much the same as to health. She gets around a little to look after the things, the boys help her some.

May 14th, Monday, I went down to Woodruff with John Hunt and I remained there until 3 a.m. the next morning when I went on to Holbrook and arrived there at about 7 a.m. I walked down, and as it has rained some, I found the traveling very difficult on account of the mud. We were having a little more rain than common thus far and less wind, and vegetation was growing fine which looked a little encouraging.

May 19th, Saturday, My wife Julia gave birth to a daughter at 4:15 p.m. today.

May 26th, I went up to Woodruff with Joseph Lillywhite and found Julia and her babe getting along quite well.

The next day I attended meeting and spoke a short time but I was not feeling very well. I had a fever and was about laid up.

In the evening we had our little daughter blessed by John Reidhead and gave her the name of Adelaide, naming her for my wife Adelaide, but we called her Addie the same as I used to call my wife.

May 28th, I returned to Holbrook with Clarence E. Owens. The weather was getting rather warm and it appeared that summer had started.

May 29th, Brother Benjamin Cluff Jr. of the B. Y. Academy of Provo and his party passed through here today going on to Woodruff. They were on the way south and expected to go into south America, for the purpose of looking up and excavating old ruins, relics, etc.

Most of my notes have been on matters outside of the store, but inside the business went on in the same old way. Brother Hulet, the manager, goes up to Snowflake where his family resides every two weeks. He has the store team and a buggy so he goes when he wishes. But while he is at the store he stays pretty close but is never very communicative about the business to the clerks, so they know as little about the business as anyone except prices on goods.

Of course they have to keep posted on that and that was a very difficult matter as we had five different prices. There was our cost price to our store at Snowflake, our wholesale price to the different stores of the larger kind and then a wholesale price to some of the larger customers, then a special price a little below the above prices to smaller stores kept by women, etc. This varied so that there were five different prices and all the bills vary so Brother Hulet would look over and set a price on them, then I made out the bills from the sales book, and sometimes they would have to lie over for a day or two until Brother Hulet put the prices on. If he should happen to be away when the bill was got out, and this was often, it was very inconvenient to the parties who bought the goods as well as to me on making out the invoices.

June 8th, Friday, General Merriman came in this morning and went on over to Fort Apache. He is the commander of this department.

My son Joseph S. was down and took the examination for a teacher which was held on Monday and Tuesday, he got 80% which entitled him to a certificate to teach in the county.

1900
Chapter 103
A Visit from a Daughter and Politics, Etc.

June 14th, my oldest daughter, Josephine Barraclough came out from Utah to make me a visit and arrived in Holbrook this morning. It had been nearly 16 years since I had seen her, and of course we were pleased to again meet after so long a separation. She spent a day or two with me and John L. in Holbrook.

June 17th, John L., Josie, and I went up to Woodruff where we spent the day. I returned the next day, leaving Josie to visit with the folks there.

The weather has been very dry and warm, and the water was getting low, more so than it had been for years. The thermometer goes up to 96 which is very warm for this place.

June 26th, the children had planned to have a family gathering on my birthday so I arranged to go up to Snowflake for the occasion. So I went up to Woodruff this morning. John L. took a team, and at Woodruff Joseph C. took a team, and on account of the heat we waited until evening when we all started for Snowflake. Josie and her children went along with us, we reached Snowflake about 10 p.m.

June 27th, we had our gathering at my daughter Della's place, as she had the most room. There were quite a number present. My wives Adelaide and Julia were present, Aunt Eliza was still in Utah. There were eleven of my children present; Frances and Horace being absent. There were 15 grand children out of 25 present. President Jesse N. Smith and Bishop Hunt with their wives and some others were present. A splendid supper was arranged for all and the exercises were recitations, songs, short speeches, etc., making the day and evening pass off in a very agreeable manner.

The next day the children all got together and we got Brother Joseph Peterson to come and take our picture, that is of me and my children. Of course it was not a very good one as Peterson was not a professional artist, but it was a reminder of our gathering and there were more of the family together at that time than there has ever been since.

I left Josie to visit with relatives and in the afternoon I went to Woodruff and the next morning on to Holbrook with Brother L. M. Savage, where I soon was at the old place wrestling with accounts, bills, etc.

July 4th, there was a celebration of the day at Holbrook but it was not very much. The main feature of the day was a base ball game between Holbrook and Snowflake. The Holbrook team were the winners however, they had a few in their team that were from other places.

July 10th, I went up to Woodruff and found all the folks had gone to the Petrified Forest. They, however, returned in the fore noon. Josie was with them.

I returned to Holbrook on the 12th, with J. Y. Lee, Josie came down with us. The weather was very hot, dry, and dusty, and there was considerable wind which was bad for the ranges and all vegetation, and things began to look a little serious for the cattle and sheep men as well as the farmers.

July 15th, Sunday, I spent most of the day in visiting with Josie and John L. and family as we were all together.

I received a letter from my son Horace written from Salt Lake City, he had been released from his mission on the Samoan Islands on account of his health and had just reached Salt Lake City. He asked me for \$72.00 to help settle his accounts, etc. I sent him the money but was compelled to borrow a portion of it. His mission had been a little expensive and quite a tax on me. I had sent him something over \$800 and this out of my salary of \$75 a month compelled us to live rather close, besides my trying to build at Woodruff was another tax.

July 29th, Friday there was a good rain above here which filled up some of the water holes along with the washes, and this was a great help to the cattle and sheep men as they could now get water for their flocks and herds without going so far and it helped to start the grass.

My son Joseph C. and family came down from Woodruff this forenoon, my wife Julia came down a couple of days ago and we all had a pleasant evening, reciting, etc. My son Joseph S. who had come down to work in the printing office was present. We had done all that we could to make Josie's visit agreeable while she was here, and her visit was greatly appreciated. She took the train for home on the evening of the 21st.

July 23rd, I received a letter from my son Horace who was in Salt Lake City, he was trying to get work there, and he wanted me to try to get him a job or position out here where he could earn something. Shortly after I got another stating that he had secured a position for a short time at Wallace Brothers Drug Store.

July 29th, Sunday, I went up to Woodruff for the purpose of issuing some grain to the U. S. Troops who were to be there, as we had contracted to deliver it to them there.

The next day about 200 U. S. Cavalry came into Woodruff. It then appeared that they were forced to take the grain from the local agent, they paid us for the freight on the grain and I turned it over to David K. Udall for his mail line and returned to Holbrook in the afternoon.

July 31st, Tuesday, some troops from Fort Apache left here today for China. They spent the greater part of the day in loading their baggage and getting off.

There had been but little rain and the outlook was quite discouraging for the stock and sheep men, but the farmers who had sufficient water for their lands would have fairly good crops from the present appearances, but the dry land farmers in the forest will have almost an entire loss of their crops.

Our trade in the store keeps up about the same, sometimes there is a lull and then when there is freight, there will be a rush, and then when that is over we are busy picking up the odds and ends before another rush comes on.

August 11th, I went up to Snowflake on the mail. The roads were very dusty. It is stated that there is so much dust and so penetrating that there are great quantities in the mail sacks when opened in Apache and some claimed that there was dust in their letters when they were opened. The dust seemed to be about as bad as water for penetrating everything.

Sunday I attended meeting at Taylor as a home missionary. Brother Clarence E. Owens was my partner. I returned to Holbrook in the night on the mail which was a very dusty and disagreeable ride.

August 17th, there was considerable of a rain at Holbrook today and it was greatly needed for it was the first rain to reach this place this year.

August 28th, I went up to Woodruff with my son John L. and we attended meeting there, Osmer D. Flake and John Hatch were the speakers. We returned in the evening after the meeting.

Some of the people of Woodruff were becoming discouraged. The drouth had its effect and some thought that another climate would be better for their lungs as the dust here was so bad.

My son Silas L. and Brother Hulet's son, Francis, had come down to go to Provo to take a missionary course and my son also was intending to take a normal course. We were trying to give them the advantages of getting an education. They left on the 23rd.

September 2nd, Saturday, we had a nice gentle rain last night and this morning which did much good. There begins to be some talk in relation to our coming election, and plans for the coming campaign are being discussed. The Democrats got their county ticket out yesterday.

September 23rd, Sunday, I went down to St. Joseph and attended meeting there as a home missionary, and had a very agreeable visit with some of the people of the place and returned to Holbrook in the evening with Brother Joseph H. Richards. Brother Richards was County Treasurer for a term and he often went home to St. Joseph on

Saturday evening and back Sunday evening or Monday morning and I made several trips with him on these occasions when I had an appointment there.

I had sent to Apostle Heber J. Grant and purchased from him a Blickensdefer typewriter and have commenced to copy some of my historical writings with it, but as I never used a typewriter before, my progress is very slow.

My labors in the store kept me quite busy, but I try to spend an hour each night after the work at the store closes and a part of the Sundays when I am in Holbrook and then I often get a little time after the mails get off to work on my historical work. I try to use every minute to the best advantage. My work at the store demands my first attention and that I did not feel to neglect in the least, but I used the time that many others would have used in frivolous chat and sight seeing about the town and out of it.

October 25th, 1900, Governor N. O. Murphy who was running for Delegate to Congress came in this evening and held his campaign meeting in the Court House. He made a very able argument for the Republican side of the question. I had a talk with him, and he wished me to go down to Graham County and speak for him in this campaign, but my labors in the store were such that I did not feel that it would be doing the firm justice to leave now and besides I felt that I was not a politician equal to such work.

I let the Governor have a picture of the first governor of Arizona, John N. Goodwin. He took it to get a copy to put in the Capital at Phoenix. He later returned the picture after he had got the copy.

October 26th, the Governor and party went down to Winslow this p.m. where they were to hold a Republican rally. The Democratic candidates on the county ticket went up to the county on their campaign trip to tell the voters to vote for them, and the Republican candidates on the county ticket go up tomorrow to tell the voters not to vote the Democratic ticket, but to vote for them.

When the subject of selecting or making up a ticket for the Republican party first came up, I had thought of running for Treasurer as that position would bring more than I was getting at the store. I was however headed off in an odd way, which I did not think was very honorable. Knowing that the Mormons never got a fair vote in many of the elections, I went to several of the Republican party leaders and proposed that when the Democrats put up a Mormon that the Republicans put up a Mormon against him and a Gentile against a Gentile and then they would not have the chance to vote against a Mormon in favor of a Gentile. This was agreed to by all the leaders that I talked with. The Democrats put up Osmer D. Flake for Treasurer, I then requested that my name go before the Republican convention for Treasurer, as Flake was a Mormon when his opponent was not a Mormon. So Zuck paid no attention to the agreement but at once went to work and secured the delegation from Holbrook and wrote to the outlying precincts and got their proxies and got all that he could pledge for him so at the convention he had votes enough to nominate him. This worked fine for Zuck for he knew that Winslow would vote for him in preference to a Mormon. He was of course elected. This trick gave me something of a disgust for politics and I then decided that I would not have much more to do with politics.

November 14th, our election is over and a part of the candidates are happy while the other half are disappointed and cross. The vote at Winslow was as surmised that it would be. A Mormon got but very little support where a Gentile was on the opposite ticket. There was no Mormon elected except where there was a Mormon on the opposite ticket.

November 9th, I went up to Snowflake and spent the next day with my family. My wife Adelaide seemed considerable better than usual, she seemed to be improving some in health.

On Sunday the 11th, I got a team and carriage from Brother Smith and went up to Shumway, I was a home missionary at that place. Brother Smith D. Rogers went along with me. We had a very good meeting after which we called on brother Denham whom we found very sick, having a severe attack of rheumatism.

Returning to Snowflake I took the mail for Holbrook making another night ride.

November 23rd, I went up to Woodruff where I spent Saturday looking after affairs there and returned the next day.

The work in the store was going on much the same, I working at the books and accounts, paid very little attention to what was going on, and this may be one reason that I have noted as little about fairs at Holbrook.

December 7th, President Joseph F. Smith, Apostle Abraham O. Woodruff, and Elder Seymour R. Young came in last night and went on up to Snowflake to attend the conference there. Brother Hulet took them up and as one of us had to be at the store I was unable to go, so I missed the meeting of this conference. President Joseph F. Smith and party will visit the St. Johns stake as soon as the Snowflake conference is over.

We were having very fine winter weather, warm and pleasant during the days but the nights were rather cold.

December 14th, Friday, I received a letter this morning from my son Silas L., dated at Provo, Utah, December 11th, in which he stated that he had been called on a mission to the Samoan Islands and was to sail from San Francisco on January 2nd, 1901. This was a little unexpected, to me I had intended that Silas should take a normal course, he had been called to go and take a missionary course and we expected him to take the normal course after he got through with that. We disliked him going off before he had completed his studies. We finally let the matter go, but it was not only a disappointment to all of us to have him go before he finished his studies, but added considerable to my burden in raising means for him to go with. I finally borrowed \$100 and with other means that I raised managed to fit him out for the mission. I talked to President Joseph F. Smith about it and he told me that it was not right to call him from the school, that they did not intend to take the students out of school before they had finished their term, but it had gone so far that we let it pass.

1901
Chapter 104
Sickness of My Son, Joseph C. and Other Items

January 4th, 1901, My son Joseph C. was taken down with a severe attack of rheumatism and other complications a few days ago. My son John L. and I went up this afternoon to Woodruff to see him. We found him in a very bad condition, but he thought it was no more than a severe cold that he had contracted while over to Apache from whence he had just returned having taken some freight over there. We did what we could for him which did not appear to be very much.

While there we attended Brother Lorenzo Hatch's birthday gathering which was held in the meeting house. It was an interesting meeting and lasted until about midnight. During the meeting Brother Hatch made some excellent remarks, giving counsel and advise to his children as well as to others who were present. He requested them not to talk against the principal of polygamy nor did he want them to dance themselves to death, said that he was going to Utah but would return to this land if it were not until he came to resurrect his dead. He was filled with the spirit of prophecy and said that he had the same power to bless that Jacob of old had, or Abraham.

January 5th, I went up to Snowflake with President Jesse N. Smith who had been down to attend the gathering of Brother Hatch's family. I found Adelaide about the same but fully as well as common she seemed to be no worse at any rate.

The next day I attended fast meeting at Snowflake. After meeting the High Council met and arranged a few items of business, such as setting the time for Priesthood Meetings of the stake, etc. In the evening I went back to Holbrook on the mail, taking another night's ride.

January 9th, I received word that my son Joseph C. was worse so I got my son John L. to take Dr. Reed up to Woodruff to see him. They returned in the evening and reported that he was very sick, that he had rheumatism and pneumonia.

The next day John L. and I went up to Woodruff in the evening to see Joseph C. We found him a little better. We stayed all night and returned the next morning.

The weather was quite cold and on the morning of the 10th there was a little flurry of snow.

January 13th, I went up to Woodruff where I found my son about the same as usual, we however thought that there might be a little improvement.

I attended meeting as a home missionary and in the evening Patriarch Lorenzo H. Hatch gave me a patriarchal blessing which was as follows:

Dear Brother Joseph, I lay my hands upon thy head in the name of Jesus of Nazareth and seal upon thee a patriarchal and father's blessing. Rejoice therefore and be exceedingly glad. Behold, the Lord is pleased with the integrity of thy heart and for thy fidelity to the cause. There is a crown of eternal life prepared for thee and an inheritance and a mansion in the eternal worlds for thou art a lawful heir being through the loins of Ephraim to the blessings of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. Thou has been called to pass through many trying scenes, and the angels have watched over thee and thy life has been wonderfully preserved, and of thy seed there shall be no end. It is thy privilege to stand at the head of thy Father's house and also receive a fullness of all the blessings which blessings have been conferred upon thee, even a fullness by which your calling and election through your faithfulness is made sure. The priesthood shall be continued through your posterity in all generations. You have been faithful to the obligations you entered into in the morning of creation when all the sons of God shouted for joy. Blessed art thou, thou shall be remembered and thy days shall be prolonged till thou art satisfied with life, and through you and your posterity the keys of the priesthood shall be carried back to the days of Adam. Therefore be humble and thy children shall rise up and honor thy name for thy name shall be named upon them and perpetuated unto the latest generation. I seal upon thy head all the former blessings with every blessing thy heart can desire in righteousness and thou shalt be exalted and reign as a King and Priest with wives and posterity in the celestial Kingdom and

thou shalt enjoy every blessing that thy heart can desire in righteousness. I seal them upon you even by the authority of the Holy Priesthood, even so, Amen.

I was looking after Joseph C. as best I could and the next day I spent a little time in laying a floor on one of the rooms of my house. I returned to Holbrook in the night on the mail.

The weather was very fine but as usual at this season of the year, quite cold of nights.

I still continue to use my leisure time at the store in typewriting my history. I try to put in every moment at something. I despised the idea of being idle, life is too short to waste time.

January 27th, I went up to Woodruff and found my son Joseph C. somewhat better, but he was still quite helpless. He was not able to help himself in the least on account of his rheumatism.

The ward quarterly conference was held and the Presidency of the stake were present and spoke, the main subject of the conference was waltzing which they said was going on to an extreme. The next day I returned to Holbrook with Brother Richards.

March 14th, I went up to Woodruff with Clarence E. Owens. I found Joseph C. was improving considerable.

Next morning I went on to Snowflake with Brother Owens and in the afternoon I attended the High Council meeting. The matter of tithing was brought before the council. Two of the members had been reported by the bishop as delinquent. They were Brother John W. Freeman and William W. Willis. The matter was talked over some time with the parties. And finally President Smith told Brother Freeman that he had better go and try and make peace with his Bishop upon this subject.

March 16th, I attended the quarterly conference today, the Young Men and Young Ladies Associations occupied the forenoon. There was a Priesthood meeting after the regular meeting at which the matter of handling unbranded stock and horses was brought up and talked over. President Smith said that the Priesthood would have nothing to do with it.

March 17th, I attended the meeting of the conference and spoke a short time. Lorenzo H. Hatch, who was expecting to move to Utah and was President Smith's first counselor, spoke at some length upon his intended change of residence and other subjects.

I went to Holbrook on the mail making another night ride. On these occasions I never went to bed as we started about 10 p.m. and arrived there about sunrise, which just gave me time enough to wash and get my breakfast, so I could go to work on time.

Our work in the store goes on about in the usual way but little variation in this class of work. It is a busy life and the same routine day after day.

April 14th, Sunday, I took the early morning train and went down to St. Joseph where I attended meeting as a home missionary. John F. Lundquist was to have been my partner but on account of sickness, he did not come down. I spoke on the force of habit and the traditions that had been handed down to us. I stopped all night with Brother Joseph C. Hansen.

April 15th, I arose quite early so as to catch a morning train, but none came along so I walked on up to Penzance, and from there I rode on up with John Westover on a railroad Velocipede.

This is our busy time in the store. The wool is coming in quite fast which always causes a rush, and besides our trade, we generally look after the weighing of the wool.

Brother L. John Nuttall and Sister Woodruff came in from Salt Lake City and went on up to Snowflake to attend the Sunday School Conference.

May 5th, I went up to Woodruff this afternoon and found the family as well as usual. The weather for the last few days had turned quite warm, but the storms and the cold snaps in the early spring had killed nearly all the fruit. I returned to Holbrook the next morning.

May 11th, Saturday, I went up to Snowflake as the driver wished to lay off, I drove the mail up. I found my wife about as usual, not very much improved in health but no worse however.

The next day I attended meeting as a home missionary, John F. Lundquist was my partner.

In the evening I took the mail back again to Holbrook getting there as usual, in time to wash, get my breakfast, and go to work at the usual time.

There was some wool coming in, this was quite a help to us. Many of the sheep men, when their wool was sold, turned the check over to us, which in most cases paid up their accounts and sometimes they left a margin to draw upon in the future.

June 9th, I went up to woodruff, and on arriving there I found quite a number of folks at my place. They were having dinner on the occasion of Brother Reidhead's 77th birthday. We had a pleasant time with the callers and friends and returned to Holbrook the next morning where the old job was awaiting me.

June 12th, I went up to Snowflake, I found my wife Adelaide not quite so well as common. I tried to arrange things with Brother Hulet so I could get out of the store to attend my missionary appointments and to High Council meetings. Some members that affected some of the members came up. Brother John H. Frisby had refused to pay his proportion to the B. Y. Monument that had been assessed to him sometime before by action of the High Council. He had not paid any tithing while he was on his mission. All these matters were talked over and he finally agreed to straighten the matter up, but he maintained for sometime that he should not pay any tithing while he was on a mission. He paid the proportion of the assessment for the B. Y. Monument, and said that he did not intend to ignore the action of the High Council and asked forgiveness, which was granted.

I took another night's ride to Holbrook, getting there at about the usual time, just a little after day light.

June 16th, Sunday, my son Horace had got married while in Salt Lake City and he and his wife came in today. He had been absent for nearly three years and we were very much pleased to see him back with his wife. As he was so anxious to see his mother, they went on up to Snowflake in the evening on the mail.

I had written quite a history of Arizona and had sent it to the Deseret News to see if I could get it published. My daughter Josie had sent me \$75 to start with and she expected to do more but things turned out that she could not do more, and as they would not publish the work without the money in advance, I sent word to H. G. Whitney to return the manuscript which he did, and I returned the money to Josie. I then started to look over the manuscript, changing and revising it a little and making some additions in places.

June 27th, 1901, this marks my 61st mile post in life's journey and the folks at Woodruff were making preparations for family gathering of what members of the family that could be got together. So I went up to attend the gathering and supper that was being gotten up in my honor. I took Jessie May and John's wife, Vina, and the children, but John could not go as things were so rushing that he could not get away from the store. R. C. Smith's wife, Sarah, also went along with me. There were many absent ones at our family gathering; Silas was on the Samoan Islands on a mission, Josie was in Utah, Frances was in Nevada, and some others that could not attend. President Jesse N. Smith and his wife Emma came down from Snowflake, also Horace N. and his wife and some of our neighbors were present. It was however a very pleasant gathering and songs, recitations, short speeches, etc., were in order after the dinner.

The next morning I returned to Holbrook where the old job with the books, accounts, bills, etc., claimed my attention for a time, and that time lasted as long as I was in the store, for there was always something to be done, and we had no chance to be idle.

July 4th, the nation's birthday passed off quietly, there were but few in from the outside places. The weather was hot and dry.

July 13th, Saturday, I went up to Woodruff with Brother H. A. Hatch and the next day attended meeting as a home missionary. Brother Joseph H. Frisby was my partner. I spoke on the things that lead to apostasy, and brother Frisby spoke upon the divine mission of Joseph Smith.

I went down to Holbrook on the mail getting there early in the morning in time to go to work, but generally tired after these night rides.

August 7th, Governor Murphy and son and Mr. Adams of Phoenix came in today and went up to Apache on the mail.

They had a large box with their things in which they wished to take along, so we put it in behind, but could not get the back seat in and the Governor sat on it. There were no springs to the buckboard and the Governor had a very uncomfortable seat. They were going out in the mountains to hunt and fish. But I thought that the main object of their trip was to see the Indian Agent, Mr. Crouse, and have the enterprise that was talked about stopped that was the taking out of White River high up so as to furnish a large tract of land with water for the Indians to farm. The taking out of this water would cut the water short for the Salt River Valley, as was thought by the people below, and they were at work to have the enterprise stopped. This is generally the way the whites always rob the Indians when a move of this kind comes up.

August 10th, Saturday, I went up to Snowflake on the mail. I found my wife Adelaide as well as usual and I thought was improving some. She had been getting around and visiting her folks some, but on these occasions Horace or someone hauled her in one of those little wagons.

The next day I went up to Taylor and attended meeting there as a home missionary, and at night took my night ride to Holbrook.

August 16th, Governor Murphy came in today on the Government Ambulance. The trains being delayed, he did not get off for Phoenix until the next day.

I received a letter from my son Silas L. He related an instance where a woman on the Islands who was not in the church was taken dangerously sick and was not expected to live. They came for him in the night to administer to her, he went and administered to her and the next morning she was better and that day she was baptized and appeared as well as usual.

There has been considerable rain of late, which has started the grass, which is now quite good on the ranges. The good prospects for the cattle and sheep men always help our trade the same as when the farmers are prosperous, they buy more and new enterprises are started and things move on with more life and vigor.

1901-1902
Chapter 105
Some Items on Church Affairs

September 3rd, 1901, Apostles Cowley and Elder Joseph McMurrin came in this morning and went on up to St. Johns. They expect to go from there to Snowflake where they will hold meetings, Elder McMurrin is out in the interest of the seventies.

September 7th, I went up to Snowflake and the next day attended our quarterly conference that convened at Taylor, Apostle Cowley and Elder McMurrin were present and did a large part of the preaching. A meeting of the High Council was held after the forenoon session at which a little business was done. The case of Z. N. Decker's wife who had committed adultery while her husband was on a mission was talked over and it was decided that she should ask forgiveness of the priesthood of the ward and show a penitent spirit, and if so she was then to be re-baptized. During the conference, Apostle Cowley stated that the day would come when the saints would be in the majority in Arizona.

President Smith had been dangerously sick. His kidneys were affected very badly and he was not able to attend any of the meetings. I returned to Holbrook in the night.

September 26th, Thursday, my son John L. started this evening for Salt Lake City, he was going on a mission in the interest of the Young Mens Mutual Association. He expected to be gone about six months as the understanding was that these missions lasted about that time.

October 1st, there were quite a number of persons left here to go to the Salt Lake Conference.

October 13th, Sunday, my wife Eliza came in from Utah this morning, she had been gone a little over 13 years and I had not seen her but once during that time. Of course we were pleased to meet again. The next day my wife Julia and daughter Jessie May came down from Woodruff and she went up there with them. I was rather poorly, having an attack of Cholera Morbus which hung on for about two weeks. This was about the worst attack of the kind that I ever had an I had been subject to them during the latter part of the summer for a long time.

From Woodruff, my wife Eliza soon after went up to Snowflake to visit with the family there, and she went and stayed for a while with my son Horace whose wife was in delicate health.

November 13th, a month has slipped by since the last entry in my journal was made but I have been busy as ever and have got out a few times, perhaps, and have poured over daybooks, ledgers, bank accounts, and other items, as steady as in days past. Each day has brought its work and when no work was in sight I sometimes got a chance for an hour or so to gather up and put together a few items of history. This has been slow work, of course, and it was only by utilizing the time to the best advantage that I have been able to accomplish anything. I generally arrange it to spend an hour after the store closes on my work.

We were having very fine weather but as usual cold nights. There was a slight shock of an earthquake felt this evening, but not hard enough to do any damage.

I received a letter yesterday from my son Horace stating that his wife had given birth to a daughter born on the 11th. My wife Eliza was with them.

November 30th, I went up to Snowflake on the mail and the next day attended meeting and also a meeting of the High Council, as there was but little to come before the council, the meeting was rather short.

December 2nd, President Jesse N. Smith had a birthday gathering this evening in the Academy building which I attended. There were a large number of people present and it passed off very well. My wife Adelaide was not as well as usual and was not able to attend. My wife Eliza was present however, as was most of the people of the place.

In the evening I took my usual night ride to Holbrook but it was not any better than the previous ones.

About a week ago I sent my *History of Arizona* off to a firm in Chicago who had requested to look it over with a view to publishing it. I requested them to publish it on the Royalty plan as I had no money to advance for its publication. They declined to publish it on these terms so it was returned.

December 14th, Saturday, I went up to Snowflake today on the mail. I found my wife Adelaide considerably better than she had been.

The next day I attended our quarterly conference, the main part of the day was devoted to giving in reports by the various Bishops, etc.

I returned to Holbrook on Monday with Brother Joseph H. Richards. The weather continues fair but cold.

I have recently received letters from my sons John L. and Silas L. who were on missions, they were well and interested in their work. John L. was laboring in northern Utah and southern Idaho.

1902. The forepart of January was spent as usual at this period of the year in taking stock, balancing up the accounts, figuring up the profits and loss, making out each person's account, that is what was due them from dividends, and deducting the tithing from all that belonged to the Church and placing it to the credit of the Tithing Office. Those little accounts were quite numerous and added considerably to my labors. There were a very few however who objected to this and stated that they would pay their own tithing but this was limited to only two or three, and the investors who did not belong, their tithing was not taken out. This work and other things generally took up the first week of the month and after this was done, we generally had a lull and the latter part of the month was more quiet as trade fell off considerably after New Years.

February 1st, I went up to Woodruff today and attended the Priesthood meeting which was held there this month. The next day ward conference was held there. President Smith was the main speaker and made some very interesting remarks on the early conditions in the Danish Mission. I spoke a short time in the afternoon. After the afternoon meeting the High Council met with the presidency but there were but two regular members and one alternate besides the presidency, rather a poor attendance so no business was transacted, but a few things were talked over pertaining to our dances and the manner in which they were conducted. I returned to Holbrook the next morning.

Things in the store moved on in the regular way. I was always busy with my work there, or my historical gathering of items.

Brother Hulet has a team for the purpose of doing the drayage, etc., so he goes to Snowflake about twice a month and goes and comes when he pleases.

He was a little peculiar in some of his ways. One thing I will mention: When he came back from his trips he came into the store and walked to where he letters were hung on a wire that came while he was gone, and looked them over before he noticed or spoke to anyone. After he had looked these over he would turn around and speak to me or those near by.

When the clerks went out, we had to get a chance to ride or pay our own fare, and then we could not go when we wanted to at all times as we could not be spared. I however was favored considerably as I belonged to the High Council and it was generally arranged for me to get off on these occasions and when I had a missionary appointment.

March 12th, I went up to Snowflake on the mail and the next day I attended the High Council meeting which was held in the afternoon. The main item dwelt upon was the carrying out of president Snow's instructions to Presidents and High Councils that they should labor among the people. The subject was spoken on and it was decided by the Council that we should work more among the people, not so much as a preaching mission, but to look after the saints and encourage them, etc. I returned to Holbrook during the night.

March 23rd, I was up to Woodruff and spent the day there attending meeting, etc., and returned to the old stand the next morning.

The next day was very windy and towards night a violent snow storm set in with a high wind and was quite severe for awhile.

March 25th, Tuesday, Brother A. L. Rogers and I went down to St. Joseph this morning to visit the people as per appointment of the High Council at its last meeting. We visited mainly with bishop Bushman and John McLaws and stopped all night with Joseph C. Hansen. The next day we visited Brother Joseph H. Richards and family and then went and made calls and short visits with eight or ten families during the day and held meeting in the evening at which we both spoke. We stayed all night with Brother Bushman and the next day we returned to Holbrook. We found the people of St. Joseph to be a good and progressive people, but there were a very few who were becoming a little slack in their duties and seemed to be losing the spirit of their calling as Latter Day Saints. This we find in every ward, and it requires a continual watch and active work to keep from becoming rusty.

April 13th, Sunday, there was a fire in Holbrook at about 3 a.m. this morning. A. M. Boyer's livery stable was destroyed, also Wetzler Brothers Warehouse and the Printing Office. The total loss was estimated to be about \$5,000. There was but little insurance on any of the property. After the alarm was given the whole town was soon on the ground and by tearing down fences and wetting exposed buildings the fire was prevented from spreading further. Mrs. Boyer claimed that John Egger set the place on fire as he had a livery stable and thought that Boyer's was interfering with his business. But no one believed that there was anything in this, and no one suspected Egger except Mrs. Boyer whose assertions were ridiculed by the people.

President Jesse N. Smith came in from Salt Lake City where he had been to attend the conference.

April 19th, Saturday, I went up to Woodruff and the next day I attended meeting there. Brother James D. Smithson who had been away for some ten months freighting near the Mexican border spoke, giving an account of his labors and the condition of the country. He said that the country in the south was drying up and things were looking very discouraging.

I returned to Holbrook on Monday morning, it was a cold windy day, one of the worst of the season.

May 18th, Another month has passed, with all its toils and trials, joys and sorrows that beset the path of frail humanity.

I went up to Woodruff today. It rained the most of the day and night and some of the next day (Monday). This raised the water in the river so that the mail could not cross and I was unable to get through until evening, and then crossed on a kind of flume that had been placed across the river. The mail was carried across on this, a team coming up from Holbrook to get it. I went on down with it. It had been the driest season that had been known for many years and this rain was welcomed by all and was a great blessing to the country. The sheep men had been forced to keep many of their flocks back from the watering places so as to get grass and they hired teams and getting large tanks hauled water for these flocks at an enormous expense. It turned quite cold after this rain, but no particular damage was done to the fruit which bade fair for a good crop.

June 7th, Saturday, we witnessed one of those disgraceful things that so often occurs among the denizens of the lower class in all large cities. This morning six tramps were put off from a box car where they had secured a place unknown to the railroad men, and among them was a lad apparently about sixteen. It soon turned out that it was a girl who was dressed as a man and was going through with these tramps to California. She was from Chicago so they said.

I went up to Woodruff where I attended meeting the next day. James M. Flake was down in the interest of the Sunday Schools and spoke at the meeting. I returned to Holbrook on Monday morning.

June 11th, my son Joseph C's child, Arthur, but a few months old, had been sick but a short time. It died today. My affairs were in such a shape that I was unable to attend the funeral.

This time I had gone up to Snowflake, and the next day I attended a meeting of the High council. The main item before the Council was the reports of the members as to their labors among the people. Most of the reports were very fair, being a reasonable showing of conditions in the various wards which was fairly good.

Adelaide was about as well as usual, but there was one thing that cut me to the very center. She exhibited a growing coldness toward me, this I had observed ever since I returned from the Gila. It seemed that each trip that I made to Snowflake, she seemed more distant. I first noticed around the house that she had taken my picture down, I never learned what she did with it, and several little things like that. Then she refused to kiss me goodbye when I left. This coolness, as has been stated, was manifested in a gradual way, being manifested a little at a time. I, however, tried to appear as if I did not notice it and when some cutting remark was made I often turned it as if I did not take it as a slight when I knew it was so intended. This caused me many painful reflections and what to do I did not know. I realized that she was in poor health and thought probably that might have had something to do with it. I took another lonesome night ride.

June 22nd, it had been extremely dry and hot for the past few days. I went up to Woodruff this p.m. and returned the next morning.

I had often gone up there when I would have gone to Snowflake, but I could sometimes go up there and back without interfering much with my work, especially when I went up of an evening and back in the morning. And as Julia looked after my clothes, washing and mending, I sometimes went up there for a change. To this Adelaide appeared to be perfectly willing, and I often thought she would rather that I would not visit her.

Aunt Eliza, since she had come back, had lived with members of the family. She had stayed with Horace for some time as he needed her assistance.

June 27th, this was my 62nd birthday and I spent most of the day at Woodruff. Aunt Eliza and Julia were there and quite a representation of the children. A good dinner was prepared and some outside of the family were present. I returned to Holbrook with my son John L.

The weather continued to be dry and hot, but still there was a fair prospect for a crop of fruit. Of course there was not much fruit, many however had a few trees and when the season was favorable they had apples and peaches enough to do them, but we did not have any great amount to sell.

We were closing up the accounts for the half yearly settlement, and at these times I was always busy. This part of the business had not been properly systematized as it should have been, and the way it was carried on gave me much more work than was actually necessary, but later on we got the system changed so that there was far less work about it. I was however busy all the time, for I spent the odd moments on my historical work and this as I proceeded to enlarge and covered more ground, and I gradually extended my work outside of Arizona.

July 4th, there was nothing done today in the way of a celebration for it was one of the worst days that I had seen for a long time. The wind blew very hard and it being so dry and dusty the air was full of dust and almost blinding. Frequently you could not see across the street for quite a period of time for the dust. The sheep men were becoming greatly discouraged on account of the drought.

July 7th, I went up to Woodruff and back the next morning. I sometimes did this when there was something special that I wished to look after and sometimes I went up after dark and back early in the morning, footing it.

July 18th, I went up to Woodruff and back the next morning. As I slept in the store, I was able to work almost every minute, I only went out to get my meals, and this was about the same with Brother Hulet, but of course he had a team and could go and come when he pleased.

1902-1903
Chapter 106
My Wife Eliza Comes to Holbrook to Live

July 25th, 1902, I had become so tired of living alone and boarding around at different places and sleeping in the store, that I finally consented for my wife Eliza to come down and live in Holbrook. She had requested it several times thinking that she could be of more help to me. I had not felt it advisable to have any of my family down with me for the reason first that Holbrook was a Gentile town and if I had any of the family there it might lead to some act of a disgruntled person to give me some trouble on the polygamy question, and then, the saloon element was so bad that with this and the bad associations, I was not willing to have my children there. But as Aunt Eliza had no children, that part would not affect me any, and then she was a woman that always made friends and was not likely to get the enmity of anyone. She came down today.

My son John L., had rented quite a commodious house from James Scott, and I rented a room from him and we fixed it up as comfortably as possible. It did not take much of a place for us two. The room was one that had been built for a granary and stood close to the other building. When Navajo County was organized, the whole building was occupied by the county officials and this building that I had rented was fixed up and used for a time for a jail, so we christened the place the Jail House. We got this much cheaper than we could have got a building anywhere else and it answered our purpose very well. It did not, however, front the street.

August 3rd, Sunday, I hired a team from the livery stable, (the charges were three dollars a day when a person took and drove himself and fed the team), and Aunt Eliza and I went down to St. Joseph where we attended the meeting, and during the day I visited around as much as possible in the capacity of High Councilor whose duty it was to visit the saints. We returned to Holbrook in the evening.

August 4th, it rained some yesterday and today in the forest on the mountains to the south of us, but no rain on the Little Colorado in this vicinity. Here it was dry and hot. Our thermometer goes up to 95 while some in town said that theirs went up to 105, but ours was probably in the coolest place in town.

August 31st, my work in the store goes on in the same old way, but I have felt more at home since Aunt Eliza came down.

I went up to Woodruff today and returned the next morning. The fruit trees at Woodruff looked fine, especially the apples, the trees being heavily loaded with fruit. There were many peaches, but the most of them were quite small. There had been a little rain during the month which had started the grass in places.

September 10th, Wednesday, I went up to Snowflake this p.m. and drove the mail, the driver being sick. We at the store looked after the mail business and whenever anything happened, as above mentioned, we had to get someone else or some of the clerks go, which was done occasionally.

I found Adelaide about as well as common, but a little cooler in her actions, refusing to kiss me when I arrived or when I went away. This gave me considerable pain and serious reflections for I could readily see the outcome of such a course.

The next day I attended a meeting of the High Council. There was but little business done. The subject of selecting a Bishop for the Pinedale ward was talked over as Bishop Peterson had died leaving the place without a Bishop. The Council chose Elijah Thomas to fill the vacancy subject to the approval of the ward. The council also decided to ask the First Presidency to add a Church School to our Academy. I returned to Holbrook in the night driving the mail back.

September 15th, for some little time past I have been revising and adding to my historical work. The Arthur H. Clark Company of Cleveland, Ohio, had requested to look at it and I sent it off this morning for their inspection.

September 21st, Sunday, I worked in the store as I generally did on Sundays when I was here, as some of us stayed in the store of Sundays but generally a part of us got out on that day. But as there were no meetings and our business was purely trade, we cared but very little about going out unless we could go to some of the other settlements.

There had been some rain above here and today the river was very high. My son Joseph C. has the contract for carrying the mail from here to Woodruff and he is greatly hindered now on account of high water, and those that carry the mail between Woodruff and St. Johns are having a hard time to get through.

September 22nd, Monday, my wife Eliza has been up to Woodruff for some time helping to put up the fruit, she came down today. And we have arranged for her to stay all winter, arrangements having been made for another room.

There has been a good crop of fruit raised this season and the people are in almost every day peddling fruit and vegetables. There is nothing raised in this place and the people have to buy all their fruit, vegetables, etc. So that those who have any apples, peaches, melons, or any kind of garden stuff find ready market for them here. As yet there is not enough of such stuff raised in the near by settlements to supply the demand.

September 23rd, Charles Jarvis from St. Johns started off on the train this morning, he was going on a mission. He had worked with me in the store considerable in the early days of the A. C. M. I.

September 25th, Thursday, Nat. M. Brigham, ex-U. S. Marshall of Utah, called on me. He said that he was getting up a series of lectures on the Grand Canyon, the Apache Warpath, etc., and that he understood that I was writing a *History of Arizona*, and he had stopped off here to see me and try to get some items to help him in his work. I gave him some items as far as I could in his line, and also gave him the title of some books that treated on the Grand Canyon, and also the Apache question.

September 26th, Robert E. Morrison, who was prominent in Apache County as Probate Judge, and later moved to Prescott, was running for Delegate to Congress. He came in last night, being on a speaking tour for himself on the Republican ticket. He went on up to Snowflake where he was to speak tonight. He goes to St. Johns tomorrow.

October 6th, Monday, the Democrats held their county convention today and got out their ticket but they did not nominate a Probate Judge, that office is blank.

The weather is fair and pleasant but the nights were getting quite cold.

The diphtheria has been raging at Snowflake and other places. There had recently been two deaths at Snowflake from this disease and one from some other cause. Schools had been stopped and efforts were being made to prevent the spread of this terrible plague but it appeared to be pretty well scattered.

October 8th, the Republicans of the county got out their ticket today. There had been some division in Winslow as to the office of Sheriff, there being two candidates. Both parties were finally dropped and Robert Scott was nominated. He declined to accept the office and later Chet Houck was put on the ticket, and was elected at the election.

I received a letter today from my son Silas L. He stated that he was getting along with his missionary work fairly well, and was in the school a part of his time.

October 11th, Brother Hulet received word that his little infant was very sick so he went up to Snowflake last night. His regular visits to his folks were about every two weeks.

This morning the night operator who was, I think, troubled with lung complaint went out early to deliver a message and going back to the depot stopped at the door to speak to a man when he started to cough and burst a blood vessel, and falling against the wall at the side of the door, died without speaking a word. His name was Jennison.

October 12th, Sunday, I went up to Woodruff and attended meeting and came back the next morning. On many of these trips that I took so as to attend meeting, I walked. I did this occasionally as a part of the force could get out on that day, but some one of us always stayed in the store of Sundays. I was a little more favored in getting away than some of the clerks. John L., having his family here most of the time was always on hand, and of course he had quite an out during his six months absence on his mission, but he was back in the store when that time expired.

October 13th, the District Court convened today but as there was but very little business, it adjourned on the 15th. There was but one criminal case tried, a woman for murder, and she was acquitted. During court time and the political campaign our business was rushing as there were so many from the outside settlements in to attend court, etc.

On the evening of the 19th, Wilson who was running on the Democratic ticket for Delegate to Congress and Morrison who was his opponent on the Republican ticket, had a discussion. I did not think that Wilson came up to what was expected of him in the debate.

October 20th, I received word from the publishing house that my history had many good points about it but they thought that it was a little voluminous and ought to be boiled down a little, so I sent to have it returned. They evidently wanted it cut down to about 300 pages, but later Farris's history was published, there were 8 volumes and he was only about half way through when he died.

October 30th, Thursday, we have had very fine weather, but there has been considerable sickness in the settlements. There have been several deaths in Snowflake from diphtheria and the place is quarantined.

I received a letter from Silas L. yesterday, he stated that he had been appointed to take charge of a school where he was laboring on the Samoan Islands.

I received a letter from my sister Jane a few days ago who was residing in Emmitt, Idaho. She closed her letter as follows:

Dear Brother, we are scattered
Our locks are turning gray
And from the home of childhood
We have wandered far away.

January 18th, 1903, the labors of taking stock and settling up the various accounts for the past half year have passed with the usual bustle and worry, and it was a relief to me when the work was done, but the work at this time was not quite as hard as it had been in the past as our system was being improved.

One good thing that our invoicing did was to bring out our old stock which was becoming shelf worn and this stock was cut down in price so that we could dispose of it. And sometimes a person who was running a small store would come in and take a quantity of these goods at a cut figure and thus we disposed of much of our hard stock.

I labored as has been formerly stated, under some inconveniences. During my whole labors in the store, I never had a fire in the office, which was some distance back from the stove which was more in the center of the building. One cold day the railway agent came in to do some business and seeing how I was fixed said that I must have an iron constitution to work in such a place. Frequently on cold days, I worked with an overcoat on.

Brother Hulet, in some respects, was a peculiar man, he did not appear to take any interest in the employees of the store and would never tell them anything about the business that he could help. He was more communicative with some of our main customers than with the clerks. R. C. Smith, who worked with us for sometime, said if he wanted to find out anything about the business he had to get it from Schuster (a merchant next door to us). Some of the clerks thought that he ought to be more free with them. He often went off, and sometimes to Albuquerque, and never said a word, and we would not know anything about him until we saw him get off the train.

February 1st, Sunday, I have improved some but still I was able to do but very little. I go to the store and do what is absolutely necessary and this being the dull part of the season, there was not much to do so I was able to keep things from getting too far behind.

February 2nd, we had a snow storm today, it falling to the depth of about 6 inches. This was the heaviest fall of snow this season and it is seldom that we have that much in any year.

On the 7th I went up to Woodruff and returned the next morning.

February 9th, we had another snow storm and it was the coldest spell that we had for a long time, the thermometer went down to 10 below zero.

March 8th, Sunday, a month has passed since my last entry was made in my journal, but the time was spent about as usual, wrestling with the accounts, bills, and with such a variety of ups and downs in trade as a person meets in this position.

I went down to St. Joseph today taking my wife Eliza and my little daughter Hannah. We attended Sunday School and meeting, returning to Holbrook in the evening.

March 12th, my son Horace and his wife came down and he spent a day or two in copying my history which I had revised somewhat. I again sent it off to the Arthur H. Clark and Company on the 24th.

During the month of February there was a report that the small pox had broken out at Snowflake, it was in a very mild form and some called it the Manilla Itch.

March 25th, we had some wind which turned off with a rain. Some parties were down from Snowflake and St. Johns for the purpose of reorganizing the store business, consolidating the St. Johns store with this, thus making it a larger institution.

April 28th, there had been considerable sickness in the surrounding settlements and several deaths from diphtheria.

My son Joseph S. came down last evening and left this morning for El Paso where he was going to take the examination for the purpose of going to the West Point Academy.

May 8th, Joseph S. returned from El Paso. He said that he passed the examinations so far as they went, but the Doctor turned him down saying that his lungs were affected. This we considered a pretext to throw him out as he was a Mormon. No one would think that his lungs were affected that ever heard him preach for he had an uncommonly loud voice. He was very small and it was often said that it was a wonder where all that loud talk came from.

May 14th, Thursday, I went up to Snowflake on the mail. I found Adelaide as well as usual but still increasing in her coolness towards me. She had been gradually becoming more cool and finally would not speak to me only upon some business affair and then she at last would not turn her head towards me, turning away as if in disgust when she said anything. This cut me to the center as I had almost worshiped the woman, but her treatment had ground upon me for several years and at last when she turned her head when she did speak to find fault and upbraided me, I told her that whenever she wished to see me or have me come around to let me know and I would come, and I walked off.

The next day I attended the High Council Meeting, there was a good attendance. Apostle Cowley and Elder Kelch came in at about 5 p.m. to attend our conference, but I was unable to remain to attend the meetings and returned to Holbrook the next morning.

When I left Adelaide's I stayed at my daughter Della's and I have never since passed a night in our dear old home nor eaten a meal with my loved ones under the roof of our once happy home, but I would have enjoyed it beyond measure if I had been a welcome guest with her. My dear boys that I cherished so much, I am proud to say, always treated me with the greatest respect and regretted the break in the family circle.

1903-1904
Chapter 107
A Visit From a Daughter and the Death of a Daughter-In-Law

May 17th, we had a high wind which terminated with a freeze at night as these wind storms generally did, and killed about all the fruit, spoiling our prospects for fruit this fall. The frost late in the spring is the great drawback in raising fruit in this country, as we do not have much only in about one year out of three or four.

May 24th, my daughter Frances came in today from Nevada to make us a visit, it had been nearly 19 years since I had seen her. She had lost her husband and she was now a widow. She visited with Aunt Eliza, John L. and family and myself a couple of days and then went on up to Woodruff to visit with the folks there, from where she went on up to Snowflake soon after.

June 3rd, Wednesday, I went up to Woodruff, Eliza, Della, Frances and some of the children came down from Snowflake and we had a very sociable visit, there being quite a number of relatives and friends together.

June 4th, Della and her children returned home, and J. Y. Lee and family, Aunt Eliza, Frances, and I went out to the Petrified Forest. I had, of course, seen many of the petrified trees through northern Arizona but as long as I had resided in this vicinity, this was my first visit to this forest.

June 5th, I returned to Holbrook and Frances came down the next day where we had another social gathering and on the 7th she took the train starting on her return journey to Nevada. She would go by the way of Kingman and there leave the railroad and take the mail and go across the country to the mouth of the Virgin River where she would cross the Colorado into Nevada and then on up the Muddy to her home.

On the 10th we had a little rain which was greatly needed.

June 24th, my grandson, Vernon Lee, had his foot cut off by a mowing machine. His father was cutting lucern as the little boy had gone into the edge of it and laid down and had gone to sleep and when the father came around with the machine, it struck him before he discovered the child. The mangled foot was amputated by Dr. Brown who took it off just above the ankle. He was brought down to Holbrook where he would be where the Doctor could see him oftener. Aunt Eliza and his mother took the best of care of him and he improved quite rapidly.

July 12th, I went down to St. Joseph where I attended Sunday School meeting and a priesthood meeting and returned in the evening. We were having a little more rain of late than common.

July 24th, my wife Julia gave birth to a son today. We named him Jesse Lewis, the Jesse for Jesse N. Smith, my old and faithful friend, and the Lewis for Aunt Eliza's family name.

July 25th, I went up to woodruff where I found Julia and babe doing as well as could be expected. Aunt Eliza was with them. The next day I attended several meetings and in the evening gave a lecture upon some historical incidents of Arizona.

July 27th, I returned to Holbrook and in the afternoon I received a telegram that Melvina, John's wife, had just died and that several of the children were dangerously sick. They were at Pinedale where John had recently moved his family from Holbrook, his home and farm were at that place. I procured a team and carriage and took Dr. Hathaway to look after the sick children and see what the disease was. At the last moment before starting, Mr. Pease came in from Gallup, he having received the word of Vina's death. He caught a train coming down. I took him and we got started at about 11 p.m. and arrived at Snowflake at about daylight. Here we rested for a short time, the team needing it very much. We then started on and took Della and Nellie Smith along with us and arrived at Pinedale at about 11 a.m. of the 28th. We found the children who were sick somewhat better, their sickness was apparently what we called in early days the Mountain Fever. The funeral of Melvina was held at 3 p.m. She was buried in the Pinedale Cemetery near the main part of the village.

July 29th, I started on my return to Holbrook, I took two of John's children with me, Hamilton and the baby Ambrose who was about six months old.

At Snowflake I left Ambrose with Della and I took Hamilton on to Holbrook where Aunt Eliza cared for him and Ambrose, whose father brought him down from Snowflake in a day or two after.

Melvina had been quite wayward for the past year or more and had allowed Mr. Pease to apparently take the place of her husband, that was to all appearances, in attention, etc. Not long before she was taken sick, she stated that she and Mr. Pease were going to take a trip to California together in the near future. Her sudden illness and death of course cut this at an end. This plan, if it had been carried out, would have still added to the scandal that was already afloat, and would doubtless have caused a separation from her husband and the breaking up of the family, so that by many her death was not mourned as it would have been. She was a fine woman in many respects and had many friends and stood high in the opinion of all before the scandal was spread abroad. Her infatuation for Mr. Pease was a flaw in her otherwise career of usefulness. She left a family of seven children.

I have not been keeping my journal very regularly as there was so little to note that I thought would be of interest. I was going through the same old routine of work with occasional trips to the nearby settlements. I went up to Woodruff once during the month of August. I bought a team and wagon from J. Y. Lee. It was not an extra good team and the wagon was an old one. I gave \$120 for the outfit. I got it for the boys Roland and Wilford to use around the place and I wished them to do a little farming and haul the wood, etc.

September 6th, my son Joseph C. has again been down with the rheumatism and heart trouble. I went up to Woodruff today to see him and spent the most of the day with him. I attended meeting however and returned in the evening.

November 11th, I have been quite busy in the store, a little more than usual.

I received word from Arthur W. Clark Company about my History, they said that they would publish it on the royalty plan if I would consent to have it put in the name of some popular author such as Charles F. Lunnis and note that the historical articles were gathered by me. I finally consented so as to get it in print, but Lunnis declined to accept the proposition, so the thing was dropped and I was not very sorry about it, but it gave me a poorer opinion of the publishing company.

I went up to Snowflake today and the next day I attended a meeting of the High Council where there were two or three vacancies filled up by new members.

As I have stated, my wife Adelaide had been disaffected for several years, she told me at this time that she wanted a divorce. I told her that it was not my wish, that I had always loved and respected her, and such a move was far from me, but that I would not stand in the way of her having one, as I wanted all my family to be happy if they could be, and I did not wish to stand in the way of their happiness. I was willing to live with her or that she should have a divorce if she wished. I asked her for what reason she wished a divorce and she said that I was too poor, and ought to have considered that before I married her. I fully realized that I was not wealthy but still we were about as well off as many of our neighbors. I had got the government telegraph company to put in an office in her house, one room of it, and had paid to have Horace learn to run it some years before, and the government paid a high rent for the room, and Silas and his mother both learned after, so that when Horace left one of the boys or their mother carried on the business of the office which of course was not much but it was quite a source of revenue, as the government furnished lights and many other items besides the rent. Besides this, I gave her \$30.00 a month out of my \$756, and I paid all the taxes, tithing, donations, etc., which left her far better provided for than the rest of the family. I had, as before stated, started to build her a house at Thatcher on the Gila. I had got two rooms up, roof on and floor down, etc., and had arranged for her to join me there, as when I left it was understood that I would get a place in Sonora but that falling through I returned to the Gila Valley and got a place. After taking this step she refused to move to the Gila Valley. This was a serious set back to me, as for me to live on the Gila and her in Snowflake was virtually a separation I thought, so I disposed of my property there and moved back. I have often thought since that, if I had kept my place there it would have been better for me, as in a short time it would have brought \$3,000 and I only realized two or three hundred for it. She soon after got the divorce and stated to President Joseph F. Smith an item or two which I regretted and felt hurt over ever since when I think of it. Present Jesse N. Smith sent it down by Brother Richards for me to sign, which I did, but not without many regrets. It however was only an agreement that we would not live together as man and wife. She later, when in Holbrook, came into the store and asked my forgiveness for taking the step, that she had in getting the divorce as she called it, but it was not a divorce as I called it. In her statement she said that there were faults on both sides, and I was willing to admit this

and asked her if this was the case if there was not a chance for a reconciliation. She said no, that there was no chance, and she seemed happy in taking the step that she had.

November 13th, I returned to Holbrook where I took up the labors there as usual, but with a heavy hart, and I tried to divert my mind from the chasm that had opened between us, and notwithstanding our differences and trials that we had undergone, she was a woman that I had always loved and cherished. But for her, the love that she once had for me seemed to have changed into hatred and contempt.

August 27th, 1904, some nine months have passed away and for all this period I do not find that I have made a single entry in my journal, and why I should have entirely neglected it, I cannot account. But the time passed about as the weeks and months had rolled by. Aunt Eliza stayed with me at Holbrook and added much to my comfort. We still kept Ambrose and Hamilton remained with us for some time. I still continued to take my regular missionary trips to the near by settlements. When I went up to Snowflake, for a long time I called to see Adelaide for a short time, but I knew that she did not care for my visits.

I went up to Woodruff today and while there word was sent that the Udall Reservoir had gone out the evening before and this afternoon the water came down and continued to rise until about 9 pm. when our dam went out. This was a terrible blow to the place. This was the tenth or eleventh time that the dam had gone out and the continued labor of re-building dams had taxed the people until many had left the place and now some more were discouraged. As each dam had gone out, some left and often others came in to see what could be done about building up the place. David Brinkerhoff was one of these. He had sold out at Tuba City and came to Woodruff with \$8,000 which he soon spent. Rebuilding dams and doing other things soon brought him down to the poverty that many others were in who had spent the major part of their means dam building.

I crossed the river on the flume and walked down to Holbrook which I did on several occasions when the water was high in the river. The flume at one time was made of lumber but later there was an iron pipe put over with supports that held it, being supported by a wire cable. This was an awkward thing to cross on but I often crossed this and the mails were carried across on this at times when the river was impassable.

1904
Chapter 108
A Trip to Utah

I had received something like \$120 or a little over, from the Government for the losses of stock from Indian depredations and I thought I would take a trip to Utah and visit some of my relatives that I had not seen for years. I had arranged for a month's vacation so as to attend the conference and make a visit. There were quite a number from St. Johns and Snowflake going to attend conference.

The trains were late at this time on account of wash outs, but we finally got off on October 2nd and reached Albuquerque at 2 a.m. the next morning. Here it was reported that the road east was washed out so that it was impossible to proceed. We lay over during the day and spent the time in looking about the city. My old and ever true friend, Jesse N. Smith, was along with the party and we took dinner with the wool buyer A. Vanderwart at the Hotel at the depot. We had done considerable business with him and he treated us the best that he could. This hotel was built on the fashion of the old Spanish Missions.

October 3rd, we finally got off at 5 p.m. and as the road east was impassible we were sent down the Rio Grande.

October 4th, we arrived at El Paso a little before noon and here we were laid off for another rest. Brother Smith and I improved the time in looking over the town during our stay. Our train again started out at 5:30 p.m. going east for a little distance down the river.

October 5th, at just day light we passed the town of Midland, this place appeared to have a wind mill for every house. The country appeared to be a boundless plain with a scanty growth of mesquite here and there with some chaparral. We took breakfast at Big Springs. There were some fields of cotton along the line of travel but they did not look very thrifty. Crossing the Brazos and several other streams we arrived at Fort Worth, Texas, at 5 p.m. Here we made another halt for a short time and I wrote a letter to Aunt Eliza to let her know of the rambling route that we were taking in consequence of the wash outs. There were quite a number of us that were going to conference but we had given up all hopes before this of getting there on time on account of our detentions.

October 6th, our train had moved some during the night and this morning we were sidetracked at a station about twenty five miles from the Texas line in Indian Territory. Here some of the settlers told us of the wonderful opportunities that there were for settlers coming in here. It was a nice looking country and was quite inviting.

All the trains were delayed in consequence of the bridges being washed out by the high water. We left this place a little before noon and succeeded in getting over the Red River but the temporary track was quite dangerous and some of the trains wished the other fellow to go first. There were some six or eight trains some of the time all in sight.

We crossed through Oklahoma mostly in the night, passing through Shawnee, Wichita, and reached Newton at 7 a.m. Here we laid over until about noon and then going west we reached Pueblo, Colorado, which place we left at about noon and then we soon passed around Pike's Peak and through South Park where we saw some grand scenery and took supper at Leadville. Then going on we arrived at Grand Junction at about midnight where we again changed cars and were detained here some three hours, when we started on.

October 9th, going on we managed after our long and circuitous route to reach Salt Lake City at about 2 p.m. Brother Smith and I went to Aunt Susan Smith's and after washing and cleaning up we made our way to the Tabernacle where we arrived a few minutes before they dismissed, so we missed all the meetings. We met a few old friends, after which I went around and visited my sister Julia and stayed there all night.

October 10th, I went around and called on William Hunt, a brother-in-law of my son Horace. After some running around I went back and visited awhile with my sister Julia and her daughter Mattie, and in the evening I went with Brother Jesse N. Smith up to Layton to see his brother and my old friend, Silas S. Smith, where we stayed all night. Silas was in good health but was a little hard of hearing. He had bought him a place here after leaving Colorado, a comfortable brick house and thirty acres of land and had it nearly paid for. He had run down in means when he left Colorado. He was very pleased to meet us.

October 11th, with regret I bade Silas goodbye, it was the last time that I ever saw him. He was a noble man and a warm friend, a man whose friendship never faltered. I returned to the City and went to my sister Julia's where there were some of the Thompsons, relatives and others, gathered.

At about 4 p.m. I went up in town and called on my old friend Josiah Rogerson and then took the train at 6 p.m. for Provo arriving there at about 8 p.m. where I stopped at the Greer House. Senator Tom Patterson was just across the street in the Opera House making a political speech. He was a Democrat and as usual for politicians to blame the other party, he blamed the government more than I thought was just, and from what I had heard of Tom Patterson, he did not quite come up to my expectations.

October 12th, Richard Brearton sent a conveyance down this morning and I went up to his place this morning some little distance on the hill. His wife was Julia's half sister. It rained some this forenoon and I spent the day with the family. Brearton had a fine orchard and raised considerable fruit.

October 13th, Brearton and his wife took me around some in the city and we called on some of my old friends, Brothers Theodore Farley, Mark E. Kartchner, and Joseph H. Frisby, all of whom had lived in Snowflake. They were all pleased to meet me, they seemed to be prospering in their new homes. We also called on Mrs. Roberts, a sister of Sister Reidhead and thus spent the day in these calls. I then took the train which was about 9 p.m. for the south and arrived at Milford at 8:45 the next morning.

My sister Julia who was going with me to Beaver and Parowan to visit some relative came down on the same train. We took the stage for Beaver where we arrived a little after 2 p.m. where we met my daughter Josie and her husband John Barraclough.

John had a stroke some time past and it was thought by many that it was brought on by drinking. He had been a very bright man and had held many positions, being one of the leading clerks in Walkers Store in Salt Lake City, having 21 men or clerks under him. He had been clerk in the District Court but he was now not able to do anything.

October 15th, Julia, Josie, and I started for Parowan, we hired Ed Bird to take us over. We got through all right but it was a rough and dusty ride compared with railroads, we were tired enough, but happy in meeting relatives and old friends, I stayed all night with my sister Sarah.

October 16th, I went over and visited the cemetery where father, mother, and wife Mary and many relatives were laid away. I attended meeting in the afternoon and spoke a short time and spent the rest of the day in visiting with relatives and friends.

October 17th, I made several calls on old friends and relatives, I called on Niels Mortenson, he was getting old and feeble. I called on Olive Ward and Eli Whitney and folks, his wife was a sister of Aunt Eliza's.

October 18th, I made several calls and took dinner with my old friend, Morgan Richards, he was one of my pupils in 1856.

In the evening there was a family gathering at William Lyman's, he had married my niece, Julia McGregor. At the gathering I spoke on the genealogy of the family. There was music furnished and a large gathering of friends and relatives. There were songs and recitations.

October 19th, I visited around as usual among the many friends and relatives. Took dinner with my old friend William C. Mitchell. In the evening I attended a social given for us at Eli Whitney's, there were about 60 persons present.

October 20th, my brother-in-law, James Stapley, and his wife Elizabeth came up from Kanarrah day before yesterday to visit with us. I was pleased to see them, and we had a very social time together. In the afternoon Alexander Orton called and took me down to look through their social hall where they held their theaters. (We played on the stage together years ago.)

I called on John H. Henderson and took dinner with James Ollerton. I called on William Davenport and took supper with Jesse Ward and his wife Olive, and in the evening there was a gathering of our relatives at my sister Anna Burton's, where a general talking, visiting, and relating incidents was done.

October 21st, I spent considerable time with my sisters Sarah and Anna and in the evening we had a family gathering at Donald McGregor's where I gave quite a lengthy account of my travels, labors, etc., since I left Parowan in 1878.

October 22nd, I bade the folks goodbye, it was the last time that I ever saw my sisters Sarah and Anna and W. C. McGregor, they soon after passed away or at least my sisters did, but McGregor lived a little longer.

Julia, Josie, and I started for Beaver. I rode a part of the way with James Ollerton and a part of the time with my nephew Frank Burton who were going over to Beaver.

October 23rd, I attended meeting at Beaver, it was their quarterly conference. Brother Golden Kimball was present and made some excellent remarks on what he termed "Town Tramping" at the Mutual, showing the evils of it and how it is often remedied.

October 24th, I went up to the old government post, now converted into a school building and attended the opening exercises of the school. Brother Kimball spoke a short time. They have an enrollment of 183 and expect that this number will soon be greatly increased.

My brother-in-law, M. M. Steele and his wife came in last evening and were up to the school. They had brought one or two of their children to attend the Academy. We returned to town and took dinner with Josie. My sister Julia and Frank Burton started for the north this afternoon.

October 25th, Tuesday, I called on a few old acquaintances and conversed a short time with the old gentleman Cox. He was in his 90th year and still quite well. I saw John Ward Christian who was still hale and hearty. Met Will Thompson, Elliot Eilden and several others. I made a short call on Ed Bird and family and went up and visited the cemetery. Adelia Farr called on me, she was an old acquaintance but she now seemed a little demented.

October 26th, I met a few old acquaintances, among them was Roland Tanner and Mr. Halterman with whom I worked at the Thompson Mill.

Bidding the folks goodbye I took the stage at 1:30 p.m. and started for Milford. I stopped at the Tanner house and I slept but very little, it seemed that I had left all my friends and most of my relatives and was again starting out among strangers.

October 27th, I took the train at 9 am. for Caliente where I arrived at 2:30 p.m. Here I met my daughter Frances and her son Clair. They took me down to their ranch some 12 miles below where we arrived a little after dark.

October 28th, I spent the day with Frances and her children. They have a most picturesque locality, but it would be a little lonesome for me, although the railroad runs close to the house. They raise considerable fruit, the place being shut in by high mountains which protects it from the frost. The sun rises at 9 a.m. and sets at 3 p.m. which would give you an idea of the way it was shut up.

October 29th, the nearest neighbors to the place are at the Pumping Plant, one mile and a quarter above the ranch. There is someone here all the time generally, I think a family that looks after the pump which pumps the water over the mountain to Delmar a distance of 128 miles. We visited the place a time or two.

Some of the children and I started to climb the mountain to the southwest of the house, this mountain rises to the height of 1700 feet and is nearly perpendicular on the east side. We only went up about one third of the distance when we returned. I was a little tired and I feared that it would be too much for Mary to continue the climb.

October 30th, we all took a ride down the canyon some five miles, it was quite a romantic place and what we call in Arizona a Box Canyon. There was very little land that could be cultivated, the canyon was so narrow. Frances had about twenty acres strung along in two or three places and she had a little water for it that raised in the canyon a short distance above, but in some seasons of the year there are terrible floods come down here and later the railroad track was washed away for many miles.

In the evening there was a gathering of some of the neighbors of which there were but very few, the nearest was the Pumping Plant. We however had a very pleasant time.

There was a school teacher living with Frances, Miss Laura Hansen, who was teaching a little school for Frances and two or three others, Clair Carson later married her.

October 31st, I started out on my return home. Frances, Lazelle, and Mary took me up to Caliente where I took the train for Salt Lake City.

November 1st, I arrived in Salt Lake City about 9 a.m. I went down to my sister Julia's place. She however was living with her son-in-law Mr. Stanley.

During the day I called at William Hunt's place but he was not at home. I made a call on Sister Soderborg and went back and took supper with my sister Julia and then bidding her goodbye took the train for home.

At Provo Sister Emmer Brearton met me at the depot and gave me a bundle of things to take to her father John Reidhead. We soon continued the journey.

November 2nd, we arrived at Grand Junction at about day light where I changed cars and went on the Colorado Midland and arrived at Colorado Springs at about 7 p.m. The scenery along this route is grand beyond anything in this mountain country. At this place we lay over for a short time when we again resumed our travels.

November 3rd, I arrived at La Junta at 2 a.m. and here I lay over a short time, when we again started out and arrived at Las Vegas at about sunset where we took supper.

Continuing the journey, I reached Holbrook on the morning of the 4th at 9 a.m. where I found Aunt Eliza and all well.

I had been laid off so much that my expenses had been more than I had expected and so on my return journey I had but two dollars to last me through from Salt Lake City. This only enabled me to get a lunch occasionally as I could not go and get regular meals. I was very tired having lost so much sleep and I did not get much on the trains. However, as I found the store in a rush shipping some grain, I washed myself and in about an hour I was back at my old post at work as usual. I had hardly felt justified in taking this trip on account of my financial condition, but the children and all had urged me to make the trip and I felt paid for the journey for it was the last time that I ever saw some of them.

1905-1906
Chapter 109
I Am Arrested By U. S. Marshal

About February 10th I received a letter from my sister Annie dated February 8th, 1905. She gave some items of interest about family affairs, said that they had heard from my sister Jane and that she had been sick or something of the kind so that she could not put on her stockings for two years, but she was able to wash. This was the last letter that I ever received from Annie.

March 13, 1905, I have not kept my journal very regularly and have often omitted for a long period to put anything down. But there was but little out of the usual. But upon this date a circumstance occurred that I have mentioned sometime before, that is the divorce of Adelaide. Brother Joseph H. Richards brought it down today for me to sign which I did and sent it back to President Jesse N. Smith. It was in three copies, one sent to Joseph F. Smith, one for Adelaide, and one for myself. I will not go over the ground again as to causes, etc., but I can say that I did not consider it a divorce but simply an agreement that we would not live together as man and wife.

April 1st, 1905, it rained and snowed all day today and I was told that on the mountains at Cooley's, the snow was three feet deep. It was the worst storm that we have had for many years.

About the last of the month I received a letter from my sister Sarah dated April 26th, 1905 stating that my sister Annie had a paralytic stroke on the 22nd and died the next day. It is possible from the way her letter reads that it was on the 26th when she died. She never spoke so Sarah said.

June 4th, 1905, about this date I received a letter from my nephew, Donald A. McGregor informing me that his mother, my sister, Sarah, died on May 31st, at Parowan. This was another sad event and I did not think when I visited them last fall that they would pass away so soon.

As stated, I have not kept up my journal as I should have done and I find many breaks or gaps where nothing is recorded but I suppose that nothing occurred but my regular work in the store and going out to some of the towns as a missionary occasionally.

August 13th, I went up to Woodruff today and took my wife Eliza with me, also Horace's wife Rea. Horace has been in Holbrook for sometime running the pump for the railroad. I attended meeting and returned in the evening.

Senator DeBoise from Idaho has been working up a move against the Mormons and he had brought strong pressure on the officials in northern Arizona to prosecute the polygamists in this action. The officers were compelled to do something and a vast number of witnesses were procured from this section and St. Johns, my wife Adelaide being among the number. So we knew that something was being done and we all that were liable were looking for the office to come and arrest us, but there was but one from this district that left on this account, the others all decided to stay and meet the case, be it what it may. The result of this effort of Senator DeBoise was that there were ten of us arrested in this district.

August 14th, I was arrested this forenoon by Deputy U. S. Marshal Gregory for unlawful cohabitation. As stated, I was looking for this. There were ten of us arrested at the same time. The marshal told me that he would want me the next morning and then went off. Jesse N. Smith's son, Silas S., I suppose, was also indicted but he left the Territory and did not return for several years when the indictment had been set aside. The marshal had arrested several and taken them to St. Johns to give bonds before he arrested me.

August 15th, the marshal had arrested Henry M. Tanner of St. Joseph and had procured a team at the livery stable, and we started for St. Johns where we were to give bonds. We drove to Woodruff where he arrested Levi M. Savage, and he was then taken on with us and we four proceeded on our way to Concho where we put up at Lopez's Hotel (a Mexican establishment).

August 16th, we drove over to St. Johns where we soon got our bonds fixed up, G. P. Anderson and James Savage and Tanner also got bonds and we three took dinner with Brother C. P. Anderson after which we all started on our return trip, the Marshal included. We reached Concho at about 4 p.m. where we got supper and then as the weather

was so warm we thought we could travel on in the evening, so we continued our journey and traveled a greater part of the night when we stopped to let our animals rest and get a little grass and we lay down on the ground for awhile. After resting awhile, we went on and reached Woodruff at about 7 am. Here we made another stop to rest our team and I got a little breakfast, when Brother Tanner, the Marshal, and I went on, Brother Savage remaining at Woodruff. The lying down on the ground during a short time in the night gave me a bad cold which lasted me for some time.

October 5th, it will readily be seen by my dates that I have hardly pretended to keep a journal.

I had considerable work in employing lawyers to defend us. President Smith left most of this work for me as I was at Holbrook. I wrote to E. S. Clark of Prescott and asked him what he and R. E. Morrison would take our case for. He said that if they had them all, they would take them for \$150 each, that meant \$1500 for the ten of us. I reported to President Smith and he said that was rather high and thought that we had better go to trial without lawyers so I reported to S. E. Clark that we could not afford to pay it, but it was not a question of money with them, and stated, "and we both wish to state that our services are at your command, or any of your friends in like circumstances, whether we ever receive any money from you or not. If you feel that you can pay something now and then, all right. If not, this may be taken as an assurance that no demand will ever be made, or any indebtedness claimed, except that arising out of the obligations of mutual friendship and esteem." On these conditions I engaged them and we were all agreed on this, but some of the St. Johns men were a little afraid of Morrison, fearing that he could not be trusted as he had been an extremely anti-Mormon when he had resided in St. Johns. The ten were: J. W. Brown, --Butler, A. V. Gibbons, D. K. Udall, Nothlesberger, J. N. Smith, J. W. Smith, H. M. Tanner, L M. Savage, and Joseph Fish. They handled our case in a masterly way and I do not think that there were many who paid the full fee of \$150. President Smith did however.

My wife Eliza left this p.m. to go down to the Gila with my daughter Jessie May. Lee had sold out at Woodruff and was moving to the Gila Valley. Jessie was in very poor health and they wished Aunt Eliza to go down there with them and stay awhile.

Since Aunt Eliza had been with me, the time had passed off so smoothly that I miss her very much now that she has left and I was now compelled to seek another boarding place. I had been here for several long and lonesome years boarding where I could get a chance and sleeping in the store and now I was thrown back to the same old life. I continued the work much the same, taking a missionary trip occasionally.

December 5th, I received a letter from Aunt Eliza. She said that Jessie May was very sick and in a most critical condition. She was rendering all the service that she could.

The weather was rather cold for this time of year.

December 8th, our Polygamy cases came up in Prescott, we had all plead guilty except Brother Gibbons who fought his case and was cleared. He had some grounds for doing so as his second wife lived at Woodruff and he did not stay with her.

The lawyers had arranged it so that we did not have to attend court. We were fined \$100 each, except Brother Savage, he was later on fined \$50.00 I believe. I sent my \$100 and got the receipt dated at Prescott, December 14, 1905. We were now free again and felt as if we had got another trouble off our hands. This all was the work of DuBoise, our local officials did not care to bother with it, but were forced to do so.

The spring of 1906 opened about as others that had come and gone, we had one of the coldest winters that had been known for many years and we were glad to see the spring.

With all these changes, rustle, and ups and downs of life, I neglected my journal so that I have but little to record.

Aunt Eliza returned this spring, Jessie May had got better after her confinement, so Aunt Eliza and Ambrose came back. She always took Ambrose with her.

On her way up she took a very bad cold and was taken down so that her case was extremely dangerous and it looked as if we were going to lose her. We did what we could for her and finally I took her up to Woodruff where I thought that she would have better care. When we started off with her, some of the women said that they never expected to see Aunt Eliza again. Julia did all that was in her power but she did not improve very much. Apostle Cowley was in this part of the country and as he passed Woodruff, Aunt Eliza sent for him and he administered to her and she got better rapidly and it was almost a case of instant healing and in a very short time she was back with me at Holbrook. She had faith that if Apostle Cowley would administer to her that she would get well and her faith cured her, you might say.

This year marks a sad loss to the community, that was in the death of President Jesse N. Smith who died June 5th, 1906, and few felt the loss more than I did. He had been as a father to me and was a man that never faltered in his friendship. I had been closely connected with him the greater part of my life. I was not present when he died but went up to the funeral and as Brother Hulet was up to Snowflake I could not be spared from the store very long so the day of the funeral which was at 10 a.m. I started very early, got a livery team and was up there in time for the services, and spoke on the occasion. This loss to me was a sad one. He never blamed me for Adelaide's leaving me, neither did any of the family. But the place never seemed like home any more and I told Adelaide when she left that I would not stay in the country, it might have been foolish but I looked forward to something else.

Notwithstanding this, I bought a house and lot and about 16 acres of land in Woodruff. I did this more to help Roland out than anything else. He took the land and I kept the house for Aunt Eliza. Roland got married on April 2nd, 1909, and he took the house to live in until I quit the store as I was intending to at this time.

The last year or two, Aunt Eliza had kept quite a number of boarders, she had a few the most of the time that she was in Holbrook, but the last few months before I left the store, she had over a dozen. But she took them so low that she did not make very much.

My son Horace had gone out near Williams to tend a telegraph office near the Grand Canyon and from there he had moved to California where he worked around for some little time, and then went into the telegraph office. There he worked for a long period.

I had made preparations to quit the store, things never seemed the same after Brother Smith died. I had been there now about 14 years quite steady, having had one vacation of 30 days. Of course I got out quite often to Snowflake, St. Joseph, and Woodruff on my missionary trips and other business, but many of these trips were made in the night and were rather hard, as I had no sleep during the nights that I went back and forth. This was done to save time and as the mail went in the night both ways, I could not avoid the night rides if I went by that conveyance.

1910-1916
Chapter 110
I Quit the Store and Move to Woodruff

During the winter of 1909-10 I gave Brother Hulet notice that I wished to quit the store on the first of April. I had thought I could do better to be at home and looking after my own affairs. The boys were young or rather Wilford was not experienced in farm work much, and Roland had got married and of course was working for himself.

I was in debt to the store and was leaving before I was able to pay up but just before I let there was an examination of persons to take the census of 1910. I took the examination and succeeded in getting through so that I had a job in a few days after I left the store and succeeded in getting enough out of this work to about square me up with the store. This also gave me a suit of clothes and considerable of a credit in my account which placed me out of debt at the time as I remember, but I soon had to draw again and so was in debt again in a short time. Then I went to work to get out as one of our main customers said once that he never could do anything until he got in debt and then he went to work to get out.

Not keeping a journal at this period, there was one thing that I have omitted and that was the birth of a daughter and so I will insert it here. January 13th, 1908, my wife Julia gave birth to a daughter, this p.m. I was notified by phone of my wife's sickness and procured a team from Jesse Crosby and went up to Woodruff and arrived there an hour or so before the child was born. We gave her the name of Delma and she was blessed by John Reidhead on March 1st, 1908.

April 1st, 1910, I left the store as I have stated that I had arranged to do, and my boys Roland and Wilford came down to move us up to Woodruff. They brought two teams, Roland's and mine. We loaded in all our things, what furniture we had and such things, and it was surprising the amount we had as I have stated Aunt Eliza had been keeping boarders and naturally we had accumulated many things that we otherwise would not have had, such as dishes, chairs, tables, etc. We had two bulky loads as they were not packed very close, and we moved up to Woodruff. Food for our animals had been very scarce with me and my team was very poor and weak and one of the animals gave out just before we got through but we made it through but had to travel quite slow.

I now spent a few days in arranging things, Roland was living in a part of the house and continued to for some time. I had planned to keep a kind of hotel when we moved up here and had got some lumber and Roland had previously put up the frame of two rooms on the end of the house. They were small, just large enough for a bed each but we soon had them boarded up and painted on the outside and papered on the inside so that they were quite convenient and neat looking if they were small and made of lumber.

I soon started (in a few days) at the work of taking the census. I was to take the district from the county line down the Puerco to Holbrook. It took me several days to get through with this place. There was a work train here and that took me some time to get through with that.

Going on to Penzance, I found quite a number here at the rock quarry, they were just preparing to move and were getting their derricks ready to load, so I captured this company before they moved away.

I then went up to Linden, a distance of some 50 miles from Holbrook, but before this I took the census at Woodruff. I went around Linden gathering up the scattered ranches and then worked west to Pinedale, after visiting the scattered ranches and then I started west.

I stopped one night at James Scott's ranch west of Pinedale. He was one of our old customers at the store and he treated me royally as all sheep and cattle men do travelers.

Proceeding on I visited the several ranches and gathered up all I could and went as far as Heber, and after visiting those in that vicinity, I turned back by the way of Phoenix Park where I found Dan Holcum and then visiting some other ranches by the way returned back home.

This work took me several days of hard work driving through this unsettled forest to the different ranches but I arranged it so that I found a place to stay every night.

Our little grandson Ambrose went with me on all the rounds. He was of that disposition to always be on the go, so I took him along. Of course he was of no real help but was company when we were traveling which was much of the time while I was working in the forest district.

During the year 1912 and for some time after I was on the school board and clerk of the board at Woodruff.

During the year 1912 we got in correspondence with a school teacher in Connecticut by the name of Pratt. We had some correspondence back and forth and we finally engaged him and his niece to teach our school. All arrangements were made, price fixed, and date to commence school started.

In a short time after this Elders Charles Hart and W. A. Morton visited as missionaries from Utah. They learned of our school affairs and strongly objected to our employing an outside teacher, and wished me to have the contract canceled. I told them that it had gone too far. They then told me to make it a matter of prayer, which I did.

The day arrived for Mr. Pratt to commence school but he did not arrive. I telegraphed back to his address in Connecticut and his brother answered the telegram and stated that Mr. Pratt had started for Arizona to teach school. We waited for some time and then were forced to hire anyone we could. We never heard of Mr. Pratt again but I think that he came to Arizona a few years later.

We now employed a young man from Flagstaff School and a young lady from Los Angeles. We were now worse off than we were before, for the young man was not a Mormon and was good looking. (Employing gentiles was the objection of the Elders that had visited us). He was not married. He started the school and made arrangements to board with me and during the vacation Christmas time, he went to Winslow where he married a girl that he had been keeping company with. He brought his wife up and they both stayed with us during the remainder of the school term, and during the time we had many talks on religion. He did well with the school and at the end of the term we hired him for the next year. When the school ended he said he was converted to Mormonism but his wife was not.

The next fall he came back to teach again but before the school started he said that he and his wife wished to be baptized, and after consulting the Bishop I baptized both of them. The next year they both went to Salt Lake City and had their endowments, and soon moved to Snowflake where he taught school several terms, and did good work as President of the Religion class. I have heard since I came to Utah that he entered the Forest Service, and that he and his wife did n to get along very well. But George L. Haynes was an earnest worker and a self made man and did well to come up from a cowboy to what he did.

In June I was on a missionary trip up at Pinedale and vicinity and while there I received a phone message from Brother Hulet saying that his son who was keeping the books at the store wished to take a vacation for a month and wanted me to come back and keep the books while he was gone. I suppose that he was going to Hingman to see his girl. So I went down to Holbrook about the first of July as I remember and worked there a month. It was a time when the wool money was coming in, and although the labor was not hard that I had to do, I sent to the bank money that we took in during the month a trifle over \$31,000 a little over \$1,000 a day. This shows that we did some business, but this was an exceptionally good month of course, as it was the month when the wool money was coming in.

I was getting comfortably fixed at Woodruff, Aunt Eliza kept a hotel as the neighbors called it. There was not a great deal of travel and some of that was persons whom we could not charge. I kept the mail animals for D. K. Udall and that brought in but very little. I soon got the post office to look after.

Before I left Holbrook I heard that Jesse DeWitt was going to resign and he promised to let me know when he did so that I might get it. This he did not do, but sold his place to Fay I. Gardner and Fay's wife got her papers in before I knew anything about the affair, but Mr. Clark of Holbrook wrote to Ralph Cameron, our Delegate, and got me appointed. I kept the office a little over four years or until I resigned to come to Utah. I build a small room for the office which made seven rooms that we had but they were not much after all.

I soon had several other offices in the church, I was High Councilor, teacher of the Parents class, and had charge of the teachers work, clerk of the High Priests Quorum, ward clerk, etc. Besides I was secretary of the Woodruff Irrigation Company as well as one of the Board of Directors. I was one of the school trustees, and clerk of the school

board. I was elected Justice of the Peace, my commission was dated November 3, 1914. I was appointed before this to fill a vacancy. I recorded all births and deaths and reported the same to the Doctor. All together I held 13 offices before I left Woodruff but they of course were of but little consequence and many of them brought no pay and the others but little. The Justice's Office was on a salary of \$8.00 a month, and the Post Office paid about \$10.00 a month, and I had to furnish my own house.

A year or two before I left the place, the St. Johns and Springerville people got the government to change the mail route so as to cut Woodruff out, having it go by the Petrified Forest. The government, however, provided that we have a mail three times a week, it had been daily before.

Just before they got the mail route changed there was an underhanded game worked against the place. The mail still coming by Woodruff, but an auto line was put on going by the Petrified Forest, and in this transaction there was an agreement between the parties that the line going by Woodruff would not carry any passengers, so a person could not go to St. Johns or to Holbrook on the mail as that line would not carry them. Occasionally the driver would take a person and let him off before they got into Holbrook so that no one would know it.

This state of affairs of course did not last long, but during this time a person wanted to go to St. Johns and phoned down to the auto at Holbrook to see if they would come by Woodruff, no farther than the other route. They phoned back that they would come around for \$5.00 extra charges.

While here at Woodruff there was an eastern company figuring on making a reservoir about two miles above town and take out the water to irrigate several thousand acres along the Colorado Bottom. They had secured a vast tract of land near here and considerable below. They had two engineers at work here and below for over two years. R. W. P. Greig was the principal man or the one who took charge of this work. They did an immense site of surveying, locating their lands and leveling to see where the water would go and surveying sites for reservoirs.

They wished to keep record of the amount of water that passed by the place, so they got me to keep this record for them. I got a stick and fastened it in the water just above the dam and marked on it the feet and inches from the level of the dam up and also marked on the rocks so that if any accident happened to the post that I could keep the record on the rock, but the latter was not so accurate as the post, as the water was still where I had the post. I put down just how high the water was every morning in a book giving the number of feet and inches the water was above the dam. For this work they gave me \$6.00 a month. I kept the record for over two years, until the dam went out, when the project was abandoned, that is this part of it.

Greig stopped with us occasionally when his work was near by. He was of Scotch extraction. He had worked some in Mexico and different places. He was an agreeable and pleasant man, and liberal in his dealings.

During my many labors I had not neglected my historical work. I had tried several times to get it published, and in my work had extended labors outside, and finally my work covered the pioneer work of all the west. The Historian of Arizona, Miss Charlot Hall, came out to see me about my work, and stayed with me a week looking it over, that is the *History of Arizona*. Finally after consulting the Governor about it, she made me a proposition to buy the work and offered me \$500 for it. I let her have it and she agreed to have it published, with the understanding that she was to group the items together a little different, that is separate the Indian wars from the other matter a little more. She asked permission to make this change which I of course granted. In the settling up for the work she wrote me that there was but \$350 in the treasury and that was all they could give. She had the work so I let the matter go.

In a short time there was a change of Governors, a Democrat coming in and Miss Hall resigned. Mr. T. E. Farish came in and he now started in to write up the *History of Arizona*. He used my work as reference. He soon reported to me that there were 210 pages out of the center of the work gone, he supposed that it had been stolen and wanted to know if I had a copy and could replace it. I did not have a copy but sent him a few items that I gathered up that might help him out some I thought, but it was impossible to make the story complete.

I never knew where the 210 pages went to but there was one thing pointed to the late historian. She had contracted to write a history of Arizona for a firm in the east soon after her resignation or about that time. She however took sick and was unable to write it and Mr. McClintoc wrote the work and it is possible he fell heir to the missing papers as he doubtless got all of Miss Hall's papers to work from. These were some of my conjectures.

I, in the meantime, had been working on my historical work which I blocked out to cover seven volumes calling it the Pioneers of the Rocky Mountains.

April 16th, 1915, our dam went out this morning at about sunrise. The Lyman reservoir above St. Johns had broken some time before this and we had been notified by phone of this and we had plenty of time to arrange for getting out of the town before the flood could travel the seventy or eighty miles. Every one moved out of town and took some of their effects as it was thought that the flood would cover the town, or we were fearful that it might, so the night of the 15th we camped on the hill close to our dam and watched with great anxiety what effect the flood would have on the dam and town. We did some work putting up logs, etc. to protect the town and also to strengthen the dam. The water commenced to come down along in the night and continued to rise and about daylight it was a fearful torrent and commenced to run in the town some but did no damage. A break was soon made in the west end of the dam and then the structure soon went. This was the most discouraging blow that Woodruff had ever had, they however had lost ten dams before this, but this was put in so that they thought that it would stand any flood. The rock work of the dam was some 45 feet high and stood 15 feet above the water and this flood went over the rock work for some time before it gave way.

The loss of this dam had its effect and several wished to leave the place as it would cost so much to build another. I for one thought that I might do better somewhere else as I was getting rather old to work at putting in another dam. I soon decided to leave and go somewhere else but did not hurry about it.

The Board of the Irrigation Company had several meetings and many plans were suggested. The first move was to try to save our crops that were in or at least a part of them. We sent up to St. Johns and procured a pump and an engine and put it up on the bank of the river and pumped the water out of the river for our crops. This was not quite sufficient but it helped out, but it was found to be very expensive. Wood was hard to get near by and it took a good load every day, and then it took two men to run it, one in the day and one in the night. This was very expensive and we became greatly discouraged about this mode of irrigation. I spent most of the summer in looking after the work with the other members of the board. We got engineers to make several surveys to see if we could get the water from Silver Creek down without touching the Colorado. This we found to be a difficult matter.

During the summer I wrote several letters to different places to see if I could get land and water and on what terms. I received several letters and pamphlets which pictured out each place to be a paradise but it took money to get in on any of these places.

Knowing that the Government moved slow I early in the fall resigned my office as Post Master and in February 1916 I turned it over to Adelbert Hatch who had been appointed as Post Master, after I had the office a little over four years. I also arranged with him to let him have Aunt Eliza's place. Aunt Eliza had gone to Utah to attend the home coming at Parowan in September and she would look around while there to see where I could get a place. I let Adelbert Hatch have the place, 7 rooms and quite a good orchard, a kind of a barn, etc., for \$800 and took it mostly in a team and wagon. Of course I could not get half what the place was worth after the dam went out. In the trade he settled a bill that I was owing at the store.

February 9th, 1916, I went up to Snowflake with Fay I. Gardner and attended a meeting of the High Council that was held on the 11th. The next two days our quarterly conference was held. Statistics and reports were the main feature of the conference. I returned home on the 14th with German Reidhead.

The work of getting plans and survey to get the water out had been going on for sometime and I had spent considerable time at this work. The Board had a great many meetings at which different plans were suggested.

We got some engineers to make a survey from the mouth of Silver Creek down the box canyon making ditches, flumes around ledges, and syphons across the river. This was to avoid taking the water from the Little Colorado as this stream did not afford any water in the dry part of the year when it was needed the worst, and when the floods came it brought down as high as 52% of silt which was ruining our land, for this sediment, when it dried was almost as hard as a brick. In this there were many surveys made and at last we decided to take the water of Silver Creek out a short distance above its confluence with the Colorado and bring it down as stated above by ditches where they could be made, and flumes probably in places around some of the ledges, and syphons to cross the river.

February 26th, President Samuel H. Smith and his counselors, James W. Flake and Aloh Larson, came down from Snowflake and they looked over the dam site and gave their approval of the selection. And I might say here that I, as one of the board, made the first selection of this place. The next day they spoke at our meeting and gave us some encouragement in going ahead to repair our loss.

The next day was a cold and windy one. Work was going on in constructing the ditch down the box canyon. The Church had made a donation which was to be used in buying the material, powder, tools, etc., and the people were all at work that could be and some from Snowflake were helping with the work.

March 11th, we were having very fine weather almost like summer. I went up to Snowflake today with Q. R. Gardner in his auto. It was an old Ford and we had more or less trouble with it. This was the first Auto owned in the place. He was a member of the Board of Supervisors and had made some turn while in Holbrook to get it.

I attended Priesthood meeting at Snowflake and a meeting of the High Council. At the Council meeting a vote was taken to release Bishop Silas L. Fish on account of his labors as teacher in the academy as he wished to follow teaching in the Church Schools. John Bushman was also to be released from being Bishop at St. Joseph so that he could do genealogy work as he wished to work in the Temple.

While here I made arrangements to sell my house where Aunt Julia was living, and the land, 16 acres, to Maurice V. Reidhead for \$1300 He was to pay me \$500 down in a team, wagon, etc., and gave his note for the other \$800 to be paid on March 1st, 1917. There was considerable credit on the ditch work that went with the place and near \$150 that Wilford had in the lower valley project that he got but he was to pay for it separately. He turned over the team, wagon, and an old harness, and bought a few things that we had in the house such as the stove which was about new and a secretary, etc. but he failed later on and could not pay the \$800 and I took the place back and arranged later to pay him or the loss he had sustained, that is for what he had advanced me on the place.

March 12th, Joseph C. Hansen and George A. Smith were home missionaries at Woodruff.

March 16th, I was now arranging to move, but I did not as yet know where I would go. I went up to Snowflake today, took my wife Julia and son Wilford. We spent a couple of days in visiting around with the folks there as I was anxious to return to attend to some affairs at home, I returned with M. R. Tanner in his auto. We started early and arrived soon enough to attend the Priesthood meeting in the morning.

March 23rd, this was a cold, windy day and the next evening it snowed enough to cover the ground.

March 30th, I settled up with Adelbert Hatch, he turned over the team and wagon, a second hand one, three ponies and a set of old harness \$1209.13 on the store and \$210.57 in cash and one or two small items making \$800 for Aunt Eliza's place. I settled up a few days later with Reidhead and he paid me as stated above, but he failing, I never got any more and had to take the place back.

March 31st, I spent the day in making out the teachers report and the ward quarterly report. I had kept the ward accounts as well as some others up to the very last thing as Bishop Savage did not wish me to quit as long as I remained in the place. Finally I turned over the ward records, etc., to Brother Adelbert Hatch, as the Bishop had selected him to take my place.

1916
Chapter 111
The Move to Utah

April 9th, 1916, I have been very busy in settling up different accounts and getting ready for my move.

We had missionaries today, Prof. Young from the Snowflake Academy and Milo Webb. I spoke a short time.

My son Roland who had been living at Snowflake for some time came down last evening, to see me before I went off and went back this morning. Sister Emma L. Smith, widow of Jesse N. Smith and her son Don Carlos came down from Snowflake to see me before I went off. She had been in Mexico with us and we had shared the hardships and toils of that hard and tedious trip, they went back in the evening.

April 12th, after the many labors of settling up with different ones and the packing up and no one knows how much stuff he has until he moves, I made a start, bidding the neighbors and relatives goodbye. I had my wife Julia along and her children, Wilford P., Hannah, Addie, Jesse L. and Delma. We had three wagons, I drove one, Wilford One, and Hannah drove the other the most of the time. Jesse drove a part of the time, but Hannah drove over all the worst roads.

We went as far as Holbrook where we took dinner with Lawrence Monson, my daughter Della was there. Here we had a short visit and then drove on to Henry M. Tanner's place where we stayed all night putting our horses in his pasture. We were kindly treated by Brother Tanner's family and they did something to help us off in the morning as we had one mean animal and we had some difficulty in starting.

April 13th was a cold stormy day. It snowed and rained all day, with a cold wind. It was one of the most disagreeable days for traveling that I ever experienced on account of wet and mud. I was wet through and very cold. We however dragged along through the mud and got to a point a little below Hardy where we stopped near a wind mill, having managed to come about 15 miles through the mud and were cold and wet.

April 14th, we drove to a windmill about ten miles north of Winslow where we took dinner. We took this road for fear that the river was so high at the crossing that we could not ford it so we went around this way to avoid crossing the river. In the afternoon we traveled about ten miles, turning the bend of the river.

April 15th, Saturday, We drove to the river just below the old crossing. We found the road around this way rather rough. There had been so little travel this way that the road was very difficult to follow, and we got an Indian that was coming to come near the road and show us the right way along here.

Having got to the river below the old ford we struck the old road and followed down it to a point opposite an Indian School which we were told was Loupe. Here there were so many roads leading out in various directions and some almost exactly the way that we were going that it was difficult to tell which one to follow until we had gone some distance. We got started on the wrong road, but only went about a quarter of a mile when we camped, and the next morning I discovered that we were starting out wrong so went down to the other road. This proved to be the wrong one, I should have gone on about one hundred yards further to have got the right one, the three roads turning off and keeping so near to each other for some little distance that they were misleading.

April 16th, following this road for a little distance, I saw that it was leading me further from the river than I ought to go, but I continued on for some distance to an opening where I could cut across and save turning back. Riding out a little distance I discovered where I thought we could reach the river by turning west so we turned off this way and for a short distance pulled through a terrible heavy sand ridge. Striking a wagon track we followed it to the Grand Falls where we stopped and watered the teams and the girls went over to view the falls, we then drove on about four miles.

April 17th, we continued on down the river passing on some distance below the Black Falls where we camped.

The next day we drove to a point a little below where the road leaves the river, where we struck the road that goes from Flagstaff to Tuba City and we now decided to take this road and go around by Tuba City. This was a good road

and we traveled on to within about eleven miles of Tuba where we camped. We did not have any water, in fact we often camped without water, but we had a barrel along that carried enough to give the horses a little and we had a keg that held enough for camp use, and we generally got to water early the next day.

April 19th, we drove up to Tuba City where we took dinner and I bought 200# of oats and a little hay at two and one half cents a pound.

There was an Indian School here and some very fine rock buildings. These buildings for the school were made out of a red sand stone and looked beautiful but the rock was too soft to last any great length of time and I thought from appearances that the buildings would wear away in less than fifty years so that they would not be fit to use.

The Indian School was going on apparently in good order. The boys and girls were out to play and appeared to be a happy lot of children. Some of the Navajos however refused to have their children go to school and this sometimes leads to trouble and is one of the disagreeable features of these Indian Schools. There had recently been a rupture of this kind which was now quieting down some, parties having been out from Flagstaff to settle and patch up the differences.

In the afternoon we drove over to Willow Springs where we camped, next morning by some accident we took an Indian road that was being traveled considerable and bore off to the west. I soon discovered that we were being led astray and so returned, we met an Indian who told me that we were on the wrong road after we had decided to turn back. We had a sick horse which detained us for awhile and this with taking the wrong road had occupied the forenoon. We then proceeded on.

As we had been detained we traveled until about 10 p.m. It was so dark and the road in places was rather rough, so one of us went ahead with a lantern to look out the road and bad places. We drove on to near Limestone Tanks where we discovered an Indian camp fire, here we camped.

April 21st, in the morning I found the Indian camp and one of them directed me where I could find plenty of water. The government had aided them in making some small reservoirs so that they could water their sheep and goats. This little reservoir was about a mile above, so we drove up there.

Jesse went on ahead and did not stop at this water, and while we were unhitching we missed him and a search was started. We tracked him for a short distance. He evidently was lost and we got a terrible scare. Julia was almost frantic with fright. She feared that the Indians had stolen him. After we found which way the tracks went, Wilford got on a horse and followed up above some distance, when he found him by hallowing. He was evidently lost and had climbed up on a small hill to see if he could locate the wagons. Wilford soon returned with the boy behind him, which set us all right again after a short search and a terrible scare. After filling our water barrels, we drove on over the ridge and made a dry camp.

The next day we met a light vehicle with two men. They had been across the river prospecting. I wrote a postal card and sent by them to the folks. This was the first team that we had met on the road.

We reached the Colorado River but it was so late that we did not get ferried across.

April 23rd, the Johnson Brothers came over and we soon got across. We then drove down to the house where we lay over the rest of the day. There were but the two Johnson boys here and they stated that some of the time there was but one of them here to tend the ferry. They were hired by Coconino County to tend the ferry as it was being kept up by the county and all fees for crossing were turned to the county. We were treated very well as travel was so scarce that they were glad to have someone to visit with for a short time. They furnished us some milk and brought out a bucket of apples, we enjoyed our short stay with them.

April 24th, Monday, we drove over to Soap Creek where we filled our barrels, there was but very little water seeping along through the sand and the cattle had been up and down the wash so much trying to get a little water that they had made it so filthy that it was not fit for use. We drove on some two or three miles and made a dry camp.

April 25th, we continued our journey through a sandy country and our progress was slow through this belt of sand. We met a man a foot making his way toward the ferry. He stated that he was making his way to some mining camp in Arizona. We took dinner at a place called Jacob's Pool but the place was some four miles from the place of that name that was on the road that we traveled in early days. The water has been brought down for stock in pipes from the spring above. They had informed us that there was a herd of buffalo in this vicinity but we failed to see any of them. We drove on to House Rock Corral, the water here had been brought down in pipes some four miles from the House Rock Springs. Here there was a house and corral, watering troughs, etc. We found a man here who said he was trapping for the government. We saw one wolf before we got to the place that he had caught and scalped.

April 26th, from this place the road went directly west up the Buckskin Mountain. This was a new road to us; the old road kept on to the north and crossed the mountain at a considerable distance from this place. We found climbing the mountain a slow job, winding around on the points and hollows. We had to double teams in many places and after the hardest day's drive that we had on the trip we reached Jacob's Lake about sunset, fourteen miles distant from where we started in the morning. Here we found banks of snow along in places in the road and the mountain was covered with pine trees. There was a pond of water here and there had been a sawmill and the sawdust was in the water, so that it was so impregnated with the pine that this stagnant pool was not fit for use. There was no grass of any kind. The man at the House Ranch had told me that he thought that I could find a little grass further to the south so I went over there as soon as I arrived, but failed to find any. We turned our animals out to pick as best they could. I found an armful or two of old hay and straw where they had fed some animals, probably the forest rangers. This our horses picked over a little, but it was a hard supper after such a terribly hard days pull up the mountain.

April 27th, from this place the road turned more to the north and was all down hill and most of the way was very fair as they were making the auto road through to the Grand Canyon. This road continued on south from Jacob's Lake so after we left the lake, we had good roads and all down hill. We came up with a couple of teams that had taken some supplies up for some of the camps and were returning to Kanab with lumber, one of the men was named McAllister.

We reached Fredonia at about night after our 31 mile drive, and here I found a couple of men by the name of Judd. They were sons of Zadock Judd, an early resident of Parowan, I got pasture for my animals from one of them, he made no charge for the same. I was grateful in getting this and was willing to pay, for it was a great help, as our animals were greatly in need of something after their long fast.

April 28th, we drove to Kanab, some 8 miles distant, where we stopped for a short time and went to look at the old buffalo that they were keeping here. It was a very large one and was the first that the children had ever seen.

In the afternoon we drove to Johnsons where we stayed all night with Julius Mackelprang. He had been in Arizona and had done considerable trading with us at Holbrook. He was not feeling very well when we were there. The floods had cut a deep wash through the place, so it was not passable only in places where it was bridged or fixed in some way. The place had not grown any, in fact there were not as many here as there were the last time that I had visited the place. There is but little land here and less water.

April 29th, we drove nearly to Sink Valley. The road today was rough and heavy pulling. There was no feed anywhere along in this vicinity and water was scarce as well. One of the animals gave out. We turned it out and it managed to follow along, but some of the time it was quite a ways behind.

April 30th, we drove to Sink Valley where I got a little grain. It was a cold and windy day with flurries of snow occasionally.

Sometime after we passed Alton we were so cold that we stopped in a ravine to get out of the wind and built a fire to get warm, then moving on we stopped at an old log house near Hatch Town where we got a little shelter from the wind, and during the night it froze quite hard.

May 1st, 1916, we drove on to Hillsdale where I procured a little hay for a nooning and then went on to Panguitch where we camped in the Coop. yard. I went around some in the evening to hunt up some of Allen Miller's children but those where I called were not at home. I was told that they were out of town.

May 2nd, we drove down to Orton where I met a son of my old friend, William Lafever, and had a short talk with him. His father was up to Panguitch and I did not get to see him.

Soon after leaving this place a boy came along who was going to Parowan. He was horseback and I sent a note to Aunt Eliza that we would be in Parowan the next evening.

In passing up the lower end of Lower Bear Valley we got stuck in a mud hole and were detained some time in unloading a part of the load and getting out.

While here, three of the Topham boys came up, they were from Paragoonah and were out here looking after stock. The Tophams were largely interested here in the stock business. We managed to get to the lower end of Upper Bear Valley where we camped. The night was cold and disagreeable, freezing quite hard.

May 3rd, we passed over the divide, and here met some of the Thornton boys going around by Panguitch to their mill as the snow was as yet too deep on the mountain to get through by the Parowan Canyon. We were soon going down the Little Creek Canyon. We reached Parowan in the afternoon where we met a warm greeting from Aunt Eliza and many relatives and friends. We stopped with Jesse Ward, and the next day I spent in visiting around with relatives and friends.

May 7th, I attended Sunday School and meeting and spoke a short time at each. I visited around some, and the next day I wrote some letters and made some preparations to go to Salt Lake City, mainly to see if I could get my History published, and on the way to look for a location where I could make a home.

They were very short of hay in Parowan and it was a hard job to get anything for my teams, but finally we made arrangements to put them in a pasture of Ed. Mortensen's, about four miles from town, and Wilford did some work for him to pay the bill.

1916-1917
Chapter 112
A Trip to Salt Lake City and Looking for a Place

May 9th, I started for Salt Lake City. I went over to Beaver with D. Barton who was running an auto line to that place. Prof. Olsen who was going through the country giving some lectures was along and we had quite a pleasant chat on the road. On arriving at Beaver I stopped with my daughter Josie. We were pleased to meet each other again. Her husband, John Barraclough, had to recovered from the stoke that he had some years ago. He could hardly talk so as to be understood.

I called on my nephew, Joseph F. McGregor, and a few old friends, Wilson G. Nowers among the number.

May 10th, I took the auto line for Milford at 3 p.m. On reaching Milford I took the train for Delta where I arrived at about 11 p.m. I had some difficulty in finding M. M. Steele's although it was but a short distance from the depot. The night operator directed me wrong. As one of the Steele boys had a store and hotel, the directions got mixed up, but I finally found the place.

May 11th, I spent the day visiting with my brother-in-law, M. M. Steele and family. I took supper with my grand daughter Mattie Moffit, she was Josie's daughter and was living here.

I took the morning train for Salt Lake City, and on the way fell in with Prof. Young from the Snowflake Academy and before getting to the city I met Judge Armstrong who had been holding court in Tooele County. He was quite interesting, telling me about the different places, the mines at Bingham, etc.

On reaching the city I went to the office of Marks and Jensen in the Atlas Building where I found my son Joseph S. who was practicing law partially for himself and was connected with them in a measure. I went with Joseph S. down to his home some 5 miles south of the city and took dinner with him and his wife and then returned to the city. I then went to the historian's office and had a talk with Andrew Jensen about getting my historical work published, after which I returned and went with Joseph S. down to his home where I stayed all night.

May 13th, I went up to the city and spent the forenoon with my sister, Julia, and took dinner there. This was the last time that I ever saw her.

In the afternoon I went to the historian's office. I met Brother Jensen who took me around to see about my work being published. After going to a place or two we went to the Deseret News Office where we met Brother Horace G. Whitney, Business Manager of the News. I explained in short time that I wished to get my work published on the royalty plan. He turned me down rather rough and abruptly saying that they did not publish anything only as they were paid for it in advance. Brother Jensen thought that I might revise the volume on Arizona and make it more of a Church history and then the Church might possibly take hold of it and publish it. I left all the manuscript with him for the present. I went down and stayed all night with my son Joseph S.

May 14th, my son Joseph S. and I went up to the City early this morning and he took the train for Tooele where he was going to give an address on Mother's Day. In a short time after, I took the train for Provo where I stopped with Richard Brearton and wife. It snowed the greater part of the day, being a damp snow it nearly all melted as fast as it came.

May 15th, I spent the greater part of the day with Richard and his wife. I met several old friends during the day. I saw Professor Johnson and Young from the Snowflake Academy. I sent to the real estate office where I made some inquiries about getting land at Delta and also at some other places. I took the train at 11 p.m. for Delta.

May 16th, I arrived at Delta at an early hour and spent the forenoon with M. M. Steele talking up the proposition of getting land at that place where I could make a home. I took a ride out to the west down to Abraham and around to look over the fields and land. I found a vast amount of land, some very good and some that appeared to have considerable mineral in it.

May 17th, I took the train at 6 a.m. for Milford and on arriving there I went up to beaver with Frank Lyman where I spent a short time with J. F. McGregor and Josie and then went on to Parowan with Lyman, where I found all well but Wilford was having a hard time with the horses as feed was so scarce and the pasturage was not good where they were.

May 25th, I have spent the time since I returned from the city in looking around to see where I could locate, and did some visiting with relatives and friends. I had decided to go to Delta and see what I could do there, so I started out today and went as far as the Beaver Ridge. I took all my outfit with me. Aunt Eliza was along.

May 26th, we made a very early start and arrived at Beaver a little after 9 a.m. where we stopped with Josie. The next day Aunt Eliza remained here to visit with relatives and friends and the rest of us moved on going as far as Pine Creek where we stayed all night with my grandson, Ambrose Barraclough. He had a fine ranch here but it was rather high and cold to farm much and there was no great amount of water for the land.

May 28th, We drove on to Kanosh where we stopped and looked around some and then drove out a few miles and made a camp in the sage brush, there was no grass for our animals.

May 29th, we continued our journey, passing through Meadow, Fillmore, and Holden. We turned west from this point and going on for some distance over a rather sandy and heavy road for a part of the way we reached a place called the Haw Bush, a sharp ravine or wash where there was a large Haw Bush growing on the bank. Here the state had put down a pump so that we were enabled to get water and we found a little grass. These moves and traveling was quite expensive, as grain alone had cost us about \$3.00 a day for every day that we traveled since we left Woodruff.

May 30th, we continued our journey but our pet mare had a colt during the night so we had to lead that in and haul it as it was not able to travel.

We reached Delta a little after 2 p.m. and stopped with my brother-in-law, M. M. Steele. In the afternoon we went over and looked at a piece of ground that I had talked to him about when I was here before, a forty acre piece, and after some talking the matter over I told him that I thought that I would take it on the same terms that he was taking it from the company, that is take it off his hands. The place was about two miles to the northeast of town, it was a kind of bench land.

May 1st, I looked around some to see what I could do if I took it for a place to live in. Brother Ezra Bunker had an old house that he wanted to sell and I finally told him that I would give him a horse for it if he would help me move it. In the afternoon I moved up on the land and made a camp where I thought of locating, we of course were camping out.

June 1st, I looked around some among some of the neighbors that had located on this bench and they talked very discouragingly about this bench land, said that there was a heavy bed of gravel under the top soil and that water soaked through so that it took an immense amount of water to raise anything on it. The agreement with the company that Brother Steele was to pay for it on the installment plan, which would amount to about \$4,000 in ten years for forty acres, and if I took it, I was to take it on these terms.

June 2nd, I began to realize that I would hardly be able to pay for it from this farm, as it would produce but very little from what I could learn, without considerable water. So I went down and told Brother Bunker that we would call off the trade for the house. I talked the matter over with Brother Steele and his wife, the latter spoke rather discouragingly of my taking the place. We talked of getting another place where I could get into. Mahonri said it was all right to call the trade off, as nothing had been done about it but talk and propositions made. I came to the conclusion to return to Kanosh and see what I could do there as I liked the place from what I saw of it in passing through.

June 3rd, we started out on the back track and drove as far as the Haw Bush. Next day we followed the road that we came in on for some distance when we cut across on another road to Fillmore leaving Holden to our left. We met a great number of teams going out from Fillmore to the railroad for freight. I was a little surprised at this as it was

Sunday to see so many starting out on this day. We passed on through Fillmore and drove nearly to Kanosh camping on the ground where we came as we went out.

June 5th, we drove into Kanosh, where I stopped and had a talk with Bishop Kimball who gave me some information about affairs. A man by the name of Gardner had a place in the Uinta Basin that he would let me have on reasonable terms he said and I came near going there. I phoned to Aunt Eliza about going there, but she objected unless I came back to Parowan first. As I understood her, she did not want me to go off there without her, and I could not thoroughly understand her on the phone.

I found that there was no land at Kanosh that could be taken up, and city lots were about \$500 each and farm land was about \$100 an acre cash. Of course I had no cash to speak of and could not buy in, so we studied on it whether to go back to Delta and rent for the present or go in to Parowan and then look around again. Julia was not in favor of going back to Parowan, but in talking the matter over, a word was dropped that decided me to go back there for the present.

June 6th, we started out and drove a little past Cove Creek and the next morning we went on to Pine Creek where we stopped and got an early dinner. Ambrose Barraclough and family were not at home so we went on to Indian Creek where we camped for the night. Indian Creek was the old name of the place, it was now called Manderfield.

June 8th, we drove on into Beaver and found Ambrose Barraclough and his family just ready to start for Idaho and his father and mother were going out to their place at Pine Creek to care for it until they came back, so we did not make a long stop but drove on past the Beaver Ridge where we camped, and the next day drove on into Parowan, where we went and stopped at James Mitchell's camping in his yard. Aunt Eliza had returned from Beaver before this. I was tired with the continual traveling and worry trying to get a place, and found that it is hard to get a place in an old settlement without plenty of money.

June 11th, I attended meeting and spoke a short time.

June 18th, I have spent the last week in looking over the country in this vicinity and of course visited some of my relatives and friends. There has been some sickness here, four deaths in three days. One was Sister Hadden, an old resident of the place, and one was Stephen Thornton, a son of my old friend Stephen Thornton of earlier days.

June 20th, while at Beaver I had a talk with J. F. McGregor about a place some six miles below the town near where he was taking up a place so I went over to see about this proposition. When I got there McGregor took me in his auto down the valley and then we footed it over the land to find corners, etc., and returned to own going to the records we found that the place we had looked at was already filed on so this stopped this plan.

June 21st, I went up with Ed. Barraclough to look at their land they wanted to sell it as John was not able to do anything with it. There were 23 acres of it and located about four miles from town. It was mostly in lucern, it was rather rocky and there was no much of a water right to it, they wanted \$50 an acre for it and would give me time on it. I returned to Parowan in the afternoon.

June 24th, I went to Cedar City with W. H. Lyman to attend the quarterly conference there. The main reason perhaps was to meet Brother Andrew Jensen who told me while in the city that he would be down to this conference and I wanted to see him again about my historical work, but for some cause or another, he did not come down. Brother McMurrin was the only one of the authorities present. The conference was not very well attended, I spoke a short time during the afternoon session.

I stopped all night at the Hotel, but Brother Dalley paid my bill. The next day at the Sunday meeting the attendance was much better. Brother McMurrin spoke upon the subject of looking after the spiritual welfare of our families.

I returned to Parowan in the evening with Brother Wilford Day. I soon arranged to start to Beaver to see what I could do about the Barraclough place and on the morning of the 26th, we all started out again except Aunt Eliza who remained here until I could get located. We drove to Fremont's Canyon where we camped.

June 27th, it was my 76th birthday. We started very early and got into Beaver early in the day. Josie was out to Pine Creek and we camped in her yard. Here I spent a few days in looking around. Ed Barraclough was away so I could do nothing about it until he returned.

July 2nd, I attended Sunday School and meeting, the former was well attended but the latter was not.

The 4th was celebrated as usual with a parade, a meeting where there were speeches and songs, etc.

July 6th, I had found that the title of the Barraclough place was not good but Ed. Barraclough said that they would guarantee it. But I did not like the shape that it was in and besides it was hardly what I wanted on account of water right and so far from town.

I made arrangements with the State Bank for a place that they had taken in on a debt. It had a beautiful location about two miles from town but was not on any road so that it was a little out of the way. There were eleven acres of land, five of it in lucern and five pasture land, there was a frame house on it, three rooms. I was to pay \$1165 and take the lucern etc. that was on the place.

July 7th, I moved one of the wagons down to the place, and the next day I moved the other two down and we commenced to unload and arrange the things so we could live in the house.

July 9th, I attended Sunday School, there was no regular Sacrament Meeting today. My daughter Delma was baptized today by George W. Smith and confirmed by Joseph F. McGregor. I now spent considerable of my time in fixing up the place, some of the windows were broken out and had to be replaced and the barn had to be remodeled. There was a pond of water near it and the boys from town had come down here to swim and had built a fire near the end of the barn and burned out a part of the end. A corral had to be made and a chicken coop, all of which took time and means, and I was very busy for sometime.

July 22nd and 23rd, the stake conference was held. Apostle Joseph F. Smith Jr. was present and there was considerable talk on the Word of Wisdom.

We had all joined the ward except Aunt Eliza who was still in Parowan.

July 24th, the day was celebrated by a parade, meeting, etc. The Primary Association was the moving faction in getting up the celebration.

August 5th, I have been working some for Joseph McGregor making a new corral and starting to put up a barn, tearing down the old place so as to put up the new building in place of some of the old shed, etc.

There was a very heavy rain storm with some hail that did considerable damage to the gardens, also to the grain and hay. It was about the heaviest for a few minutes that I ever saw.

August 2nd, I went over to Parowan today to get Aunt Eliza and I took my little daughter Delma with me.

On the 24th, the people of Parowan celebrated the day by laying the corner stone of their new meeting house. They had a program.

August 25th, I had brought a horse over to try and sell him to help out as I had more horses than I needed. Sidney Burton said that he thought that he could sell it to some of the men who lived on the desert when they came in for lumber, so I left the horse with him to try and sell, but he did not succeed in selling it and sent it to me later on.

We went back to Beaver today, I taking Aunt Eliza and quite a number of things that I had left here, we got home a little after dark.

September 2nd, I have been very busy fixing up around home and preparing for winter. M. M. Steele came in from Delta today to attend the Republican convention.

September 3rd, I attended Priesthood meeting and Sunday School and spent the greater part of the day with Brother Steele talking over old time incidents, etc. He started back home at 5 p.m.

On the 10th we had a frost that killed all the tender plants.

September 13th, I had worked considerably for Brother McGregor helping Brother Clay put up a barn and today I painted the roof which was made of iron roofing.

Our Quarterly Conference was held on October 21st and 22nd, Apostle James E. Talmage and Brother Rulon S. Wells were in attendance. I spent an interesting evening with them at Brother McGregor's where they related several interesting incidents.

October 24th, a telegraph message came this p.m. to George Thompson stating that my sister, Julia Thompson, died in Salt Lake City today at 12 noon. I was unable to attend the funeral. I later learned that blood poison was the cause of her death. She had struck her hand against something and knocked the skin off and later blood poison set in.

December 25th, Aunt Eliza had been living in town and today she and Josie came down and we all had a Christmas dinner together.

It has been very cold of late, more so than common. There has not been so much snow but a fierce cold wind from the north has prevailed much of the time.

Hannah has been going to the Academy, it is about four miles distance from where we live and it has been very hard on her as she drives her own horse and the care of the horse is an extra item which she was up there. She took a passenger or two each trip.

December 31st, at our meeting today, Brother William Norton from Salt Lake City gave us some very interesting talk on Religion Class work. I had been appointed one of the ward teachers. John A. Smith was my partner. We visited 18 families during the month, this was more than was allotted to us but we visited them in place of the Bishop's visit.

January 3rd, Alvin M. Fish left going on into Nevada to hunt work but he soon drifted back to the old home at Woodruff.

The next day I went up by invitation to the Murdock Academy and delivered a short lecture to a class on the early missionary labors in the Rocky Mountains.

January 20th and 21st, our quarterly conference was held but owing to the extremely cold weather, that we were having, some of the general authorities were not present.

The weather this winter was much colder than usual, the thermometer often went down to 21 degrees below zero, and then there was a fierce north wind considerable of the time which made it much worse. There was never such a winter here so said many of the old settlers.

1917-1918
Chapter 113
The Move to Enterprise and Labors There

In the forepart of February, 1917, Bishop Farnsworth called Benjamin Lillywhite and myself to go around as home missionaries and visit the members of the ward. We commenced our labors on the 13th of the month and continued until the 16th of March. We visited during this time 171 families and a total of nearly 900 souls. We worked at this nearly every day from about 9:30 a.m. to about 5:30 p.m. We visited every house as we went and found several apostates and non-Mormons, but out of the total there were 600 members of the Church not including children that had not been baptized. We found considerable indifference in places as to religious duties, only about one family out of seven had family prayers.

We came to one rather curious case; a man who was married and had a family and was supposed to belong to the Church told us that when he was a boy his parents sent him to the place where they were baptizing to be baptized. He did not go there but went and got in the water and had his clothes wet and then went home and his parents supposed that he had been baptized and on further inquiry was made. This shows that the parents were very careless and indifferent on such matters, or they would have found out about it before this. I think that there was another boy with him in this deception, but I am not positive that he stated so. We did not quite finish doing all the members of the ward, some who lived some distance from town were not visited as I was not preparing to move away.

The winter was quite severe, with some snow.

March 1st, Alanson Reidhead, my wife Julia, son Wilford, and daughters Hannah and Addie started out south to see if they could find a better location, or one where we could get a start without so much money to start with. The main thing that discouraged me was that I was notified that Maurice V. Reidhead could not pay me and that he would throw up the place in Woodruff. I had depended on this to help pay for the place that I had bargained for. To add to this I heard that their new works for taking out the water at Woodruff had gone out and this had rendered the property almost worthless so that I saw no prospects of selling the place at present to anyone. With these misfortunes I could not see how I would be able to pay for the place I had bargained for. So I thought that I had better throw up the place and go where I could get in and work my way up, that is take up some land and develop it. For these reasons I, as well as the rest of the folks, thought it best to look for another location and the very severe winter had made me think that a little milder climate would be better. So the folks started out as stated and were intending to go to Enterprise and look around in that vicinity and then go over to Hurricane and look over that section of country.

March 9th, the folks got back from their southern trip, they were not gone as long as I had expected. They did not go to Hurricane as they found what they thought to be a good location at Enterprise. Their report was very favorable as to the country visited and they all thought best to go there and try to make a home.

March 10th, after getting the report of Reidhead and the folks, I decided to throw up the place I had bargained for, I had not paid anything on it as yet, and the failure at Woodruff put me in such a position that I could not see how I could pay for it. I paid the bank something over \$100 for the rent, pasturage, etc.

Last night it was very cold, freezing so hard that I crossed over the ditches on the ice this morning as I went from town down to the ranch.

March 26th, I made a start for Enterprise, I had the wagons and a carriage. I had traded off one of my wagons for a carriage to Walter Talton. I took with me my wife Julia, and children Wilford, Hannah, Addie and Jesse, I left Aunt Eliza in Beaver and Delma remained with her to go to school. Eliza was also caring for Alanson's little boy, Roland who was going to school. She would leave Beaver as soon as school was out and go to Parowan.

It was a cold raw day but we drove to Minersville, 18 miles, where we stopped all night at Rube Dodson's who was an early acquaintance in Arizona. We got a place for our horses and were treated fine by Rube and his wife.

March 27th, on leaving Minersville this morning we went south and traveled west of south to the Lewis Ranch 25 miles. There was but very little travel on this road. This place was occupied by two or three of the Lewis Brothers,

being a dry farming project. They had a windmill which furnished them with water for house use and their stock. They had cultivated considerable land but complained that the rabbits had destroyed much of their grain, etc. At this time there was but one of the boys living here. The old man, their father, had perfected his title and had gone back to California.

March 28th, we drove to Lund, 12 miles. This was a railroad station where most of the southern country got their freight, etc. The mails for most of the country south and the freight came to this station.

We drove on to Sahara where we camped for the night. The country that we passed over today was truly a desert, but we found houses all along the route, they were trying to dry farm and some of them seemed to be encouraged in this work, but it looked a little discouraging to me. Later many abandoned the country but some appeared to make a success and especially where they put in pumps and got water to irrigate some.

March 29th, this was a cold, windy day. We traveled due south to the Eldridge farm 12 miles. Here was some good land the they got water from a large canal that enabled them to irrigate. Here we stopped and I bought a bale of hay from one of the boys, and in conversation I found that they were grandsons of Horace S. Eldredge and my cousin Hannah Adams.

In the afternoon we drove on past the hotel and got stuck in a ditch. One of the Eldredge boys came along and helped us out, but not until he broke two single trees and one tug. After getting over this place, we came on a little distance and camped in among the sage brush. It was a cold and disagreeable night with flurries of snow.

March 30th, a very cold and windy day, we drove to Enterprise where I at once looked about for a place that we could get into out of the wind and sleet. I met Art Truman who told me that his brother had a house that was not occupied, that he was in California and might be back in a week more, that there was nothing in the house and that I could go in there for a short time.

March 31st, we unloaded our things at the house, piling most of them on the porch, and I found that there was a chance to do some freighting, we soon fixed up a kind of rack for hauling some baled hay to Modena. This was a great help to us for we were now entirely out of money.

April 1st, Wilford and Jesse loaded hay to take to Modena. They were to get 20¢ a hundred, the distance was about 20 miles.

I was not feeling very well but went to meeting. Brothers Terry and Morrison were the speakers.

At the close of the meeting there was another meeting called to consider the subject of raising means for the building of a school house. The committee reported their labors and said that it would take about \$16,000 to complete the building as designed.

I met George A. Holt who was the Bishop and told him that I had come over to try to get a place here. He told me to look around and not be in a hurry about getting a place. I went and saw the Forest Ranger, John Benson, about a place that was said to be on the reservation. Later I went to look at it, but I did not think that it would answer, as there were but a very few acres that could be cultivated on it. The water was only a little seep which might do for house use but the country around was broken and rocky and not very good for stock as but little grass was found here, so I soon decided not to attempt to take this place up.

April 2nd. I went down to the Ivins farm about two miles from town to see about renting some church land, I met Antone Ivins who told me that his father was in Salt Lake City and that his father had the land in charge. I looked around some the remainder of the day, and the next day tried to see where I could rent land, also rent a house, as I could not expect to occupy the one that we were in but a short time. I found land for sale but it was for cash down.

April 5th, I went up above Old Hebron to see William Truman Jr. about getting his house that was in town, it being vacant. He promised to let me have it in a few days for \$5.00 a month. He wanted to get the things out of it first. As we went up the canyon we found some snow banks in the road and from all appearances there had not been very much travel over the road this spring.

Wilford and Jesse came in from Modena where they had been with freight.

April 7th, I helped to set out some trees on the Meeting House Square; there were quite a number of them, but the following year was rather dry and they were not properly cared for; and most of them died. The Relief Society furnished a lunch for all the workers which I should think were a good portion of the men in town.

April 8th, I attended meeting and spoke during the services.

Four of the boys from this place left here yesterday to enlist in the army in the war against Germany. This war was attracting considerable attention even in this remote part of the world.

The next day we had a light shower of rain.

April 10th, I drove over to Newcastle to look at that place and see if I could get a place there if I liked the place; my wife Julia was along. I stopped with Bishop Forscythe who treated us very kindly. I saw the Bishop's father and a Mr. Cox who had land to sell, but they did not have any water right to dispose of, that meant simply dry farming. City lots were from \$75 to \$150 each, they had a little water right with them. There was plenty of land in this vicinity but very little water and it looked as if the place could not grow very much unless more water could be had by some means, reservoirs or pumping. I returned the next day.

April 12th, Brother Joseph Holt offered to rent me some land for \$20 an acre and I would have to pay the water tax. I did not know what this would amount to and I was afraid that I would not be able to raise the money and could not take much on these terms. Those who had land to sell wanted cash down.

April 14th, Wilford and Jesse who had been to Modena to freight had got back today, they generally took 8000 pounds getting 20 cents a hundred. It took half of what they made to feed the teams.

It was a very cold night and froze quite hard.

The next day I moved into the house I had rented from Brother Truman. It snowed some during the day, and it was very disagreeable in moving.

The next day or two I was busy in fixing up things, making a kind of chicken pen or coop and arranging things. The house was not very large and we had to leave most of our things in the wagon boxes.

April 19th, Wilford and Jesse returned from Modena where they had been with another load of hay. They were shipping out considerable hay, Wilford said that he helped to load seven cars hauling part of the hay.

April 20th, Apostle A. W. Ivins came in last evening and I went down to see him in the forenoon in relation to buying or renting some of the Church land. He told me that the Church has not as yet got their title so would not sell, but thought that they would rent some, he would see when he returned to the city and let me know.

April 22nd, I have worked a little about the lot that I had rented, fixing to raise a little garden.

I attended Sunday School and meeting. Apostle Ivins spoke at the meeting. Stake President E. R. Snow and Brother Grow also spoke. The main topic of the remarks was for the people to raise all the grain possible as it would all be needed. In the evening a meeting was held at which the ward was reorganized, Bishop George A. Holt was released and his son George O. Holt was sustained as Bishop with Grant Ivins and Jacob Hunt as his counselors.

The next day I worked at cleaning off a lot for Brother Lamb for which he gave me some corn.

April 26th and 27th, I worked cleaning the brush off a piece of land that belonged to Brother E. O. Norr. Iver Clove had taken the job and had done some work on it and got me to finish the job, paying me partly in hay which was greatly needed by us.

On the 27th, Wilford and Jesse started for Newcastle to load hay for Modena, and the next day it rained and snowed and on the 29th the snow had fallen to the depth of about 8 inches, but much of it had melted so that there was only about 4 inches on the ground. The boys had a very bad trip this time for it was mud and snow all the time.

May 6th, the new Bishopric took charge at the meeting today. The weather has been very disagreeable and I have not accomplished very much during the last week.

On the 7th I received a letter from Ed. Parry of Cedar. I had sent him a paper to sign in relation to my service in Captain Andrus Company, I was applying for a pension. He had signed the paper and sent it off. He told me that he had kept an account of those of the company who had died, and out of the 63 that there were then but 25 living. He stated that the members of the company, by some trick, had been cheated out of their pay.

May 11th, I drove to the Holt ranch and down in the field about two miles and got the 500# of hay that Clove owed me for the work I did in clearing off the brush as stated above.

Sunday the 13th, I was not very well but I attended the Sunday School and meeting.

May 23rd, Alanson Reidhead came in this morning. School was out at Beaver and he had brought Aunt Eliza over to Parowan and then came on to Enterprise bringing our daughter, Delma.

On May 25th it rained some. We are finding it very difficult to get food for our animals, those that had plenty of hay contracted it and it was all shipped out of the country, leaving those who had none in a cramped position as they could not buy it.

I was quite sick during the night of the 28th, but it did not last long.

The boys that were freighting came in from Modena and started off again on the 30th for more freight.

June 2nd, the boys had returned from their freighting trip and have started to get in a few potatoes on a piece of land that we had rented.

On the 15th I started for St. George to attend the quarterly conference. My daughter Hannah went along with me, I also took Frank Hunt and wife and their little girl. We drove to Chadburns on the Clara where we took dinner and then continued our journey reaching St. George at about 8 p.m. where I stopped with Donald A. McGregor my nephew. The next day I attended the meeting where I met a few old friends, among them was William Gardner, John Houston, and Ed Brown.

June 17th, I attended the meetings. The main subject with most of the speakers was to save every particle of bread stuff possible and to do our part in this world war that was going on in Europe.

June 18th, Alanson Reidhead and Wilford who had been hauling some freight for the Power Plant, came in today, they had arranged to meet us here to look up some land matters. We went to Bishop McFarlane's to look up the land that we were desiring to enter. Frank Hunt, who was acquainted with the land more than we were although we had been over it, assisted us in locating the quarters that were the most desirable. We finally fixed it up for Hannah to enter a quarter section just north of Old Hebron and Alanson Reidhead kindly gave her the money to make the entry.

After getting this fixed up we drove to Damoran (Diamond) Valley, and the next day we reached home. The roads were quite rough and in some places sandy.

On the way we stopped at the Mountain Meadows some two hours for dinner and I spent the major part of the time in going down and looking over the ground where the emigrant train was attacked. This brought up many reflections upon the many changes that had taken place during the 60 years that had passed and the contrast in conditions that existed then and now.

June 26th, I made some arrangements to get a city lot from Joseph Holt, it was situated next to his brothers, the Bishop. I expected to get some means for my place at Woodruff and was to pay him \$350 for it in the fall. I commenced to get out some rock and hauled several loads. The next day was my 77th birthday and I spent it at work around the place.

July 4th, there was quite a celebration of the Nation's birthday. During the parade a span of horses got frightened and ran away, breaking the buggy that they were hitched to. It ran among the people and about half a dozen persons were injured, but none of them seriously; the worst was an Indian who had a shoulder dislocated or broken. It was a wonder that no more damage was done.

July 7th, I went up to the place that Hannah had taken up, about a mile north of Old Hebron. There was a kind of seep of water, hardly enough so that an animal could get a drink. I cleaned out the spring or seep that came out from a clay bank, and grubbed off some brush which was very large and thick.

The next day Apostle Ivins spoke on faith at our meeting.

July 24th, the day was celebrated in the usual way, but I was not feeling very well so did not attend the meeting or sports.

August 4th, I have been doing a little towards building, I hauled fifteen loads of rock, dug a trench for the foundation some two feet deep, got some lime from Brother Crawford and laid the foundation up to the surface of the ground. Then came another disappointment, not getting my pay from Woodruff as I had expected and the time being up that I should pay for the place I gave it up leaving all that I had done.

September 5th, 1917, my wife Julia and daughter Delma started with Alanson Reidhead to go back to Arizona on a visit. They were going by way of St. Thomas, crossing the Colorado near the mouth of the Virgin River, I think. They had a wagon that was nicely fitted up for a sheep wagon, with stove, etc., in it, almost like a house. Alanson had lived in it ever since he had come from Idaho.

In the afternoon my son Silas L. came in from Provo on a visit. I was greatly pleased to see him, but he was too late to meet Julia and Delma. As he could not stay long and we had arranged to go over to Parowan, we used the short time we had to the very best advantage. We went around the Town to look over the place.

September 6th, we visited and looked around town in the forenoon and in the afternoon we started for Parowan. I took one team and Wilford took one so that he could bring back a load of lumber. We went as far as Juel Spring, some seven miles east of New Castle; it was quite dark before we reached the place and we had to watch along the wash very close to find the place, but finally we came to the spot where we camped.

September 7th, we drove to Cedar City where we stopped to get a lunch, here I met Reese Williams from Kanarrah, the man that built one of my houses in Snowflake while I was working in the store. While here I had one of my dizzy and sick spells that I had been bothered with for sometime, but I got over it during the afternoon.

We arrived at Parowan a little after dark. My wife Eliza had been working at Walter Mitchell's sawmill cooking, and had just come down. We were pleased to meet again after a series of hardships and joys and disappointments.

September 8th, I spent the day in visiting around with my son Silas, we called on some of our relatives, Mrs. Hannah Lyman, Mrs. Julia Lyman, Dr. Frank Burton, Ed. Burton, Horace Burton, and some of Aunt Eliza's relatives. We went up to the cemetery and looked over where many of our relatives were laid to rest.

September 9th, I attended meeting and spoke a short time. John E. Dalley who was an old resident of Parowan and now living in Idaho was present and spoke.

My son Wilford started back for home this p.m. with a load of lumber.

September 10th, Silas L. and I started over to Beaver. It rained some during the trip, but we had some pleasant conversations as we had had along our trip. On getting through we stopped with Josie.

September 11th, Joseph F. McGregor took us up to the Academy where we looked over the building and visited some with old friends. They were cleaning up and preparing to start their school.

We returned and took dinner with Joseph F. McGregor and family after which Silas started on his return trip for Provo. While he was around with me he suggested that each of the children and grandchildren donate 25¢ each to help to buy the material for a house, (cement blocks). He wrote to them about it and they sent in about \$46.00, he however gave the lion's share. Our visit had been most cordial, although very brief. His friendly manner which he is blessed with was more appreciated perhaps, as his mother had become so cold and indifferent.

In the afternoon I settled up a few accounts that I had not met before. The bank was not willing to allow me anything for the improvements that I had made on the place that I turned back to them, I did not think that this was right.

September 12th, I had left my books and some other things here when I went to Enterprise. I loaded them into the wagon and went back to Parowan.

September 13th, I attended the quarterly conference at Parowan. There were present of the Church Authorities: President Joseph F. Smith and his counselor, Anthony H. Lund, Bishop Charles W. Nibley, and his counselor, David A. Smith; Apostles Heber J. Grant, Hyrum W. Smith, Joseph F. Smith Jr. and Stephen L. Richards; Brothers Joseph McMurrin and Andrew Jensen; besides several of the sisters, and all spoke during the several meetings unless perhaps the sisters. I attended meeting the next day and met President Joseph F. Smith, Anthon H. Lund, and Andrew Jensen. I gave the latter a clew where he could find some of the early records of Parowan as I had seen them in the possession of Josiah Rogerson at Beaver. Of course Rogerson had no right to them.

September 15th, I loaded up and prepared to start back to Enterprise and just as I was starting, Edgar L. Clark phoned me to call around at his place which I did and he gave me 150# of flour. He was a liberal and wholesouled man, although there was one thing that I regretted, he had never come back into the church. He had in earlier days, been cut off unjustly, as he thought, and it was probably the case. We drove down to Samuel Mortensen's place where we stayed all night, Aunt Eliza was along with us.

September 16th, it froze quite hard here last night, killing the potato vines, and this frost was quite general, as it was about the same at Enterprise; but we found at New Castle that it was not so bad there.

We drove to the Edwards Ranch about two miles below the Woolsey Ranch, where we stayed all night. A man by the name of Stout who was going out on the desert to peddle, stopped here with us.

The next day we reached Enterprise at about sunset. I found that Hannah and Addie were up to Frank Hunt's place looking after things there while Hunt and his wife were at St. George.

The next day we spent in putting away out things that we did not use at the present. I got to put the stove, books, etc., at Frank Winsor's place. The books were put in his granary where there were plenty of mice and they got into one of the boxes and nearly ruined three or four, and damaged some others.

September 19th, I went up to the ranch and took Aunt Eliza with me. I worked at cutting cedar posts to build a stockade house. I returned the next day.

September 21st, Wilford had left a part of the lumber at Enterprise as I did not want all of it at the ranch and I cut the rafters for the ranch house today.

On the 23rd, Apostle Anthony W. Ivins spoke at our meeting.

The next day I went up to the ranch, (this was the place that Hannah had entered) and worked there the rest of the week, mostly on the house.

On the 30th I was not feeling very well so I did not go to meeting.

I was expecting to have to give up the place I had rented so I had been looking around for another.

October 7th, today was fast day. I attended the meeting and spoke.

I have been at work the most of the week at the ranch. There was plenty to do, a house to build, corrals to make, and any amount of grubbing the sage brush, which was about six feet high.

October 8th, I received a letter from Joseph W. Smith stating that Alanson Reidhead had been there and was trying to collect something on my property at Woodruff, but that the prospects were very discouraging at present. He stated that three of Della's boys had gone to war; Joseph F., Albert, and Lazelle.

October 10th, my grandsons, Charles and Harold Fish, came in from the north, Charles had been working some for Richard Brearton at Provo, and Harold had been to Salt Lake City to get married to Miss Ellen Hatch. I was up to the ranch when they came, but word was sent to me and I went down to town to see them.

October 11th, I visited some with the boys and they went around town and in the fields looking over the country, as they were looking for a place to locate if they could find one to suit them. In the afternoon they returned to the north.

October 19th, I have been at work at the ranch and have the house nearly done, one room 14 x 16 feet. I made it of cedar posts setting them on end in a trench and sawing the tops off even, then I put on a plate to set the rafters on.

On the 22nd and 23rd I worked at digging my potatoes which turned out fairly well.

November 3rd, I have been at work considerable of the time at the ranch. Aunt Eliza went with me and she helped in clearing off the brush.

I received a letter today from Julia. She had been trying to dispose of my property at Woodruff but could not get an offer. The people there had spent every cent they had in trying to rebuild the dam and they had not nearly got it completed. She did not know when they would start for home.

November 5th, I had not been able to rent a place in town as all the ranchers moved in to town to spend the winter, so I decided to move in the house that I had been working on at the ranch. I took a load of things up today and finished covering the walls of the house with tar roofing and returned to town the next day.

November 8th, we all moved up to the ranch except Jesse, he remained to go to school. He was to board at Brother Lamb's, doing his chores to pay for his board, such as milking, cutting the wood, etc. Wilford has been at work on the reservoir. I was busy fixing up. I made a door, but did not have any windows, but I got a couple of small ones soon after.

November 25th, Wilford came in last night from his work but returned this morning.

I have been at work making a corral, stable, etc., and cutting some fence posts. Wilford has the team, so I do not have one here, and so do not go down to town very often, and I miss the meetings.

There was a little snow on December 2nd, it fell about two inches deep but it did not last long.

December 16th, Alanson Reidhead, my wife Julia, daughter Delma, and Alanson's little boy, Roland, came in from Arizona today. They had been delayed from one cause or another so that they were four weeks in journeying, but had got along very well. I had been looking for them for several days.

I have been at work most of the time upon the place grubbing brush, and making a stable, digging into the bank for a part of it, which will make it quite tight and warm, also making a corral.

December 21st, I have been at work for a few days pat helping Jacob Bushar to put up a small frame house on his ranch about a mile and a half from our place.

January 2nd, 1918, the new year passed off very quietly with Aunt Eliza and me. The girls had gone down to town to spend the holiday. I went down to town today to sign some papers in the draft business which stated that Wilford was needed at home to help support the family.

On the next day my wife Julia went down to town for the purpose of caring for Jesse and Delma while they attended school. She and Wilford came up on the 16th and went back the next day. She had engaged a room of Elias Hunt for the rest of the winter. Brother Hunt was a very kind and accommodating man and had rendered me several accommodations.

Wilford had worked on the reservoir all the forepart of the winter, and when that work stopped he went to work with Alanson Reidhead hauling up hay and feeding Pulsipher's stock, and as this did not take them all the time, they worked at making fence for someone. I worked at cutting posts when the weather would permit.

The weather thus far this winter had been very fine for winter weather. On the night of the 12th we had a little snow.

We do not get the news from town very often as I seldom go there, and we do not have a team here.

I have been putting in some of my time in cleaning off brush, in which labor Aunt Eliza and Hannah lend a helping hand. When it is not fit to work out, I put in the time writing up my journal.

February 11th, my wife Julia came up from town and the next day I went back with her. I went down again on the 17th and attended meeting and spoke during the services, and after the meeting I returned to the ranch going up a foot as I sometimes did when there was no team going.

On the 18th, we had a little snow and the next day Wilford came up and brought us a few things and returned.

February 25th, It has been a stormy week and rather disagreeable with wind and rain, but we have not had very much snow during the winter. But I put in the time chopping, and when it is too bad to be out I find employment on my journal. Take it all around, we have passed a very enjoyable winter.

March 3rd and 4th, it rained the most of the time, a very gentle rain, the best that we had this year.

I went down to town on the 15th and while there Brother James V. Coleman asked me if I wished to rent his place as he was intending to go off for the summer, after talking this matter over I took the place, two rooms of his house, I was to pay him \$4.00 a month rent. I was to farm about 14 acres, the lot where the house was and the rest was in about four or five pieces; he was to have half of the crop.

March 19th, I have been setting some posts around the farm and today we had a slow steady rain, and it continued the next day, and on the 21st it snowed, falling about 6 inches deep.

March 30th, Brother William Truman and I visited the families between our place and town as teachers and on reaching the Hall place he returned home and I went on down to town, and the next day I attended the meeting. This trip practically ended my labors at the ranch, I moving down and leaving the place for Wilford and Hannah to care for. I now commenced to fix up and get the Coleman place in shape. About the first work was to irrigate the lucern, they generally did this early when there was plenty of water. I had a cold job this time, for it snowed all the time I was at it, and I did not have any rubber boots which made it still worse.

April 17th, I have been plowing some and working in the garden. Aunt Eliza came down a few days after I did, and we moved into one room of the Coleman house, and soon got the other room.

My grandson Ambrose Fish came in today, he had been working in Holbrook and went to Los Angeles to enlist in the navy. He was too young, but he had put his age ahead some to get in, but after getting there he was turned down

on account of his eyes, so he came here. I got him a few things out of the store that he needed, such as a pair of shoes, shirt, and overalls, etc.

April 26th, it has been cold and windy for several days.

A few days ago I received a letter from Joseph W. Smith of Snowflake stating that there was a prospect of getting something out of my place at Woodruff. I had about given up all hopes of getting anything for it.

May 22nd, the spring has been very cold and very little rain of late. I have put in a little corn and did a little irrigating, but the water is low and things look very discouraging for much of a harvest.

On the 28th it froze hard enough to kill the beans that were up.

June 2nd, yesterday and today were the first really warm days that we have had, I have been at work putting in some garden stuff. Hannah, Addie and Jesse came down last evening and went back today. Wilford has been irrigating for John Pulsipher, he has worked for him considerable, he went up to the ranch today. I attended the meeting.

June 9th, all the folks came down from the ranch yesterday except Julia and Delma and they walked down today.

Word was given out at meeting that this ward was expected to buy Ward Saving Stamps to the amount of \$9200 and that this would be about \$77 for each family. The war and rising money was the main talk wherever you went.

June 14th, about the first of the month I turned our cow out on the reservation getting a boy to bring her up of nights. I got her two nights, and then she failed to come in. I spent several days in hunting for her but did not get her until fall, so we were left without milk.

It is warm and dry, it was stated that the thermometer at St. George stood at 114 but it was not quite so warm here.

June 18th, Brother James V. Coleman from whom I rented the place, started for Delta today to work in the sugar factory, He took all his family with him. The next day we had a very little rain here, but there was a little more in places near by, this was greatly needed as the water in the reservoir was about gone and the crops were drying up but this rain was not sufficient to do a great deal of good.

My birthday on the 27th passed off as other days, we did not have any family gathering as we had some years ago on the occasion.

July 4th, there was a celebration today. Aunt Eliza and I took dinner with Bishop George O. Holt. Hannah and Addie came down to attend the celebration.

I had bargained for a half lot from Jacob Bushar and during the intervals between hoeing corn, etc., I worked occasionally at getting out some rock for a foundation for a house.

The next day my grandson Ambrose M. Fish (he had added Marian to his name) came in today from Parowan. He had been off to work, and had not made a cent and could not pay me for what he owed me for the things he got when he first came. I got him a few more articles.

At our meeting on the 7th, Apostle Anthony W. Ivins spoke to us. The war and kindred subjects were the main topics dwelt upon.

The 24th was celebrated, but I did not attend.

There is considerable wind and it is very dry and it looks as if fall was coming in very early.

July 28th, a special conference was held today. President Edward H. Snow and his counselors were present with several others from different places. The Presidency occupied the most of the time during the meetings.

My grandson, Lazelle Carson, who is at work on the telegraph line between Los Angeles and Salt Lake City, came in this evening to make us a visit. It was rather short, but much appreciated. He returned the next evening. The folks were down from the ranch but had just started back when he came in so did not get to see him. Ambrose M. Fish started for Delta to work in the sugar factory.

August 14th, my daughter Hannah was married to Jacob Bushar at St. George. Addie was down, none of the others of the family were present.

On the 20th I went down to Gunlock to get some fruit. Julia and daughter Hannah were along. I took Jacob Bushar's team and wagon. We camped at Jerry Leavitt's. The next day we commenced to dry plums on shares. I got some of Amos Hunt, also some peaches and we worked at bottling them etc., for several days.

August 25th, I attended Sunday School and meeting and spoke at the latter.

The next day we got a few more peaches from Brother Hunt and started for home. Brother Hunt was very kind and treated us royally.

We drove as far as Brother Truman's ranch where we got some hay from him and stayed all night.

On the 27th we started very early and drove to Mountain Meadows where we had a late breakfast. I had on about 1000# of fresh fruit, besides what dried fruit we had and what we had bottled. A part of the fruit was for Hannah.

September 3rd, my son-in-law, James Y. Lee, came in to see us this evening. He had all of Jessie May's children along. Doyle, Verna, Lawrence, Arthur, and daughter Eliza. We were greatly pleased to see them. They had come from the Gila by auto around through Colorado to Salt Lake City where they had done some work in the Temple and then come around this way on their return trip. There were six autos in the company and were going back viz Needles. I had never seen Eliza before, she was very much like her mother. Their visit was short but much appreciated, they going on the next forenoon.

On the 5th I worked at cutting my corn, and had been at work around on the place at various jobs and had worried considerable about getting means to build with as I had got nothing as yet for my place at Woodruff.

There was some frost on the 9th.

Jake and Hannah were down from the ranch.

On the 11th my grandson Alvin M. Fish came in from Provo, He had been in the Navy and had been discharged on account of sickness. He had recovered some and had been up at Richard Brearton's.

September 12th, Jake, Hannah and Addie came down from the ranch. Jake came down to register as he came in the number that were to register up to 45, they returned the next day and Alvin went with them. He returned to Provo on the 27th, his service in the Navy I thought had improved him in some ways.

October 6th, I attended fast meeting and by request blessed an infant of Brother Fred Jones. The folks were down from the ranch. Brother E. O. Norr came in from Delta; I had rented his place for Julia during the winter. I was to keep the fences up, trim the trees, and fix up the windows, etc., for the rent.

There was considerable excitement about this time on account of the breaking out of the Spanish Influenza and on the 18th at a meeting of a few of the leading citizens it was decided to make some quarantine regulations so as to try and prevent the epidemic from getting in here. All schools, meetings, picture shows, etc., were stopped, and all the people stayed as close to home as practical. This made things seem rather lonesome.

October 21st, I have been at work gathering in my corn, etc. Wilford hauled a part of it and I got the rest of it in today. I would have got it up before but could not get the team before. The part that I had water for was very fair but that which was on dry land part was a failure.

October 28th, I commenced to dig my potatoes. It took me two days, I had only about 80 bushels. Brother Coleman had half of them, I put them in his cellar and later his boy Lawrence sold them without saying a word to his father.

November 2nd, my wife Julia went up to the ranch to dig the potatoes there. I had been shucking what little corn that I had. It was rather poor, as all the crops were this season.

1918-1920
Chapter 114
Everyday Life at Enterprise

November 9th, 1918, I started early this morning to go to Parowan to get 4 bucks for Thomas Robinson and S. C. Jones. I took Jones' horses and Robinson's buggy, my wife Eliza went along with me. They gave me ten dollars to make the trip. The main reason for getting me they were afraid to send one of the younger persons as the flu was raging and they thought they would be more careless about exposing themselves. We drove to Enoch, something over 50 miles and stopped with Uncle Ves. Jones, father of S. C. Jones. We would have stopped in Cedar but we were afraid that the people would not care to have us on account of the flu. They were, as well as we, afraid of being exposed.

November 10th, we drove to Parowan where we found that the sheep that we wanted were at Paragoonah. We took dinner with William H. Lyman and family.

Just after our arrival Donald McGregor came in on his way to Panguitch where they were having the influenza very bad, and had sent for him to come over and render them some medical aid.

After dinner I went down to Paragoonah to get the sheep of Brother Robinson. They were out some distance and after getting a few things that we could put under the seat, the sheep being tied behind, and after dinner we went to Cedar where we stopped with my old friend Andrew Cory. He was with me on our trip with Andrews to the east looking out for passes where the Navajos could drive off stock, etc. He told me that he had got his pension.

November 12th, we started early and reached home a little after dark; our trip had been rather hurried as they wanted the sheep and we were afraid of stopping very long or going around very much on account of the flu, which was raging and people were afraid of us and we were afraid of them, as we hurried through.

November 28th, Thanksgiving Day. Aunt Julia was living in the Norr House so we all went there for dinner.

The last week has been very cold, a regular blizzard from the north with a very little snow.

I have had 14 head of Brother Coleman's stock to look after, food and water, and as there is no water in the ditches and there is no water system at his place I have to take them to some place where there is a tap, and water them in a tub which is quite a chore besides feeding them.

December 6th, 1918, there was not much going on in town on account of the flu, so our holidays did not amount to much.

Wilford and Jesse started to Modena with a load of beans for B. J. Lund and Company. It commenced raining in the evening and snowed the next morning, making a very cold and hard trip for them.

On the 10th I saw in the paper where Lehi L. Smith of Snowflake had been killed in one of the battles of France. He was the son of my old friend, Jesse N. Smith and Emma L. Smith. I wrote Sister Smith a letter of condolence.

The weather still continues to be cold.

Brother Amos Holt had bought seven head of the Coleman stock and has taken them away, so that has lightened my labors as little and it takes less to feed the rest and care for them.

I received notice that I had been elected Justice of the Peace for Enterprise Precinct, an office that I did not care for and had not sought. However I did not want to disappoint the people, so I qualified.

December 26th, the winter has sped thus far in the same way. I do chores and not much else could be done as the weather continued cold.

Jake and Hannah went over to Caliente a few days ago. He went over to get some work on the railroad where he soon got a job. Some of us that were here, had our Christmas dinner together.

December 31st, 1918, last night was the coldest that I have seen it in this place.

I have spent a little time in quarrying out some rock for a cellar but I later let Brother Hafen have two loads of it.

January 1st, 1919, the year came in as many others have come for ages past. There was a little snow but it is so cold that it does not melt and it is so dry that it would not make much water if it did. It begins to look a little discouraging for the coming season.

As has been stated, at the last election I was elected Justice of the Peace for Enterprise Precinct. On the 20th of last month, I was appointed Justice of the Peace for the town. A few days after this, Arthur Huntsman, who is the town marshal, commenced suit against six persons to collect delinquent Poll Tax. I issued the subpoenas and today 4 of them were returned served, and all the costs in the several cases were settled without coming to trial.

January 9th, the weather having been very disagreeable and cold, I have done but little but care for the stock that I was looking after for Brother Coleman who is at Delta at work.

I have just got a payment of \$150 from Brother James Brinkerhoff of Woodruff in payment on my place, Morris Reidhead having given the place up and Brother Brinkerhoff took it, this was the first I had received on the place since I left Arizona, and this amount soon went in paying debts, etc. I was pleased to get these little debts off the books and to be square with the world again.

January 9th, I settled up my tithing. The Bishop had put off the settlement until this date on account of the flue., which has been around considerable in our place but perhaps not so bad as in some other places.

January 19th, the weather has been very cold but it is moderating considerably but no moisture. I have done but little outside work but managed to keep busy most of the time at various chores.

January 27th, I have not been feeling very well for the last few days but I still do a little work in different ways.

The weather has been dry and cold.

My grandson, Ambrose M. Fish, who had been working at Delta came in this p.m. He had been around by Cedar and St. George and had spent about all his money. He had made \$5.20 a day at Delta working in the factory, but it all went so that he never paid me anything that I had advanced him before he went. He is like other young folks, very indifferent how he spends his money and it goes like snow before an August sun.

January 29th, Jacob Bushar came in a few days ago and went up to Terry's Ranch today. I went up with him. This was my first visit to this place which is 12 miles from Enterprise. The Terry's had made some fine improvements here, two nice brick houses with very high ceilings in them. The ceilings in them were 12 feet high, much higher than necessary. There were some frame buildings and a large barn made of rock. They do not occupy the place all the time, so it is running down as any place will do if left vacant very much. But it is a nice summer ranch and nice pasturage near by with springs of fine water all along here.

Wilford was up to the ranch railing brush, he saw us and came over to meet us at Jake's place where we stopped for a short time on our return.

February 1st, we had a light fall of snow after which we had some tolerably good weather.

February 18th, we had the heaviest snow of the season last night, it fell to the depth of about 10 inches.

I have received several letters from different ones but I have not often noted the receipt of letters, but among these were one from T. K. Farish, Arizona's Historian, He kindly sent me six volumes of the *History of Arizona*, he had given me two volumes before thus making eight volumes which was all that was out at this time.

February 20th, we had a light snow, but it amounted to very little as to moisture.

Wilford is looking after Jake's stock while he is at the railroad, so he has to be at the ranch most of his time to feed the stock. He comes down often but generally goes back the same day.

I have been spending some of my time in writing up my journal.

Lawrence Coleman has been stopping with us for a month or more but has started off to trap.

February 27th, we had a very high wind that wound up with a little snow.

March 3rd, it has been a little stormy but very little moisture has fallen.

I got my pension papers today that called for \$420 up to December 4, 1918 and \$20 per month from that on. This was the first notice about my pension that I have received. I signed the papers and returned them and was pleased to learn that it had been allowed. Others had had their pension for some time. (Those who were in the same company that I was in)

The flu has visited us in a great many places, more than half of the town has it and so all public meetings are stopped and have been for sometime.

March 14th, there have been four deaths in town from the flu and there are many cases, some of them quite serious. It is a gloomy time with the people, and it is hard to find well ones enough to care for the sick.

March 20th, there have been six deaths in town up to the present time from the flu.

Julia, Jesse, and Delma moved up to the ranch on the 18th. Wilford had been there most of the time. Aunt Eliza has been out with the sick for two weeks.

I received the money on my pension, \$420 a few days ago.

March 29th, there have been 9 deaths in the place from the flu, but the sick however are all on the improve and the disease seems to have spent its force. We are thankful that things have been no worse with us but mourn the loss of those who have passed away. I hear one say that no one who did not use tobacco died with the flu, which shows that the observance of the Word of Wisdom is not without its good effects.

I have the foundation of my house done, 34 X 24, and have been making a foundation for a screen porch on the back end 8 ½ X 24 feet.

April 1st, having got my pension money, I settled up all my debts which did not amount to very much but it was the first time for a good while that I was able to be entirely out of debt. I now prepared to build and not having means enough I concluded to build of lumber, making a frame and covering it for the present with roofing as I could do all the work myself.

Ambrose M. Fish took Wilford's team and went to Parowan for a load of lumber. He got it from Walter Mitchell and brought back about 1400 feet, it being about all he could get, but it was mostly the kind that I wanted first. He returned on the 6th.

I have spent most of the time working about the place, I got some nice locust trees and set out but for lack of water they nearly all died, although I carried a great amount with a bucket during the summer.

Brother Norr went to Delta to work and I have been living in his house, he did not charge me anything for the rent but I was to keep the place up and care for it. I got some glass and fixed up the windows to keep the place up.

April 8th, Jesse came down from the ranch and did a little plowing for a garden on the Norr lot but there was but little on that lot that was fit for cultivation in its present condition.

April 12th, having got a little lumber I started to do something on my house, putting down the sleepers or joists, and a little of the rough floor as I expect to put a floor over this sometime.

Ambrose started today to Delta to work. I gave him \$10.00 to pay his way up there. He has not helped me a day since he came, only to go over to Parowan for the lumber that I have mentioned. He made fairly well at work but never paid me back the means that I advanced him, he spends all he makes, I hope that he will learn to be more economical someday.

April 13th, the weather continues to be dry and windy. We had sent a colt down to the Dixie country with Alanson Reidhead's to be wintered there and in bringing them back it gave out, being sick and poor. Wilford went out today to get it which he succeeded in doing.

April 20th, we have not had meetings for sometime on account of the flu, but the disease seems to have passed or died out and today we had meeting for the first time since they were closed down some time ago.

I have put up a partition fence on the lot and grubbed off the brush around the place of which there was a good growth.

April 24th, Jake and Hannah came in from Caliente. They expected to go down to the Temple but it seemed tangled, as Jake's name had not been presented before the Priesthood to be ordained an Elder, so the trip to the Temple was postponed for the present and they went back to Caliente on the 25th.

In order to go to school, Delma, who had been with her ma, stayed with Aunt Eliza.

My grandson, Joseph C. Carson, came in today and I visited around with him some. He had come in from Oregon with his family mainly to visit his mother-in-law who was very sick at Paranagate. He came from there in here horse back and returned the next day. Before going he kindly gave me \$15 to help me on the house.

April 30th, a traveling troop put on a play here entitled, "Dawn of the Mountains". It was represented very well considering the facilities.

I have been at work about the place, working on the house and making a pig pen.

May 5th, Wilford started to Parowan today for a load of lumber. He was gone five days and brought in over two thousand feet.

May 11th, I attended meeting today and spoke upon the first colonizing of our people in Mexico.

Hannah, after she got married, gave up the place she had filed on and turned it over to Wilford and he filed on it. There had been some mistake in the papers and I wrote to Green at Modena about it to have it corrected.

Jesse had sent for a bicycle and it had not come and I wrote about that.

May 19th, Addie started for Caliente to stay with Hannah for awhile.

I had been at work on my house when I had lumber and I raised the frame today, Brother John I. Pace helped me in the forenoon, we getting the frame up so I could go ahead with the work.

May 23rd, we had a nice little shower which was greatly needed.

Jesse and his mother were down from the ranch and he went back to look after things.

May 25th, I gave a lecture to the Mutual Improvement Association on the Exodus of the Saints from Nauvoo, etc.

May 28th, Wilford and his mother came down from the ranch and he plowed a little for a patch of squash but it was on a dry sandy place and it never had any water so we did not raise anything to speak of.

I had run out of lumber so I could do nothing on the house until I got more.

May 30th, the people were expected to go out and clean up around the cemetery. I went out but no one came so I returned. It is possible that a few might have gone to the other cemetery, as there are two in the place, but I do not think that there was much done.

May 31st, there was a cold north wind and a frost that killed most of the garden stuff that was up.

I was not feeling very well so I stayed home and read most of the day.

June 3rd, Wilford and Jesse started to Parowan for lumber. I went up to the ranch and returned the next day. I footed it both ways. Things at the ranch looked a little better than I had expected, the frost there did not appear as hard as it was in town.

June 8th, Bishop Terry from Idaho spoke at our meeting giving a sketch of things as they existed in that state which was not as good spiritually as could be wished.

Feed is very scarce. We did not have any, so we herd our cow along the ditch where there is considerable sweet clover. Aunt Eliza assists me in this. We take a book or paper and read while we let her pick along the ditch.

June 9th, Wilford and Jesse came in with one load of lumber; they had been to the mill for it. The tire ran off from one of the wagons a little before they reached New Castle and they left that load and came on.

On the 11th and 12th we had a hard frost which killed almost everything.

June 15th, Wilford took his mother over to Modena where she took the train for Caliente going over to stay with Hannah for a while.

June 17th, Wilford and Jesse went back after the load of lumber that they had left. It was a long way and changing the load took up time and they did not get back until after midnight.

June 18th, was Aunt Eliza's birthday, but no demonstrations on that account were made. I raised the frame of the screen porch today.

June 27th, I have the siding on the house put on, that is the rough boards nailed on like a box as I expect to put dressed lumber over this sometime, or else lath and plaster.

I celebrated my 79th birthday by commencing putting on shingles on what I call the screen porch.

It has been very dry and windy this year and hay is scarce. I bought 1500# from Joseph Holt for which I paid \$11.50. It was a very poor quality of lucern as there had been quite a hail storm and knocked off about all the leaves so there was but little left but the stems.

I was informed that Brother Andrew Jensen came in today and stopped an hour or two and interviewed a few of the old timers in regard to the early history of Hebron. I would have been pleased to have met him but did not know that he was in town until he had gone.

June 28th, I received a letter today from Julia at Caliente stating that Hannah had a 10 pound baby girl born on the 26th and that all were getting along fine.

July 2nd, the year has been very dry and the Irrigation Committee have taken steps to see what could be done to increase the water supply. They employed a man by the name of Payne to come with his machine and dig some wells. He has sunk some in town which has given a good flow of water and he has been engaged to sink several more. He struck water on the Public Square at a depth of twenty five feet but he went considerable below this. This has encouraged others and some went down on the desert and took up land expecting to irrigate it from wells where they would get water at some fifteen feet down. The wells in town are pumped by electricity.

July 19th, I have got the rafters up on the main building and sheeting on and commenced today to lay a few shingles. Wilford came down and helped me a day or two shingling and this is about all the help that I have had.

July 24th, Pioneer Day was celebrated by a parade in which there were several floats representing the different events and organizations. A meeting was held at which a program was rendered. I spoke for about 20 minutes on the pioneer movement to the west. Sports and games occupied the afternoon.

Ambrose M. Fish came in this afternoon from Delta where he had been at work, but he had made but little more than he had spent.

July 26th, this was Aunt Eliza's and my golden wedding but we did nothing to celebrate it.

I did not have enough shingles to cover my house so sent to Modena to get a few more. The shingles cost me a little over \$60 for the house and the lumber had cost me over \$200 and now there were the doors, windows, etc., to get and no money.

August 2nd, Jake, Hannah, and Julia came in from Caliente. The next day we all went to meeting and I blessed her little babe giving it the name of Josephine.

The next day Ambrose went out to Fay to work.

Jake and Hannah went up to the ranch, Jake going on to Caliente to work.

August 10th, all the folks came down from the ranch and went down to pay Alanson Reidhead and his wife a visit as they were to start for Arizona.

On the 13th, Wilford started to Parowan for some more lumber.

Charles Fish, who had been around here for sometime, had just returned from St. George where he had been to see about getting a place for his mother if she wished to come out here. He got the promise of a place if his mother should come. He has arranged to go back to Arizona with Alanson Reidhead.

August 21st, I started to Gunlock to get some fruit. Charles Fish gave me ten dollars to buy it with. I gave him some of the fruit when I returned. Jesse and Delma went with me, we drove to the Bowler ranch where we stayed all night. While here in the evening my old friend Caesar Collister came out to our camp and we had quite a talk about old times in Parowan.

August 22nd, we drove to Gunlock and stopped at Brother Amos Hunt's place. I bought some apples from Wilford Holt at a cent a pound. They were not very good ones. I got 600# of peaches from Thomas Leavitt for 50¢ a hundred and I bought some plums from Brother Hunt at the same price. We picked the plums the next morning and started

back for home going as far as Brother Truman's place. Here we fell in with the two Barlockers from Enterprise who were freighting for the Power Plant.

August 24th, we started before daylight and drove to the Burgess Ranch (The Monument as it is often called) where we took breakfast. After which I went down and looked over the ground where the Indians made their attack on the emigrants. (The Mountain Meadow Massacre). Mr. Burgess showed me where the Indians built their fortifications or rock wall on a little hill to the north about 250 yards distant from the camp. There are still traces of this wall left which protected the Indians. At the spring near the camp the flood waters have washed a deep ravine so that the spring is dry and the water comes up in this ravine. This ravine is some 25 feet deep I should judge, and a small stream was trickling in its bottom. I drove home in the afternoon. Wilford and his mother were down from the ranch and they took part of the fruit and drove on up with it in the evening.

August 28th, Ambrose came in from Fay where he had been at work.

I have worked on the house a little. But we now were having a famine for flour, there was a very little in the mill but it belonged to some individuals and the miller who was out of grain would not let it go. Flour at this time could not be had so there was a regular famine for a short time. The merchants however in a short time had some shipped in which relieved the situation.

September 1st, we had considerable rain so that the water came down the wash close to where I was building.

September 2nd, I have been greatly bothered to get material to build a chimney with, I could not find any cement blocks in town made for this purpose and there was no one making blocks, and no brick that I could find, but at last I found a few old ones at different places that had been torn out of a partition wall of a brick house, and some of these or perhaps all of them had come from the old houses at Hebron. I could not get quite enough but at last found a couple of cement blocks at Brother S. C. Jones' which I got to finish out with, but this did not make the chimney quite as high as I wanted it.

September 7th, it was a cold windy day and it began to look as if the fall of the year was at hand. I had got my chimney up making it myself and I got a floor down on the screen porch.

September 15th, the last trip that Wilford made for lumber he broke the wheel of his wagon down. He started back to Parowan to get the wagon and got some more lumber.

September 18th, Jesse and Delma came down from the ranch to go to school, and on the 21st Julia came down and went back alone. She is there alone as Wilford is to Parowan and Addie is working for Alanson Reidhead whose wife is sick.

I have worked on the house some. I made a pair of stairs and put on some of the roofing paper on the sides of the house.

September 23rd, after two days hard wind it turned off with a frost.

Wilford came in with a load of lumber, he had been detained in getting his wagon repaired as it had not been done while he was gone.

October 2nd, we moved in to our new house. Of course it was not nearly completed, it being a mere shell, but we decided to fix it up the best we could for the winter. I had put the roofing paper on the outside and had one window in and had put together a couple of boughten doors made out of some half seasoned lumber. I soon got two more windows which were put in of course. All this was temporary work which we thought would do for the present. Thus fixed up (there was no lining on the inside) we were very thankful to get in a house of our own. I had done all the work myself, not hiring a days work on it.

October 4th, last night was very cold and froze quite hard and was the first freezing weather that we had had.

On September 30th, just before I got into the house, Art Truman came over in a hurry and complained on himself for breaking the peace. He said S. C. Jones had abused him and he slapped him. I fined him \$5.00 which he paid. I regretted it afterwards that I let it go without further investigation, as he hit Jones twice in the face giving him two black eyes that he carried for a week.

October 9th, I have been busy fixing up around the house. I have made a chicken coop, etc.

Wilford and his mother came down from the ranch on the 7th, they moving down, and the next day Wilford started for Delta to work in the sugar factory.

October 13th, Alanson Reidhead and Charles F. Fish came up and helped to kill and dress a couple of pigs for me. They were expecting to start for Arizona in a few days.

October 16th, Jake and Hannah came in from Caliente for a short visit and to go to the Temple.

I received a check of \$100 from James Brinkerhoff in part payment on my place at Woodruff.

October 20th, Jake and Hannah went down to St. George today. I went along, also Addie. I stopped with my nephew Donald McGregor. They treated the best they could. He is a practicing Physician and appears to be very well off, but was under a cloud as he had taken a second wife after the manifesto, by council from an Apostle.

October 21st, Jake and Hannah went through the Temple today. Addie took care of the baby. I went along and spent the time going around visiting with brother David Cannon and some others and hearing what was said. In the Temple I met a few from Arizona who were going through, Joseph McCleve for one, but I had but little chance to visit with them. The services were got through with at about 3 p.m. when we started home where we arrived at about 10 p.m. having some trouble on the way with the auto. I was quite tired after my trip but I enjoyed it very much.

October 22nd, Jacob and Hannah started back to Caliente where he was working on the railroad. Addie went along with them.

The weather was tolerably fair but soon turned colder.

November 2nd, Jesse and his mother went up to the ranch. It was Sunday and I did not want them to go but we had some things to look after and I did not want Jesse to stay out of school. There were a few potatoes to get up and I had him take the cow up, she was not giving very much milk and hay was so dear that I could not afford to keep her here this winter.

November 6th, Jesse started for Caliente taking Jake's team and wagon and our horses and a few things for Jake who had engaged pasturage for the horses over there. Wilford was at Delta at work and we had but little use for a team here so I thought I would send them off. School was not in session so that Jesse would not miss much in that line. It is very pleasant weather but cold nights.

Brother Thomas Robinson has started to build a new house and plowed up a part of his lawn and I got the sod and set it out and carried water to start it and keep it growing. Thus I managed to get a little start for a lawn which helped to improve the place.

November 8th, we had a little snow last evening, just enough to cover the ground and then it cleared up and turned quite cold, water froze in our house, which being frame and unfinished was not very comfortable.

November 10th, Jesse returned from Caliente. He came in from Modena on his Bike.

The next evening there was a picture show to raise money to help pay for the piano that the ward had in the Meeting House.

November 18th, Ambrose M. Fish came in from Fay. He had the toothache and came in to have it pulled or filled.

November 23rd, Sunday, Apostle a. W. Ivins and Brother Miles P. Romney, President of the Juarez Stake in Mexico, were present and spoke. The latter spoke but a short time giving the time to Apostle Ivins who spoke on the disturbed condition in the world and that peace would not come until the people wanted peace.

The weather had been tolerably fair and pleasant for this time of year.

November 24th, I have been looking over my historical work some for the last two weeks, as I am intending to revise it and copy it so that I will have a copy in case I send it off, and I will make what additions and changes that I think necessary.

November 27th, today has been one of the worst that I ever saw, it has been a regular blizzard, wind and snow. The snow fell about a foot deep continuing all day with the wind drifting it so that it was two feet deep in places. We stayed in the house and had a Thanksgiving dinner all to ourselves. In the evening the school gave an entertainment but the storm was so bad that there were many who did not attend. This storm will be hard on the stock for feed is very scarce.

December 7th, the weather since Thanksgiving Day has been quite unfavorable the most of the time. There is considerable snow on the ground.

I have been at work during the last week revising my history. I have made but few changes in it but copying it mainly that I might have an extra copy when I send it off, as I am expecting to send it to D. Elmer Jones at Snowflake. He had written to me about it and thought that he could get it published.

My grandson Ambrose M. Fish left yesterday going to Modena and then to Caliente where he thought he could get work for a short time, when he expected to go on home to Lakeside. He had been here for sometime and as there was nothing to do but to spend money he thought he would get out and do something.

December 20th, I have spent much of my leisure time in copying my history, and putting on some tar paper on the house under the porch on the north side.

I have settled up my tithing.

Today is quite pleasant, the weather having moderated considerable.

December 26th, a short time ago the Bishop got the men of the place to haul some wood for the widows and old people. They hauled me one load which was thankfully received and this evening the Relief Society gave a supper for the wood haulers as well as to all that came. They commenced at 5 p.m. and continued table after table until about midnight. It was a grand success. A dance was going on in the meeting house, the supper being served in the basement. The forepart of the week a hard wood floor was put down in the building (on Monday and Tuesday.) I assisted in this and on Friday fixtures were put in the building for basket ball playing and a game was played just before the dance.

We received several small presents at Christmas time from the children and grand children. The weather has changed so that it is very fine of days but rather cold of nights.

January 4th, 1920, or holidays have passed off very pleasantly. Last night and today we had about six inches of snow and towards night it was almost a slush, the next day was very bad.

January 6th, it turned colder and the wind came from the north and snow fell to the depth of about six inches.

The subject of a new school house is being agitated and it is greatly needed as the basement of our meeting house is being used for a part of the school and it is not a suitable place for a school.

Wood is scarce and some are shipping in coal but I have no money so I have to get wood the best I can.

I have said little about meetings but I attend regularly and can say that our meetings are as a rule, well attended, especially by the young folks as compared with other places.

January 23rd, a week ago it commenced snowing accompanied by a cold north wind and it was a regular blizzard. The snow lay on the ground probably 10 to 12 inches deep and the thermometer probably went down to 15 below zero. On the 16th it turned warmer and the next three days were quite pleasant but quite cold of nights.

I attended meeting today. There was a very good attendance and some good instructions were given.

There has been a move lately to organize a brass band. Brother William Staheli who has been teaching at Hurricane has returned home and is now teaching here and he is at the head of getting up the band.

Aunt Eliza who has been at work for Joseph Holt's folks for three weeks returned home last night.

1920
Chapter 115
Events of 1920

January 22nd, 1920, the last few days has been quite warm and the snow has melted quite fast, so that the south side of the hills are bare and the water is running in the washes some but still there is considerable snow in town.

I devote all my spare time in revising and copying my historical work.

January 23rd, there were four boys brought before me in kind of an unofficial way. They were, Smith Jones, Heber Truman, Dewart Terry, and Gerald Hall. It was for some misdemeanor or boyish pranks, I gave them a good lecture which I think helped them, and fined the first and last named \$2.50 each, and stated that the fine would be remitted if there was nothing brought against them within the next thirty days.

January 25th, there was no meeting today, as it was reported last evening that Andy Winsor had the flu. The report was not certain, but it was thought best to be cautious in the matter.

The snow is about all gone and now we are having considerable mud.

January 26th, Aunt Eliza went to Parowan today with Bishop Holt. He had left his auto at New Castle on a trip before on account of the mud. He got a carriage and took his team and Jesse went with them to New Castle to bring the team back. The folks went from there with their auto and Jesse got back a little after dark with the team.

February 5th, the day was quite foggy. The flu seems to be the main topic although there are no cases in town that we know of, but we still keep quiet and a guard is posted on the two main roads that lead into town so that no one is permitted to come until after they are fumigated, or quarantined for a short period to be sure that all the germs are killed.

February 10th, we had a snowstorm commencing on Sunday, the 8th, and continuing more or less for three days, with a cold north wind a part of the time. The snow fell altogether about a foot deep. As there were no new cases of the flu, they started up the school again.

February 11th, it was a clear pleasant day but it is cold of nights as there is a foot of snow on the ground. Of course we do but little, and I am looking for a payment from Brother Brinkerhoff on my place. We are in rather poor circumstances for this kind of weather. We were nearly out of wood and no feed for the pigs or chickens, besides being short of something to eat ourselves.

February 15th, we are still a little afraid of the flu and so we do not have meetings as yet. The weather is pleasant during the days but cold of nights. It has been a lonesome week for me.

I have been anxiously waiting to get some means to help me out and enable me to settle up some debts.

February 22nd, we had a drizzling rain all day, which melted the snow and considerable water came down the washes. It took some of my fence away, posts and all, but they hung together and floated down some little distance and the next day I had a job getting them out of the mud and water.

February 19th, Julia got a needle in her hand while washing and we have been working with it putting poultices on it. A part of it was broken off and left in her hand, it has given her considerable trouble and she has suffered much with it but with all our efforts, we have failed to get it out. I got a magnet from one of the autos and tried to see if that could draw it out, but it was to no effect.

February 25th, I worked a little at starting a cellar, putting in a few rock for a start. The next day I set the posts that had been washed out expecting to rip rap and put in some brush and rock later on.

February 29th, Sunday, my wife Julia went to St. George to see the Doctor about getting the needle out of her hand. She went down with Brother Lewis Bastian.

I attended meeting today, the first public meeting that had been held for some five weeks because we were afraid of spreading the flu.

On March 1st, we had a slow drizzling rain which raised the water in the washes and my posts were again carried off, some fifteen of them, before I got the wires on. I never got any of them back.

I have received letters lately from several in relation to genealogy work and trying to trace up the record of some of our ancestors.

The weather had been rather unfavorable and we were about out of wood and no team to get any with.

Brother William Truman hauled us some wood to pay for some damage that his stock had done getting into the stack yard at the ranch. He hauled more than he was required to do, which is not common for men to do in these days. He showed a kind and liberal spirit for which act I will always remember him as a kind and obliging neighbor.

March 5th, my wife Julia returned from St. George on the mail, she did not have the needle cut out. The Doctor advised her not to have it cut out as it would cripple her hand, he thought that it would work out. On the 8th she was trying to work a little and in using the hand the needle worked near the surface where I could locate it and I took a razor and cut the skin a little and got it out. It was about three quarters of an inch long. Her hand then soon got well after this.

March 10th, I have done a little more work on the cellar putting in what rock that I had here. There was a slight fall of snow last night.

March 14th, Sunday, was a cold stormy day and on the 16th the wind blew a real gale all day.

March 17th, we had quite a snow. It fell to the depth of from 16 to 18 inches and was quite damp. I have received several letters on genealogical work. I received one from Sister Jane J. Eldredge. She had been east gathering up the genealogy of the Leavitts. She had got about 2000 names and a few items about the Fish side of my folks. She sent me quite a list of my side of the Leavitt house back to where they came over from England near 1620.

I have been setting out a few trees around the place.

In cutting some of these little trees apart, a limb caught the handle of the ax which I was using with one hand and holding the little sprouts with the other, when the ax came down on my wrist cutting it to the bone. It severed some of the leaders I suppose, for all my hand along by the front fingers never regained its natural feeling, although I did not loose the use of any of my fingers, but the wound bothered me a little for sometime and was tender along the cord. It got better in about 4 years.

March 21st, Wilford, Jake, and the girls, Hannah and Addie, came in last night. Wilford had come over from Caliente with the team and Jake and take girls came by auto. They got stuck in the mud about eight miles out toward Modena. Getting a telegram of their coming that way, Wilford started out horse back to meet them as soon as he got in. They all walked in the eight miles through the mud and water in the night. When Wilford met them he took the baby and brought it in. They were about give out. Hannah had been to Arizona on a short visit and had just returned. Wilford who had been at work at Delta, had gone to Caliente where he worked a short time and then brought the teams in. It had been very expensive keeping them there as the pasturage soon gave out where they were and they then charged a high price for keeping the horses.

March 23rd, Considerable rain and snow fell today. Jake came down from the ranch to attend a stock growers meeting. He reported that it was very muddy up at the ranch, the ground being thoroughly soaked up.

March 26th was a stormy day snowing a little all day but it melted as fast as it came, but towards night it did not melt and soon covered the ground to the depth of some three inches. It cleared up and was cold at night.

I received a letter from M. M. Steele who gave me some items about the record of his father's family.

March 28th, Jed M. Terry was the speaker at the meeting today. He spoke on the subject of putting our works with our faith.

The next day or two I worked a little walling up the cellar.

We had a regular blizzard on the 31st, wind with snow.

April 4th, 1920, we have been having some very windy, stormy and cold weather but today it changed some for the better.

There was fast meeting today which I attended. The people as well as the Bishop have fallen into a bad habit, that is of coming late to meeting. Meeting today was called to order 25 minutes after 2 and meetings are hardly ever started before a quarter of an hour after the time appointed.

I have been working on a variety of work, as usual a little on my journal and some on my history and a little for a change building a fence where the flood had washed it away, and other work around the place.

April 9th, we have had a few days of beautiful weather but today it started in to blow, one of those dry windy days that are so common in this place in the spring and also in Arizona, in the northern section.

I started yesterday to take down the lumber from over head in the house and plane it, tongue and groove it so as to put down a tight floor. I find that the work is a little slow as the lumbar is very crooked and all widths and uneven.

Aunt Eliza is still at Parowan. Addie is down working for Israel Adair whose wife has recently been confined and yesterday he came up and got Aunt Julia to go down and stay awhile so Delma is the house keeper, but I expect Addie back soon.

April 10th, I attended meeting today which was turned into or developed to an educational campaign. Brothers Bentley and Woodbury spoke on educational matters and had charts to illustrate the educational work which they used during their talk. President Edward H. Snow spoke a short time. The talk had a decided effect in stirring the people up in the cause of education. In the evening a meeting of the Y. M. I. A. met but the time was given to the Stake Officers. Sister McGregor spoke in behalf of the Young Ladies. Brothers Cannon, Bentley, and Woodbury gave some valuable advice on the work for the Young Men. President Snow followed giving a few items of the late general conference. Wilford came down in time for the afternoon meeting but he, Jake, and Hannah went back to the ranch.

April 12th, Brother Bentley held court as a Juvenile officer. Two boys were brought up for stealing a bucket of candy (which was recovered). He gave the boys a good talking to.

It was proposed that I be appointed Juvenile Judge for this town, but I told them that my age and the defect in my hearing were against me and they had better get a younger person, as the duties of such an officer would take him out to parties and all social gatherings and I would not be able to attend these gatherings of evenings.

April 15th, the forest supervisor (which is a new one by the name of Peterson) rounded up all the stock that were on what we called Flat Top Mountain which is on the Government Reserve, and brought them down and put them in the stray pen, about forty in number, and assessed a damage or trespass of \$1.50 for the cattle and \$2.00 a head for the horses and colts (yearlings). I had a mare and a colt in the bunch which I got out and on a promise to pay in a few days, which I did to Arthur Huntsman the Pound Keeper.

April 17th, we have recently had some very disagreeable weather and today there were flurries of snow, just enough to whiten the ground. There was a cold north wind which was almost like January weather.

April 18th, it was one of the worst days I ever saw. The wind has blown for a week, three days from the south and then three days from the north and today it was a regular blizzard. I did not go to meetings it was so bad that I thought it doubtful if they had one. Wilford came down from the ranch last night, went to Sunday School and went back to the ranch in the evening.

The next day I worked a little at setting some fence posts and trees along the wash but the water came down soon after and I had to quit the job.

April 21st, yesterday was a very cold and disagreeable day, cold and windy with a flurry of snow and last night was so cold that it froze water in the house.

The old mare that I took out of the stray pen came back to town and I sent her up to the ranch by Brother Lamb.

April 25th, I attended meeting today and spoke a short time. Jake and Hannah came down and attended meeting. Wilford was with them. They went back in their car.

April 26th, Aunt Eliza came in from Parowan today. She came over to Modena with an outfit that was coming over to shear sheep, they charged her \$7.00 and then she came on from there with the mail, they charged her \$2.50 so the trip cost her \$9.50. She stayed with a friend at Modena and that cost her nothing. We were greatly pleased to have her back again.

I worked at putting down the floor of the chamber that I had started some days before.

The weather has changed a little for the better and it seems a little more like spring.

The next day Wilford came down and plowed the garden, getting out a little manure on it.

May 2nd, 1920, the folks were not down from the ranch. I attended meeting, Antone Ivins came down from Salt Lake City a few days ago and he is fixing up accounts at the mill. I understood that he is trying to sell the mill and move to Salt Lake City. Which he did a little later on, selling to B. J. Lund Company.

The weather has been very fair and pleasant but cold of nights freezing some.

May 9th, I have finished putting down the floor up stairs; it was a slow and tiresome job, as the lumber was so crooked that it was a very difficult job to get it together. The tongue and groove would not come together in places on account of short crooks where there were knots.

Jake, Hannah, and Wilford came down from the ranch the latter brought some wood.

School was out Friday and Jesse went up to the ranch the next day.

I got the water on the lot a day or two ago and watered the lot.

May 10th, it rained most of the afternoon and the next day I put in a few potatoes in the garden, planting them with a hoe.

High prices still keep up and it is a struggle to get anything to eat. Sugar, \$30.00 a sack, is out of our reach so we do without such luxuries and we do not think of buying.

May 12th, last Sunday the Sunday School gave a program which was carried out very successfully, there was a large attendance.

The weather is very fine and today it is a lovely spring day but it was rather cold last night, as ice formed in the water trough.

Not getting any means from Brother Brinkerhoff as I had expected has placed me in very cramped circumstances together with the high cost of living, and we find it hard to get along and obtain the necessities of life. And my age prevents me from going off to get work. Aunt Eliza and Julia have displayed a wonderful spirit of devotion to the cause and support of the family, they have worked with great energy to obtain things to keep up the expenses of the home. They have taken in washings and worked out for others exerting themselves far beyond their strength to obtain the necessities that we were obliged to have. And I have felt that they have deserved a better lot than I have been able to provide for them; but they are hopeful and uncomplaining, cheerful, and try to make the best of everything, which has endeared them to me far beyond the power of words to express and we all hope that our lot will soon be in easier and more prosperous paths of life. But we have little reason to complain for the cost and sacrifices of the war has left most of the people in a poor condition. It is to be regretted that some of the profiteers have grown rich by oppressing the masses in forcing the prices of the main articles of food and raiment far above what they should be.

May 13th, it rained some about noon.

I went up with Jacob Bushar to his place to work a little on his house. He was building a small addition to his house. The next day I worked a little on the place, Job Hall had put up the frame or a part of it and some of the rafters.

Saturday there was quite a rain and I only worked a part of the day. The rain made things look beautiful, everything was so fresh and green after the shower. There has been more moisture this spring than common.

Sunday I went over to the ranch where Wilford was, there was nothing of his planting up except the rye and that was quite spotted and the cattle had eaten it off some.

May 17th, I worked on Jake's house and on the 18th I worked and got all the shingles used up and still there was about a thousand lacking to finish it. I came home with Jake and Hannah in the evening.

Aunt Eliza was a Haley's at work. They had a new baby and Aunt Eliza was helping them out in the way of caring for his wife.

May 27th, Wilford came down on the 25th to work on the ditch.

There was a frost last night that killed most of the beans that were up and did some damage to the lucern.

May 30th was a very pleasant day. I attended meeting. Bishop Bunker from Veyo and Bishop Baker from Central were home missionaries and occupied the time. After meeting the Priesthood or rather the Teachers met and gave in their report. Not all the districts had been visited and this is generally the case for it is hard to get 100% though we do sometimes. One of the reports was by Brother Huntsman, rather discouraging. He said that he found one family where they found a great amount of fault about the way that things were going and being conducted in the ward, there was nothing going on right and everything was going down hill.

The boys, Wilford and Jesse, have been working on the ditch and expect to work two more days before it is ready to turn the water in the canal.

June 2nd, there was a little frost last night and night before which killed most of the beans that were up and damaged the lucern considerably.

I have been at work in the garden some and also quarrying some rock for the cellar. This is a very slow job for the rock is not very plentiful that will work well for putting into the wall. But there is plenty of the black rock near by but this is not suitable.

June 6th, I attended fast meeting and blessed a baby of Israel Adair's. Jake and Hannah were down to attend meeting.

I have been at work in the garden and various other jobs. We have the water from the tap on the lawn and garden from 6 a.m. to 8 a.m. each day.

I work a little on the cellar when I have rock but not having a team here, I only get a load once in a while when the boys are down with the team.

I got my pension \$60.00 last night and it soon went in paying debts and getting flour which was \$48.50 (I think this must have been \$4.85) per hundred. Everything in this line as well as in all others are very high and it takes everything that we can rake and scrape to keep us going, and not getting anything from Brinkerhoff has set me back considerable in my work on my house.

June 13th, Jake, Hannah, and the boys came down from the ranch and attended meeting, going back in the evening except Jesse who went back the next morning. President Edward H. Snow and his counselors, Brothers Cottam and Whitehead and a second counselor to the Bishop. I think that he will do very well, he will try to do his duty I think. Grant Ivins had been one of the Bishop's counselors but he has moved down on his farm and resigned, so after a long period Jones was put in.

I have been doing a little at getting out rock and working on the cellar occasionally. I find in my work that I cannot do as much as I once could, so I do not accomplish very much but generally keep busy.

June 15th, Jesse came down from the ranch and Julia, Addie, and Delma went back with him. They expect to stay up there for sometime, perhaps until fall.

We are having very fair weather at present but we need rain, especially for the dry farms.

June 20th, all the folks came down from the ranch to attend meeting as they generally do. The Bishop and his counselors each spoke a short time when the meeting was dismissed and then reconvened for the purpose of discussing the subject where our new school house that we contemplated to build should be located. Bart Farnsworth was elected chairman and Lewis Lund secretary. Several spoke on the subject. Grant Ivins spoke at considerable length to have the school house place on a lot south of the Bishop's place. Others spoke in favor of having it on the square near the meeting house. This was more in the center of town but the others contended that the town would grow to the south and west. On a vote being taken it was decided by a small majority (9 votes) that it be placed on the Meeting House Square.

The weather is turning warm and some of the people are cutting their first crop of lucern.

The folks went back to the ranch in the evening.

June 27th, this being my birthday the folks all came down from the ranch, except Wilford who was at work for Bowler helping him put up some hay.

The chintz bugs are coming in apparently from the east and doing some damage in places. The subject of taking some method to destroy them was brought up in meeting. But a rain coming up the next day appeared to kill them.

The subject of raising \$10,000 to help on our school house was brought up and it was announced that the meeting next Sunday would be dismissed at 3 PM. and then the subject of raising the money would be taken up.

June 28th, we had quite a heavy rain which did much good and some damage to the lucern that was down. It however made things look bright and encouraging.

June 30th, last evening Thomas B. Robinson filed a complaint before me against George LeRoy for his taking indecent liberties with his 11 year old son. The prosecuting attorney had come up from St. George (George Lunt) to

look after the case. I issued a warrant for the arrest of LeRoy and this morning he was brought into court. He waived an examination and declined to give bonds as he said he could not get them so he was committed to the sheriff at St. George. He was later tried in the District Court and sent to the penitentiary for ten years.

July 4th, we are having lovely weather since the rain. The folks were down from the ranch but I was not feeling very well so did not go to the meeting.

On the 5th there was a celebration which passed off very well. I was out to the meeting but did not get out to any of the sports.

Wilford is helping Brother Jones to get up his hay (Ves Jones) and expected to work at this for a week or more.

While the folks were down here the stock got in the field and damaged the corn.

On the 8th, Jake and Hannah came down and Jake took the mail for Modena at 2 p.m.; he was going over to Caliente to work for the railroad.

July 11th, the folks were down from the ranch and reported that the stock were damaging the corn considerably. This was mostly our own stock for all stock was supposed to be gathered up and turned over on Flat Top Mountain to the south during the summer so the damage was mostly our own stock that we were keeping up for milk. We had not got the place properly fenced.

After the meeting we with several others, were invited over to Brother L. M. Terry's where we were favored with songs and some speeches were made after which cake and ice cream was served to all that were present. The folks returned to the ranch in the evening.

July 17th, Saturday, the men and boys all turned out and spent the day in cleaning off the Public Square grubbing up the brush that was on it and around it, and cleaning off the weeds, repairing the fences, etc.

I got seven loads of brush and put in for a protection against the water of the wash. But most of this went out a year and a half later.

July 18th, the folks came down from the ranch and we all attended meeting. I occupied a portion of the time at the meeting.

The weather is quite warm and the ranges are needing rain.

July 24th, it had been arranged for a four days celebration. It commenced on the 21st, and this and the two following days were given over to sports, baseball games, roping and tying steers, bronco riding, etc. There was a dance and a picture show each night. There was a rain during the evening of the 23rd which freshened things sup considerably. In the baseball games, Enterprise finally beat the Pioche team.

A meeting was had on the 24th. There had been three days of sports and now there was to be a celebration under the friendly shades of the meeting house. The meeting was appointee for 10 a.m. but the rain last evening prevented the people from St. George coming up, so the meeting was put off until 2 p.m. when a fine program was rendered to a crowded house. There were songs, short speeches, readings, etc. I was called on to give a toast at the commencement which was as follows:

Utah, my her future be as glorious as her past has ben honorable and progressive. May her mountains send forth increasing streams of water to moisten the sun parched plains, and cause gardens and farms to replace the gray serge of the desert. May her verdure-clad and silver-lined hills pour forth increasing streams of mineral wealth to enrich her people, beautify her cities and towns, increase the commerce of the world and add to the nations sinew of war. May her banner float on the outer walls (the lofty peaks that surrounds her peaceful vales) as an ensign of peace, waving an invitation to the stranger to a land where her education stands in the lime light of a modern civilization as the most perfect to be found, and where the songs of her happy boys and girls (Utah's best crop) echo up the rocky

cliffs of the mountains sides and send back the joyful refrain 'peace on earth, good will to man'. Where it is said of her laws and judiciary, ever will the right come uppermost and ever will justice be done in that fair land, the brightest spot on this great earth, Utah. Of all her sister states, may she become the pride beloved by Heaven and all the world besides.

In the afternoon of the 22nd, Hannah went over to Modena and brought Jake to the ranch and the next morning they came down to attend the sports and dance in the evening. After that she took him back to Modena and returned to the ranch, did the milking, and came down to town and attended the celebration.

July 25th, Sunday, the folks all came down from the ranch. Addie stayed most of the time with Hannah and of course she comes and goes with them. They have to go up of nights to milk and tend the stock. We all attended meeting. The forenoon was given to the Sunday School, they rendering a program. In the afternoon the M. I. A. had the meeting in their charge, Apostle A. W. Ivins and President Edward H. Snow were present and attended all the meetings and spoke. In the forenoon session Apostle Ivins treated up the subject of how this action was brought forth, and the duties of American citizens and that we were all equal and that we should be 100% American and also that we should be 100% Latter Day Saints. We could not be good Saints unless we were good citizens.

July 31st, it rained some this evening and the water came down the wash. The weather is rather warm but I work some mornings and evenings, a little on the cellar walling it up. This seems an endless job, and I am not able to do very much.

August 1st, I was not feeling very well but attended fast meeting. Julia, Wilford, and Delma came down from the ranch and went back in the evening.

It rained some along in the forepart of the night. Things look very promising as to a crop. The corn at the ranch was looking fine.

August 6th, I received a letter today from Florence West of Idaho stating that my sister Jane West died on August 13, 1919, and that her son John A. West died January 31st, the same year. I had not heard from them for a long time and had sent several letters inquiring after them and at last wrote to the post master at Darlington and received the above information from Florence West, who I suppose, was a daughter of Erastus West.

The rainy season seems to have passed and it begins to look a little like the approach of the fall season.

Most of the folks were down from the ranch a day or two ago. They all went back but Delma who remained and will go up with them when they come down Sunday.

August 10th, Brother Thomas Terry, age, about 95, went out last night and stepped in a hole and broke his leg above the knee. He is also badly afflicted with a cancer that has eaten off a part of his nose and covered one of his eyes. Doctor McGregor came up from St. George and set the broken limb but there does not appear any signs of his recovery.

August 12th, Wilford came down yesterday to help S. C. Jones get up his hay.

The weather has turned a little cool and it appears as if the Indian summer had started as it is quite hazy and smoky.

Brother Thomas Terry who broke his leg died today. The accident hastened his death which was probably a good thing for he was suffering greatly from his cancer.

August 15th, the funeral of Brother Thomas Terry, the aged patriarch, was held at 2 PM. The speakers were Brothers James Barnum, George a. Holt, B. C. Farnsworth, -- Hammon, Thomas Cottam, and Edward H. Snow. All spoke of the long and faithful labors of Brother Terry. Wilford was the only one that was down from the ranch. Hannah and Addie had gone to Caliente for Jake.

Franklin Terry, Jr., while hauling hay, indulged in smoking a cigarette and in doing so his hay caught on fire and burned up, his wagon also was ruined, and one of his horses badly burned.

August 20th, a few days ago I received a letter from Clair Carson which gave the details of a fearful accident that happened while they were going along the coast of Oregon. He had stopped on a kind of dugway about 150 feet above the ocean and he went to crank his car when the brake gave way and the car went back over the bank, falling forty to sixty feet. There were five persons in the car. When he got down they were all unconscious. His wife had a rib or two broken; Frances, his mother, had an ankle broken, and all received serious injuries, and it was four days before one of the children regained consciousness. But all were alive and appeared to be on the way for recovery when he wrote, but it was certainly a miracle, his car was smashed all to pieces.

September 3rd, we are having lovely weather and the indications are that the frost has passed us for the present. The people have got their second crop of hay up and the indications are that many of them will have another cutting.

Last Sunday after meeting, Brother Seth Jones took Aunt Eliza and myself down to the Ivins farm about eight miles in his auto. Ivins had traded his place near town for this place from Brother Holt, there is near 2000 acres in the claim, some 200 acres of lucern, etc. They have built a fine barn and are raising some fine stock and a large flock of white leghorn chickens. We had a fine auto ride and stopped on our way back and visited Brother Elliker's garden which is perhaps the best in town.

There has been considerable sickness in the place which the Doctor in most cases pronounced Typhoid fever; all however are getting along fairly well.

I have been at work in the garden and around the place.

September 8th, Jake, Hannah, Jesse, and Delma went down to St. George today to attend the festival. Jesse will remain to attend the Dixie Normal. He expects to stay with my nephew Donald McGregor.

September 9th, there was an airplane passed over the place this afternoon, this was the first one that I ever saw, and of course we did not get a very good view of this. It was on the way to St. George.

September 11th, we are having very fine weather but cold nights. It frosted a very little last night, enough to kill some of the squash leaves.

September 16th, I got word that Jesse had the typhoid fever, he was not well when he went down so Doctor McGregor thought that he had better come home. Brother E. (A.) Barlocker brought him up for which he charged \$5.00 which I thought was a little unreasonable as he was coming up. He had just got here when Hannah and his mother came down as they heard he was sick but did not know that he had come home.

September 17th, Wilford came down last evening to help the Terry's thrash.

Our school started on Thursday, Delma is attending.

The weather is fine and I am busy gathering beans and shucking corn that Wilford brought down.

September 25th, it has been quite windy for a few days past and last night it froze quite hard and this was the hardest freeze that we have had this season.

Last Thursday I attended the funeral services of a little child of Brother Roy Staheli.

I have been around as teacher in which capacity I have acted for sometime past, in fact I started before I came down from the ranch. For this quarter, W. W. Hall was my partner. He lived a mile and a half above and was notified to call on me whenever he was ready to go. As he never called, although word was sent to him two or three times, I made the rounds alone for the three months.

Jesse who had been sick for sometime with the typhoid fever is gaining and appears to be doing well, but he does not sit up any as yet.

The folks at the ranch have not been down for a few days. I keep busy gathering up the garden stuff, corn, beans, etc.

October 1st, I went up to the ranch last Sunday evening after meeting and worked at shucking corn until Thursday evening, when I came down with a load of corn and potatoes. The corn was turning out very well. I shucked while there, 33 tubs full. (Julia, Hannah, and Addie helped me on Monday) I thought that from the way the corn turned out that there would be at least 300 wash tubs full of ears.

October 2nd, Julie came down with me from the ranch and she and Delma took the team back yesterday afternoon.

I have been busy answering letters etc.

While I was at the ranch I took a severe cold and have not felt very well since.

Jesse is getting along very well, he is getting around but does not do anything as yet.

We have very fine weather now.

October 3rd, I went up to the ranch with Jake and worked there shucking corn until Friday when I came down with Wilford. We brought down a load of corn and Wilford fixed up and started to Delta with S. C. Jones of Saturday, the 9th.

October 10th, I attended the meeting and after the services I went up to the ranch and next morning worked at shucking corn. On Wednesday we had a slight fall of snow which prevented me from working at the corn but the next day I worked as usual. I had shucked out about 80 tubs full and on the 15th I went down to town walking and was rather tired when I got through. I worked around home the next day digging a few potatoes, etc.

October 17th, I attended meeting. There was not a very large attendance.

Senator King and some others were here last Monday, so I was told, on a political tour speaking for the Democratic party. I was up at the ranch so did not get to see them.

October 20th, we had a slight sprinkle of snow last night and it was quite cold and foggy this morning.

Thomas B. Robinson's house burned down this morning. He was my nearest neighbor. They said about everything that was in it but the house was a total loss. He had started to build a new house near the old one. Sister Hannah Terry had just moved out and gone to Delta so Robinson moved into her place.

Wilford and Brother Jones had taken a job of hauling beets near Delta and was out from town some eight miles. He had bought a new wagon for which he was to pay \$212.50. He and Brother Jones wanted provisions sent them as they were boarding themselves.

October 22nd, there were three persons, Smythe, Rich, and Emory around in the interest of the Republican ticket. They held meeting this evening. Rich was the main speaker and spoke against the League of Nations and on the extravagance of the Democratic Party, and the Republicans were now to remedy this evil.

October 24th, I attended meeting, Brother Grant Ivins read the League of Nations and commented upon it as he went along from a Democratic point of view. He was a Democrat.

The weather is a little cold for this time of year. We have had several flurries of snow.

October 25th was a clear and pleasant day, the north wind which we had for several days has ceased and the weather has changed considerably.

October 30th, there was a snow fall last night to the depth of about 9 inches. It continued snowing most of the day, but it was a wet snow and melted and settled so that at night the snow was not as deep as it was in the morning.

We were out of wood so I had to gather sage brush and this was wet so it made a very poor fire, besides it took me half my time to gather it.

October 31st, Jake came down from the ranch and brought Aunt Julia. They stated that the snow fell up there to the depth of about 16 inches, but it settled considerably.

I attended meeting today but there was a rather slim attendance, the weather being so bad and sloppy under foot.

November 2nd was election day. Aunt Eliza, Julia, and I went down and voted. I voted the Republican ticket as I had been a Republican for many years. There was a very fair vote polled considering that there were so many away.

November 4th, the returns of the election have come so that it is certain that Warren G. Harding was elected President and most of the congressmen on the Republican ticket. Utah went Republican with a very few exceptions in some of the precincts, and not one Democrat was elected in Salt Lake County or City. Washington County went Republican for the first time in its history, but this precinct went Democratic.

I went up to the ranch today and got a load of corn. Julia went with me. We took diner with Hannah at her home a mile and a half from our place. I had Brother Robinson's team and wagon. The roads were extremely muddy and it was a hard day for all of us but we got a fairly good load considering and got back just at sundown.

November 7th, it was a cold and disagreeable day. I was feeling rather poorly so did not go to meeting. We had had cold, snowy, and muddy weather so that a few of the people had not finished digging their potatoes. A few finished getting theirs up and two or three never entirely finished, leaving the remnants in the ground.

November 15th, this marks Aunt Julia's 55th birthday.

I have been working for some days past putting on the lath on one of my rooms and getting up the poles so as to get the electric lights in my house. I got three poles and two posts from Bert Price for which I paid him \$7.00.

Saturday night the St. George Bank was robbed. A clue was found here by Job Hall finding a package of small coins marked St. George Bank, the auto having passed through here. Arthur Huntsman and some others followed the robbers and captured them in Panaca early this morning. The robbers had got about \$6,000 and about all of it was recovered, being found in the auto. The robbers were later tried and convicted and sent to jail.

I get letters from Jesse which stated that he was doing fairly well in school and had about caught up. He was five weeks behind when he started in, being kept out on account of his sickness.

The weather is quite changeable but not so very cold and some days are very pleasant.

November 25th, this day was observed as Thanksgiving day and was observed by the people here generally. A program was given in the meeting house. We had a splendid dinner and all the family were present that were here, Jake, Hannah, and Addie coming down from the ranch.

The weather is very fine the most of the time, but occasionally we have a few windy and disagreeable days.

I do not do much but the chores and work a little on the revision of some of my history.

Andy P. Winsor filed a complaint on the 11th against F. A. Johnson to recover a balance due him for merchandise furnished to Johnson. He also filed papers in a Garnishee to secure Johnson's wages, he working for the railroad.

This case has given me considerable worry and the shape that it was in made it much more difficult for me than an ordinary case.

November 29th, I went up to the ranch taking Job Hall's team, he having been called to St. George as a witness in the bank robbery case. He wished to send the team home. Julia went up with me. I then got Jake's team and went over to the ranch and got some wood and a little corn fodder there and then took dinner with Hannah and came on home with our load.

Jake was trying to set some posts around his pasture, but he had some days before got his hand hurt so that he could not do very much with one hand.

I have been trying to get the electric lights put in my house but it has been a difficult job to get the material as there was something lacking all the time.

December 5th, Wilford came in from Delta yesterday noon, he had bought a wagon but had paid but very little on it.

Jake and Hannah were down from the ranch, I attended meeting and spoke a short time. At the close of the meeting all the men remained and made arrangements to go up to the new reservoir site to try and finish putting in the foundation before the cold weather prevented them. There were about 30 men wanted.

December 6th, it was a very cold night last night, the coldest that we have had this winter.

Jed Terry had gone to Delta to work and got Aunt Eliza to tend his chickens, pigs, cow, etc., while he was gone. The cow, a registered Jersey, died last night. We felt very bad about it but she had had sick spells for sometime and we felt that we were not to blame in the matter. She had been sick but appeared all right the night before. The weather has moderated some today.

December 7th, I got the electric lights put in my house today, 6 rooms. George Nelson did the work, that is the main part, I did all I could.

December 15th, a very cold windy day. Wilford and Jake killed a yearling steer that Wilford got from Brother Jones for hauling hay.

The case of Andy P. Winsor has given me some worry. I set the case for December 28th.

It snowed some on the 19th.

December 23rd, Wilford came down from the ranch with some wood.

Jake went down to St. George with his auto to get Jesse yesterday, but Jesse came up on the mail so missed him. The pupils from here were coming up to spend the holidays.

The weather is very cold and there is a little snow.

December 25th, Christmas was spent very agreeably. All my children in this vicinity were at home and we had dinner together. We were all well, a great blessing.

The next day I attended meeting. Brother Seth Jones spoke on the meaning of Christmas to us and the mission of the Savior.

December 28th, the case of a. P. Winsor vs. F. A. Johnson came up before me as Justice of the Peace. There were two lawyers down from Nephi, R. W. Macmillan and Joseph H. McKnight for Winsor, E. V. Higgins was to have been here for the defendant but could not get away and B. C. Farnsworth took his place. There were a jury of four sworn to try the case; George A. Holt, Iver Clove, Aaron Huntsman, and John Z. Alger. The day was spent hearing the witnesses and the arguments when the Jury retired and brought in a verdict for the plaintiff for \$86.20. The

defendant gave notice of appeal and later perfected it but soon after a compromise was made through the efforts of the home missionaries and the case was withdrawn. But if the case had been put through Windsor would have undoubtedly won his case. But as Windsor was on a mission the wife consented to the settlement and withdrawing of the case to their loss.

December 29th, the boys came down with two loads of wood, Jake, Hannah, and Addie came down the next morning.

The snow is about all gone and thus we bid adieu to the old year and make new resolutions for the coming year. We received many cards and letters and some presents from our children and some of our grandchildren. Pleasing reminders that we were not forgotten although far removed from some of them.

1921
Chapter 116
A Trip to Parowan and Everyday Items

January 3rd, 1921, the year came in and others had come for centuries with all the hopes for better and prosperous conditions, and many making new resolutions that they would do better in the future and with hopes that their financial condition would be better. But many of these resolutions and hopes vanish like the fog before the rising sun.

I attended fast meeting yesterday and after meeting went over to Israel Adair's and blessed a baby of Fred Jones' and then we went over to Arthur Jones' where his baby was blessed.

Jake started early this morning for St. George taking Jesse back to school. He took some others, among whom was S. C. Jones who was going down to attend the school board meeting.

Wilford started to Caliente to sell some corn and he may stay there awhile and work hauling wood if he can get the job.

January 10th, I attended meeting yesterday. There was a good attendance. Brother --Terry and Jed M. Terry were the speakers, the latter had been to Delta working for some time.

The weather had been very good for this time of year but today it turned into a regular blizzard, the wind coming from the north.

January 11th, the snow fell last night to the depth of about 5 inches.

January 15th, I have not been feeling very well for a day or two. The weather has moderated some.

Jake and Hannah came down from the ranch.

January 16th, I attended meeting. Brothers Sorenson and Bowler were home missionaries. They expect to be here two weeks and will try to visit all the homes of the saints. Brother Sorenson spoke mainly on the Word of Wisdom relating to the use of tobacco. Brother Sorenson is a spirited speaker and a forceful one.

January 18th, we are having rain and wind and snow which is very disagreeable.

The next day Brother Jaunt Hunt and I spent the afternoon as teachers. We visited several families and found no difficulties and they were trying to live their religion. I got around regularly as a teacher once a month but I have not mentioned this very much.

January 25th, we have had Brothers Sorenson and Bowler laboring among the people for over a week. They speak at our public meetings and are holding a kind of cottage meeting at the various houses. They are stirring up the people and creating quite a reformation among the saints and many users of tobacco have quit the use of the weed.

There are several cases of measles in town and they have stopped the school.

The weather is quite cold with some snow on the ground.

February 1st, I attended meeting last Sunday, Amos Holt was the main speaker and gave some very good instructions and advice for children to honor their parents.

We were informed that Wilford would leave Caliente on last Friday and he has not arrived, we feel concerned about him, but the roads are very bad, mud and snow.

February 3rd, we received a letter from Wilford stating that the roads were so bad that he turned back after starting, and was still at Caliente.

Jake who had been here at work cementing up a well in town, finished the work and went up to the ranch yesterday, and today he came back and brought me some wood. Arthur Jones of the Bishopric sent me about half a load, hearing that I was out.

I received a letter from the Historians office at Phoenix, Arizona, asking for some historical matter relating to the Mormon Battalion, which I answered the next day, giving all that I knew about the matter asked for.

February 8th, we were having a regular blizzard, a cold north wind.

There is considerable sickness in town. The measles is in most of the homes and with some it is quite bad. Aunt Julia has been at Frank Terry's for a week waiting on the sick and Aunt Eliza has been at S. C. Jones' for two weeks. They have a new baby and are not getting along very well.

Will Truman and I have finished up our teachers work for the month.

I attended fast meeting Sunday and spoke.

When the missionaries were here, Brother Sorenson recommended that the High Priests have a prayer circle as there was so much sickness in the place and since that time we have had our prayer circle twice a week.

Wilford came in from Caliente this evening. He reported having a very muddy trip. He came around by Modena and went up to the ranch on the 9th. The snow is melting quite fast.

February 10th we had our prayer circle at Brother L. M. Terry's to pray for the sick as there was considerable sickness in the place. Brother S. C. Jones has a very sick baby, I was up there this morning to administer to it. The sick at Brother Frank Terry's were getting better and Julia came home last night.

February 15th, Wilford came down from the ranch and went on to the mountain Meadows. He was helping Brother Thomas Terry this far who was taking some wheat and potatoes to St. George. He came back the next day bringing a little wood and went on up to the ranch.

February 17th, Brother S. C. Jones' baby died on the 16th and was buried today. Some of Brother Jones' folks were over from Enoch to attend the funeral. I spoke a short time at the funeral. B. C. Farnsworth said last Sunday that there were 175 cases of measles in the place and several new cases have developed since then.

February 24th, Brother Bert Price's baby died with the measles and was buried yesterday.

Aunt Eliza went over to Parowan yesterday with Sister Robinson of Paragoonah, for a visit with her folks. She had been at Brother Jones' for some time and needed a change and a rest.

Our Prayer Circle met last night. The main ones that attended are George A. Holt, Arthur Jones, Jacob Hunt. L. M. Terry, William Truman, Orson Huntsman, Joseph Fish, Lewis Bastian, George O. Holt, and Joseph Jones. Some of these during the following year did not attend very regularly, and several others attended at different times. Later the circle was held once a week, and some elders and seventies joined. Later on the circle generally numbered about eight to ten, but was kept up during the year. We generally met at the meeting house but frequently at private houses when the meeting house was occupied. At these meetings everyone spoke briefly bearing his testimony. None were expected to meet at these meetings who were not in accord with the brethren.

February 28th, I went up to the ranch with Wilford and Julia. We stopped at Hannah's and took dinner and then went on over to the house and I commenced shucking corn. I found some of it spoiling but not any worse than I had expected. I worked at this until Thursday noon when we started back home. We left about 100 shocks yet to shuck. When we arrived home we found Addie who had had the measles getting along very well.

March 4th, we had taken Jake Bushar's lot to tend or put into wheat. It was an old lucern patch and was of course very hard to break up. Wilford started on this work using three horses on the plow. He broke the plow, the doubletrees and had all sorts of trouble. After getting another horse and a new doubletree stick and things fixed up, he got along better.

March 10th, I have been subject to dizzy spells for sometime past and had one or two lately quite bad. I generally vomit very bad when I have one of these bad ones.

I have been arranging to go over to Parowan on a visit and to get Aunt Eliza and I have arranged to take a team and buggy.

Jake Bushar came down with his auto and objected to my going over with a team as I might have one of those spells on the road and proposed that he take me over in his auto, but I objected to this. He insisted, so we started about noon and got along fairly well until we got about half way between New Castle and Iron Springs when we had a blow out. The auto was an old one and we had considerable trouble. At Iron Springs we had another blow out. Here we met Bishop George O. Holt. He helped us and we got a new tire on and came in and when we soon got within about two miles of Cedar City we had another blow out, but we soon got fixed up again and went on and managed to get into Parowan a little before sunset. Here we met Aunt Eliza at Annie Whitney's. Jake got his supper and after some work with his car got it fixed up so he got away a little after dark. Jake however only went as far as Cedar City where he traded his car for another nearly new. I stayed all night at Annie Whitney's where Aunt Eliza was staying.

March 11th, we went up to the cemetery and looked over the last resting places of many of our relatives, fathers, mothers, etc. We then visited around with some of our relatives.

The next day we visited around, called on Frank Burton and wife, Julia Lyman, Jesse Ward and some others.

March 13th, I attended meeting and spoke a short time upon the early settling of Parowan and incidents of early days.

March 14th, I had an invitation to go over to the school and give a lecture or talk, but as we were fixing to go to Beaver, I sent word that I was going off and could not accept the invitation but would be back in a few days. Aunt Eliza and I started for Beaver at 3 p.m. going over on the auto line, and in a little over two hours we were in Beaver where we met my daughter Josie. It seemed strange to be conveyed over the country so quick. The roads were muddy but we made good time amid the sleet that came down a part of the way. In my earlier days we would take all day to make this trip and with loaded teams, two hours, and now two hours had brought us over this desert waste. What a change has been wrought.

March 15th, we visited around some but remained the most of the time at Josie's. My old friend, John Ward Christian, had passed away, he was about 99 years of age. He stated before his death that he had not been much of a Christian but for seventy years he had said his prayers of an evening before retiring. He was baptized in early days of the San Bernardino Mission but during the Indian troubles at Beaver there was some dispute about guard duty and he was dropped from the Church and he was never re-baptized. He was always a friend to the Mormons.

March 16th, I called on a few old friends, among them was Wilson G. Nowers. He was about 93 years of age, was quite deaf and feeble, and was in bed. He was pleased to see me and said that I was the means that got him his pension as I was one of his witnesses. He had sent the papers to Arizona for me to sign as a witness that he served during the Walker War.

I went around and took a look at the new school house which is a magnificent building. It was not quite completed as they were painting inside. There was one bad feature about the location. While it was in the center of town, the water rises in this vicinity so that the cellars are filled with water, and this has to be pumped out of the engine room of the school house for about three months in the year which will be quite an expense.

We took dinner with my nephew Joseph F. McGregor and family.

March 17th, I went around with Aunt Eliza and Josie and we called on a niece of John Barraclough, Mrs. John Barton, and visited some others. We took dinner with my grandson Ambrose Barraclough. He has a nice family and lives in a part of his mother's house, but there is no religion about him.

In the afternoon I attended a celebration of the day held by the Relief Society in the Park Building. Here I met many old friends and acquaintances. They had a program and after it there was a pass around, and then dancing was the order.

Alma McGregor came in to Joseph F. McGregor's where I had a short talk with her about Jesse who had stayed with her up to Christmas time. She was on her way to Salt Lake City to care for her children who were going to school there.

March 18th, we took the auto this a.m. bidding adieu to Josie, John, and Ambrose and his family and reached Parowan a little after noon. Dr. Gowin came over in the same car. He gave a lecture in the evening on training children as to health and cleanliness. I attended the lecture. It was in their new school house.

March 19th, Aunt Eliza and I made several calls on some of our relatives. We called on Horace Huston and wife, he however was off with the sheep. We went to Sidney Burton's where we spent a short time with him and his wife, and took dinner with Samuel Mortensen and family, after which we returned to town where we made a few calls.

March 20th, I attended Sunday School which was well attended and very well conducted. I attended meeting, there were four missionaries from Cedar City that occupied the time. I then called on Oscar Lyman and wife, Hannah.

March 21st, by invitation I attended the high school and gave a lecture of about 45 minutes on Civil Government as was practiced in the early days of Utah and especially in the southern part. I spent sometime in the building looking over the different departments. This structure is a credit to the place. Mr. Taylor, who attends the heating plant, said that at times it took a ton of coal a day to heat the building. The school gathered in the Auditorium to congratulate Mr. Pymm and his three debaters who had just returned from St. George, having defeated the St. George team last Saturday evening in a debate. I visited around and called on the widow of E. L. Clark.

March 22nd, I was looking for Jake to come over after me today so, after a few calls, I gathered up a few shrubs to take back with us such as raspberries, currants, gooseberries, etc., and made a short visit to Walter Mitchell.

I have been rather poorly today, having had one of my dizzy spells in the morning. Jane and Hannah came in this evening.

March 23rd, Jake and Hannah went down to Paragoonah for a short call. We gathered up our things and started for home about 3 p.m. and arrived home a little after sunset. The next day I spent in setting out the shrubbery that we had brought over and in answering letters that had accumulated since my departure.

March 25th was a cold disagreeable day and I did little but read and write.

March 27th, I attended meeting. The speakers were E. O. Norr, Orson Huntsman, Lewis Bastian, and Bishop George O. Holt who reported on the conference recently held at St. George. The main items were setting a good example and training at home. The folks were down from the ranch, Julia and Wilford went up to the ranch the next day. Wilford had been doing a little work around here.

March 29th, I put in a door and window in the house. I had ordered two other windows but they were not the right size so I sent them back to Modena.

The next evening I attended the Prayer Circle which was held at Elias Hunt's house, there was a good attendance.

March 31st, I did some painting, such as doors and windows. Jake came down yesterday and he hauled out the manure from his barn onto my lot yesterday and today. This was a general clean up day in the town when all the corrals were supposed to be cleaned out.

April 3rd, I did not feel very well but attended meeting. There was a good attendance, there being over 260 present which was a very good attendance for this place. For sometime past our meetings have been well attended. In the evening I gave a short address to the young folks association on the slogan "We stand for a Sacred Sabbath". The folks were down from the ranch but went back in the evening.

April 5th, we are having a little snow and colder weather. April 7th, we are having rather cold and stormy weather. Last night ice formed in the house. From reports, about all the fruit in the Dixie country is killed which will be a severe blow to Southern Utah.

We had our prayer circle last evening at Bishop George O. Holt's, there were about sixteen present. All spoke and a good spirit prevailed and it was said that these meetings were creating a reformation in the place and that there was a better spirit manifested with the people.

April 11th, I attended meeting today. There was a good attendance. The folks were down from the ranch. Brother S. C. Jones who had been down to St. George to see about letting the contract for the building of our school house reported that it was let to Mr. Kempe for \$31,000 but this did not include several items as the plumbing, etc. The house was to be finished by November. The town board is trying to have the place cleaned up, corrals, etc., and state that those who fail will be prosecuted.

April 15th, Brother Lamb and I finished up our teachers work for the month. We find things in a very fair condition. Most of the people attend to their duties but a few neglect their meetings and several do not attend their priesthood meetings.

I attended the prayer circle which we hold every Wednesday evening, this meeting was held at Brother William Truman's.

It was cold enough to freeze the water in our water pipe.

Jake came down yesterday and commenced to lay up a house for Brother T. B. Robinson out of cement blocks. It froze so that he had to take some of them down this morning.

April 19th, I went up to the Ranch Sunday evening and worked at husking corn. Wilford plowed some. It was very windy and the dust from the fodder was hard on my eyes. The next day was bad, and in the afternoon I returned home.

April 20th, I attended our prayer circle at Brother Orson Huntsman's. I led in prayer.

The next day it was quite cold and our water pipe was frozen up so we could not get water for an hour or so, having to thaw it out with hot water. Brothers Farnsworth and Lytle are around fixing up the leaks in the pipe.

April 24th, Sunday, Yesterday was a terribly windy day and at night it turned to snowing, but did not much more than just cover the ground, but the wind drifted it quite bad.

The normal from St. George to the number of about 990 came in and in the evening put on an opera which was said to be rendered very well, but the night was a fearful one and was against them. They had been around to Hurricane, Cedar and Parowan. They started back to Cedar this morning.

It froze so hard that we could not get water out of our water pipe. It is almost like January weather.

April 26th, I went up to the ranch this evening and worked at shucking corn until May 1st, when I came down and attended meeting.

The folks were all down but went back in the evening. We have had tolerably good weather.

May 2nd, I received a check from James Brinkerhoff of \$400 in part payment on my place at Woodruff. I was pleased to get it as this would enable me to do something more on my house.

May 3rd, a very windy day. Julia, Addie, and Hannah came down and brought some wood and corn. I took the corn to the mill but they had no flour nor did they have a place to store the corn so I had to take it home again. The folks returned to the ranch, Delma going up with them.

May 7th, this was Mother's Day at which some good talks were made in relation to our mothers. I attended Priesthood meeting, Sunday School, and meeting.

May 9, Monday, nearly all the men and boys turned out to work on the road up Cottonwood Canyon towards St. George. I went along and helped all I could but I was not able to do much. Brother Huntsman and I hauled water, etc. There was about 30 teams and some 80 men and boys. We got the road in tolerably good shape up to the top of the ridge about seven miles.

May 11th, the Relief Society and Commercial Club had arranged to take a party down to St. George to work in the Temple. About 50 were preparing to go, I among the number, also my wife Julia. We got off at about 3 p.m. There were several cars. Jake Bushar took Julia and me, also Sister Robinson. We stopped at Brother George Smith's where there were several others of the party. Jesse was stopping here and as school was just out we expected to take him back with us.

May 12th, I went through the Temple for my uncle, Lemuel Fish. We intended to get some other work done and some baptisms, but they only baptized on Mondays so we were disappointed in this.

May 13th, Friday, I went through the Temple for my Grandfather's brother, Samuel Fish. After the services we returned home where we arrived a little before sunset. Jesse came with us. There was a large number went from here, I was told that there were over 60, and there were 140 that went through the Temple on Friday. While at St. George I settled up with Brother Smith for what Jesse was owing, over \$40. I met McGregor and Julia Lyman there.

May 15th, I attended meeting. Brother Grant Ivins, who had been to Salt Lake City for several weeks, was the speaker, giving us an account of things in the north. I also attended Priesthood meeting and the Parents Class. My hearing is so bad that I do not hear any from some of the speakers and not all of what is said by the best ones, or those who speak the loudest or most distinct. This has caused me to cease in a measure to attend meetings where there is a promiscuous discussion.

May 16th, Joseph E. Jones swore out a complaint against Arthur Truman for threatening to beat him up if he (Jones) traveled a certain road which ran through a piece of land that he claimed the title to. He wanted Truman bound over to keep the peace, I issued the warrant and handed it to Arthur Huntsman to serve.

May 17th, Huntsman returned the warrant with Arthur Truman who plead not guilty and wished time to consult a lawyer. Trial was set for the 23rd, at 10 a.m. Truman then swore out a warrant against Joseph E. Jones for assault and battery and a warrant was issued for Jones.

The next day was cold and windy with a little snow.

May 22nd, Sunday, I attended meeting. The folks were down from the ranch; Jake however was out riding as the stock were being gathered to turn on the summer range on Flat Top.

May 23rd, court was held as per appointment and as some of the parties had not been properly notified by the Constable, court was adjourned until 2 p.m. when the parties appeared and the case was talked over by them and settled up satisfactorily between them, and the case was dismissed. The case was started in the heat of passion and in the interest of peace the above action was taken.

May 30th, Sister Anna Hunt got kicked by a horse that she had just led to water and in a playful mood it ran and kicked, striking her in the face breaking her jaw and mashing the upper part of her mouth. It was thought it cracked her skull near the temple. Aunt Eliza was sent for at once and stayed with her until she was started for the hospital at

Cedar City which was as soon as arrangements could be made. On arrival there the Doctor said he had little hopes of her recovery. The next evening a special prayer circle was held for her. I was mouth in the circle and when we arose Brother Bastian said that he felt impressed to say she would recover which she did sooner than was expected.

June 5th, my daughter Della, her son Joseph F. and Mr. Butler and his wife and child came in from Snowflake at about 9 p.m. last night. We had given up their coming as we had been looking for them several days but car trouble had detained them. Joseph F. and Butler were on their way to attend the summer school at Salt Lake City, so they all started on this morning at 9 a.m. their visit was short as the boys were anxious to get to the school and they had been detained on the road. Della was going to Mona to visit her daughter there but expected to return for my birthday. All the folks came down from the ranch but were about 20 minutes late so did not get to see them. At our meeting we had as missionaries, Smoot and Savage from St. George, who spoke.

June 9th, Fred Jones' child died last night and the funeral was held this afternoon. I was one of the speakers at the funeral.

June 10th, I had the water on the piece of wheat near our house that Wilford had put in on Jake's land. I had the water 11 hours and then did not get it all watered. Brother S. C. Jones helped me and we worked hard as this was the first time that it was watered it was a hard job.

June 12th, my son Jesse started for Parowan to get some lumber and slabs yesterday.

I attended Priesthood meeting and Sunday School, but the weather was hot and I did not go to meeting.

Wilford was down and remained to help water the garden in the evening and went back at 10 p.m.

June 15th, Jesse returned from Parowan. He was unable to get up to the mill on account of the roads being torn up, so he got a little lumber and a few slabs from Jesse Ward, about half a load in all, and returned. Ward did not make any charge for them.

June 16th, I got a couple of screen doors and some screen wire to fix up the house a little, but in the unfinished condition of the house, it is a difficult job to fix it so as to keep the flies out, but it has been so cold that they have not bothered very much as yet. I put up screen wire around the porch.

June 17th, we have had some wind for three days, and cold weather accompanying it. It froze some last night killing many of the potatoes, and damaged the lucern. It was very cold for this time of year.

June 18th, Saturday, our stake conference convened at this place this a.m. President Edward Snow presiding. There were several from the different wards present. President Snow and Judge Morris occupied the most of the time in the forenoon and in the afternoon Elder B. H. Roberts and Patriarch Hyrum G. Smith having just arrived from Salt Lake City spoke, with some others.

Sunday, 19th, a priesthood meeting was held at which Patriarch Hyrum G. Smith was the main speaker. Several of the brethren were sustained to be ordained seventies. At the afternoon session Elder Roberts was the main speaker. In the forenoon Patriarch Smith was the main speaker. After the meetings the visiting brethren started for Salt Lake City. The conference was a very enjoyable one and much valuable instructions were given. There was a good attendance especially from this ward.

June 26th, I attended meeting. My daughters Josie, Frances, and Della came in at noon. Josie went to meeting with me. Frank Lyman brought them over from Parowan. His mother, Hannah Lyman, came over with them. After dinner Frank and his mother returned to Parowan. I was more than pleased to have my daughters visit me, they had come out to spend my 81st birthday with me. The three girls were also pleased to meet each other as these three girls had not all been together for 41 years. Della's health had been very poor for several years but she was somewhat better which enabled her to take this journey.

June 27th, 27th was my 81st birthday and the folks all came down from the ranch and we had quite an enjoyable time. All my daughters were present, but only two of the boys were here, Wilford and Jesse. I received letters from most of the absent ones.

I had the water on the garden but the boys helped me with it.

We had an excellent dinner and after this we visited, talking over the ups and downs of life's journey. Those living at the ranch returned home in the evening. The next few days we spent in visiting and exchanging our varied experiences. We spent a very enjoyable evening at Brother L. M. Terry's. Frances had been acquainted with them and many others who resided here when she lived in this vicinity before going to Oregon.

June 30th, Julia came down with the carriage and we all went up to the ranch and took dinner with Jake and Hannah. Then we went over to our ranch (a mile and a half), after which we returned to town.

July 2nd, Josie took the mail car for Modena on her return home.

July 4th, Frances and Della started for home, Jake had arranged to take them to Modena in his car but that was out of repair so he hitched up a team and took the carriage and, starting early, met the 11 o'clock train. Our visit with the girls had been short but one of much joy and pleasure to me as well as for them and we parted wishing them much joy and I extended them an invitation to come on my 90th birthday.

There was a celebration of the day, a meeting was held in the forenoon at which I was chaplain and S. C. Jones and L. M. Terry were the speakers. Several beautiful pieces of music were rendered by the choir of which Brother William Staheli was the leader.

July 13th, there was a very little rain just enough to moisten the vegetation, we have not had enough rain to do much good.

I received a note from Della Smith my grand daughter, saying that her mother had got home safely but was rather tired.

July 19th, Wilford, who had been to Parowan for slabs, came in this afternoon and went on up to the ranch. He was unable to go on over to the big mill as the roads were washed out so went to the other mill and got nearly a full load for which he paid \$4 but he made the trip a day sooner than he would have done had he gone on over to the other mill, but there he would have got them for nothing.

I have been at work about the house and in the garden. The weather is warm and dry, we not having any rain to speak of. Some preparations are being made for a grand meet for a three days' celebration before the 24th.

July 21st, 22nd, and 23rd, a grand carnival was held here, there were many from the different settlements in attendance and games of various kinds were participated in, such as roping steers, riding broncos, baseball games, wrestling, etc. On the 24th, the Primary rendered a program which was very good. I was out to this and this was the first time that I had been out for nearly a week as I had not been feeling very well. There was a celebration of the 24th on Monday the 25th, but most of the people thought that they had enough of sports and celebration and some went up to the reservoir to fish, etc. Brother Grant Ivins spoke on the topic of our celebrating the 24th, and the services lasted only about 45 minutes. It had been arranged for a program, but so many going to the reservoir it was to be carried out, the parties having parts were all away.

July 29th, the weather is still dry and warm and crops are suffering for want of water, especially the dry farm and the ranges. There has been some rain in the near neighborhood but the showers miss this place.

Merial Gibson, a young girl who was without parents, had been acting rather forward and too intimate with the boys, she was sent to the reform school today.

July 31st, yesterday there was a very little rain, just enough to dampen the ground.

Today I attended Sunday School and meeting. President Edward H. Snow spoke at the meeting on the force of habit. The folks were all down from the ranch today and returned in the evening. They generally come down every Sunday.

August 7th, we have had scarcely any rain during the months of June and July, a thing never known before, for there is always rain in July. The folks were down from the ranch and we all attended meeting.

August 9th, Brother Bastion cut our wheat. The crop looked well but there was too much lucern and straw for the wheat to turn out very well.

August 14th, this was Wilford's birthday. He had been down for several days hauling hay for L. M. Terry. The next day Wilford and Jesse hauled the wheat; I helped some; we had five loads. On the 17th we had it thrashed, there were 68 bushels from two acres and a half, but there was a little of it that never got any water. The Day boys thrashed it for me, they charged 11 bushels on 100. I fixed a little bin in the end of the screen porch for it.

August 18th, it was a very windy day, it has the appearances of fall. Some peddlers have been around bringing peaches from Leeds and Hurricane and sell them for five cents a pound. We not having any money do not buy many. I had expected to go down to Gunlock to get fruit and Julia came down with the team but we learned that there was no fruit to be had at Gunlock, so we gave up going. She went back to the ranch the next day.

Aunt Eliza is not feeling very well, she works too hard taking in washings etc. We have but little to go on this year and we have raised but little at the ranch and she is anxious to do something to help out to make a living.

August 28th, I spoke at there meeting today. The folks were all down and attended meeting except Jake who was out on the range rounding up stock.

Jesse had been over to Caliente to try to sell a few things, green corn etc. He got back to the ranch yesterday, had but little success.

August 30th, I have been at work for some days lathing and fixing up the house for the plastering, and today the Christian boys plastered three rooms of the house, being all that I had intended to do this fall. They however only put on one coat expecting to put on the finishing coat in a few days. Jesse did most of the work mixing the mortar.

Jake had gone to Modena and got 22 sacks of plaster which he said he would give for the use of one of the rooms this winter. I had built a flue in the room that he expected to occupy up to the roof, getting the brick from the old house of Brother Robinsons.

September 2nd, the Christian boys came over to the house and seeing that the first coat was not dry they asked permission to go home to St. George stating that they would be back soon to finish. They were going to work on the school house.

We had quite a heavy rain this morning. My son Silas came in on the mail this p.m. We were very much pleased to see him. He had just had an operation on his nose, having a part of the bone taken out where it had been broken years before. The operation was on the inside of the nose so there were no visible marks to be seen, but in consequence he was not feeling very well. The piece of bone inside was in such a shape that the Doctors told him that it would eventually cause deafness so he had it taken out. We went around some, looked at the school house, etc. during the afternoon.

September 3rd, I got Mr. Pinkerton to take Aunt Eliza, Silas, and myself up to the ranch for which he charged \$1.50. It would have been more but he was going to his place towards Modena and this would not take him out of his way very much. We took dinner with Jake and Hannah, went over to our ranch and returned with the team and buggy in the evening.

September 4th, Silas was in a hurry to return to snowflake on account of his school. He had been to Salt Lake City attending the summer school and stopped off on his return to see us. Jake took us over to Modena in his auto. Aunt Eliza, Jesse and I went along. We started quite early, had a little trouble with the auto but got into Modena a little

before 11 a.m. when Silas took the train for home. Jesse went along, was only going however as far as Caliente where he expected to get some work, as times were hard and money scarce. After bidding Silas goodbye, Jake, Aunt Eliza and I returned to Enterprise where we arrived a little after 11 p.m. I was a little tired after my ride but we greatly appreciated the short visit that Silas had made us.

September 11th, I attended meeting as usual. George Hunt and Brother Adair were the speakers. The folks were down from the ranch. Jesse came in with them, He had been unable to get work at Caliente so he returned the next day. It has the appearance of fall.

September 15th, my grandson Clair Carson and his son Leonard came in on the evening of the 13th. He was living near Caliente and came over to see about buying out the garage from Mr. Pinkerton. He spent the next day in looking over and taking stock of the garage and he thought that he would buy it if he could arrange for the money. He returned this evening. We were pleased with his short visit.

September 15th, my grandson Clair Carson and his son Leonard came in on the evening of the 13th. He was living near Caliente and came over to see about buying out the garage from Mr. Pinkerton. He spent the next day in looking over and taking stock of the garage and he thought that he would buy it if he could arrange for the money. He returned this evening. We were pleased with his short visit.

September 16th, we had a frost that killed most of the garden stuff.

Have been working on my cellar getting some brick from the old house of brother Robinson's to finish it with.

September 18th, I attended meeting and the Bishop and his counselors not being present, I being the oldest High Priest, was asked to take charge which I did, and spoke a short time on the bringing forth of the constitution as the day before was the anniversary of that event. Brothers Amos Terry and George A. Holt also spoke. The folks were down from the ranch as usual on Sunday and returned home in the evening. Wilford remained and took a grist to the mill the next day and helped me haul the brick that I had taken out of the old house of Brother Robinson's.

September 25th, The Christian Boys did not come back as expected, and I did not get the rooms plastered the second time until the 20th and 21st when Edward Christian finished the job and I mixed the mortar and tended him. He did a fair job.

I held Justice Court on the 21st and fined Joe Heggan \$5 and cost for using indecent language at the picture show.

Jake and Hannah moved down from the ranch on the 20th for the winter. They will live in one of our rooms. Jake went to work on the school house making mortar for the plasterers.

We are having very fair weather.

At the meeting today several spoke giving some items of the St. George Conference that they had just attended.

September 26th, I cut what corn I had in the lot and worked around the place as usual. Plenty of work in making a new home.

September 30th, I attended prayer circle last night. There were nine present

I finished my cellar all but the roof, and had no material for that.

I spent a little time each day in revising my History. I am now at work on the fourth volume.

Hannah gave birth to a girl this evening at about 20 minutes to seven. It was thought to be a little premature but mother and child were doing well.

I received a paper from M. M. Steele giving an account of the death of his wife Emily, who died on the 24th. We are having some frost of nights. It rained on the 1st of October.

October 6th, Jesse started to Delta this afternoon going with Franklin Terry. They were going to work at the beet factory. I attended prayer circle this evening, 11 present. The Bishop, who has moved up to his ranch, seldom attends.

October 8th, I have been at work fixing a kind of a corral for the stock. Our mill has been out of repair for sometime and nearly everyone is out of flour. They are putting in a set of new rollers.

October 16th, at the meeting today Brother Emil Barlocker, who had been to the conference at Salt Lake City, spoke giving a short sketch of the instructions given there.

We were busy digging the potatoes about his time, and my wife Julia went up to the ranch the next day to have those dug up there and do other work.

October 24th, it rained some last evening and the mountains around are covered with snow.

Wilford who had been over to the railroad with a load of hay came in with a good load of wood yesterday.

I am not having the best of health. For a few days past I am troubled with a dizziness nearly all the time.

October 28th, we are having very pleasant weather, but cool nights.

Our school house is progressing very well. They finished the plastering on the inside last evening. They now have the foundation to plaster on the outside. There are four carpenters at work laying floors, etc.

I attended prayer circle last evening, there were but seven present. Jake attends occasionally. The Bishop does not attend, one cause perhaps is he has been at his ranch much of the time. But his counselors, Brother Jacob Hunt and Arthur Jones, are very regular in attendance and are faithful workers in the cause. I have not said much about myself in the labors, but I am quite regular at meeting and the prayer circle, but on account of my hearing I have not attended the Priesthood meetings regularly.

I have been busy about the place and did considerable work on my history. I have made it a point not to be idle when I was able to work. I have been a teacher almost from the time I came to the place, and I can say that I have not neglected this duty but I have aided in settling several difficulties. I have tried to be useful. But as for means, I have not had as much as I had desired to keep my family properly dressed and provided for with the necessities of life. But we are greatly blessed in many ways, and have never lacked for something to eat.

1921-1922
Chapter 117
The Ups and Downs of Everyday Live

November 1st, 1921, I went up to the ranch yesterday and today I worked at shucking corn. Julia went up with me and helped about the corn. The water had come down the wash and buried the water trough so I had that to clean out so the cattle could get water. We returned to town on the 2nd, taking a load of corn and fodder.

The days were very warm and pleasant but rather cold of nights. I was quite tired after my short trip as I had worked hard what time I was gone.

November 4th, I attended the prayer circle last evening, there were eight present.

I have not felt well today. I am troubled with dizziness so much and sometimes it is so bad that I turn deathly sick and vomit.

November 15th, this was my wife Julia's birthday, she being fifty six today; we had no demonstration on the occasion.

The weather has been very pleasant of late until today it turned quite windy and blew all day. I tore up the old pipe in our water system and put in a hydrant. Brother S. C. Jones kindly helped me in the work as he understood the water system and the putting in of the hydrants.

Wilford, who had been over on the rail road and Caliente with a few potatoes, returned home; he went on up to the ranch the next day.

November 17th, the wind quieted down and last night it snowed some but as yet has not cleared up.

November 21st, I attended meeting yesterday. President Jacob Tanner and Brother Murdock from Beaver were the speakers. There was a good attendance at the meeting. In the evening the mutual gave a program which was rendered very well, and there was a very good attendance, as it was given as Father and Mother's Day. Flowers were given to all the parents.

The storms seem to have passed over and we are having very pleasant weather, no wind, which is a little uncommon here at this season of the year.

November 23rd, Addie started over to Beaver today going with Brothers Tanner and Murdock. They had been here several days in the Life Insurance Business.

November 24th, Jacob Bushar, Aunt Julia, Delma, and four others started out to gather pine nuts. They expected to go over beyond Modena. It rained some in the evening and I was afraid that their trip would be in vain. The next day it cleared up and was quite pleasant. They expected to be gone four days.

Wilford and Brother S. C. Jones had taken a contract to furnish the school with 60 cords of wood, they were getting it out a little east of the Holt ranch (old ranch) I believe that they were to get \$6.00 a cord for it. There were four working on the job. Wilford came in with a load and returned in the evening.

November 28th, Aunt Eliza got a phone message requesting her to go over to Parowan and take care of her sister Anna Whitney who was very sick, and needed help badly. Aunt Eliza happened to get a chance to go to Cedar with Adair in the afternoon and started off at a minute's warning.

Jake and girls came in from the trip of pine nutting this evening. They had some trouble in finding the right place for the pine nuts but finally found it and gathered considerable considering the time that they were there.

November 30th Jesse L. came in from Delta where he had been at work. He had done tolerably well considering all things. He paid some \$10 for his fare in and arrived with a little over \$30.

December 3rd, it has been very windy for a day or two, the wind coming from the north very cold.

This morning Cliff Hall and Art. Barlow came in and the former wished for papers to have Tom Truman arrested for the crime of assault. I questioned them some and ascertained that it was a kind of mixed up affair or row, so we went down to the mayor, William Lund, and consulted him on the subject. He thought that the whole bunch ought to be brought up and fined for their acts. He asked me to see the marshal, Arthur Huntsman, and have him look up the evidence. So I went and consulted him on the matter. We then saw L. M. Terry, and he told us what he saw of the row. Huntsman then went to see Murray Barnum and Lund and he then made a complaint against Cliff Hall, Arthur Barlow, Fred Bagshaw, Tom and Art Truman for using abusive language and engaging in a row. The parties were arrested and trial set for 3 p.m. Hall and Barlow plead guilty and the other three not guilty. A jury was called for by the three defendants. John Alger, Sr., John Alger Jr., T G. Hunt, and Iver Clove were the jurors accepted. The trial proceeded, there was not as much evidence brought against the boys as might have been from one cause or another but enough to convict more than the jury found guilty. The jury brought in their verdict which in short was Tom Truman and Fred Bagshaw not guilty and Art Truman guilty. I assessed a fine of \$5.00 and cost of court on Art Truman, and \$5.00 on Cliff Hall, and \$2.50 on Art Barlow. These had plead guilty of the disturbance but in reality they were not as guilty as the others. But I presume that the jury or a part of them were in sympathy with Tom Truman who was more to blame than some of the others. Art Truman said he would appeal the case but finally let it drop as he saw that there was no possible chance to win out of it.

December 6th, Julia, Wilford, and Jesse L. started off to gather pine nuts. They expected to be gone a week.

Jake is off riding for stock. Hannah, Delma and the two babies and I are here.

We have quite a number of chickens, six hogs, five cows, and two calves, besides a young steer that we are trying to get in a little better condition for beef, so it keeps us busy doing the chores and looking after things.

The weather is very fine but the nights are rather cold.

December 8th, I attended the prayer circle. By some arrangements Brother Hall had got the meeting house for his picture show, so we went over to Brother Orson Huntsman's house where we held our meeting. As a rule about seven or eight attend these meetings. They are the best meetings that we have, as a rule, and nearly all who attend acknowledge this.

December 12th, Julia, Wilford, and Jesse got back from their trip after pine nuts, they did very well, gathering a little more than three sacks full.

The next day Jake came in from his ride after stock, he was quite lame. He had met with an accident. In running after an animal, in turning his horse fell and catching his foot under it sprained his ankle quite bad so it was with some difficulty that he could get around.

December 16th, I attended prayer meeting last evening, there were eight present. It is regretted that the Bishop does not attend more. He has not been to but one or two meetings in about six months. He has been at his ranch much of the time, which is probably one cause. His counselor Arthur Jones is generally the one to take lead in these meetings. I attend Sunday Meetings quite regularly, but on account of my defective hearing I am not able to get the good of these meetings that I would if I could hear the speakers better. On this account I do not attend the Priesthood and Sunday School as often as I would otherwise, and some physical weakness also interferes with my going out very much, especially in the forepart of the day.

We are having very fine weather most of the time but last night it turned cold and the wind coming from the north makes it very disagreeable. This morning was cold and windy.

December 18th, it started in raining a little with a wind from the south and kept it up most of the night, and during the 19th it rained about the same, which brought some water in the wash, and it continued during the night coming

from the south with a wind. On the 21st the rain continued about the same or a little worse and the water in the wash near my house was very high. The water ran over on my lot at the south end which was quite low. The water rose high and took some of my fencing away and nearly all of the rip raping that I had put in, and it was cutting in so that the wood pile was in danger and we moved a part of it. The rain continued some. The night of the 20th the mail did not get in. They got to the wash near Windsor's where it was left on the other side.

William Lund came in from the north by the way of Cedar City last night but did not bring Addie from Beaver as I had expected. The road was so bad that he walked about fifteen miles the day before, and then went back after his auto, but left his machine before he got into town.

December 22nd, a little rain last night.

Jake and I went up to Hall's place as teachers. There were only three families there, Amos Hall having gone to Hurricane for the winter. We have been visiting here for the last three months. Some of the younger members do not work at their religion very much.

The water is very high and is running over the road from town to the Hall place so wagons go up the canal and on its banks and around on the north sometimes. The road becoming impassable for teams. The mail is not being brought over but left at Winsors until the water lowers some. We hear that the high water along the Clara and other places south has done considerable damage, bridges being swept away. It took out a section of the water pipes that brings the water into town where the line crossed the wash, so we were without water in town. The pump at the Square was started up to supply the town with water until the break could be repaired which was only a day or two.

It snowed and a cold wind came up, so I did not attend the prayer circle this evening which was held at Brother Joseph Terry's.

December 23rd, I worked at clearing off the snow and starting a stable which we started to build of old railroad ties.

Wilford went up to the ranch to look after the stock and he brought down a part of a load of ties and the next day we worked on the stable a part of the day. The chores and work around the place takes considerable time.

December 25th, Being Christmas day, a few presents were given but money being scarce, not as many presents were given as people would like to present to their friends.

Meeting was held at which Amos Terry and L. Bastian were the speakers. A very pleasant time was had but toward night there came up a strong south wind with some snow which was very disagreeable but it did not turn as cold as was anticipated.

We had a fine family dinner but not all the family were present to enjoy it, Aunt Eliza and Addie being absent.

December 31st, the last day of the year proved to be a beautiful day. We have had fine weather for the last two days, but previous to that it had been quite stormy and unsettled. But not so very cold. There had been over six inches of rain fall in the last two weeks which is very unusual for so much rain in this dry country at this time of the year. Our reservoir is about full which is encouraging as that insures us plenty of water for the coming season.

I have been quite poorly for the past week and have done but very little work of any kind.

Jake and the boys have attended to the chores, and one of them goes up to the ranch nearly every day to tend to the stock that is up there.

We have had so much rain this winter that nearly all the hay which was outside of barns has been spoiled. This will cause quite a shortage in feed for our animals.

January 1, 1922, Sunday, the day opened up very fair. Meeting was held at the usual hour 2 p.m. It being fast day several spoke bearing their testimonies. There is a Priesthood meeting every Sunday morning at 9 a.m. Sunday

School at 10:30 a.m. and meeting in the afternoon, and Mutual meeting in the evening (That is the M. I. A. of the young folks).

The year opened up very fair but in the evening it started to rain, and in a short time the water in the washes was coming down at a furious rate. It continued to rain most of the night.

January 2nd, it rained almost all day with a wind from the south, and towards night the people began to fear that their reservoir might be in danger so four men were sent up to look after it. Shoal Creek was very high. Two of the men returned during the evening and reported that the reservoir was full and was in some danger. This with other things induced several families to move out of town to higher land. Halls, Woods, Truman, and several others in the lower part of town moved out. It was arranged for persons to be on guard and those above would signal if there was any danger. Brother Norr, living west of me came down to my place and hallowed across the news, as my place was about the only one where we could get close enough together to talk across the wash. There was no getting in or out of town on the upper side. No one had crossed the wash during the day and the four men that went up to the reservoir had to go around up Spring Creek and over the hills. The weather turning colder the high water soon subsided. But the whole country was flooded below here to Lund, where considerable damage was done by the high water.

January 6th, I attended the prayer circle last evening; there were fourteen present, more than there had been for several weeks.

They have made a call on this ward for four missionaries to labor a short time in the other wards of the stake. Those called were L. M. Terry, E. O. Norr, Lewis Bastion, and Arthur Jones. They all went and performed a good mission.

There is some sickness in town which is mostly colds.

The weather has turned very cold during the last day or two and we are now having real winter weather. The high water had prevented the mails coming in and going out so that they have been very irregular. Railroads have suffered much from the floods and they have not been very regular. I have not been able to do much this winter, in fact the weather has not permitted a person to work outside very much. But I have done some on my history, revising some of it.

January 9th, I have not been feeling very well of late. I attended meeting yesterday. The home missionaries who were called from this place started off Saturday. Those who were to visit this place have not yet arrived.

The weather is clear but quite cold, and but little work is done outside.

January 12th, my daughter, Addie, came in from Parowan night before last with Roy Adams; she had come over from Beaver on the auto.

I have been around of evenings on my teachers work, which I made it a point not to neglect. My partner this quarter was Ephraim Barlow. He is a man of very little experience in this line but appears to be trying to do his duty.

We have been having very cold weather but it has been a little warmer today.

The boys are all at the ranch looking after the stock up there and getting a little wood out, but that is slow work this kind of weather.

January 17th, last Sunday we had some missionaries, they are around holding cottage meetings, and are expecting to visit every family in the place.

Thursday, the 12th, I attended the Prayer Circle held at Brother Fackeral's house, there were twelve present.

Friday, 13th, we finished up our teachers work, we had six families to visit in our district.

Quite a number of the brethren have gone down to a mining camp to work, it is about one hundred miles from here and is near St. Thomas as I am informed. There were a few who went some weeks ago and they were getting \$4.00 per day, but boarded themselves.

The weather has commenced to moderate some and is quite pleasant today, but still it has not thawed very much.

January 20th, last Wednesday the wind, coming from the north, brought a regular blizzard, and for two or three days this state of affairs continued. There was no snow with this cold piercing wind. It was reported that the thermometer went down to 14 below zero, this with such a piercing wind made it fierce to be out.

My daughter Addie went out beyond Modena to work for a short time for a lady whose maiden name was Hall belonging to the family of Halls who live here. She had a child only two weeks old, but all three went, being well protected from the cold in the car.

Jake and Wilford are up at the ranch, Jesse coming down yesterday. The weather appears to be moderating some.

January 27th was a very windy day and in the evening it snowed some and with the wind it was very disagreeable to be out. I had a bad cold and was not out.

The new school house was practically finished and there is a grand celebration on the occasion. A program was rendered in the forenoon, President Snow was up from St. George. In the afternoon they met at the school house and had some exercises. There was a band of some thirteen of the boys and they played several pieces and did extremely well for new beginners. This was the first time that they had played in public. William Staheli, who got up the band, deserves much credit for the pains he has taken with the boys. It showed that he had been careful and energetic in his work. Jesse is a member of the band, he plays the cornet.

In the evening there was a program rendered, with music. A lunch was served. The school board all gave short speeches, and after there was dancing. I was not well and did not attend any of these exercises but I was told that it was a grand success.

January 31st, the last three days have been very cold and wind from the south and a little snow occasionally. The snow is about a foot deep and drifted considerably.

Jake is up to the ranch, but the boys are at home.

February 5th, Sunday, we have been having some very cold weather, but the last day or two has been warmer.

I attended prayer circle at John Alger Jr., Thursday, there were 11 present. They said that the thermometer the night before was down to 11 below zero which was one of our coldest nights.

On last Friday, the 3rd, Pratt Canfield died. He had fallen out of a wagon and broke a blood vessel and the blood settled around his heart so the doctor said. He was buried today. There were also services held today in commemoration of President Penrose's birthday, he being 90 years old on the 4th. E. O. Norr was the principal speaker.

Jake and Wilford came down from the ranch, Wilford brought a little wood which was greatly needed this cold weather but roads were so bad that he could not bring very much.

Saturday, February 11th, last Wednesday it started to rain with a stiff south wind, and the snow melted fast and the next day we had some very high water which did some damage.

On Thursday the town Marshal, H. Lamb, and the County Attorney George Lund, brought in J. J. Hagen charged with petty larceny. He plead guilty, and I assessed a fine of \$40 or 40 days in the county jail. He not having any money was taken to St. George to serve his time.

The recent storms had flooded the town with water. The Pool Hall was filled, the water ran into one window and out at the other on the opposite side. The water seeps into all the cellars in the part of town around the stores and post office.

I attended the prayer circle which was held at Brother Huntsman's, there were but few present.

Last night my wife Julia who had a bad cough took worse and near one o'clock got so bad that she could hardly speak. I got up and made a fire, and Hannah got up and made a poultice of flour and cayenne pepper and put it on her breast which gave her some relief. She was somewhat better this morning, but I did not feel very well as my feet got cold in getting up and they did not get warm again.

Jake and Wilford came down from the ranch on horse back, so they did not bring any wood.

February 15th, Wednesday, we are having fairly good weather, but the roads are in a fearful condition, being washed out in many places, and between town and Hall's place the whole stream that comes down Shoal Creek is running in the road and over on each side. It is impossible to get through that way.

The widow Davis, who has been sick for sometime, died yesterday and there are several in town that are sick, and colds among the people are quite common.

A few teams are working on the roads around town. Jesse and Jake were out yesterday at work repairing the roads.

I have been Justice of the Peace for the town and Precinct for a little over three years, and on account of my hearing failing so much and my health, I resigned sometime since, but no action was taken on my resignation, but after waiting for nearly a year, last Monday, I received the following:

February 12, 1922, Brother Joseph Fish, Enterprise, Utah. Dear Brother Fish, As per instructions of the officers of the Town of Enterprise, I am writing you to notify you that your resignation as Justice of the Peace so long held up, has been accepted, and that you are released from further duties in that capacity. And the Board wish you to know your efforts have been very much appreciated and that you are hereby tendered a vote of thanks for your very valuable services, and that it is only by your own request and consideration of your years, that they have let you go. And may peace, prosperity, contentment and happiness attend you and yours is the wish of all the Town Authorities. I am, very respectfully your brother, B. C. Farnsworth, Town Clerk.

February 20th, Monday, Sister Fannie Laub died last Wednesday and was buried yesterday. There was a very large attendance at the funeral. No meeting was held today as the funeral services were held in place of the meeting. Sister Laub was a leading person among the young in all their gatherings and amusements and will be greatly missed.

The water is still running in the washes and roads up towards Hall's are still impassible.

Addie came home on Friday. She would have come home sooner but the roads were so bad that there was no travel.

A letter from my daughter Josie stated that she was very poorly and the Doctor said she would have to go to Salt Lake City to have an operation performed, or take the radium treatment.

February 27th, I have spent the week working a very little about the place, fixing the crossing of the wash near my place, and various little jobs, but the ground was frozen so that I could not do very much. I, however, set a few posts along the wash so as to protect the bank from being washed away any further.

The weather has been a little stormy but not very good.

Addie went down to Israel Adair's to work for them awhile as they have a new baby.

I attended prayer circle on the 23rd, at Brother Truman's. The Bishop was present. There was some talk on the subject, "Could we meet with those who used tobacco". It was the opinion of some that those who attended and were not worthy would soon drop out or repent and that we would not have to debar them.

I attended meeting yesterday, Brother Holt, brother of the ex-Bishop was the speaker. I was not able to hear very well but he spoke very well. He was a home missionary.

Last Saturday the men turned out and worked fixing the break in the wash. They were trying to turn the water back into the channel just below the Hall place. They did not quite complete the job.

A committee was appointed to see about fixing up the roads, ditches, etc., there was some work done on the roads today.

There is a report that the influenza is raging in several of the surrounding settlements and the health officers have quarantined the town, and put guards at all the roads so as to take all who come in and put them under quarantine to prevent any one coming in from spreading the disease.

March 1st, Wednesday, yesterday was a regular blizzard, the cold north wind was fierce and it was one of the coldest days of the season, and today has not been much better, being one of the coldest snaps that we have had during the winter.

March 2nd, it was much better today.

Hannah and Jake moved up to the ranch. They had been with us all winter but Jake had been back and forth to the ranch.

Jesse and I hauled some rock to rip rap along the wash near the house.

I attended prayer circle this evening in the meeting house, there were 13 present. This time was the first that we had met in the meeting house in the evening.

March 4th, Sister Truman died today. Her father, Jeremiah Leavitt, was my cousin.

March 5th, the funeral of Sister Truman was held today in the meeting house. A short meeting being held before the funeral services were held. The folks came down from the ranch; Jake however went back in the evening.

March 6th, Monday, Wilford and the rest of the folks went back to the ranch.

There were about 15 turned out to make benches for the meeting house. We worked in the brick school house, I worked hard and did not feel the best at night.

I got my pension today for three months, \$60 and it was soon gone.

I received a letter from Aunt Eliza on Saturday evening, she stated that Josie who was sick wanted her to go over to Beaver to help her or stay with her awhile. Aunt Eliza said that she did not feel hardly able, but that she would go soon.

March 11th, the Commercial Club had donated money for purchasing lumber to make the benches, so the Bishop sent for it, it having arrived on Monday the 6th, some 15 or 20 turned out to make the benches for the meeting house. I went and helped as has been stated, and worked all the week, but the force dwindled after the first day or two down to five or six, and as these only put in about half a day, the work went on extremely slow. The weather was cold, stormy and considerable wind, and the benches were not all made. To finish the job, it was turned over to Ise Pace.

I attended prayer circle last Thursday evening, there were 21 present, the largest number that we had ever had.

March 14th, Thursday, it has snowed some but the weather seemed now to be more settled.

I suppose that I had worked too hard during the past week on the benches and was sick Sunday so that I did not go to meeting.

The boys hauled a little brush to rip rap with in the forenoon and in the afternoon they and Hannah went to the ranch.

I have been reading *The History of the Church* by Roberts and have about finished it. (6 volumes)

March 17th, I attended the prayer circle last night; there were 19 present; we had a good meeting.

It has been quite stormy for the last two days, and there is still some water running in the washes. I have done a little in putting in some brush and rock in the rip rapping. I wheeled a large number of wheel barrow loads of rotten straw from the corral and some dirt from where I dug the cellar.

There is some sickness in town, some rheumatism, but as yet we have not had any flue for which we are thankful.

This being the anniversary of the organization of the Relief Society, preparations are being made to have a grand entertainment tonight.

March 20th, Monday, last Friday as has been mentioned, preparations were made for an entertainment by the Relief Society to all who wished to attend. The event came off as planned, fifteen gallons of ice cream was made and refreshments were given during the evening, dancing was continued with speeches until the 12 o'clock hour bid the company to cease and obey the standing order that these parties should close at that hour. All went off with the best of order. I was not feeling very well, so did not attend, but the other members of the family went and enjoyed the entertainment.

The last few days have been warm and pleasant and it begins to look as if spring was coming. There is still some water running in the washes.

I attended meeting yesterday, which was well attended, and the new benches were brought in to accommodate the people.

Arrangements were made for all the men and teams that it was possible to secure to turn out and turn the water back into the channel between town and Hall's. It had been running over into the road ever since the high water in the winter, and the people had traveled up the canal much of the time since that time, the canal being dry.

The teachers Report Meeting was held after the afternoon meeting. The report showed that not as many had completed their work as had been expected, but it was expected that the rest of the work would be completed before the last of the month.

March 22nd, Wednesday was my 63rd anniversary of my first wedding day.

The last few days has been like spring, warm and pleasant, and the farmers are now busy hauling out their manure.

They finished the job of turning the water out of the road this side of Halls on Tuesday evening, this will be a great help as the road to Halls has been impassable, for they can now fix it so that people can travel, this has been greatly needed.

I received a letter from my son John L. in Arizona that they had discovered an Asbestos Mine and that he had a small interest in it. He thought that it was going to be very valuable. We sent me several specimens of the different kinds of one that they had in the mine.

Last Monday evening we had a cottage meeting in my teacher's district. It was held at Brother Henry Barnum's place. I took charge, my partner being away. I invited Brother E. O. Norr to take his place, that is, to meet with us. Brother Jacob Hunt and Arthur Jones, counselors to the Bishop were present. They, with others, spoke and we had a very pleasant meeting, and some very encouraging remarks were made by different ones.

March 24th, I have not been very well for a day or two and did not attend the prayer circle last night. Dizziness of the head seems to be my greatest trouble. When it gets really bad, I turn deathly sick and vomit, but I try to keep around and do what I can about the place.

The weather has been very fine for several days but today is a little cloudy with a sprinkle of rain occasionally. Wilford was down and brought some wood and went back yesterday.

I work a little when I can get any material, to protect the place against high water.

I received word that it was thought that Josie's trouble was a cancer, but the Doctor would not let her know what he thought about it. Aunt Eliza is not feeling very well but agreed to go over and stay with her for awhile.

March 28th, I was quite unwell last week and did not go to meeting Sunday. But I am feeling better and I am able to work in the garden a little.

It was a fine day on Monday but today has been windy and a little snow in the afternoon, and there is still considerable water in the washes.

Nearly everyone has been out repairing ditches. Our boys were out with the rest.

1922
Chapter 118
Everyday Life Continued

April 1, 1922, the people have been trying very hard to keep the flu out of the town and the officers thought that they had been successful and that all danger was past and raised the quarantine. Then someone came in, went to the dance, and exposed about 36 others. These were quarantined, but later several persons came down and there are now strenuous efforts being made to stop the spread of this disease.

Yesterday and today have been very windy and cold, the wind coming from the north.

The boys killed one of our pigs today, it was not very fat.

Wilford, who had been working on the ditches, went up to the ranch this afternoon.

Our folks and Jake had sent for an incubator. It came last evening. It had been delayed and had not arrived as soon as expected. It was late in the season but they started it as soon as possible.

I have been at work about the place, I set out a few shade trees.

April 6th, there was no meeting on the 2nd because of the scare about the flu.

On the 3rd I made a foot bridge across the ditch near my place.

On the 4th we had a little snow and it was a very windy day, there was rain at spells.

Water in the wash is still running and it is a cold blustering time.

I attended prayer circle this evening, there were 16 present a very fair attendance. The main subject was the prevalence of profanity, it is too common. The brethren thought that there should be steps taken to check this growing evil.

April 10th, the last few days have been more like winter than spring, having been quite windy and stormy, snowing Saturday and for the last two nights it froze water in the house which indicated very cold weather for this time of year.

I have been rather poorly for a few days and yesterday I lay abed the most of the day so of course did not go to meeting. It seems that I complain quite often according to my journal but on the whole I think that I get along fairly well, for I manage to do considerable work about the place, and it is not often that I take to bed for a day.

Jake and Hannah came down yesterday and went back in the evening.

April 12th, it has snowed a little for the last two days, but it is about all gone today.

Jesse started for Caliente yesterday to assist Clair Carson in taking a couple of calves, also the cows, from Modena to Caliente Carson was at Modena and Jesse expected to meet him there. Jesse was taking about twenty hundred of produce to trade. The roads were in terrible condition and he would not be able to get through yesterday, but expects to get through early today.

April 16th, it snowed considerable last Wednesday night but turned warmer and it was all gone by Friday evening, that is in the valley.

There was considerable water in the washes but less this morning. It commenced snowing again this morning and continued all the forenoon which makes things look very discouraging for spring weather.

April 21st, I was not well last Sunday and did not go to meeting. I realize that I often work too hard and especially at the close of the week and then I am laid up for a day or two.

Jesse, who had been to Caliente, came in at noon on the 18th. His team was quite jaded, as the roads had been in fearful condition. He did not make much on the trip. He went more to accommodate Clair Carson.

I attended prayer circle last evening at Brother Truman's place, there were ten present.

The weather for a few days past has been fine and it begins to look as if spring was coming, but it still freezes some of the nights.

I have worked some at grubbing brush and fixing the rip rap along the wash, and I am feeling better than I have for several days.

I do a little on my historical work when I can find time and am able to work on the revision. But with so many things to take my attention, I find but little time for the work. I try to keep up a regular correspondence with several of my children and others.

April 24th, my son Jesse started to Delta to get work. He wished to go to school next winter and this trip was to try and get means to go to school on. Delma went half way with him going on horseback. He then intended to go to Modena on foot but an auto came along on which he got a ride in.

The next day the folks came down from the ranch for meeting. I attended. Brother Winsor (the engineer) who had come in from the north spoke very interestingly on the "New and Everlasting Covenant".

It is more like spring than it has been, the weather being fine; and we are now having very fair weather.

April 29th, on the 27th I helped Wilford kill a pig, and in the afternoon he went up to the ranch.

I attended prayer circle in the evening, there were 13 present.

I have spent a little time in fixing up around the place.

May 4th, I attended meeting last Sunday. President Snow and his counselors, Brothers Cottam and Whitehead were present and occupied the time.

On the 2nd Jake and Hannah started down to St. George to do some work in the Temple, for his dead relatives.

There are a couple of missionaries around preaching. They were visiting all the people, they do not profess to belong to any Church, but preaching the *Bible* as they understand it, they are also distributing some tracts, and selling a few books, etc.

May 10th, there was an entertainment given by the school as it was their closing exercises and they occupied the meeting house; so we postponed our prayer circle, the first time in over a year that we had not held it.

Wilford came down from the ranch the next day.

Our old sow had a litter of ten pigs but it was during a snow storm and she managed to loose four of them by lying on them.

The wind blew all night last night and snowed this morning.

May 15th, our meeting yesterday was conducted by the Aaronic Priesthood, they taking charge. They rendered an excellent program, these young men did extremely well and brought out many good ideas for the older ones to think

about. There was a large attendance at the meeting and many pronounced it one of the best meetings that they had ever attended in the place.

We have had excellent weather most of the week, but yesterday it turned cold and last night it rained some and this morning it continued with a nice gentle rain but it was rather cool.

The folks came down from the ranch to attend meeting but returned last evening. Delma went up with them.

I was sick last Thursday so did not attend the circle meeting but I have been feeling better the last few days.

May 23rd, we have had very good weather for the last week, one or two days that was rather windy, but with that exception the weather has been ideal spring weather, and I have improved the time working in the garden.

As mentioned, the folks had sent for an incubator, but the first batch only about one half hatched out, and soon after thirty of them disappeared. I think that our neighbor's hogs that were out got the most of them.

I attended prayer circle last Thursday evening, there were 13 present. I attended meeting on Sunday and spoke during the services.

Jake is down working on his lot preparing to put in some garden, potatoes, lucern, etc.

May 26th, rather cold weather for this time of year and we were afraid of frost, but it did not freeze last night and we are in hopes that it will not tonight.

I attended prayer circle last night, there were 11 present.

Aunt Eliza came home day before yesterday; she had been gone six months. We were pleased to have her back again. She reported that Josie, whom she had been with for a while, was no better, she did not think that she had cancer, but that her ailment was of another cause.

May 21st, I attended meeting lat Sunday; we had a couple of missionaries, one was a young man named Snow. They were from St. George and spoke very well.

We are having very fine weather.

I worked in the garden yesterday putting in some beans, which practically finished putting in the garden. It was not much, but I tried to utilize all the land. It takes considerable work irrigating and weeding, etc.

June 24th, I have neglected to keep any notes of the things that transpired during the past month but they were about as usual. I was busy about the home.

There is considerable wind and the insects are doing considerable damage to crops. Worms have taken the corn as it came up and grasshoppers are taking lucern, and wheat, etc., so it looks as if our crop would be cut short.

Jake was over to Caliente with a truck load of potatoes, chickens, eggs, etc. He got back Tuesday and Friday started to Mesquite to take a load of household goods for Mr. Dimick. He gets a cow for the trip but she proved to be rather an inferior one.

Sometime after Aunt Eliza came home, Aunt Julia went up to the ranch and she is back and forth more or less.

I keep busy looking after things about the home, fixing up hog pens, chicken coops, weeding in the garden, irrigating.

As to my historical work, I have finished the 4th volume, having revised it some and copied it, and I have made a carbon copy so as to have it in case of an accident. I am now fixing up to start on the 5th volume, so from one thing to another I manage to keep busy and it is perhaps a good thing for it is said that it is better to wear out than to rust out.

June 27th, this day is my 82nd birthday. As there were few of my family present and none from abroad, the folks did not make any preparations for anything extra. Julia and Delma came down from the ranch however and in the evening the Relief Society, or the most of them, came in and seven or eight of the brethren, S. C. Jones read the first chapter of the first volume of my historical work which treated on what Utah was supposed to be at the time the pioneers came to Utah in 1847. The Relief Society brought in lemons, cake, etc., and lemonade was made and passed around with the cake. After an enjoyable time in talking of old times the entertainment closed at about 11 p.m. Thus ended the long and tiresome and toiled stain travel of my 82 years, and I now started on to travel the down hill path to reach my 83 milestone in life's journey. I had worked out in the hot sun a little too long and did not feel very well.

June 29th, Wilford came down from the ranch to fix up for haying. Jake came down to irrigate and fix up his barn. I do some work around at various things, in the garden and around the place.

July 5th, the national day was celebrated yesterday, a very nice program was given in the forenoon at 10 a.m. The house was beautifully decorated, and a large number of people gathered to pay honor to the patriotic spirit of 1776. The day was very warm which made it a little uncomfortable. I attended but on account of my defective hearing, I did not get the good of the speaking that I would have liked. There was a dance in the afternoon for the children and in the evening for adults. All went off in the best of order and those attending were well entertained.

Wilford and Jake are engaged in haying for the Terry's. There is a hot wave apparently going over the country.

July 12th, I have been spending my time in the garden and at various other jobs. I have spent some of my time on revising the fifth volume of my History.

The weather continues dry and hot and I fear that our dry farm will not amount to much unless it rains soon. Much of the crops in the field have been greatly damaged by insects.

I attended prayer circle last Thursday at Brother Huntsman's; some thought that we had better adjourn them during the busy time as so few attended during the rush of work. However, there was no action taken on it at the present time. I hardly ever miss when I am able to go. These meetings have been a wonderful help to those who attend, some state that it is really ahead of the priesthood meeting for information and increasing their faith in the Gospel.

July 19th, at our prayer circle last Thursday those present spoke on the subject of postponing them for awhile. There was none in favor of it, so we will try to keep them going.

The grasshoppers and other insects are doing considerable damage in the fields to the crops, and from reports there will be but little wheat raised this year.

It rained a little last evening, just enough to dampen the ground and cool the air. It would be a good thing if enough would come to destroy or help wash away the insects.

The folks are all up to the ranch but Aunt Eliza and me.

July 29th, the last week has been one of festivities; the 24th was celebrated with real pioneer spirit. There was a good program rendered in the forenoon and a dance for the children in the afternoon and one for the adults in the evening. The next three days were devoted to a carnival, stock show, poultry, etc. The committee had arranged a very good program which was carried out nicely. There was riding of broncos, roping of steers, foot races, wrestling, and ball games every afternoon. There were four baseball teams present. Our local team, St. George, Beaver, and Cedar, the later got the prize. Picture shows and dancing in the evening. There were many from the outside places, and all went off fairly well and the whole affair reflected much credit in William Lund and the other members of the committee.

Yesterday we had a regular down pour of rain with some hail, the first heavy shower that we have had this summer. It did considerable good and as is the usual case, some damage in vines, etc. Wilford had started to Parowan a little before the rain came and we were afraid that he might have been caught in it, this we could not tell for the wind shifted and the rain came from all directions, the main shower however came from the east.

July 30th, I went up to the ranch this evening. Julia and Delma went with me; we had Jake's team and our carriage. It rained some on the way, just enough to get us quite damp before we got there. I worked while there at hoeing out the corn and potatoes. I was not able to do as much as I would have liked to but I did what I was able. The recent rains had not been quite as heavy at the ranch as they had been in town but they had helped out the corn, potatoes, etc., wonderfully; and the things looked much better than I had expected.

August 6th, we went down to town, started early and when I got to town I was told that I was to take the water on the lot, so I watered what things that I thought needed it and did not go to meeting. We went back to the ranch in the evening. Julia and Delma look after the cows, calves, and the chickens, and I put in all the time that I am able to in hoeing corn and potatoes.

On Friday, 11th, Sister Truman had a quilting and invited us down to their place. Julia went down in the forenoon and I hoed corn until near noon when I went down and we took dinner with them and remained there for sometime visiting with Brother Truman most of the afternoon.

The day before, he had taken President A. W. Ivins and some others up to the reservoir to look over that situation. President Ivins had brought a couple of persons down from Salt Lake City who were looking over his property with a view of buying the same. They were well pleased with the outlook, so reported, but did not make any offer as they had to consult their company first on the matter.

I returned to town on Sunday Morning, coming down with Brother Truman. Julia came down with Sister Ogden.

August 19th, I have been at work during the past week around the place, a part of the time on the cellar which had never been completed, and I worked a little on my historical work.

August 20th, Julia and Delma came down from the ranch and went back in the evening.

Wilford, who had been to Parowan, had brought in some lumber and is now helping some of the people get up their hay. He went up to the ranch with his mother and expects to work there for awhile.

I attended meeting. Brother Jones from Gunlock spoke, after which Brother S. C. Jones who had been to St. George to attend a meeting of the Board of Education gave an account of their labors.

August 22nd, I have worked some on the cellar plastering it over above the ground with cement.

It rained a little yesterday and some this morning, and it begins to appear as if fall was coming from the feeling and looks of the air and surroundings, but it is too early for that.

August 24th, Brother Norr's father, mother, two sisters, and a brother-in-law came in from Logan last evening to visit their son, E. O. Norr and family. I called on them and spent a short time with them. Brother Norr's mother was not well. She had been ailing for sometime and had recently come out of the hospital.

I attended the prayer meeting in the evening; Brother Norr's father and his brother-in-law also attended.

Julia, Addie, Delma, Hannah, and the babies started this morning for Gunlock to get fruit.

August 27th, I attended meeting today. Bishop Snow from Pine Valley spoke. The folks that went for fruit returned this evening. They had done fairly well, got some 10 or 11 hundred that was about all that the team could pull up the Veyo Hill, the fruit cost them one cent a pound.

August 28th, Jesse came in from Delta, got a chance to come in with a person for driving his car as the owner did not understand it very well. He returned the next day. He would have been glad to have remained longer but Mr. Sager, the man he came with, wished to return.

September 3rd, I attended the prayer circle last Wednesday evening at Brother Joseph Terry's; the change was made this evening as the Primary was putting on a program and the meeting house was wanted Thursday evening. The attendance was light, only four attended, but we had a good and interesting meeting.

Members from the St. George Normal College attended the meeting today and they rendered a program and made a few very good and appropriate remarks in relation to education, and in relation to their school at St. George.

Wilford came down from the ranch with a load of corn and fodder. Julia and Delma came with him and they went back in the evening. It rained some during the day.

September 8th, three of us went to the prayer circle last evening but no one else came and we did not have the key to the building so after waiting about a half hour we went home. This was about the first time that we had missed holding our meeting.

Wilford came down night before last and brought some corn. He fixed up and started to Parowan for lumber yesterday. He was hauling some for Will Truman to pay for a horse. Jake went to Dixie for fruit.

Julia and Delma are at the ranch alone which is a little hard of them to look after everything besides being alone.

September 10th, there was a slight frost last night; but it did but very little damage, just nipped the leaves on the vines a very little, Julia came down from the ranch, got Elias Hunt to pull two of her teeth.

Aunt Eliza is not feeling very well.

Jake who went for fruit broke down. His truck would not work so he came in, got a team, and went out and pulled it in. He was going to take the fruit to Caliente but could not get his truck fixed so as to go on, so he sold out his load here.

September 14th, Julia came down on the 11th to bring a can of cream down. They are shipping a can to Salt Lake City about once a week.

The weather is a little warmer than common and dry. Things are maturing very fast in the garden. I have been shucking out the corn that Wilford brought down some time ago.

I attended the prayer circle in the evening, there were six present.

September 19th, I attended meeting last Sunday, there was a fair attendance considering that there were so many away. Some had gone to St. George to attend the quarterly conference. I had intended to go down but the lack of means and other hindrances prevented me. At our local meeting here Brother Barnum from Mesquite, son of James Barnum, spoke. His remarks were interesting and instructive.

I have been busy all the time and have made a door frame, cased up some doors, and taken care of the corn.

Julia, Addie, and Delma came down from the ranch. Julia and Addie went back after meeting and Delma stopped to go to school which started yesterday, but the department that Delma was in did not start until today.

On Sunday night we had a flurry of wind and a little rain, but as a whole, the weather has been very fine.

September 26th, those who attended the conference at St. George spoke giving an account of the meetings and instructions that were given, they were mostly in the department work.

Julia and Wilford came down from the ranch. Addie stayed to look after things there. They reported that the Cedar birds were taking a considerable amount of the corn in spite of their efforts to prevent them. They were taking care of it as fast as they could.

I have been at work finishing up the stable, that is all that I could do on it.

Aunt Eliza has been busy gathering the beans and thrashing them out, the weather is fairly good, no frost as yet to hurt things, but we look for it soon. There is a wind blowing which is giving evidence that fall weather is approaching.

October 4th, it has been quite windy for the last three days, so bad that the people could not haul hay, only by getting up before day light and getting one load before the wind raised in the morning.

There was an airplane came over town today, it lit just out on the eastern part of town. After the wind settled some, it took some people up charging them \$7.50 each for a ten minutes ride. There were but very few who cared to go up at this price. I was told that I could have taken a ride for nothing if I had been present as he took up any over eighty for nothing. The next morning the person continued on to Los Angeles. This was the first one that I ever saw to be close to. Many of us went down to where it was and looked it over.

October 5th, there was quite a frost last night, being the hardest that we had. The wind had ceased and it was a beautiful day. Wilford came down yesterday bringing some corn and fodder.

October 18th, the folks all came down from the ranch except Julia, she remained to take care of the corn. I attended meeting, two of the school teachers spoke. The principal, Mr. Miles, is teaching Spanish and as I have forgotten my Spanish, I am trying to brighten up a little in that line. Some of the teachers went up to the reservoir on Sunday and were late coming back. It was dark and they got in a bad place and tipped over and two or three of them were hurt but none seriously.

George Truman's baby died on Sunday night.

Jake started for Pine Valley for lumber this morning.

October 15th, Sunday, the folks came down from the ranch bringing a little corn and wood. In the afternoon Jesse came in from Delta. They all went up to the ranch in the evening, Jesse going up with them.

We are having excellent weather and I have been shucking corn for a few days.

I had one of my dizzy spells and did not go to meeting. Yesterday I helped to unload a load of hay and perhaps over did myself no doubt causing my dizzy spell.

October 18th, Jesse started to school yesterday, he had made enough at Delta to make the first payment \$50.00.

Wilford and Addie came down from the ranch yesterday, each bringing a load of corn and potatoes. They went back as soon as we could unload them.

I have started to make a door and frame for our upstairs, this will keep some of the cold out during the winter, I experience much difficulty in this as I have no suitable lumber.

October 25th, I gave a short historical talk to one of the classes in the school on the early settlement and conditions in the southern part of the state.

I have spent the last week in fixing around the place, preparing for winter, gathering in a few things we had in the garden.

I have not felt very well, but manage to do a little each day.

There was a Democratic rally last night. Mr. Petty from Hurricane was the speaker. He did very well in his talk but found a little too much fault with the other party, noting the errors of the Republican party and many of them may not have been errors. This evening there was a Republican Rally, Bishop Hershey was the speaker. He was from Hurricane. He explained the new tariff and how the tariff had worked in the past, and made several good points, and refrained from the too common practice of politicians of mud slinging.

October 29th, I attended meeting which was fairly attended. Brothers William Lund, George Hunt, and Amos Terry were the speakers.

Last Friday was a very windy day and it rained some during the night, and the next morning, Saturday, it snowed and continued more or less during the day and today it snowed a very little but it was damp and wet and did not amount to much on the ground.

President A. W. Ivins came in on Friday evening, partly on business I suppose, and was to stay over Sunday, but was called back to Salt Lake City on Saturday afternoon, so but few got to see him.

November 3rd, the last few days it has been quite stormy and last night there was quite a fall of snow, there being near a foot on the ground this morning.

Wilford had got a load of wheat ready to start to Caliente, but this storm coming on, he with others that were going gave up the trip for the present.

There are several in town who have not got up their potatoes and it now looks very discouraging for them.

November 5th, yesterday was a very pleasant day and the snow melted some.

The boys killed our hog yesterday.

It turned cold last night forming ice in the house, and a fog this morning.

November 11th, the snow has melted so that many have commenced to gather the potatoes that were in the ground. Some of them were frozen.

There was a party given for the old folks; all over 55 were invited. They met at 11:30 a.m. There was a social visit and short speeches were made, I being the oldest was called on first; dancing was then in order. I danced once with Aunt Eliza but made rather an awkward figure I suppose, as many others did also. The entertainment was a decided success thanks to the committee. We were taken home in autos as we had been taken to the meeting house. Adjourned at 5 p.m.

November 12th, Sunday, I attended Sunday School but took one of my dizzy spells, vomiting, and had to go home, so I spent the most of the day in bed. I have had these spells occasionally for five years, but not often so bad.

It cleared up so Wilford and others went to Caliente but soon returned.

November 19th, I attended meeting today.

I have worked around the house, on the corral, and at other odd jobs during the past week.

On the 21st I had another dizzy spell so did not do much for a few days.

Thursday, 23rd, we had our prayer circle at Brother Huntsman's this evening. Wilford who had been to Modena for Elias Hunt, returned this evening.

November 24th, Wilford went on with his load to St. George, and was then going on to Mount Trumbull for lumber for Hunt who was building at St. George.

Our prayer circle is being held at private dwellings until we get it arranged to hold it in our public building, lack of wood at the meeting house being the main trouble just at present.

November 26th, Sunday, President Snow and his counselors came up from St. George and organized the Bishopric, Bishop George O. Holt having resigned some time ago. He and his counselors were released, and Joseph Terry was sustained as Bishop with Arthur Jones and William Lund as his counselors and Amos Terry as Ward Clerk. The old Bishopric were held to finish up the tithing for the year before they turned that over.

November 30th, this was Thanksgiving Day and we had a family dinner but not all the family were present, Jake being to Caliente, and Wilford at Mount Trumbull. It was rather a bad day.

Yesterday morning it snowed some and continued off and on all day so by night there was nearly a foot and last night it snowed and blew. The mail did not come in today on account of the snow between here and Modena.

There was a dance for the children this p.m. but the day was so bad that not many attended. There was a dance in the evening for the adults.

1922-1923
Chapter 119
The Events of a Busy Life

December 3rd, 1922, I attended the Elders Conference yesterday (Saturday). There was but a slim attendance. The recent storms prevented those in the outside settlements from attending and many of the young men in this place are only half hearted in the work. E. O. Norr, president of the quorum, took charge, and spoke at some length on the duties of the Elders. He is alive to his duties but there are so many that are indifferent that his work is sometimes perhaps discouraging. Bishop Joseph A. Terry and ex-Bishop George O. Holt were present and spoke.

I probably took cold attending this meeting, it was very sloppy and bad under foot, and I was not well during the night and the next day, so I did not attend the meeting. The weather has been quite warm for this time of year, it is, however, quite cloudy. The snow has settled fast and it is a slush in many places, snow and water.

Jake, who had been to Caliente, got in last evening.

December 8th, I attended the prayer meeting last night; there were 16 present and as usual all bore their testimony or spoke a short time. These meetings usually last till about 11 p.m. This was about the largest number that had attended for sometime. We had called these meetings the Prayer Circle, but as some rather objected to the name it was decided to call them Prayer Meetings. All who held the Melchizedek Priesthood who were in good fellowship were invited to attend; a very small percent, however, came out.

Wednesday, the children had traded a cornet and 20 hundred of potatoes for an organ to Brother Earl (with my consent). I uncovered the pit and weighed the potatoes out and then it took me sometime to get some boards and cover it up. It was a very disagreeable and windy day and today is not much better.

I received my pension, \$20 on the 6th. It comes every month and is soon gone in paying debts and getting a few things that we have to have in the house. It is quite a help but it seems that it does not amount to much at the time, for it is gone before I get it.

December 11th, I attended meeting yesterday; it was conducted and carried on by the Aaronic Priesthood. The young men who spoke had different parts on the subject of tithing, and they handled the subject very well and indeed they did remarkably well for boys. It was a very interesting meeting, the subject of tithing being explained in all its details in a very able manner.

The weather continues stormy and cloudy most of the time but not very cold.

December 12th, it is 48 years ago today since my wife Mary C. died. Two of her children, Joseph C. and Jessie May have followed her, and the oldest one, Mary Josephine, is an invalid suffering with a cancer of the abdomen and may soon be added to those who have gone on ahead. We all hope that we may all be permitted, when our time comes, to join them in a happier state. I have not heard from Frances for sometime. She still is troubled with her ankle that was mashed in the Auto wreck.

December 14th, we are having considerable rain of late. It rained most of the day yesterday, and there is considerable water running in the wash.

Wilford came in lat night from Mount Trumbull; he had made two trips from St. George for lumber for Elias Hunt who was starting to build a house at St. George. He had a muddy and disagreeable time of it.

December 16th, I attended the prayer meeting last Thursday. There were 16 present, and we had an interesting meeting. The main subject spoken on was tithing.

Friday, the 15th, the Walters Company, a traveling troop, gave us a play entitled, "The Sweetest Girl in Dixie" which was fairly well rendered. The smaller boys made considerable noise before the play started; they seemed a little rude and noisy. Aunt Eliza and I went in free as the rule of the house was that all over 70 years were not charged.

The weather has cleared up and today is very fine. I worked yesterday leveling up the side walk, wheeling in dirt.

Wilford went up to help turn the water in the main channel, it had been running out over the fields and in the street below Hall's place and the roads were impassible for teams.

December 17th, 1922, I attended meeting today but soon after it started I took one of my dizzy spells and had to go out, and I vomited hard, which I always do when I have one of these hard dizzy spells. I have the spells occasionally but I am dizzy much of the time but not so bad. I was laid up the rest of the day, that is, I was abed the most of the time.

The weather seems to be cloudy and very cold the most of the time.

December 18th, Jake started to Caliente with some chickens, to sell. It is very foggy and cold.

December 21st, Thursday, we have been having a cold fog for several days and today it was quite bad, the frost being on the trees and bushes all day. It certainly looked beautiful to see things dressed out in winter costume.

Wilford started for Caliente today with a load of chickens and three hogs, two of these were S. C. Jones'. He was taking them over to sell for Jones. He went up by the ranch to get some of his chickens that were there.

I attended the prayer meeting this evening. There was a kind of show or program in the meeting house just over our heads and they made so much noise that I got but little good from the meeting, my hearing being defective made it much worse.

December 23rd, 1922, it was a very foggy day and has been so for several days past. The frost settling on the trees formed a most beautiful picture, one that would rival any work of art. Every tree and bush, fences, etc., formed a resting place for the beautiful crystals that covered and hung to them. This has been the case for several days, and still it has not been so very cold, but the sun has been hid by the fog all the time during this spell of fog.

Thursday, December 28th, for a few days past we have had very fair weather, but today it started in windy and in the evening it snowed some, a cold wind prevailed all the time.

Wilford returned from Caliente today, he did not do very well with the load that he took over to sell; chickens were down and the price of pork was below what he had expected, so he made but very little for his hard trip in the cold.

I attended the prayer meeting in the evening which was held at Brother Orson Huntsman's and was a spirited one. There were three of the sisters present. A. P. Winsor was present, he had just returned from a mission in California, all spoke.

December 30th, Saturday, we are having very pleasant weather but a little cold of nights, when it freezes.

I am starting to get a fence between my lot and that of Jacob Bushar's, that is, moving the present partition fence a little more than a rod. I also moved the ditch which ran through the lot. The ground is froze some and in places I have to use a crow bar. I only work a little each day as I spend much of my time working on my History and writing letters to different members of the family. I do nothing to bring in any money, but try to keep things up about the place and care for what we have.

Julia and Aunt Eliza take in washing and make something that way. They work hard and help all they can to keep things up. Jesse and Delma go to school and are doing fairly well. Jesse takes great interest in the band music, he has a cornet and practices considerably.

December 31st, Sunday, I attended meeting today. The Primary gave a short program which went off very well after which Brother A. P. Winsor gave an interesting account of his missionary labors while on a mission in California. He said that we ought to be thankful for our peaceful homes and surroundings.

There was a cold wind during the day and a slight snow storm during the evening.

January 1, 1923, Monday the year came in with fine weather. My family, all that were in this place, got together and we all had dinner together. After dinner Jake started for Caliente to get work on the railroad.

January 4th, Thursday, I attended prayer meeting, there were 13 present. It was held in the meeting house where we generally had it unless the building was occupied for some other special meeting of some kind.

January 8th, I have been working some on the partition fence, the east line took 34 posts.

Yesterday Aunt Eliza and I took dinner with Brother Jed M. Terry and wife and after dinner attended meeting. The room was rather warm and I was not feeling very well. Our choir leader, William Staheli, took sick while leading the choir and had to stop. I presume on account of the room being too warm.

We are having the finest weather that I ever saw in January. It freezes a little of nights but during the days it is warm and pleasant, almost like spring.

There has been a leak in our reservoir for some time and they have not determined where it comes from. Parties have been at work on it for sometime and it appears to be very difficult to find. They have let out considerable of the water so as to determine just what the trouble is. For this cause, the prospect is that we will not have any water to speak of for the coming season, this is very discouraging, especially to some.

Thursday, January 11th, we have had most beautiful weather for this time of year. I have not had the best of health but I manage to do considerable about the place, for there is always something to be done, and then the wash near the house has needed considerable work on it and I have done what I could but I lack material, rock and brush.

On the 19th, Wilford started to Caliente with a load of potatoes. He cannot hope to make much out of them but they are of but little value here, the people raised so many that they are not worth much.

I attended the prayer meeting this evening, there were about 20 persons present and all spoke but three. Spiritual gifts and the bearing of testimony were the main subjects.

Tuesday, January 23rd, 1923, I have not noted any items in my journal for nearly two weeks. We have had beautiful weather, and the last week I have been busy working on a chicken coop having torn the old one down. I am making a new one; it is 20 x 14 on the ground and ten feet high and a place for windows near the top. I have got it nearly ready for the shingles. Wilford got some of the lumber and the shingles at Modena when he returned from Caliente.

I attended prayer meeting last Thursday evening, there were about 17 present and lat Sunday I attended meeting. I have not always stated this item but I do not always mention it. William Pulsipher, who had just returned from a mission in the vicinity of Missouri, gave us a very interesting account of his labors. He is a young man of promise and showed that he had studied the principles of the gospel to a considerable extent.

After meeting I attended the teachers report meeting which was well attended but the reports of their visits were not very satisfactory as many had not made their visits. I have been acting as teacher this month and have made my visits alone as my partner (Brother Lamb) is at work on the reservoir. There is a light force working there all the time. My teachers work is a very difficult task for me as my hearing is so bad that it is hard for me to understand some of the people. But I always try to do whatever I am called to do by the authorities.

There have been several of the brethren called to go on home missions, that is to visit the different settlements. Among those called are William Lund, E. O. Norr, Jed. M. Terry, Ed. Hall, Brother Crawford, and I believe another one. I believe all went and filled short missions.

The weather is rather windy and last night there was a sprinkle of rain, just enough to dampen the ground. The winter has been dry and we fear a shortage of water.

Saturday, January 27th, Thursday was a stormy day but it has cleared off some and I worked on the chicken coop. Wilford helped me some in the shingling. He came down from the ranch Thursday, but he stays there nearly all the time. He soon went back. He has stock that have to be looked after and he cannot be away long at a time.

February 1st, 1923, we have had wind for the last three days, and day before yesterday it snowed in the night, falling about a foot deep. Yesterday I scraped the snow off the chicken coop so that I could shingle, it not being all shingled yet. I also shoveled some paths around and scraped the snow off the cellar and made a door for the chicken coop.

The home missionaries who were from Hurricane visited us in the afternoon. They were Brothers Sanders and Sandburg. They talked a short time on the personality of God and tithing. There was a party given for them in the evening but I did not go. Most of the family went.

Wilford, who had been up to the ranch, came down in the afternoon with some wood for Hannah. It snowed a little last night.

February 3rd, I attended the prayer meeting Thursday evening. There were eight present.

There is a foot or over of snow on the ground and it is very cold. The last few days have been cold, stormy, and windy, and today is the coldest of the season.

Wilford is up to the ranch looking after the stock.

February 12th, Monday, we are having one of the worst storms that I have witnessed for sometime. The wind blew hard last night and the snow drifted into every crack and crevice about the house.

Aunt Julia was sick and we had to get up with her at four in the morning, get mustard plasters, etc., to relieve her breathing. She appeared to have pneumonia or symptoms of it. She is easier today.

The storm prevailed yesterday so I did not go to meeting, there were but few that did go, only about 30. There is considerable sickness in the place, mostly colds. The school is almost a failure, not half of the pupils attend, the storm and sickness prevailing. Jesse and Delma have been sick a week.

I attended prayer meeting last Thursday, there were 7 at the meeting.

The home missionaries from this place who have ben out have returned and report having a very successful visit among the Saints, some of them report that they attended as high as 14 cottage meetings while gone.

Monday, February 25th, I have not been feeling well for several days so I did nothing the last week to speak of. I did not go to prayer meeting last Thursday nor to Sunday meeting yesterday.

Glen Hunt, who has just returned from a mission in the Southern States spoke at the meeting giving an account of his labors while gone.

Yesterday there was a change in the weather, the wind coming from the north with a flurry of snow and cold.

Jake came in from the railroad a few days ago but is going back in a day or two.

They report that the work on the reservoir is nearly completed, they have been at work on it for a long time and sunk down some eighty feet, and they think that now they have succeeded in stopping the leak.

There is considerable sickness in the place, mostly colds, but it does not appear to be of a serious nature.

March 3rd, 1923, I attended prayer meeting Thursday evening, none of the Bishopric were present and I being the oldest person took charge of the meeting. There were 14 present and we had a very good meeting. Brother Glen Hunt, who had recently returned from a mission, was present and spoke.

The first two days of this month were very nice and pleasant, but today it turned colder and snow came from the north with a strong wind which made it very disagreeable.

Wilford who has been up to the ranch came down last evening.

March 4th, it snowed a little last night and the weather being very bad and I being poorly I did not go out today. I have not been well for sometime.

March 10th, I have done but little the past week. I worked a little on the revising of some of my historical work.

I attended prayer meeting on last Thursday evening. We had a good meeting, there were 13 present.

It snowed some last night and turned very cold and disagreeable. The storm, coming from the north, made it worse, but towards night it seemed better. This storm will be hard on the stock on the range, for they are poor and weak, and the range in poor condition and hay in town to feed them is extremely scarce.

March 14th, this has been one of the worst days that I have ever witnessed, a strong wind from the north all day with a flurry of snow in the forenoon. A piercing wind made it almost unbearable for a person to be out.

Hannah's little Zelma has been very sick. We have had the elders several times and nursed her all that we could, and got Sister Day to come and doctor her. We have faith and greatly hope that she will recover.

March 17th, the weather has been somewhat better for the last two days.

I attended prayer meeting last Thursday, there were 13 present. Hannah's little Zelma was prayed for in the circle. She seemed to be getting better, and she seemed much better this morning. We have great hopes for her.

March 21st, Hannah's little Zelma is still a very sick child.

There is a strong and cold wind from the north and a slight flurry of snow last night.

Last Sunday the Bishopric were absent attending the conference at St. George, and as I was the eldest High Priest, took charge of the meeting. Lamond Huntsman and Grant Ivins were the speakers. They dwelt mostly on the terrible condition of the people in the near east and in Europe.

March 22nd, my grandchild, Zelma, died this morning at about 1 a.m. Pneumonia seemed to have been the main cause of her death. She was a most lovely child and had endeared herself to all of us. Her death was a sad blow to all the family. A telegram was sent to Jake this morning to Los Angeles conveying the sad intelligence.

March 24th, Jacob Bushar arrived yesterday at about 1 p.m. and the funeral of little Zelma was held today at 2 p.m. in the meeting house. The speakers were Joseph Fish, L. M. Terry, and A. B. Winsor. The grave was dedicated by Orson Huntsman, There were many flowers cast upon the coffin and the grave was covered with evergreens, vines, etc. The people of Enterprise have shown a true feeling of sympathy in their help and readiness to assist in every way possible. The Relief Society and Brother Lund, in the absence of the Bishop, were very prompt and attentive in their aid in every way. The Bishop came in, in time to attend the funeral.

April 3rd, I have been afflicted more or less with a bad cold, but I have been gradually wearing it off.

I have worked some during the last week lathing up the wardrobes, and I find it a rather disagreeable job as the studding was not of the best material and being very crooked it took some work to hew off in places and patch up in others to get it true. We are having very fair weather at the present.

Wilford came down from the ranch Saturday evening and went back last evening.

I attended fast meeting yesterday and also attended the prayer meeting last Thursday, there were 19 present, the majority spoke. These prayer meetings generally last a little over two hours and as a rule all speak bearing their testimony, etc.

April 9th, Monday, we are having very fair weather, it appears that spring has come.

Last Thursday I attended prayer meeting, it had been arranged for the members who wished to bring their wives. There were seventeen men and five sisters, and we had a very interesting meeting.

I attended meeting on Sunday, there was a good attendance.

I have been at work in the garden some.

Wilford came down yesterday and went back in the evening.

There was a traveling troop came in today and will put on a play tonight. The meeting house is used for this purpose.

I was worried, not feeling very well last night, and did not sleep but very little.

April 16th, last Thursday evening I attended the prayer meeting, there were 20 present. Bishop Joseph A. Terry gave a short sketch of the late conference at Salt Lake City.

On the 15th I attended the Sunday meeting. Patriarch Moyle from the Liberty Stake spoke a short time, and A. P. Winsor gave quite a lengthy account of the conference at the City as he had taken notes of all the speakers, mentioning all and the principal points that were dwelt upon.

I have worked some in the garden and in getting out a few shade trees, replacing many that had died that were set out the year before. We are having very pleasant weather.

April 20th, 1923, I attended prayer meeting last evening, there were 14 present, the main subject spoken on was how to prevent crime and the method of treating criminals, those who break the law.

Aunt Julia went up to the ranch yesterday and took a part of the chickens, she went up with Jake.

We are having very fair weather but a little cold of nights.

I generally attend meeting but I have failed to note it as often as I should.

April 23rd, it snowed in the forenoon after a wind all night,. The snow was about a foot deep, but settled very fast. The sun came out for awhile and Wilford and his mother who had come down from the ranch started back about noon.

Hay is extremely scarce, we were entirely out, and Wilford got a little from S. C. Jones.

The Relief Society gave a dance Friday night to raise means for an excursion to the Temple, they made about \$25.00.

On Saturday, Dr. Kerr from Salt Lake City and Professor Tanner from St. George called on me for a talk on the subject of the Mountain Meadow Massacre and other historical items and we had a very interesting talk for over an hour on these and other matters of history.

1923
Chapter 120
A Cold, Dry Summer

May 2nd, I attended meeting last Thursday evening, there were 15 present. I attended Priesthood meeting Sunday morning and Sunday services in the afternoon. President Cottam and Brother Bentley were the speakers; there was a good attendance.

There was a stock buyer up at Terry's ranch buying cattle but he was quite particular about the kind of stock that he would take.

Wilford and his mother came down from the ranch but Wilford went back in the evening and came down again Tuesday and plowed the garden in the afternoon and went back the next morning.

I have worked yesterday and today tearing down a part of the old chicken coop and making a new one for the roosters.

May 4th, our school closed yesterday, and in the evening there was a program rendered, and after that dancing was in order. There was no regular prayer meeting on account of the school entertainment. A few however got together and had prayers but no testimony was given. The school superintendent and Mr. Peterson were up from St. George and stated that the graduating class was above the average.

My son Jesse started for Moapa this morning to get work for the purpose of attending school next session.

May 9th, we have been having excellent weather of late.

The Dixie Normal College gave a play last Saturday evening which was well rendered and gave general satisfaction.

I attended the Priesthood meeting, also the Sunday meeting on Sunday. I attended the prayer meeting last evening, there were 10 present.

I have been at work fixing up the chicken coop.

This morning it turned a little windy.

The folks are all up at the ranch except Aunt Eliza, Addie, and me.

May 14th, I attended prayer meeting last Thursday evening, there were 10 present.

I have been at work some in the garden, and making a chicken run.

The folks all came down from the ranch for meeting but went back in the evening.

It rained some during the afternoon, just enough to freshen up things some. Things begin to look prosperous and as if spring was coming.

I got a letter from Jesse last Friday. He said that they would not take him at Moapa without a written statement from his parents, as he was under age. So we went on to California. He was at Long Beach with my Grandson, Ambrose M. Fish, who was getting \$8.00 a day. He thought that he would soon get a job.

May 17th, I have not felt very well so did not attend the prayer meeting this evening. I attended the Priesthood meeting on the 20th but feeling rather poorly I did not attend the Sunday services.

May 24th, I attended the prayer meeting this evening, there were 11 present.

May 25th, we are having dry windy weather and things need water badly. They are working on the ditches and as yet have not got the water in this part of town. The gardens are drying up. We however had the water in the ditch for a short time a week ago.

Julia and Delma came down from the ranch yesterday bringing a plow point to be sharpened going back today. I started today to plant some beans.

May 28th, I attended Priesthood meeting yesterday and Sunday meeting in the afternoon. We had missionaries, one from Bunkerville and one, Brother Graff, from the Santa Clara.

We are having very fair weather but very dry and no water in the ditches as yet, but we expect it in a day or two.

The folks came down from the ranch yesterday for meeting and went back in the evening.

My daughter Addie had been encouraged by Jesse to go out where he was in California so she started for Long Beach, California yesterday, going over to Modena with Thomas R. Robinson, who was sending his daughter to Salt Lake City. Addie took the Limited and will probably be in Los Angeles this morning at a little after 9 o'clock.

May 31st, a cold windy day, almost like winter. Sister Canfield died last Monday; she had been sick for a long time; her funeral was held yesterday and was one of the largest that I have attended in this place.

I got a letter from my daughter Josie at Beaver, she had been to Salt Lake City for medical treatment, was in the hospital for eight days, where three doctors, after a consultation, said that she had a growth on her intestine and that they could do nothing for her, but if she had come six months earlier they probably could have cured her, so she came home, in a sad condition. Poor girl, I feel for her in that terrible condition with a cancer eating her up, but they have not told her that it was a cancer. When she wrote she was propped up in bed and she still had hopes that she would get well enough to go to the Temple and have her work done. She had never been adopted to her parents.

June 2nd, 1923, on the last day of May, it froze hard during the night killing nearly all vegetation that was out of the ground. All of the fruit is killed, but of this there is but little in this place. It was cold and windy the day before the frost. Today is somewhat better, but still quite cold.

I attended prayer meeting on Thursday evening, there were only five present.

June 5th, Aunt Eliza and I went down to St. George today to do some work in the Temple. We rode with Bishop Joseph A. Terry. The Relief society had got up an excursion for the occasion and there were over thirty went down. Aunt Eliza and I stopped with my nephew D. A. McGregor.

June 6th, I went through the Temple and received endowments for my cousin Joseph Fish in the forenoon, and in the afternoon I went through for Joseph York, a relative of my wife Julia. Aunt Eliza went through both times for a relative of Julia's.

June 7th, I took my daughter Delma to the hospital to have her tonsils taken out as they were in a bad condition. Dr. McGregor performed the operation which was successfully done.

In the afternoon I went through the Temple and received endowments for John York, a relative of my wife Julia. Aunt Eliza went through both times. We returned home in the evening. Delma came home with Brother Nelson.

June 8th, I felt a little tired and did but very little. We are having very fair weather, but a little cold of nights.

June 18th, I attended prayer meeting last Thursday evening, there were 6 present. I have spent the last week working in the garden and doing some work in revising my History.

Yesterday I attended Priesthood meeting in the morning and then Sunday School. I seldom attend Sunday School on account of my defective hearing. After the regular exercises the classes all marched out and formed a circle and had

their pictures taken. There was 302, and it took some time to get them all arranged in a proper position. After this they all marched back into the building for the closing exercises. This was what was called Father's Day. In the afternoon I attended meeting. Brothers William Staheli and Crawford were the speakers. After the meeting there was a report meeting of the teachers. There was also a meeting to see what could be done about destroying the grasshoppers as they were doing great damage to our crops.

The last week has been very windy and cold, it has been the coldest June that was ever known in this country.

Wilford and his mother came down from the ranch and went back in the evening. Wilford had succeeded in getting his black mare that had been gone with the wild horses for about four years. She had a colt with her and was not so wild as one would expect having run with the wild horses so long.

June 23rd, we have had a very windy and cold week, as well as dry. There are great numbers of grasshoppers in the fields destroying the crops and measures are being taken to destroy them by poison, taking bran and putting poison in it and scattering it on the field where they are.

Our quarterly conference was held today at this place. President A. W. Ivins and Brother Preston Nibley were in attendance from Salt Lake City. Stake President E. W. Snow and counselors from St. George were present and a number from the other settlements.

June 24th our conference was continued today. There were two sessions on Saturday and two today. During these sessions President Ivins spoke twice and Preston Nibley spoke twice, both giving some excellent advice, and urged the people to keep out of debt. Other speakers made some valuable remarks. President Snow spoke very interestingly on the subject of being our brother's keeper; we should look to others interests as well as to our own. We had a most interesting and spirited conference, a good spirit prevailed. There were several meetings of the Bishops and others during the time.

I attended our prayer meeting last Thursday evening, there were 11 present.

June 27th, 1923, this is my 83rd birthday, the family, what there were in this place, got together and got up a dinner, Wilford and Julia having come down from the ranch. They however went back towards night. In the evening about thirty of the neighbors came in and spent the evening. We had some singing, jokes, etc., after which a pass around was served. The party dispersed at about 11 p.m. with good feelings and a hearty wish for many happy returns of the day.

June 30th, the weather is very warm and dry and we have extreme changes from cold to warm and it has been warm the last two weeks. We need rain very badly and the grasshoppers are still doing considerable damage to the crops and especially to the lucern, and the people are poisoning them with varied success.

I have been working the garden some and have been putting on the lath on the bed room and clothes closets.

I attended the prayer meeting last Thursday evening, but many take but little interest in them, but then we are having a busy time with haying and fighting grasshoppers, etc.

July 1st, I attended the Priesthood meeting in the morning but did not go to meeting in the afternoon.

Alvin Decker, Olive Ward, and Annie Whitney came over from Parowan on a short visit. They arrived about noon. Mrs. Whitney was Aunt Eliza's sister and Mrs. Ward was her half sister, this was their first visit to Enterprise. They were quite favorably impressed with the place, it was more of a place than they had expected to find. We have a population of about 1,000 souls.

July 4th, the nation's great day was celebrated with races for boys and girls, and then a parade which was very nice, there being a few nice floats brought out. The Beehive girls had the nicest one, it took the prize. Then there was a meeting and Brother Kroencke delivered a speech on the founding of our government. There were sports in the afternoon and dancing in the evening.

July 5th, Thursday, I attended prayer meeting, there were 7 present.

July 8th, I attended Priesthood meeting in the morning and Sacrament meeting in the afternoon.

I am not feeling very well. I am troubled considerable with a dizziness and sometimes I turn very sick and vomit.

July 12th, I attended the prayer meeting in the evening, there were 10 present, and we came out at 11 p.m. and found it was raining. The weather has been warm and dry and the rain did not amount to much, just freshened up things a little.

The grasshoppers still continue to damage the crops in the field but have not reached the town as yet.

Last Monday the stock inspector had the cows brought in and examined them for tuberculosis. Out of some 500 head he only found one that was infected, this one belonged to Mr. Haley and it was taken out and killed and burned. Haley received two thirds its value, \$40.

July 16th, I have been troubled some with a pain in my left breast for several days and so lay abed most of the day yesterday and I am not much better today.

Julia and Wilford came down from the ranch yesterday and went back in the evening.

The weather keeps dry and hot and it appears that we raise but little at the ranch this year. The folks there are trying to ship a little cream, but some of the cows are drying up and that cuts that enterprise down some, still they ship about five gallons a week. They ship to Salt Lake City.

July 18th, as I did not feel very well I went up to the ranch with my wife Julia. Wilford, who had come down, remained to haul hay. I found things at the ranch very dry and things looked rather backward. The last frost in the spring killed things and the corn had not come up very well and in places was rather scattering, but some of it looked fairly well and did not appear to be suffering for water as much as I had expected. The little spring or seepage near the house had increased so that there was water enough coming out so that Wilford had made a ditch and a small dam and was able to water a little patch of garden, probably near and acre. The water was drawn out every other day. The folks were milking 12 cows, four of them were Jake's and they were trying to dry them up so they could be fattened for beef.

I stayed around the ranch doing but little as I was not well until Sunday morning when we came down to town where we found my grandson J. C. Carson, his wife and six children, also his wife's sister, Mrs. Lee. They had come over from Panaca on a visit and to spend the holidays. We all attended the meeting in the afternoon.

On the next day, the 23rd, Clair and the folks went up to the reservoir. They started late and had but little time up there and did not catch any fish, and were late getting back.

On the 24th, we attended the celebration, a fine program was rendered. Grant Ivins was the orator. There were several pieces of music and songs as well as readings, and a children's dance at one o'clock. The rest of the day was given over to the Carnival, and was carried on by Bronco riding, wrestling, and a ball game, etc., and a dance in the evening.

July 25th, the day was devoted to sports of the carnival such as bronco riding, steer tying, foot races, wrestling, and horse races, etc., with a dance in the evening.

July 26th, the sports of the carnival were carried on much as they were the day before. There was an exhibition or wire walking, turning somersaults, and other feats of this character, with a picture show and dance in the evening. There was one disagreeable feature about the carnival. The committee of arrangements failed to secure our home talent for the music, which we considered very good, so they sent to Salt Lake City for musicians. This caused considerable feelings, and our musicians felt that they had been ignored. It may check our band work, which is bidding fair to make a record that they may be proud of. Both the committee and the musicians were probably to

blame in the matter. But I trust that things may be fixed up in some way so that there will be no trouble and that things may go on as usual. Otherwise the carnival was a decided success. Brother William Staheli, our leading musician, would not play the jazz music, and some of the people wanted that style of music. This was one of the leading features of the trouble. The ball playing occupied a portion of the time each afternoon.

July 27th, my grandson Clair Carson and his family started home in the afternoon. We had enjoyed his visit very much as it was the first time that his wife had even met many of my family. Before he left we looked around some over Frank Winsor's place, as that was for sale and Clair was thinking some of buying in here if he could sell his place in Oregon. The weather continues dry and warm.

July 29th, I attended the priesthood meeting in the morning and the sacrament meeting in the afternoon. Wilford, Julia, and Delma who had been down to attend the carnival, went back to the ranch on Friday evening and as they had the cows to gather up (they had been turned out with their calves) they did not come down today.

As yet we have had no rain, which is discouraging, especially for the dry land farmers.

My health keeps about the same, some days I feel quite well and the next day not able to do anything. My main trouble is a feeling of weakness and being dizzy all the time, and sometimes everything looks crooked to me. Men's legs look crooked as they walk.

August 3rd, 1923, we had a slight shower on the first of the month, it moistened things up some but not enough to penetrate the ground. It only moistened the top like a heavy dew. It still keeps dry and the water is all out of the reservoir so there will be no more water for the fields, only a small stream that we use to keep the gardens alive. The corn on the dry land will not amount to much, and some of the men are talking of turning their cows into the fields and letting them have what there is.

I have not been well for sometime and yesterday I lay abed the most of the day, and did not go to prayer meeting in the evening, but I feel better this morning.

Wilford and Julia were down from the ranch yesterday and went back in the evening.

Jake and Hannah went up to the reservoir to try to catch a few fish but they did not get many. The water was being drawn off. There were some in the large pools below the dam, mostly small ones.

August 10th, I have been feeling better the last few days. I attended the Priesthood meeting on the 5th and meeting in the afternoon which was fast meeting. Several of the brethren and sisters spoke bearing their testimony.

On the 8th, I rode up by invitation of John Benson to visit the convict camp in Cottonwood Canyon about five miles from here. There were about 25 of the convicts here working on the road through this canyon. They do not appear to be working very hard, taking it easy. There were several Mexicans among the number, and being introduced as one who spoke Spanish they soon gathered around. I made an effort to talk with them but I had forgotten so much of the language that I made a very poor job of it. I however had a very pleasant trip with Brother Benson and family.

I attended the prayer meeting last evening, there were but four present.

Wilford was down trying to haul a little hay on shares. He was offered every fifth load, the hauling was from the lower part of the field about four miles distant.

Jake got his truck fixed up and started to Caliente today with a load of potatoes, chickens, eggs, etc.

August 19th, I attended priesthood meeting last Sunday, also the meeting in the afternoon which was given over to the memorial services for the late President W. G. Harding. The speakers were Grant Ivins and S. C. Jones. They both gave some very interesting incidents in the life of the late president and of his labors as president.

On the 15th, I went up to the ranch as Julia and Delma were there alone. Delma had a sore throat and was quite hoarse.

I found things very dry and looking a little discouraging, Julia was milking ten cows but the range was so dry that there was scarcely any grass and the cows gave but little milk, and they had to be watched all the time to keep them out of the field as they were breechy, the fence would not stop them.

I did a little hoeing and came down on Saturday the 18th.

Wilford was still hauling hay but it rained a little in the afternoon.

On the morning of the 19th it rained some, being the first rain of any consequence that we had this season and this was not enough to wet the ground down very far, just wetting it on top. But it was enough, however, to stop the hauling of hay for a day or two.

Our clock was slow apparently, and Aunt Eliza and I started to meeting when we found that we were a little late so we turned around and came back. I however attended the priesthood meeting in the morning.

August 21st, I received a letter from Joseph F. McGregor of Beaver stating that my daughter Josie died at 4 a.m. on the morning of the 18th, that her trouble was cancer of the abdomen. For two weeks she had not taken any nourishment, and for a month previous not enough to keep a bird alive. She was kept under the influence of morphine much of the time for the last month as she suffered so terribly. She was conscious to the last and gave directions about her funeral, what hymns she wanted sung at her funeral and who she wanted to speak, and the details of what little keepsakes she had and who to give them to. She wished McGregor to speak at her funeral. She however regretted very much that she could not be laid away in her robes as she had never had her endowments. Johnie (her husband) was left in a sad condition, worse than a baby (he had lost his speech). He was in such a condition that his son Ambrose would not take him and probably Ed's wife Ida will care for him.

Julia and Delma came down from the ranch and we all went to the picture show which was "Where is My Wandering Boy Tonight?", a part of it however was not given. Julia and Delma went back the next morning.

August 27th, I attended Priesthood meeting on the 19th but did not attend the sacrament meeting having felt rather poorly, about half sick. I am still troubled with a dizziness but have managed to do a little about the place.

I made a gate out of some old lumber remains of the old chicken coop.

I attended prayer meeting last Thursday and took charge, there were eight present.

Yesterday we had missionaries from St. George, Brothers Atkin and Miles, both spoke very interestingly.

Julia and Wilford came down from the ranch yesterday and went back today.

August 29th, Addie came in from Los Angeles yesterday. We were very much surprised to see her as well as greatly pleased, as we had no word of her coming.

I was quite poorly, having an attack of bowel complaint which was quite severe.

Wilford had his wheat and oats thrashed, he only had a little which was put in on Brother Truman's land up near our ranch. He hauled it down here to have it thrashed, there were 32 bushels in all. It was dark before they finished and then he went to the ranch as his mother was up there alone.

I have felt much better today. It has been very windy and cool, like fall weather.

The Relief Society went up to the Terry ranch today, Hannah, Addie, and Delma went up with them. Jake went to Cedar to work yesterday.

September 3rd, I am feeling better than I have for a few weeks past. I attended prayer meeting Thursday evening, there were six present.

Yesterday the Sunday School and some others went over the Central, some 150 or over and attended Sunday School and meeting. They had a very interesting time and were treated with peaches in goodly number, some three tubs full. They returned in the evening. There were all the autos that they could get and several wagons, one wagon with a rack had 39 of the children.

I attended Priesthood meeting and also the fast meeting which was poorly attended, there being so many away to Central.

Julia and Delma came down from the ranch on Saturday evening and went back this morning. Delma went to Central but no one else of us. Jake is at Cedar at work and Wilford is at the ranch putting up Jake's hay.

September 10th, Monday, Thursday I attended the prayer meeting, there were 7 present. I led in prayer.

Friday noon President Ivins came in from the City on his way to attend the quarterly conference at St. George. President Snow and Whitehead, who had been north, were with him. They went on in the afternoon.

Saturday, quite a number of the brethren and sisters went down to St. George to attend conference, they started early.

Sunday, 9th, I attended Priesthood meeting in the morning and sacrament meeting in the afternoon. The speakers were William Pulsipher and J. M. Terry. They both spoke very interestingly and instructively.

Julia, Wilford, and Delma were down from the ranch but went back in the evening, except Delma, she went back this morning.

We had a slight frost last Friday morning which nipped the pumpkin leaves some but did no damage to speak of. The weather is dry and warm of days and cold of nights.

September 12th, I have been fixing a little about the place and have been at work some of the time, nearly a little each day revising my historical work. I just finished up the last Volume 7, yesterday and put it away. I did not do anything about Volume 6 as I left it with Andrew Jensen in Salt Lake City and have never been able to get it back. (This is the *History of the Rocky Mountain Region* in seven volumes).

Wilford came down from the ranch today and brought a load of corn and fodder that he had just cut, ears and all. The ears have not amounted to very much as the season has been so dry.

September 14th, Friday, Wilford came down from the ranch yesterday with a load of corn. It was poor stuff and he cut it and hauled it ears and all, it will do for feed. It rained a little last night, just a sprinkle, not enough to wet the ground very much. Very pleasant days, rather cool of nights, but no frost.

I attended Prayer Meeting last night, there were 11 present, we had a good meeting.

I understand that Jed Terry has sold out his place here to Paxman, he has a place below on the Meadow Valley Wash.

1923-1924
Chapter 121
I Begin the *History of Enterprise*

September 17th, 1923, the Leavitts were having a reunion, that is they were to work in the Temple for their dead relatives on the 18th, 19th, 20th, and 21st. I went down to St. George today on the mail and stopped at D. A. McGregor's, a nephew of mine.

September 18th, I met several of the Leavitts at the Temple, several of them I had never met before. I went through the Temple for Joseph Lawrence.

They were not running but one shift today and in the afternoon I went to see the sports with McGregor. There was a ball game which did not amount to much as the team from Caliente had not yet arrived. There was a wrestling match which was quite an even struggle but Jones came out winner in the third round. There were other sports, a foot race by the girls, an Enterprise girl won. A man jumped from the tower on the grandstand, some 35 feet I should judge.

September 19th, I was not very well during the past night but got up early and went down to the Jones House and took breakfast with the Leavitts and others who were stopping there. In the forenoon I went through the Temple for Josiah Dearborn. Sister Saline Leavitt went through for my daughter Josie who died last month and I had Josie adopted to me and her mother. In the afternoon I went through for Thomas Leavitt.

My grandson (Clair Carson) and family came in today and my wife Eliza came down with them. I was pleased to see them. My wife reported that they had a frost the night before they left Enterprise but did not know how hard it was.

September 20th, I went through the Temple this forenoon for William Bradford Dodge, and in the afternoon for Caleb Rowe.

In the evening my wife and I attended the entertainment of the fruit festival where a program of music, songs, and speeches was given. After this we went outside the building where several long tables were spread with all kinds of fruit that was raised in Dixie. The people, several hundred, all ate what they wanted.

I met a Mr. Atkins and had quite a talk with him on historical matters.

September 21st, I returned home with my grandson J. C. Carson where we arrived for dinner. Brother Cottam, who was in another car, dined with us after which Clair and Cottam went on to Panaca. Jake went on with Clair.

September 22nd, as the frost had damaged everything, I cut what corn I had in the lot.

Wilford came down with a load of corn and went back to the ranch. It was a very windy day.

September 23rd, I attended the Priesthood meeting in the morning and the Sunday services in the afternoon. Brother L. M. Terry, Crawford, and Seth Jones spoke on the Restoration of the Gospel by Joseph Smith and his first vision 100 years ago.

It rained considerably during the day and Julia and Wilford did not come down from the ranch.

September 24th, Monday, a fine day after the rain, but cold. Wilford and his mother came down with a load of corn and went back in the evening. We pulled the beans that we had in the garden and I did a little other work.

September 26th, yesterday and today have been very cold and windy not much sunshine today. It is almost like winter.

I worked some on my journal and at looking after things outside. We have not put up our heating stove but it is cold enough to have one.

I cut a little corn for Jake. He went to Cedar to work.

September 27th, it snowed this forenoon some and appeared like winter. It cleared off in the afternoon and the snow soon disappeared. There was not much of it however.

I attended the prayer meeting in the evening, there were ten present, and we had a good meeting. Brother Norr led in prayer. He is going to move away before another meeting and we will miss him.

September 30th, I attended priesthood meeting in the morning. In the afternoon I attended meeting, Brother Gardner and Bishop Snow from Pine Valley were home missionaries and spoke to us giving some interesting remarks of the early labors of the saints and the Hour of God's Judgement.

We are having a little better weather.

October 5th, I started south to get some fruit, Aunt Julia and Delma went with me. We had Jake's team. Just before we reached Central one of the animals took a streak of colic or something of the kind which detained us some time. We went on to Bowler's that night. The animal seemed to get over her attack.

October 6th, we bought some fruit from Brother Bowler, giving two cents for apples. We got some other fruit and various places. We came on to Central where we stayed all night with David Lemuel Leavitt, a son of my cousin, Dudley Leavitt. We were treated very kindly by him and his wife. We got a little fruit from him.

October 7th, we purchased some apples at one and one fourth cents per pound from I. H. Burgess. They were wind falls but as the wind blew hard the night before, they were very good. We came on home and I was tired when I arrived.

October 8th, I got my pension and paid my tithing and helped about home.

It rained in the afternoon, and as Wilford was hauling hay, it put him behind with his work.

October 13th, the folks made another trip for apples, and today they went over to Burgess' ranch and picked up some for another trip.

My son Jesse came in from California on the 11th, and we were very pleased to see him. He had been to work to get money to go to school on, and had done fairly well.

October 15th, Monday, I attended Priesthood meeting and the sacrament meeting yesterday. Sister Lund, and Sister Bastion and Brothers Lund and Barlocker gave interesting accounts of the late conference held at Salt Lake City.

Wilford and Jesse went up to Central today to get the apples that they had gathered up on Saturday. Jesse went on to St. George with the mail to attend school. Wilford got back with a full load before dark.

There is a troop here giving entertainments. They commenced Friday evening and are giving five evening performances, lectures, and music, but different each night. I went Friday, the tickets were \$2.00 for the five nights.

October 20th, the traveling troop finished up their lectures on Wednesday evening. They got a hundred dollars each night from the Commercial Club and probably made some besides from odd tickets that came in.

I had a sick spell during the week but I have been trying to shuck some corn part of the time.

Wilford had been working at the ranch much of the time. He went up yesterday to dig potatoes, and came back with a load this evening.

My granddaughter Julia Fish Russell, her husband, and two other sisters called on me last Thursday and stayed all night making us a visit. I was pleased to see them. They had been to Salt Lake City and were on their way back to Mesa where they live.

October 21st, Sunday, I attended meeting, S. C. Jones gave a very good discourse on baptism and other subjects.

October 22nd, I attended the funeral of the little child of Brother and Sister George T. Hunt in the forenoon. It died suddenly with the membranous croup. It was a cold and disagreeable day and stormed a little. The meeting was held out of doors as it was feared that the disease, which was not fully understood, might be contagious. In the afternoon I worked on the corral.

October 23rd, Tuesday, it snowed some in the forenoon, but melted in the afternoon except on the mountains. We were out of wood and this storm made it very disagreeable.

October 31st, 1923, I have been at work around the place preparing for winter.

On the 25th I attended prayer meeting which was rather short on account of a lecture that was given in the evening by a Dr. Sayers and another Doctor, on goiter and its causes. I attended it and found it quite interesting. After the lecture Dr. Sayers gave some views or a picture show of some scenes that he had taken in his travels, which was also very interesting.

On the 27th, we had religion class conference, Brothers Cottam, Tanner, and some others attended and spoke very interestingly of that work and the good results that came from it. After the meeting my daughter Addie went down to St. George with Brother Tanner. She was going on to Overton to work for a lady there for the winter.

On the 29th and 30th the Walters Company presented some plays, one of which I attended. They were well presented, but were a class of amusement for laughter instead of a moral or instructive nature. They pleased the young however. We have had most beautiful weather for the last week, pleasant days but a little frost during the nights.

Jake started for lumber at Parowan this morning.

November 1st, 1923, I attended prayer meeting this evening. We had a very interesting meeting, there were 8 present, a few more than common but not so many as there ought to be. The people are a little slack in their duties, especially the teachers work is sadly neglected.

November 4th, Sunday, I have been busy around the place at different things. Wilford has been up above Terry's working on the reservoir to hold water for the range stock. He came down Friday bringing a good load of wood. Jake has been to Cedar for lumber and cement. I was not feeling well today so did not go out to any of the meetings. We are having fine weather but cold of nights.

November 6th, there was a city election. Many are away and others were so busy that there was but little interest in it, only a little over sixty votes were polled.

On the 7th there was a meeting to consider establishing a cheese factory. A committee was appointed consisting of S. C. Jones, A. P. Winsor, and Iver Clove to look things up and consider the advisability of buying the St. George factory. It is too warm to make cheese at that place, and they want to sell at a reduced rate.

November 10th, 1923, Saturday. I attended prayer meeting last Thursday evening, eight were present. The subject was mainly the profanity among the young people.

It started to rain last night and today it rained considerably. It looks as if the rainy season had set in, a very unusual thing here to have a rainy season now as it is generally so dry this time of year. The rain is slow and steady and warm, no snow.

November 15th, last Sunday I attended meeting. The Relief Society held their conference and occupied the time, giving some very good instructions and encouraging remarks.

I attended the prayer meeting this evening. Only five in attendance. We had a very good meeting, speaking mostly on the divinity of the *Book of Mormon* and early day trials.

I have been at work shucking corn and gathering up items on the early settling of Enterprise.

The weather is rather cold, especially of nights.

November 20th, I attended the priesthood meeting held at 12 o'clock last Sunday, the 18th. They have changed the time so as to hold it right after the Sunday School, as it was thought that there would be a better attendance and 9 seemed a little early at this time of year as it did not give time to do the chores in the morning. There was a good attendance.

I attended the sacrament meeting. The time was occupied by the teachers of the School as this was Education Week. Yesterday I attended our school by invitation and gave a short historical talk on the early days of Utah.

November 22nd, 1923, my grandson, J. C. Carson, came in last night from St. George, he had four young men with him (the Wadsworth boys). They stayed with us all night. We got up early this morning and Aunt Eliza and I started with Clair Carson for Panaca. There were seven of us in the car which made it somewhat crowded. We left Enterprise a little before 9 a.m. and made very good time. We stopped at Modena short time. This place is about 20 miles from Enterprise and is situated near where the old road went through to Pioche. It is about three miles from Desert Springs, the place they pipe their water from. The old stage line from Utah to Pioche went by this place. From Modena we went on nine miles following the railroad track to what was called Bishop's Ranch. The first telegraph line built in 1870 came from St. George through by Terry's ranch near this place and on to Panaca and Pioche. At Bishop's we met Wilford who had been to Caliente with a load of potatoes. Continuing on we reached Panaca a little after 12. This place is about 22 miles from Bishop's ranch, and about ten miles from that place where we passed over the rim of the Basin.

While at dinner at Carsons we met Frank Bartlett who boarded with us at Holbrook, Arizona. He had been to Alaska and other places and appeared to be broke and was now going to California. We had a little conversation about old times and I gave him some of our tracts that I got from Carson.

Panaca has about 400 inhabitants and is situated in Meadow Valley Wash. The water for the place comes from a spring about a mile and a half from town. They have a beautiful three story school building, being better supplied in this regard than any town that I know of. Their shade trees are of the black willow species and all over grown, being two or three feet thick. Their tops have been cut off which gives them a rough appearance. There are a few others of different kinds. The center of the valley is rather swampy and furnished good pasture land and meadow land. They raise some grain but the main products appear to be cattle, hogs, chickens, etc. They ship some cream to Salt Lake City. There are some noted and picturesque land marks in the shape of white buttes which appear to be of a chalk formation. Some of them are in the northern part of town and one which they called the "Court House", is in town and rises nearly 200 feet almost perpendicularly. They have dug a cave in it which was used as a jail in the early days when there were so many toughs about the mines. Some of these buttes rise up like church spires and are seen in several places up and down the valley near the town. The hills on the east side of the valley furnish the place with plenty of wood but there is no saw timber near by. The place undoubtedly flourished during the balmy days of the mines, and a few of the people built very good and comfortable houses.

Religion, as it is in many other places, is at a low ebb. There are, however, many good and faithful saints in the place.

November 23rd, 1923, I went about the town and ascended several of the wonderful buttes.

I had an interview with Brother Wedge from whom I got a few items of the early history of the place.

Our dog Ring that Wilford lost in Caliente came to us today.

November 24th, I visited some of the buttes and looked around. From the top of one of these in the north part of town one gets a good view of the place, and Bullionville, barring the trees.

I had an interview with Brother Keats from whom I obtained a few items of early day history.

November 25th, I attended the Priesthood meeting at nine in the morning. There were but 4 or 5 present. Brother Lee gave the lesson from Joseph Fielding Smith's *Essentials of Church History*. They seemed a little behind in this part of our religion. I attended the Sunday School at half past ten, it was fairly good but not as well attended as I thought it ought to be. I spoke a short time. I attended the meeting in the afternoon which was not as well attended as I thought it might have been. There were no benches in the room but about sixty common chairs so if more than sixty came they would have to stand up. However, there were nearly enough to fill the chairs. Brother Prince who was from the north and the principal of the High School gave an excellent talk on tokens that we give and that the Lord gives. By invitation I spoke a short time on the necessity of training children at home and not leaving all the work for the teachers to do. I attended Mutual in the evening and by special request I spoke on the Mountain Meadow Massacre, giving a short sketch of the sad affair and the causes that led up to it and the incidents that showed that President Young was not implicated in it.

November 26th, Monday, I walked over to Bullionville and out a mile and a half and looked over the ruins. I saw Thomas B. Robinson and some others who were just fitting up to go home to Enterprise. They had been at work on the road up towards Pioche which about twelve miles north of Panaca, but had quit work apparently because of some trouble with the boss.

It was a very windy day. I got a few historical items from Brother Lee.

Jake came in from Enterprise about 1 p.m. and went on to Caliente. He brought us a couple of letters.

November 27th, it was rather a disagreeable day. Jake returned from Caliente and went on home. J. C. Carson has been busy hauling wood. The next day I did but little. I visited some old timers but none could give me much information as to the early history of either Clover Valley or Panaca. However, I have a better idea where the Death Valley trail went through this valley.

November 29th, in the forenoon Clair took me over to Bullionville in his auto and we looked over the ruins of the old place. We saw some of the stamp timbers 30 x 30 inches that I sawed more than fifty years before. They were still in place but some of them were decaying. The once busy place was vacant and there was little or nothing left hardly to mark the spots where the mills stood except the last mill that was put up and that was a ruin. Everything that could be carried away was gone, the metal roof was flapping in the wind and all was a ruin as it had not been run for six or seven years. There were several teams at work here loading tailings which were shipped to Salt Lake City to be worked over (the teams however, were not working today).

We came back and had a Thanksgiving Dinner with Carson and family, after which he took Brothers Keats and Lee and me up to the spring. We visited the ground where Keats said the first settlers found evidences of a corral. We then visited some of those towering rocks a little north of the grave yard where Keats told me there were names and dates. We examined the rock and on the eastern spire as we might call it, I discovered the name of Guymen, a man that I was well acquainted with in early life. He was one that went out from Parowan with the party in about 1858 to form a nucleus or find a location for a settlement. It was called the White Mountain Mission. These facts satisfied me that this was the place where they camped for awhile and probably put in a few things such as corn. However they returned soon so they did not see how the crops did. Keats told me that the first ones in the valley found corn stalks on a piece of land some distance below the spring.

November 30th, Aunt Eliza and I spent the day in calling on some old friends and acquaintances and I gathered a few items of history in our rounds. We ate dinner with Heber Holt and wife. Called on Minney Edwards, sister of L. M. Terry's wife and some others and got back to the Carsons at dark.

December 1st, 1923, Carson fixed the curtains on the car as it looked stormy and we started for Enterprise. We passed Wilford as we reached Modena, just before sunset. He came on and found some snow all the way and reached Enterprise at dark, cold and tired.

December 2nd, Sunday, Clair started back soon after breakfast. I was tired and did not go out to meeting. We met Jake going to Caliente as we came out and he got back at noon today.

December 6th, I have been at work around home and gathering some items of history in relation to the Enterprise wars. I attended the prayer meeting last evening, there were eight present. All spoke, the main subject being the incredulity of the people. They would believe the revelations in the *Bible*, but would not believe similar ones in the *Book of Mormon*.

Wilford came in last evening with a part of a load of ties. He was sick and lame with rheumatism and could hardly walk. He went to bed feeling quite bad, and was not feeling much better this morning.

December 9th, Sunday, Last Thursday night it snowed about two inches and has been cold since and last night was the coldest that we have had this winter. Wilford is still down with the rheumatism. He is not able to do anything. I went to meeting but it was a fearfully cold day. Tuberculosis was the subject treated upon, Arthur Jones and Bart Farnsworth were the speakers.

Monday, the 10th, this was a fearful cold day and wind from the north, no one pretended to do anything outside, the worst day of the season.

Monday, December 17th, 1923, the last week I have done but very little excepting some work in hunting up some historical items on Enterprise.

I attended prayer meeting last Thursday evening, a very good meeting. There were eight present. Yesterday I attended Sunday School and just after I attended the Priesthood meeting, there was a good attendance. I attended the Sunday meeting in the afternoon. Brother A. P. Winsor was the main speaker, Brother Hafen, the principal of our school, spoke a short time and Brother Barnum made a few remarks. In the evening a very large congregation assembled to hear Apostle Ballard speak as he came in from the conference at St. George at about dark or after. The young folks occupied Sunday evenings so after they rendered a short program, Apostle Ballard gave one of the finest talks on our duties to live pure and clean lives that was ever given to the saints. It was certainly encouraging to the saints to try to train their children to be pure and clean and to teach their children to be such that we may improve the race.

It has been foggy for a day or two and this morning a white frost covered all the bushes and trees giving it a beautiful appearance. It was certainly a real winter scene and very picturesque.

Thursday, December 27th, last Thursday I was rather poorly. The school gave an entertainment in the evening. I did not go as I wasn't able, and it was a cold day.

On Sunday, the 23rd, a program was rendered, it being the Prophet's birthday.

My son Jesse, who had been to St. George to school, came home on last Friday evening to spend the holidays.

Christmas passed off very nicely, presents were given to the children and the regular amusements went on, picture shows and dancing with other entertainments, but I did not go out to any of them. The weather is cold, yesterday was very windy and last night there was a flurry of snow, not enough to cover the ground.

The men have been at work fixing the dam up at the head of the ditch. It has given any amount of trouble, having to be put in every spring. They finished the work last Saturday. It has cost several thousands of dollars. They put in about eleven hundred posts, some of them fifteen feet long costing a dollar each.

December 31st, 1923, I attended prayer meeting last Thursday, there were 11 present. There was a picture show the same evening which I attended after the meeting. The weather is cold, Saturday night it snowed a very little after a day of cold wind.

Jesse started back to St. George this morning, it was a cold start and he was thinly dressed and went horseback.

January 5th, 1924, last Sunday the students from St. George occupied the most of the time. I attended Sunday School, Priesthood meeting, and Sunday meeting. The weather keeps cold but not much storm.

I attended prayer meeting last Thursday evening, there were 14 present. The main subject was the observation of the law and to be good and true citizens. I have not felt well for the last few days and have not been out very much.

January 11th, 1924, It was stormy last Sunday, or rather cold, and I was not feeling well so I did not go out. The weather has been very cold and dry so far this winter, but the last few days it has turned much warmer and pleasant and it looks as if spring had come or that our winter had passed, but it is still cold of nights. It seems that our cold spell some ten days ago was the coldest that we had ever experienced, it froze in our cellar.

I attended prayer meeting last evening, there were 16 present, a larger number than ever attended for a long time and it looks as if the new year was commencing with a spiritual awakening in our duties. We had a splendid meeting.

January 19th, 1924. I attended prayer meeting, there were 8 present, only half the number that attended the week before. I also attended the Sunday meeting last Sunday.

The weather has turned somewhat warmer but we still have cold nights and sometimes a cold wind. It is clear most of the time.

There was a delegation of Japs in this vicinity a few days ago looking over the desert proposition as to farming. I was told that they were favorably impressed with it and some of them may come in and take land on the desert and irrigate by pumps as some are doing now.

I am working some on getting up a history of this ward which of course includes the Hebron ward, as this grew out of that ward.

January 25th, I attended meeting last Sunday. During this week it has been dry and clear with cold nights.

There has been some talk about bad conduct by some of the boys from here that were attending the high school at St. George. The Bishop went down to investigate it. He reported that as far as he could find out, the things that were reported were foundless. The charges that had been made were confined to some of the young people in St. George.

The health of the people has been very good but some had been scared over the flu which has prevailed in some of the neighboring settlements.

I attended prayer meeting last evening, there were 13 present. The main subject was to care and watch over the young people and guard their conduct and amusements.

January 28th, there has been quite a scandal reported here about some of our boys who were attending school at St. George. I hear that Jesse was not in it. Bishop Terry went down the forepart of last week to investigate. He reported that there was nothing to it. Some of the boys came up on Friday and the next day the teachers investigated the case but the boys to together and settled the matter among themselves.

I attended meeting yesterday there was a good attendance which there generally is lately. There was just enough snow fell last night to whiten the ground. This was the first moisture that has fallen this month and this was no more than a heavy frost.

February 2nd, 1924, I attended Prayer Meeting Thursday evening, there were 11 present, we had a very good meeting.

Hannah Bushar gave birth to a girl baby. It was before her time and the baby was dead apparently three or four days before the birth.

The weather is very pleasant of days almost like spring but cold nights, a very dry winter.

I have not felt as well as usual but managed to keep around and do a little almost every day.

February 6th, ex-President Wilson died on the 3rd and was buried on the 6th. There was considerable in the papers of the great work that he had done in the war and in the labors of establishing peace and in his work of aiding in bringing forth the League of Nations. Memorial services were held today at 3 p.m. Grant Ivins was the main speaker. He gave a sketch of President Wilson's life and labors and the advanced principals that he stood for which was interesting. Other speakers gave some short sketches of the great man that had departed.

February 10th, I attended prayer meeting last Thursday evening, there were 11 present. We had a good meeting.

I went to the picture show Saturday evening after my visit as teacher which took most of the day and I was about tired out so I did not enjoy the show. Today I felt rather used up and did not go to meeting. I was in bed much of the time. We are having pleasant weather but no moisture.

February 15th, 1924, I attended prayer meeting last evening, there were 7 present. We had a short but spirited meeting. There was a Valentine Party in the hall so we met early so as to attend it, that is those who wanted to. I do not attend parties.

The weather is fair and pleasant but no storm and it begins to look as if it was a dry season indeed.

I worked some last Wednesday in getting out some manure and I felt quite tired out the next day and concluded that I am past hard work for I cannot stand it as I once could. I generally keep well, that is for me, if I do not over work.

February 24th, I attended prayer meeting last Thursday, there were seven present.

The weather has been fine.

The Cedar Theatrical Troupe put on a play, a comedy, I did not go. The Dixie Normal College put on a play last Friday night. I did not attend but the folks said it was rendered very well.

I have worked some in gathering up items of a historical nature on Enterprise.

Yesterday afternoon it snowed a little, just enough to whiten the ground, but it all went off when the sun came out this morning.

I attended meeting today, we had missionaries, Brothers Woodbury and Whitehead. They spoke very interestingly of the manifestations and labors of some of the ancient people.

February 29th, 1924, I went to prayer meeting last night; the door was locked and I with some others waited a half hour and no one came to open the door and take charge of the meeting so we went home.

March 1st, 1924, there was a leap year dance on Friday night.

My grandson Clair Carson came in about 11 p.m. from Panaca. He had brought in some five persons from the road camp out there who wished to attend the Elders Conference which was held today. I attended the meeting which was held today at 2 p.m. Grant Ivins and Brother Kroencke were the speakers. They gave some excellent talks but my hearing was so defective that I could not get near all that was said. The weather continues dry and has been very fair but cold nights.

There was a picture show in the evening but I did not go.

March 3rd, it snowed a very little yesterday; just enough to whiten the ground but it all went off in an hour or so, a windy day and a cold wind. Clair Carson went home after the meeting.

I was rather poorly, had several dizzy spells and did not go out during the day. I feel a little better this morning but still feel weak.

Another flurry of snow came last night, just enough to whiten the ground, almost like a heavy frost but these little flurries do not amount to anything towards moistening the earth which is very dry and the dust flies in an hour or two after they go off. It is a very dry season.

March 5th, I am feeling much better and am trying to work a little in gathering up items in relation to Enterprise and putting them together.

It snowed a very little, just enough to whiten the ground yesterday but soon went off and the afternoon was clear and pleasant but cold at night.

Wilford and Jake went up to the ranch on Monday. Wilford is trying to plow a little.

March 7th, I attended prayer meeting last night. It was a good meeting but there were only six present. All spoke twice, the second time was in relation to our faith in having rain or moisture as the country was becoming very dry. Today is snowed some, being the heaviest snow that we have had this season, but it was only a few inches, it was very cold at night.

March 11th, it has been very cold and a north wind much of the time.

I attended meeting last Sunday but had not felt very well for a day or two. We had a good meeting, some who had been working in the Temple spoke. Yesterday I felt much better and did considerable work on my history (Enterprise).

March 14th, pleasant weather, cold nights with occasionally a cloud passing with a slight flurry of snow just like a heavy frost.

I attended the prayer meeting last night, there were eight present.

Addie started for Overton this morning, going with Jake, and they hoped to reach Caliente in time enough to catch the train. Jake was going this far with beef.

March 15th, it snowed a very little last night.

I started for St. George this afternoon going with John Benson. We got there just as meeting was out in the afternoon. I stopped with my nephew Dr. McGregor. I went up and visited with Bro. Cottam and family where Jesse was boarding, had a pleasant visit with them and Jesse. I slept at McGregor's, I was tired and had a bad cold but I slept tolerably well.

1924
Chapter 122
I Work at the *History of Enterprise* In Spite of the Infirmities of Age

March 16th, I attended meeting today in the forenoon. I sat back too far so did not hear very much. In the afternoon I got a good seat and was able to hear. Apostle Lyman spoke at both meetings. He did not speak long but it was very interesting and instructing as well. I came home in the evening with John Benson. We had car trouble on the road and did not reach home until about nine p.m. My cold was no better.

March 18th, we had a fine snow today. It fell some four or five inches deep. It was the first snow to amount to anything that we have had this season and we were thankful for it.

My cold is but little better and I have not felt very well for several days.

Wilford, who had been to Modena for a plow and some ties, came in this evening after having a hard trip.

March 23rd, I have not felt well for the last week, having had a cold.

It has been stormy all the week more or less and there has been considerable snow fall, some six inches or more for which we are very thankful for it has been a very dry winter. It is rather cold for this time of year.

Last Friday evening there was a grand time, dance and lunch. Several characters representing Washington and wife and other prominent characters of that time made it really interesting. A lunch was furnished and it was really an enjoyable time. I was feeling rather poorly so did not go out.

The storm still continues; there is not much snow, but it is cloudy, cold, and occasionally a little snow.

March 26th, it snowed Sunday so I did not go out as I had a bad cold.

Monday night it snowed six or eight inches, and much more in the mountains. The 25th, it turned warm and the snow settled. Today it was a perfect slush all over the ground.

Wilford went up to the ranch yesterday and got a load of wood and today he went up to stay a few days. He said that the snow was much deeper there than here and it was over a foot here and much of it melted when it came.

I have done but little for a week as I have had a severe cold or something with fever.

March 28th, I attended prayer meeting last evening, there were ten present. We had a very interesting meeting.

It snowed some last night but most all the snow went off, today is very muddy around town. The snow still lies to some depth in the mountains and at the ranches above here.

I paid a visit to Brother Huntsman who is sick, he seems to have a bad cold and a pain in his side. He apparently had the cold that has been going around among the people. The change of weather is probably one cause of so much sickness in the shape of colds.

April 7th, 1924, I was sick last Thursday and was abed much of the time so did not go to prayer meeting.

I was somewhat better Friday and did a little work especially on the *Enterprise* history, gathering up items, etc.

Yesterday I attended meeting, there was a full house and several spoke. After meeting Aunt Eliza and I called on Brother Huntsman and Brother Bastion who were sick; they seemed to be improving.

It rained some last night and seemed warm as if spring had come.

April 11th, 1924, I attended prayer meeting last evening, there were but four present.

We are having fine weather and everyone is busy with their spring work, but we have not had quite storm enough yet, though the snow was a wonderful help. It has turned more like spring the last few days.

I am feeling the effects of old age and am hardly able to do anything.

April 18th, Tuesday, the 15th it snowed most of the day, just flurries and a cold north wind, and it was like January weather.

T. B. Robinson and I spent the afternoon in teaching, visited six families. Some of them were paying no attention to the word of wisdom.

I was sick yesterday and so did not attend prayer meeting.

The last few days it has been lovely weather; it seems as if spring has come. I have been trying to do a little in the garden but I find that I am not able to do much. I have about given up work and leave the garden to the women folks. As we have no hay Wilford took the cows to the ranch last Wednesday, the 16th.

April 25th, I attended prayer meeting on the 24th, there were but 4 present.

The last few days has been cold and windy and last night it snowed a little, just enough to make the ground white all over, but this with the little rain that we had a few days ago helps out with the moisture and we are very thankful for it for the season is very dry and not much water in the reservoir.

Wilford was down yesterday from the ranch, things there were moving along fairly well. Now that he has the cows up there, he has to go back at night when he comes down.

May 3rd, we have dry but pleasant weather generally.

Last Thursday there was only Brother Lund and myself present at the prayer meeting. We had a prayer and retired.

There was an entertainment by the school as they were giving a program, it being the closing week of the term. Some received their graduation certificates. Brother Bentley, Superintendent, was present from St. George.

I attended meeting last Sunday. The subject of Forest Fires was spoken of and the services were given over to the Forest Ranger, Brother Kroencke, who had a program which was well rendered.

May 13, 1924, I have not been very well for several days. I did not go to prayer meeting last Thursday evening, but went to Sunday meeting last Sunday.

We are having very dry weather and but very little water in the reservoir. It is dry and windy all the time and it looks as if but very little would be raised.

Jesse returned from school at St. George last Saturday, he had done fairly well, and he started today for Barstow to get a motorcycle that he left there when he came from California last fall.

Clair Carson and family came in from Panaca last evening and stayed with us all night. He left today after dinner, he was going back to Yachats in Oregon and would sell his place there if he could, and return to this country. He might stay there for sometime to fit up the place and sell it.

May 19th, 1924, there was no prayer meeting last Thursday, the Bishop and many others having gone to St. George with the company that went to work in the Temple.

Yesterday the Aaronic Priesthood conducted the meeting and did all the singing, preaching, etc. They did very well in explaining the Lesser Priesthood and explained how it was called to act in ancient times and how it was taken from the earth and how it was again restored to the earth through the Prophet Joseph Smith.

The weather continues dry, windy, and warm as well as cold nights.

May 26th, 1924, I was sick and did not attend the prayer meeting last Thursday.

Yesterday, President E. H. Snow was present and gave an interesting talk on our duties and conditions.

Jesse, who has been to Barstow for his Motorcycle, returned Thursday and left early this morning for Cedar with Wendell Robinson where they were going to try to get work herding sheep. The weather keeps dry and a little cold and we have considerable wind of late.

May 29th, 1924, we had a terrible wind Monday afternoon. It blew a large tree of Brother Robinson's down breaking his fence and the electric wires. It, however, brought a light shower of rain which was very acceptable as everything was dry. We needed rain but this was not enough. However it was of great help. It was heavier to the north. It is very cold weather. It does not appear to freeze but we look for frost. Wilford was down yesterday and said that it froze his corn that was up.

June 2nd, I attended prayer meeting last Thursday, 6 present. Jesse came in from Cedar City on Friday, he had put in a bid for making fence which was to be opened June 3rd.

I attended meeting yesterday, there was a good attendance.

Wilford and Jesse came down from the ranch and after meeting Wilford went back and Jesse went up this morning on his motorcycle to take some staples.

It is very dry, and I only got half of my garden watered and it had been three weeks since I had the water.

June 7th, 1924, I attended prayer meeting last Thursday evening, there were but 4 present. It looks as if some took but little interest in these meetings.

Jesse has been over to Cedar to see about getting the contract of building the fence. He and Wendell Robinson got the contract at \$1.25 a rod, three miles.

The weather continues very dry, everything is drying up and the wind blows nearly all the time. This morning seems very cold, almost like frost.

June 7th, 1924, Aunt Eliza and I started to conference at Hurricane this afternoon going on a truck with Marian Terry. I gave him \$6 for the round trip. We arrived at St. George at about sunset, 45 miles. There were 8 in the truck. We stopped at Thomas P. Cottam's. His wife was away on a visit but their daughter Eva, was at home and they treated us with the greatest kindness and gave us a hearty welcome.

June 12th, we went through the Temple twice today. I went through for the Yorks. Apostle George F. Richards was present and went through, he gave some very good instructions on Temple work for the dead, showing the importance of the work.

June 13th, we went through the temple twice each, and in the evening we went to Hurricane where we arrived a little after sunset, about 25 miles.

June 14th, we stopped at Brother Hinton's while here I attended meeting at 10 a.m. Thomas P. Cottam was the first speaker. He touched upon our labors in this southern country and believed that we would inherit this earth after our resurrection, and that the work for the dead should to be neglected. The next speaker was Joseph Williamson, who apparently was connected with dry farming. He said that one fourth of the cattle had died. He was followed by Elder

Bundy who spoke on the dry farm project. Brother Allred spoke of the importance of keeping missionaries in the field. Apostle George F. Richards said that he hoped that the Lord would not forget His people. He read from the book of Job and spoke of acknowledging the Lord's hand in all things.

2 p.m., George Whitehead was the first speaker. He said as we sow so will we reap, so we should be careful what we sow. The young should be very careful what seeds they sow, and they should be careful how they go with strangers for we know not what characters they are.

Brother Sorenson spoke at some length on different subjects, told how his mother trained him and said we do not read enough, nor do we pray enough. We should take good care of our children and not send them adrift. David Morris, the next speaker, said that the sins of the children would rest upon the heads of the parents, we should teach the children. Apostle George F. Richards said as a man thinketh so he acts. he spoke upon the subject of marriage and the rearing of children.

June 15th, 10 a.m. President E. H. Snow spoke on the training of children. He said that it was character that made great men, not education. It was character that made Lincoln and other great men. When we become prosperous then is the danger. The leaders of the World were not educators but they had character. William G. Hopkins read from the *Book of Mormon* and showed how the walls of the prison fell and released some of the prophets. It was faith.

Apostle George F. Richards spoke of the Lord placing some on his right hand and some on his left hand and when those on his right said they had ministered to the poor, he said that they had done it unto him; and when those who were on his left saw those in trouble and did not minister unto them, he said, "when you have not done it unto the least of these, ye have not done it unto me," and he sent them away.

There were present at this meeting 876 persons, and probably more in the afternoon.

Elder Stucki who had just returned from a mission gave a report of his labors in the mission field. Bishop Bradshaw reported the conditions of his ward. Apostle George F. Richards spoke on faith, said that the saints were a chosen people. A man could not attain to the highest position without a wife, as Latter Day Saints we should begin at the bottom and work up.

After meeting we returned to St. George where we stayed at Brother Cottam's.

June 16th, Marian Terry had something to fix about his auto so we did not get away until about noon, but we soon got home, tired and sleepy as the weather in that Dixie country had been very warm and they, like us, were suffering in many places for want of water.

I was told that when Erastus Snow first came down into this country somewhere above this point there came up a terrible wind which took off the top of his buggy. After it had passed, which was something like a whirl wind, he said that was like a hurricane and from this the people called the Mountain Hurricane and the name went to the valley and they called the town Hurricane. John Steele was the first man to put a level on the Hurricane ditch or where it was later located just to see where the water would come to on the flat. Hurricane is well built up and well improved. They have about 2,000 acres but it is all cultivated. Their meeting house is a credit to the place and Brother Emory's house is said to be the finest house in the county.

June 20th, 1924, I had the water on the garden last night so did not go to the prayer meeting. Things are extremely dry and the garden needed water. I did not get quite done as it was dark. We got a part of Brother Bastion's water or we would not have done much. The regular time was 2 minutes to the share, that is not very much. No prospects of rain.

June 28th, 1924, the weather is very dry and hot, everything is drying up. Grass is poor on the range and feed for stock is scarce. The hay crop is very light and it looks as if the next crop would be a failure as there is no water in the reservoir and for sometime we have had nothing but a small garden stream.

The boys are in Cedar Canyon at work making a fence.

I have not felt very well and while up digging to find where the pipe line was I had a sun stroke or something of the kind and was insensible for an hour or more.

Thursday I went teaching with T. B. Robinson. I was late getting through and did not go to the prayer meeting.

I am working at setting posts along on the west side of Laub's lot that I had bought, next to the street.

I had a birthday dinner yesterday. I was 84 years old, but there were but few of us present, just myself, Aunt Eliza, Aunt Julia, Delma, Addie, and Hannah and her little daughter Josephine.

July 1st, 1924, the weather is very dry and hot and things look rather discouraging as to raising much of a crop, and no grass on the range and in some parts cattle are dying of starvation.

I am trying to put up a partition fence between the street where my corral is where I have bought and the Laub lot, putting in a few posts and digging up a few of the best in the old fence line. This will give me nearly a rod more ground along the edge of the street.

The weather is very warm and I can only do a little early in the morning and in the evening, so it will take me several days to complete the job of setting the posts and then to stretch the wire.

July 4th, there was a celebration of the day which went off very well with some songs, band music, recitations, etc. S. C. Jones was the orator of the day.

July 11th, I have been quite miserable for a couple of weeks or more and the last few days I have been abed most of the time. Last evening I was not able to attend the prayer meeting and I did not feel much better this morning.

July 15th, I have been sick for several days and did not go out to meeting Sunday, but I am commencing to feel better today.

I have worked at changing the fence on the east side of my corral, doing a little each morning when I felt able to do anything.

July 22nd, 1924, I have not been well for several weeks but manage to get around most of the time.

My grandson, Seymour Fish, came in from Provo where he had been taking a summer course. He came in late in the evening and we did not see him until the next morning. We were pleased to meet him. We went to meeting together the next day, and visited some.

On Monday the 21st, there was a carnival, and the folks all went to the gathering. The band from St. George was up and we had splendid music. The boys from this place played in the band, Seymour also played in the band. At the ball game in the afternoon the Enterprise team beat the Panaca team getting something over a dozen runs to nothing. I only stayed a portion of the time.

During the day, Brother Snow, William Snow's son, the Principal of the School at Provo and a son of my cousin called on me, looked over my library and wanted to purchase most of the books for the Provo School (This was probably Dr. William J. Snow, Professor of History at the Brigham Young University, Provo). We had a pleasant chat on historical matters.

Brother Johnson who had been around inspecting the cattle for Tuberculosis found one of mine afflicted and the cow was taken out and killed. We had bought her from Brother Norr and had not as yet paid for her, so that made it bad for us.

Tuesday, 22nd, Seymour left this afternoon for Arizona. His visit had been rather short but we appreciated it very much.

The boys, Wilford and Jesse, are still at the Cedar Breaks working and we regretted that they were not present to meet and visit with Seymour.

The weather is very dry and windy as well as hot.

July 24th, 1924, the carnival which commenced on the 21st, ended last night. There were all kinds of games during the three days; ball playing, boxing, wrestling, roping of steers, bronco riding, horse racing, etc. The band from St. George with our local musicians gave the music. There was a dance and picture show each evening and numerous prizes were given to the winners.

On the 24th, the day was celebrated with a parade representing the early travels of the saints, and a meeting in the forenoon at which speeches and songs were given. I had a part and spoke on the pioneer travels. In the afternoon there was a children's dance followed by games, etc.

July 25th, Wilford and Jesse came in this afternoon. They had been at work up at Cedar Breaks for over a month making fence. They said they had not done very well and felt a little discouraged about that work.

On Saturday, the 26th, we had a very nice little rain, the first and best that we have had for months and I might say for this year.

July 30th, 1924, Wilford went back to Cedar to work as he saw no better chance at present to get work. Jesse went to St. George and returned Wednesday evening and started out on his motorcycle the next morning and would overtake Wilford before he got to Cedar.

I have been quite unwell, it pains me considerable to sit down but I managed to get out to the prayer circle on Thursday evening, the 31st.

August 7th, last Saturday and Sunday I was quite sick. I had a bad diarrhea spell and did not go to meeting. I commenced to get better on Tuesday.

On Wed. the High Priests had a special prayer circle to pray for Sister Crawford who was very sick and had been taken to Cedar to be operated on. I attended the meeting.

Jesse returned home today and said they had finished or quit the fence at the Cedar Breaks and that Wilford was hauling lumber.

I attended the prayer meeting today. It was reported that Sister Crawford was much better and had returned home without an operation. We felt that our prayers had been answered.

Saturday, August 9th, Brothers Decker and Taylor and Sister Olive Ward and Taylor's wife came over from Parowan this morning, took dinner with us and returned at 3 p.m. Aunt Eliza went back with them on a short visit.

August 13th, I received a letter from Roy West saying that his grandmother, Jane West, died in August 1919, (August 13, 1919).

I am at work putting down a floor in our kitchen.

It is still very dry and no rain to speak of as yet. Things look rather discouraging for our stock the coming winter, so little on the range.

August 22nd, 1924, I have been rather poorly for several weeks but I am on the improve.

I went to prayer meeting on August 14th, there were but four present. Many have lost interest in these meetings.

I managed to do a little in putting down floors in the three rooms that I had plastered and finished up on the 20th. I have but little that I can do now so I am spending some of my time in hunting up historical incidents on Enterprise.

There was a troop from the Cedar School came over the other day and gave a musical entertainment, and last evening the Boy Scouts from St. George came up and put on a play. I did not go to any of these shows or entertainments.

We still have windy and dry weather, and yesterday morning it was very cold for this time of year. Our garden stuff will amount to but very little this year.

September 1st, I attended the prayer meeting last Thursday. H. Grant Ivins was present and gave a good talk, much of it on our young people and guarding them from the evils of the world.

A company from St. George, teachers and others, came up yesterday and gave us a musical concert which was very good. They occupied the meeting hour and returned in the afternoon.

The weather still keeps dry and hot.

Wilford brought down a load of corn fodder, not much corn on it. He will probably pasture the most of the balance as he thinks that it is not worth cutting.

September 5th, there was a nice little shower yesterday afternoon.

I attended the prayer meeting last evening. This morning seemed nice and fresh, after the shower but it did not wet the ground down very far.

Jesse is helping Jake who is starting to build.

Wilford has gone to Cedar to haul lumber, he might go to Parowan.

September 10th, last Sunday was a special fast day when all the people were to fast and pray for rain that this drought might be broken. The meeting was well attended and some interesting remarks were made and a good spirit prevailed. We had two showers since, one on Monday night and one on Tuesday night.

I went up to the ranch with Julia and Delma yesterday and we got a wagon box full of ears of corn and some fodder. We worked hard what time we were there. The corn is very light and short and what ears there are, are very good but there are only a few ears. About one fourth of the hills had an ear on.

The days are very fine and not very cold yet.

September 15th, 1924, I helped to haul fodder and corn on the 11th and 12th, I stood the work very well.

My grandson, Henry Smith, Della's boy, and his wife and little son came in on the evening of the 12th. They stayed but a short time.

My daughter Hannah took sick and in fact she had not been well for some time, and with this sudden attack it was necessary to take her to the hospital so Henry took her and Jake on to St. George on the morning of the 13th, as Jake could not get a car and his was an open one, no cover.

I attended meeting yesterday, Brother Winsor from Logan spoke mainly on the subject of tithing.

September 22nd, I attended prayer meeting last Thursday, and Friday was a terribly windy day.

My wife Eliza came home from Parowan on Saturday, the 20th. Alvin Decker brought her over, he went back the same day.

Yesterday I attended meting, there was a program rendered mainly about the coming of Elijah and turning the hearts of the fathers to the children and the children to the fathers.

Jake and the girls went to St. George to see how Hannah was getting along. They expected to attend the conference there. They did not come back last evening as was expected. They stopped to get Josephine's tonsils taken out.

There was a killing frost on the night of the 20th, the first of any consequence that we have had this season.

September 29th, Thursday, 25th, I went up to the ranch and got the beans and some corn. Aunt Eliza and Julia went with me. I had Jake's team and the next day I husked out the corn.

On the 27th, Julia, Addie, and Delma started to the north to gather pine nuts. They took Jake's team and wagon and about 600 pounds of hay and also took along three or four women and girls which made a full load. All that could crowd in and two babies. They expected to be gone a week or more.

There have been a few cases of scarlet fever but they have been very light. The place is quarantined and yesterday there were but very few old people to meeting. Fine weather but cold nights.

October 8th, 1924, I have not felt very well for the last week. It has been quite windy for the most of the time.

The folks that went out for pine nuts came a day sooner than they had expected. One of the persons that went out with them was sick and they had to come in. They, however, did fairly well for the time that they were gone.

The scarlet fever had not made much increase and the cases that we had have not been serious.

The Chautauqua Company that has been around gave us entertainments for five nights, their last evening was last night. I went the first night but not feeling well I did not go any more. Aunt Eliza got the scissors stuck in her toe which laid her up and went only two nights.

Our meetings have been rather slim. The scarlet fever and pine nutting have their effect on all gatherings. Only the shows appear to have been well attended.

October 9th, it was a cold windy day. Wilford came home from Cedar City. He brought some baled hay from New Castle. He wanted to go back for another load but the folks were already to go out for Pine Nuts so he hurriedly fixed up and went with them the next morning early.

It was a very cold and windy day, and last night was a very cold night, it froze quite hard. Today it was nice and pleasant after the sun got up and warmed the atmosphere.

The meeting today was very slim, not many out. S. C. Jones spoke very interestingly, mainly on the work for the Mutual and the books that were used this year.

October 20th, 1924, the folks came in from their trip after pine nuts last Thursday, having been gone a week. They did fairly well, having got nearly 300 pounds. It was a terribly windy day, the day that they came in.

I have been busy a part of the time taking care of the beans and what little corn that we had gathered from the ranch.

Yesterday we had missionaries, Brothers Savage and Snow from St. George. They spoke mainly on genealogical work. Our meetings for the last few Sundays have been poorly attended on account of the scarlet fever and so many of the people going after pine nuts. The weather has been fairly good.

October 27th, the folks went out after pine nuts last Tuesday and came in on Saturday evening. Jake had gone to Pioche and brought them in.

Wilford got a load of wood and did not get in until yesterday.

I felt rather poorly yesterday but managed to go to meeting. I feel much better this morning.

The weather is fine.

Jesse came in Saturday evening on his velocipede (motorcycle). Something went wrong with it and he had to walk in some 6 miles. He went back to school to St. George with Brother L. Lund yesterday.

October 30th, we had some political meetings lately, most of them were to find fault with the other fellow.

We had a high wind on Tuesday and it snowed three or four inches yesterday and was very cold last night.

November 10th, we have had some wind and a little snow during the last week.

I attended prayer meeting on the 6th, and also went around as a teacher alone, Robinson being at the reservoir at work.

Yesterday we had several up from St. George who attended the Sunday School Convention, and they spoke to the parents at the 2 p.m. meeting. Afterwards, they met in the different departments with the teachers and officers of the different associations.

November 16th, Wilford who has been up to the ranch, came down Friday and brought a load of wood.

Jake got the concrete in his foundation from the bottom of the cellar up seven feet, finished late last evening.

I attended prayer meeting last Thursday evening.

The weather is rather changeable.

Today at meeting Frank and R. O. Holt were the speakers, Frank Holt is the Bishop at Gunlock.

November 21st, I attended prayer meeting last evening, there were three from St. George and Hurricane present. They were up as a Committee going over the land appraising it, S. C. Jones was with them.

Julia, Hannah, and Addie went out for pine nuts Thursday (yesterday). Jake took them out in his car and left them there. He will go out and get them in about a week.

The weather is very fine, more pleasant than common at this time of year.

1924-1926
Chapter 123
Joseph Fish Closes His Historical Labors

Sunday, November 30th, ward conference was held today. Brother Atkins and some others were up from St. George. The ward authorities were presented and sustained as usual. Elder Baker, a returned missionary, gave a fine discourse.

We have very cold nights but the days are fine and pleasant.

December 8th, 1924, we had a little snow about the 3rd, and on the 5th, there were several inches fell, but it was warm and the snow was quite heavy and settled so it was only about three inches deep.

I was not well for several days and did not go to meeting on the 7th.

It was quite stormy and continued so on the 8th but was not very cold.

Wilford, who had been to Modena, came back by the ranch and brought a cow and calf down on the 7th.

On the 8th he worked on the barn to keep the stock from getting what little hay we had.

December 15th, we have had very fair weather for several days, pleasant days but cold nights. The snow settles but is slow in going off.

There are several in the place with colds, probably from the change in the weather.

I attended prayer meeting on the 11th, there were 9 present, more than usual.

Wilford went out on the 12th for wood and brought in a load on the 13th.

December 18th, on the 16th there was a high wind all day with a rain which was the worst I have seen in a long time.

Wilford went to new Castle for hay. He came back late in the evening riding one horse, the other he left with the harness on to follow but it did not, so was out all night. Jake and he went back the next day and found the animal. It had not perished. They brought the hay in. It had snowed during the night and the wind had drifted it so that the snow was nearly a foot deep in many places.

December 23, 1924, we have had a very cold and disagreeable time, some snow and a very cold spell, the coldest that I have seen for some time. It snowed and blew yesterday and is snowing some this morning. The snow is not very deep but is drifted. We are glad to see the snow as it insures water in the reservoir, but this is certainly hard on the stock as the range was dry and little feed last summer. Many will perish for there is scarcely any hay in town.

December 31st, 1924, the Christmas holidays passed off fairly well. There was one little affair came up with the boys who had been off to school. The people had hired some outside musicians at different times and now the boys refused to play at the gatherings unless they were employed to play at the dances. The matter was talked over Sunday, the 28th. The boys won their point and Brother Lund, chairman of the young folks committee resigned. He evidently felt hurt over the affair. There was evidently some fault on both sides as these should have not come up in such a way.

The weather has been very cold but the last few days has been more mild. Christmas Day the thermometer went down to 21 degrees below zero.

Wilford went to Modena yesterday for a load of cotton seed oil that was being shipped in to feed the sheep and cattle.

January 8th, 1925, the weather since new years has been varied, some days stormy and generally cold. The last few days have been very cold of nights but clear and pleasant days. It thawed some for a few days but there is still some snow on the ground.

Wilford goes up to the ranch occasionally.

I do not get out much. I was rather poorly and did not get to meeting last Sunday.

January 12th, yesterday (11th) Cox and Burgess, missionaries from St. George spoke. They held a cottage meeting at my house on the 12th, there were 32 present.

The weather is still cold but no storm as yet and the snow is still on the ground.

January 26th, 1925, last Thursday, the 22nd, I attended the prayer meeting. We held but a short session and then went over to Brother Lund's house where the St. George missionaries held a Cottage Meeting which was an interesting and instructive service. They had been here nearly two weeks and this was the winding up of their labors here and they were to go home the next day.

The last few days have been warmer than usual and the snow has melted considerable and now it is slush and mud, and ice in places that have not yet melted.

I attended meeting yesterday, Brother Crawford was the main speaker.

I keep fairly well for me and spend considerable of my time during the day at work in my historical work, the *History of Enterprise*.

February 7th, 1925, the warm weather has taken all the snow off, and around town it has dried up so that there is very little mud left.

I attended the prayer meeting Thursday, the 5th, a very good attendance.

The Adams Company (theater) came in yesterday and gave an entertainment last night, I did not go.

It stormed a very little.

Addie came in from Moapa last Monday, we were pleased to have her home again.

Wilford went up to the ranch last evening.

February 12th, 1925, we have had very fir weather for several days and the grass has started up in places but of course not enough to do any good to the poor starving cattle. We have not as yet had any moisture to speak of that will fill our reservoir. We hope for rain or snow that will make water for the coming season. For it has been a dry time with us. Some have become discouraged on account of the drought.

February 21st, we have had very pleasant weather for several days. The people have been at work for some four days on the streets in town. The town pays the men half price and the other half the men donate. There were about 20 men with teams and a score of men who were working single handed.

I attended prayer meeting last Thursday, there were 8 present.

It stormed a little last night, just enough to moisten the ground some.

March 4th, 1925, we have had very fine weather for the last week, but dry. We need rain and the people are becoming discouraged and fear that there will not be much raised this year. If we do not plant, we will certainly not

raise a crop. We should do our part and trust the Lord to come to our relief. It is a little cloudy today, so we hope for rain to fill our reservoir.

Jesse Ward came over from Parowan for Aunt Eliza. His wife had been in the hospital for an operation and Aunt Eliza went over to stay with her for awhile. They got off at 3 p.m. yesterday.

March 9th, the drought has been broken at last. There has been a gentle rain and snow for the last 48 hours. It has soaked up the ground well, but it has turned colder with wind today. We feel thankful for the storm and it looks as if the people would soon be plowing as soon as the ground becomes dry enough.

March 10th, it was a cold and stormy day. There was some snow that went off in a short time, it was a real March day.

There was a cottage meeting held at my house last night, there were about 25 present, and the meeting was very interesting and instructive.

March 22nd, Sunday, it has been very pleasant weather for the last week but cold nights so the snow has gone off in the mountains rather gradually and I fear that it is not filling the reservoir as it should have done.

There is stake conference yesterday and today at St. George. Quite a number went from this place to attend the meetings. Wilford went but I did not get a chance. However, the main reason probably was that I did not feel able to go and Aunt Eliza was away.

March 28th, 1925, last evening the school put on an opera which was rendered very well. We have had a fine gentle rain which has moistened up the ground well for the farmers and things look prosperous. But there is no great amount of water in the reservoir as yet.

I put in a bridge in the side walk today as the old one washed out.

March 29th, 1925, at meeting today a program was given by the Boy Scouts. Four of the leading men in that movement were present and were the speakers. A certificate in that organization was given to each of the officers in this place. B. F. Farnsworth is the president of the Boy Scouts of this place.

It was a very cold windy day and a very slight flurry of rain.

April 2nd, 1925, the last days of March were cold and windy, and it snowed a little but went of yesterday and today it is very nice. The sun came up bright and pleasant but it froze quite hard last night.

April 11th, 1925, on the 6th, we had a nice shower, some of the time it snowed and melted as it struck the ground. It soaked up the ground very well.

Alanson Reidhead came in with his son Roland, on the 7th. Alanson had been working at Overton. He came up here to get a place from Roy Adams. He left his wife at Washington where she expects to remain this summer.

On the 9th I was sick with a cold and cough and was abed the most of the day and on the 10th, I was no better, but today my throat was somewhat better. However I feel very weak.

April 20th, 1925, I have been sick with a cold or something of the kind for a week or more.

On the night of the 18th I coughed nearly all night and Julia was up several times putting poultices on my breast. I finally got to sleep towards morning but I felt weak and used up in the morning.

Yesterday we had Thomas P. Cottam and Brigham Jarvis as home missionaries and Doctor Wallace from Salt Lake City gave a lecture and a picture show in the evening illustrating T. B. and how the germs were scattered. The

meeting and the lecture in the evening were said to be very fine but I was not able to attend them. I have felt better today but it has been a very cold and windy day, the worst day this spring, cloudy but no storm.

April 23rd, we have had over two days of storm, mostly snow which melted of each day so there was not any towards night, but in the mornings the ground was slightly covered. This morning the ground was white but it has the appearance of clearing up and if the sun comes out the snow will all be gone in a short time.

I have not been feeling very well for a week or more, I have a bad cough yet, and am not able to do anything but I manage to write a little each day on my historical work. At this I sometime feel a little discouraged, I have not been out of the house for a week.

May 5th, we are having very fine weather and many are at work on the new reservoir. Wilford and Jake are up there at work.

On the second I had a very bad spell of coughing which lasted all night so I did not get much sleep. I am feeling better but still feel weak.

Yesterday Roy Adams brought Alanson Reidhead in. Alanson had taken with a severe pain, I think it was his kidneys. Julia worked with him all the after part of the day, put on poultices, etc. He got better and was able to get up and eat a little but this morning he was still suffering some.

May 16th, we have been having very good weather but not much rain. There are some fifteen men at work on the new reservoir, and the work is likely to last all summer.

I have not been well for the last two or three weeks.

Aunt Eliza returned from Parowan on the 14th. Alvin Decker brought her over. Her brother, Ed Mortenson, and his wife came along. They returned to Parowan after dinner. They stated that Olive was gaining some. I was pleased to have Aunt Eliza home again, she had been away caring for Olive for a little over two months.

May 24th, I have been quite poorly for some time but I am gaining some. I managed to go to meeting today.

Jesse got back from school where he got his diploma. He has been at work since on the new Reservoir.

Wilford has been up at the ranch putting in some corn and potatoes and still has several days more to do there before he gets his stuff all in such as corn, beans, etc.

I am doing what I can on the *History of Enterprise*.

June 3rd, 1925, the last week or two it has been cold and windy and the last few days have been worse than common, very cold and windy. Last night it snowed all night, and it seems almost like winter weather it is so cold.

I have been feeling better for the last week so I get around some. I went to meeting last Sunday. We had missionaries from St. George, Brothers Brenner and Whitehead.

Our water supply is running low and crops are suffering for the want of water. Things look very discouraging; we want rain.

June 4th, it started to rain yesterday afternoon and was very cold. It snowed some but melted as fast as it came. It rained some last night and no frost. It has soaked up the ground very well. This storm has been a wonderful help and blessing to the country, it has saved much of the crops that the people had about given up on account of the drought.

June 10th, the weather for the last week has been tolerably fair. I have not felt very well for some time. On Sunday, the 7th, I was quite poorly, I did not go to meeting, but lay abed considerable and I have felt a little better since.

Monday Wilford went to Modena for a load of cement for the new reservoir. Jesse is also at work on the reservoir. He, however, went to St. George last Saturday and back on Sunday.

June 13th, 1925, the quarterly conference was held at St. George, President Heber J. Grant and Apostle G. F. Richards were present. Aunt Julia and I went down with Brother Kroencke. Wilford and Jesse came down in the evening. We stayed at Brother Charles Cottam's. The meetings were inspiring. We attended all the meetings Saturday and Sunday. The Stake was reorganized, Brother Nichols was put in as president with Brothers Bentley and Cannon as counselors and T. P. Cottam as president of the Temple with George F. Whitehead as his assistant and these two were put in as members of the High Council. The former presidency were released, President E. H. Snow and counselors, T. P. Cottam and G. F. Whitehead. I returned home on Sunday evening with Brother Seth Jones where we arrived about sun down. Julie remained to go with Brother Kroencke as he had to stay for a meeting about the stock business at the Santa Clara.

June 23rd, last Sunday after meeting the High Priests were organized. Orson W. Huntsman as President and George A. Holt class leader with George O. Holt as Secretary.

Sunday, 28th, was appointed to meet and arrange for the lessons. People are busy haying and the weather is dry and hot. We need rain as the water in the reservoir is exhausted and we now have but one stream which is not sufficient for our gardens.

June 27th, it was my 85th birthday. The boys were busy with hay so our birthday dinner was postponed until the next day (Sunday) when the family and Lucile Cottam met and we had a fine dinner and then went to Church.

June 28th, the High Priests met and as the class leader was absent we did but little.

July 1st, we have had one of the nicest rains that this country ever witnessed, everything was soaked up well, it has rained for two days.

July 5th, 1925, yesterday we had an excellent celebration of the day. A Meeting in the forenoon with songs and music by the band and a fine talk on Defense Day. In the afternoon a children's dance, ball games, etc., and a dance in the evening. There was a large attendance. I was not well on the 5th and did not attend the meeting. I am rather poorly the most of the time but manage to do a little something around the garden, etc.

July 15th, I attended the funeral of Brother Eleker today, he died yesterday morning at the age of 83. He came to Utah in the Hand Cart Company and a part of the family perished through starvation and cold. He was one of the early settlers of Enterprise and was much respected.

We are having very warm weather. It registered the other day in the shade 110 degrees. It is stated that in Dixie it was the warmest that was ever known except once.

July 29th, 1925, our 24th passed off very nicely. There was a kind of carnival. A meeting on the 24th, and on the 25th there were races, baseball, etc. The Hall was nicely decorated and there were picture shows and dances each night.

On the 28th we had a nice rain which was a great help to the gardens and crops that needed rain very bad as we had not had any moisture for sometime. It had rained all around us however. Our gardens look better than we had expected, but some of the field crops have suffered for want of water.

August 3rd, 1925, fast day was held, a large congregation was present. The time was given to President A. W. Ivins who was present. H had come down to look after the flour mill he had sold to W. Lund and he had turned it over to M. Bowler. There seemed to be some difficulty about it and President Ivins came down to see about it and get the matter settled up.

There was a severe hail storm on Saturday afternoon that did an immense amount of damage to the gardens and other stuff. It practically ruined most of them.

August 10th, when President Ivins was here a week ago or more, at their meeting about the mill they came to no settlement and will leave it to the courts. This will be an expensive affair.

We have had rain about every day for the last week and a good deal up at the ranch which did some damage.

August 24th, 1925, it has been quite dry with some wind for the last month and it looks a little as if fall was coming. We have cool nights with warm days. Our garden is growing and the vines and corn are coming out with new leaves since the hail storm. New blossoms are coming on but they will be too late to mature. We have had several meetings about the mill. Those who took over the mill were unable to pay for it and now at a meeting a committee was named. They went over to Cedar City and took over the mill. They are arranging so they can sell shares so that the people can subscribe stock and the people own it.

I was not very well so did not go to meeting yesterday. Julia, Wilford, and Delma started south to get some fruit. Brother Vasco Tanner and Brother Woodbury came up from St. George yesterday and I sold Brother Tanner five books out of my library.

September 8th, the weather has been a little unsettled but not much rain, a little indication of fall weather.

On Sunday, the 6th, I attended meeting. It was fast day but the time was given to Levi Harmon of Salt Lake City. He had formerly been an old settler of the southern country and a close friend of the people of Enterprise. He preached a fine sermon mainly on the vices of the young people, on smoking, and the neglect of the American people about having children. My son Wilford and my wife Julia and daughter Delma took the cows up to the ranch to make a little cheese. This will save feed here and give the cows some fresh food. Wilford will also cut some corn.

September 9th, last night we had a light frost which in places nipped the squash vines and beans but did not appear to injure the corn.

September 13th, Governor Dearn, Secretary of State Crocker, and several others paid our town a visit late in the day and visited the reservoir. In the evening they held meeting and spoke to us mainly on temporal things such as improving the country and producing crops such as to export to California, which is our market.

September 20th, there was conference yesterday and today at St. George. Apostle Clawson and Brother Wells were present and several from this place went down including the Bishop. I did not go. Julia and Delma came down from the ranch Friday but went back towards night.

Wilford came down today but went back this evening. They said that they had a hard rain up there on Saturday.

Monday, September 21st, Ross Hunt, son of Bishop Hunt of Snowflake called to see us today. We were pleased to see him. He was selling some dry goods and said that he intended to go to Snowflake. We had quite a visit as he would see all our folks there and report how we were getting along.

Saturday, September 26th, I have done some work making a ditch through the top of the lot that I bought of the city.

The Chautauqua company started to give us five evening performances. I had a free ticket but I was not feeling well and did not go. Aunt Eliza went and said that it was very good.

October 8th, 1925, the Chautauqua Company gave the 5 nights entertainments but I only went to two of them.

It rained almost all day Sunday, the 4th, and some on Monday. There were but very few went to meeting on Sunday on account of the storm, I did not go.

The Reidhead boys started for Washington, Washington Co. yesterday. They expected to go around and see their father but they will miss him as he came in last night. Since the storm we have had fine weather.

October 12th, it rained some Saturday night and some today.

On Friday and Saturday I worked at digging a pit for potatoes and carrots but the ground was so sandy that it caved in five times and I had to clear it out, so by the time I got deep enough, I had a very large pit.

October 20th, the Presidency of the St. George Stake was with us last Sunday and gave us some very good counsel and advice as well as doctrinal points. Apostle A. W. Ivins dropped in to the dance on Friday evening and said among other things that the Church had two thousand missionaries out, and they wanted 1000 more experienced ones for the U. S. He was on a business trip to his ranch and just called over. Julia and Wilford are up to the ranch. Delma is up to Terry's ranch, Thomas Terry Jr.'s folks were sick. I am not well but have my pit dug and lined with railroad ties and ready for the roof.

November 4th, 1925, I have been rather poorly for a week or more. I did not attend prayer meeting at the last meeting nor Sunday meeting last Sunday.

The weather has been fairly good until Sunday when it turned stormy and it has stormed a little each day since, not much at a time, no snow, but a little rain, and last night it froze considerably.

Yesterday was election day for the town officers, I did not go out but I understand that S. C. Jones was elected President of the Town Board.

Today has been cold and dismal, cloudy most of the day.

Wilford and Alanson are up to the ranch. We have the potatoes, beets, and carrots up and in the pit.

November 16th, it has been cold for a few days past and today windy as well. Wilford and Alanson went to Washington and St. George to haul some wood on the 8th.

I attended meeting yesterday, also on the 8th. Yesterday we had Brothers Atkin and Morris as missionaries. They gave us a good talk on ward teaching, etc.

My wife Julia was 60 years old yesterday. She does all the work in tending the cows, etc.

The last few days have been very cold of nights and today cloudy, cold, and windy.

I do not do anything but last week I put on a roof of cement on the cellar. It was not as thick as I would like, but it may turn the rain.

November 23rd, there was an old folks entertainment on Saturday, the 21st, I attended and spoke. I was the oldest man in town. We had a nice dinner and were entertained by the committee in fine style. I am as well as usual but Julia is troubled some with rheumatism.

We are having good weather but cold nights.

Wilford and Alanson went up to the ranch and did some work and yesterday they started to Washington with a load of hay each and they may go south to work for a while.

November 30th, 1925, we are having an excellent fall, no storm to speak of, cold nights but pleasant days.

Wilford came home on Saturday evening. I attended meeting yesterday, a very poor attendance. There has been a great falling off in the attendance of meetings in the last few weeks. There is considerable sickness in the place, mainly among the children.

December 8th, it has been tolerably good weather during the month thus far with the exception of a cold north wind which has prevailed a part of the time. Today it has been very foggy and cold.

I have very good health the most of the time but not able to do any work to speak of.

Wilford has done a few days work on the road up at the meadows and today he went to the Ivins ranch to help bale hay. He is kept busy going to the ranch and working there much of his time. There is some sickness in the place, mostly among the children.

Monday, December 14th, there was conference at St. George on December 12th and 13th, Saturday and Sunday last. Quite a number from here went down to attend it. It had been cold and foggy for several days but Saturday evening it cleared up and snowed a very little during the night, just enough to whiten the ground, the first snow of the season and a very little of it.

I have a cold and am not feeling very well.

December 18th, 1925, Wilford went to Modena with a load of hay.

Jake and Hannah are starting to move into their new house today. They will live in the basement this winter, the other part is not finished yet. Very good weather so far, cloudy today but not very cold. I have had a bad cold but am getting over it.

December 28th it has been beautiful weather for sometime but cold nights. Our Christmas Holidays passed off nicely, a little drinking however. A large attendance from the outside places came to the picture shows and the dances.

Monday, 28th, the people turned out and cut wood for the meeting house. Brother Thompson, a returned missionary, preached yesterday, Elias Hunt also spoke.

On Thursday, December 31st, I went to St. George to attend the wedding of my son and to do a little work in the Temple. On the 1st, I went through the Temple for Samuel York who was dead.

January 1st, 1926, I went through the Temple. My son Jesse L. also went through and received his endowments and was sealed to Miss Lucile Cottam.

My wife Julia Ann went through and she received her second anointing at the same time.

In the after part of the day we went to see Brother Hunt's house which was nearly completed, it was near the Temple and had already cost \$7,000.

In the evening there was a gathering of friends and relatives at Charles Cottam's in honor of the marriage of Jesse L. Fish and Lucile Cottam. I was so tired and not feeling well so I went to bed and did not attend.

The next day my wife Julia and I went to see Dr. Donald A. McGregor. He gave me a prescription for my ailments (my water works) I saw some of my old friends.

In the afternoon I returned home with Lyle Coleman. We arrived about sundown, having made the trip home in 2 hours. I found all well after our pleasant but short visit.

January 5th, 1926, this is a very pleasant day but cold nights; yesterday there was a cold north wind. While I was at St. George it snowed a little, about two inches, but it was nearly all gone when we got back. There is but little left on the north side of the hills.

January 7th, 1926, I started for Parowan, Bishop H. L. Adams of that place came over after me to attend the Pageant at that place to be held on the 13th. We started at 3 p.m. Aunt Eliza and my daughter Addie went with me. We went via Iron springs, had a fine trip, nice weather. We stopped with Olive Ward, half sister of Aunt Eliza's.

January 8th, we visited with relatives but spent the most of the day at Orton's.

January 9th, I visited around some, met many old friends and relatives most of whom had grown out of my knowledge.

January 9th, I took dinner with my nephew Frank Burton and attended the rehearsal of the pageant. Brother Eastman of Provo was putting on the play and came down to get it staged. He brought the costumes and will instruct the actors.

January 10th, I attended the meeting. Brother Eastman occupied the time, it was very short as they were fitting up the stage for the pageant. The meeting house is a magnificent building. It is said that it will seat about 900 people, and cost \$60,000. We spent the day with Oscar Lyman and my niece Hannah Lyman.

Monday, 11th, we took dinner with William Lyman and my niece Julia who is the wife of William Lyman. I visited around with several, mainly with Heber Denson.

January 13th, 1926, was Pioneer Day. There was a meeting in the forenoon at which President Palmer read a lengthy and interesting paper of the history of Parowan and the south. In the afternoon a banquet was given to all over 70, which was a magnificent affair, after which our pictures were taken. In the evening the pageant was presented to a crowded house. The representation of early Pioneer days, of Indians and Pioneers, and the growth and progress of the people was presented in a fine manner by some 100 actors dressed in costumes of the early pioneer days. It was a grand success.

On the 14th there was a banquet, and in the evening the Pageant was repeated.

January 15th, we had planned to go down on the farm with relatives but on account of fear of a storm the Bishop thought it best to return. So we left Parowan at 1 p.m. and arrived at Enterprise a trifle after 4 p.m. We had a most enjoyable and interesting time, and had met many relatives and old friends in Parowan and other places. It was a time long to be remembered. The weather had been fine and we found all well at home.

January 20th, 1926, there have been slight snow storms for several days but the snow was light and went off the next day. The weather has been cold, last night it snowed a little, and today the ground is white but the snow in the valley was gone before night. There were cold winds most of the time.

January 31st, the last three weeks have been lovely weather with the exception of a few days lately of stormy weather, and very cold nights.

My health has been fairly good, but I cannot walk very well, my head goes faster than my feet so I have to go fast to keep up and so I soon give out. The other day I could not keep up with my head so I fell down.

I am trying to fix up the house. I have sold some of my books so I am cutting down the cupboard and fixing to finish up the lathing of our bedroom and get it plastered.

February 1st, there was a little snow last night and it looks like over an inch, we were thankful for that much.

February 13th, we had a little snow last night and it is snowing again this forenoon.

I have been lathing our bedroom and finished yesterday. It was a large room, but I only had a small part of it to do. I could not do very much, but managed to do a little.

Wilford went to Modena last Monday with hay and came back Wednesday with wood. He brought 300 lath. He went to the ranch on Thursday.

February 27th, the month, in fact the whole winter, has been a most enjoyable one. Nice days with cold nights, but little storm, just enough to make the earth moist, and hardly a day when a man could not work out of doors and be comfortable. It is like spring, in Dixie the garden stuff has been up for sometime. People are busy preparing for spring work.

I am reasonably well for which I am thankful, but I am not able to do very much. I am trying to lath the bedrooms upstairs, but just now I have had to stop for the want of lath. The month goes out warm and pleasant.

March 10th, the month has been quite dry. Last night we had a lovely snow storm. It came about a foot deep and it was very wet, no wind. It was the nicest snow that we have had for years, and we are feeling to rejoice as it will now fill our reservoir and give us water.

I have had a stroke or something of the kind, I cannot use my left hand or my left foot and appear to be entirely helpless and have to have my wives wait on me like a baby. I am trying to write a little with one hand, but cannot do much. I am bothered some about my speech, I cannot talk very plain.

March 19th, Friday, I do not improve very fast. I have one of my wives wait on me all the time.

My son Wilford started for St. George yesterday afternoon, he was intending to attend conference and was taking a load of wood to Jesse. There are but few going to conference to St. George. Brother Thomas P. Cottam was to be buried yesterday and the Terry boy died yesterday.

March 26th, the season has been nice and lovely, but today it turned very cold and a wind from the north made it one of the worst days that we had during the winter, but the next day the north wind settled and it was better.

People have commenced to put in their early garden stuff.

There is sickness in the place.

I am improved some, but still I am hardly able to get out of my chair alone and my left hand is still quite helpless and my kidneys bother me greatly which is one of my worst ailments.

April 7th, Wilford went to Modena a few days ago and returned last night, but left his load on account of the mud. He went for water piping.

It has been raining most of the time for several days and the prospects bid fair that we will have plenty of water.

I am improving some from my stroke, but it is slow. I cannot use my left hand much or my left foot, and my mouth bothers me about eating.

April 13th, the past week has been a little stormy with passing showers. My health has improved some, but at times I have been a little discouraged. Today I seem considerably better, and the day is pleasant, which is an improvement. I am bothered with my speech; I cannot speak very plain and I do not gain very fast. I have not very good use of my limbs. I cannot walk very well. I fall down quite often and I am troubled some with my bowels, and in fact I begin to think that I am getting old and helpless.

Wilford has gone to the ranch, Jesse and his wife came up yesterday noon. He brought some vegetables to sell. He sold some in the afternoon and the next morning.

Friday, May 21st, he started at 2 a.m. for Caliente with his load to try to sell out.

Wilford P. Fish was ordained an Elder on January 10th, 1926 by Arthur Jones.

June 5th, my daughter Hannah Bushar gave birth to a son.

June 7th, A week ago, Saturday, my son Roland and his whole family, wife, and five children came in from Arizona to see me. They came in a large auto in two days. We had a nice visit for a week, and a little more. We went over to see Andy Winsor's new place across the wash. We went up to the reservoir and other places. The two boys went with Wilford to the ranch and in the field and enjoyed the out with the horses as they had none. The girl, Myrle, went out with Delma on horse back. Roland went down to St. George on Thursday after Addie who had been in the

hospital and returned with her in the evening. She was greatly improved, having had an operation for appendicitis. Roland and family started for home this morning, June 7.

My son Wilford went to the ranch to take the horses and get his team. They had been turned out and he did not get back with them until noon on the 8th.

Last night I was taken with a dizzy spell and had to be helped into the house. I had a kind of numbness of my left side and hand and leg, probably caused from my trying to hoe some in the garden.

July 5th, I have had several bad spells the last month, but still I seem to keep about the same, sometimes better and sometimes worse. We got word a week ago that Katie was at Provo, but I suppose she went back the northern route as we waited to see her for a week or more and she never came. She came up to attend the marriage of her daughter Mary we suppose.

July 20th, Katie Fish came in on the 18th. There was a union meeting on this day. President Nichols and many of the leading men from St. George were present.

Jesse came up with a load of grapes from St. George and finding there was no sale for them at Pioche, he went to Parowan, I do not know whether he sold out.

July 29th, we had a fine discourse from Elder Whitaker of Salt Lake City.

I have not been feeling very well, but still I think that I am improving some.

I have not been able to visit with Katie and her daughter Mary and her son-in-law Owen Porter very much on account of my difficulty in speaking and hearing. They started home to Snowflake on the 29th. Addie went with them as far as St. George.

August 14th, I remain about as usual, but think that I am improving a little, but my hearing does not improve any that I see. However I can speak a little better at times. My wives, Julia and Eliza, are very kind to me and do all in their power to do all the outside work such as hoeing in the garden, etc. Wilford is doing all that he can to keep things going and I regret it very much that I am so helpless and cannot help, but I do a little in the garden sometimes.

September 4th, my daughter Delma was married today in St. George to Brother Orlas Alger. My wife Julia and daughter Addie were at the wedding.

September 10th, Jesse came up from St. George with a load of fruit to sell.

Notes by Silas L. Fish

The entry for September 10, 1926 is the last we have of Joseph Fish's own writing. This was six months after he had the paralytic stroke which he mentions in his entry of March 10, 1926, and three months before his death.

He also mentioned a sun stroke June 28th, 1924, but the stroke in March, 1926 partially paralyzed his left side. Although he had to be waited on after this, yet he would not give up. Instead, he insisted on doing something each day, reading, helping about the place, hoeing in the garden, or being of some service. He kept his life long habit of recording the events that came to his attention every few days. He left three sheets of his journal entries typed by himself after his stroke using one finger of his right hand (his left arm being paralyzed, at least partially).

Hannah writes that he was up and dressed and engaged in some activity every day, even the day he died he was up and dressed.

Seymour Fish (a grandson) remarks of his visit in July, 1924, that Joseph Fish was the first old man he ever visited who did not spend a lot of time telling about himself. He says that during the visit Professor William J. Snow (of the Brigham Young University) called and Joseph Fish and Dr. Snow spent the time telling anecdotes of historic characters, that the conversation was very interesting, and that Joseph Fish's mind was keen and bright. (he was 84)

The entry dated August 14, 1926, shows how well Joseph Fish understood conditions at that late date.

Hannah says: "He read twenty volumes and kept up with the news after he had that stroke".

Thus was one of his life long desires fulfilled. He often said he did not want to live to become a helpless old man. He said one reason he began the study of history was so he could keep busy if he got too old to work. He kept at both his historical study, research, and writing, and his work about home, up to the very last. He was active in the church and community up to the time of his stroke. He built his home in Enterprise after he was 78 years old. The family moved into this new house on October 2, 1919 (he was then past 79). On this date he wrote: "Thus fixed we were very thankful to be located in a home of our own. I had not hired one days work on it, but did everything myself." Soon after this he began the revision of his *History of the Rocky Mountain Region*, and it appears that he completely re-wrote about 2000 pages of this manuscript by September 12, 1923. In another month he was at work on a new undertaking. On one of his frequent visits to Enterprise, President A. W. Ivins dropped the remark that he wished someone would write a history of the place. Joseph Fish immediately took up the work and began collecting the information although he was then in his eighty fourth year. He really enjoyed the work. His *History of Enterprise* completed his historical researches in this life. He passed away December 10, 1926.

Thus ended a life not only full of years (86 years, 5 months, 13 days), but full of helpful service, and inspiration. He had left historical records of events not chronicled by any one else. He has shown what a systematic, well directed plan can do even when one has to overcome the obstacles of poverty, and the lack of education and environment conducive to following that plan. Even when it seemed that the time and strength needed to follow the plan were not given him, yet through persistence, he achieved.

And through it all, his standards, his untarnished character, and his ever living hope stand out like beacons in a world where deception too often besmirches character and discouragement hinders achievement. All who feel of the true spirit of Joseph Fish are given a new determination to exert honorable, well directed effort, and to have renewed faith in the majesty of work.

Note by Elsie Fish Nay (Granddaughter)

I have copied this copy that I got from my father, Jesse Fish, who had written it as his father had written it. In my grandfather's writings he had very narrow margins, single spaced, and only about one or two paragraphs per chapter. I have made more paragraphs and reformatted it in order to facilitate the reading of it.